

NOVELSGURU.COM

For dilay latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

## Prologue

Goldie took my hand into hers

Tears welled up in my eyes

Me: Goldie please, don't put me in this compromising situation

Her: I trust you Yara. Take this as a woman's request on her death bed

She coughed softly

Me: Are you in pain?

She shook her head no

Me: Goldie you can't expect me to be your husband's wife, it sounds somehow and I really don't think I'd be able to do it. No, I can't

Her: My children are used to you Yara, they will not have problem in accepting you. I trust you with them



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: But your husband... (Whispering)

Her: I will talk with him

I sighed and looked away

Me: What if I meet someone and fall in love with him?  
Someone my heart has chosen?

Her: What if you fall in love with Ethan ever thought of that?

Me: I don't know

Her: At least give it a thought, see this as an opportunity. Ethan will take you to school, you'll finally get that degree you've been yearning. Don't you want that?

At the expense of my feelings and happiness, is it worth it?

Whether I agree to this or not, you are still going to judge me. Life isn't always fair and we see it differently. I am a housemaid at Mrs Liremi's house it's not my dream job but when opportunity presents itself you grab it. You don't question it. My mother worked for Liremi family for years, she worked for Ethan's parents before she started working for him. Couple of years back she started getting and stopped working, I then started working for them. Someone had to work and that person was me, my eldest sister since left to Gauteng and my father, only God knows. It's not like I chose to be a housemaid but matric alone can't take you anywhere. I finished matric but

never went to varsity other than matric certificate I have diploma in computer literacy. To many people I am a 25 year old working as a maid but I am more than that, I have dreams- dreams I wish to fulfil. My dream job has always being a publicist, only if God could open doors for me. Being poor is extremely expensive, to some is something to be ashamed of but to me is a motivation

Me: I'm not promising anything

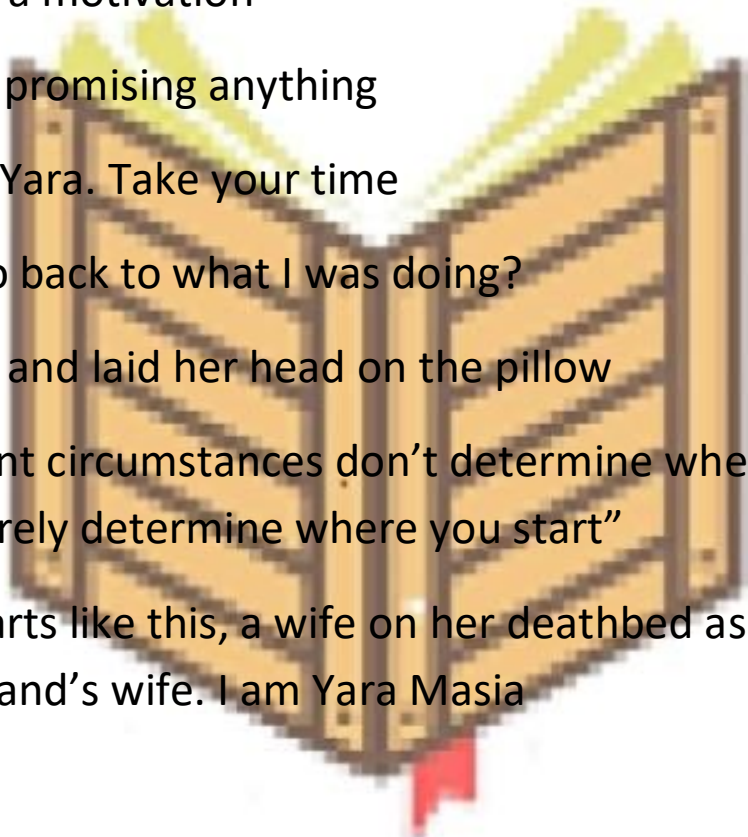
Her: I know Yara. Take your time

Me: Can I go back to what I was doing?

She nodded and laid her head on the pillow

“Your present circumstances don't determine where you can go; they merely determine where you start”

My story starts like this, a wife on her deathbed asking me to be her husband's wife. I am Yara Masia



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

1

YARA

I opened the gate and stepped inside the yard

My mother was softly humming whilst rinsing the glass

Me: Mama

She raised her head

Her: You back early today, is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine mama. And you, how are you feeling?

When I left her in the morning she was complaining about pain on her abdomen

Her: I am better now

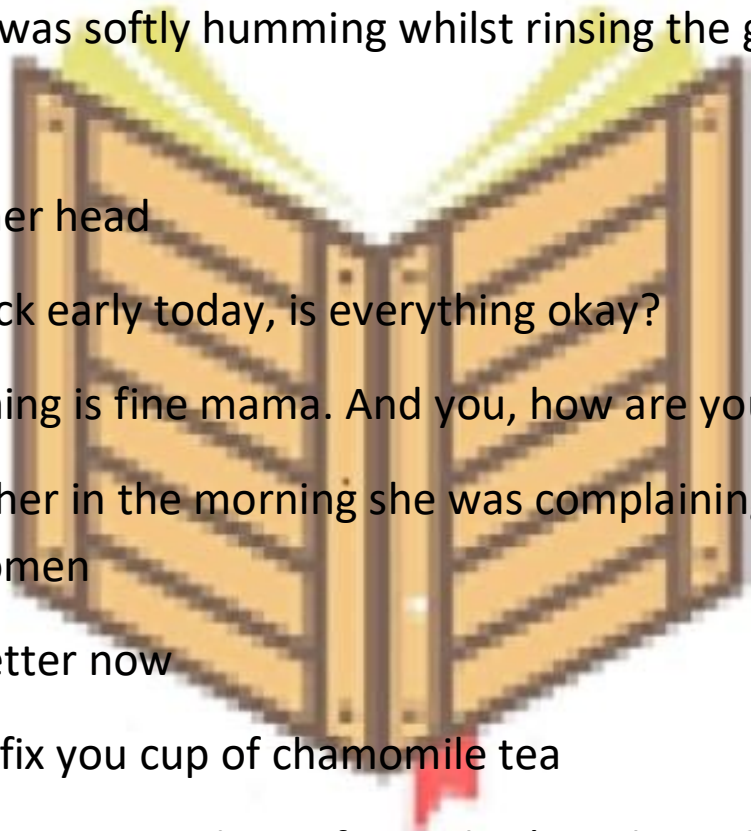
Me: Let me fix you cup of chamomile tea

Her: Hay Yara I just said I am fine, what's with you?

I sat on the stoop and sighed

Her: Something is wrong with you and I can see it

Me: I am still trying to process everything, I will tell you about it later



NOVELSGURU.COM

She shook her head and walked inside the house

GOLDIE

I was diagnosed with cervical cancer couple of years' back that was the most difficult times in our lives. When I was told about it I hit a brick wall, I thought I wasn't going to see children grow. I have two amazing children, Rotenda and Alexa. I thought about my husband, I didn't know how to feel or think. Our marriage hit a rock, every time we have sex I'd bleed but Ethan stood by me. When the tests were done it shows it hasn't spread all over the body and that only enough gave me power to fight because it was curable. I started chemotherapy and that, that was not an easy journey but I fought. It was very difficult to live with the fact that my cancer may come back, and after 1 year of treatment it came back. And I was told it has advanced and there's no cure for it

Ethan hugged me

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I've been thinking

Him: Been doing lot of that lately. Wanna share?

Me: I've always know that one day this cancer will kill me but I never thought it'd be this early. The thought of leaving my children kills me softly

Him: Goldie do we really have to talk about this?

Me: We have to. When I die you are going to marry another woman and God knows how she will treat my children

Him: There's no woman..

I put my finger in his mouth

Me: Don't because we both know they will be another woman after me

He kept quiet

Me: I wish things didn't have to be like this. I'd stay if it was up to me

Him: I really don't feel like engaging in this conversation Goldie

I kissed him

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: If you going to marry another woman then marry Yara. She is the only woman I'd allow to raise my kids

He looked at me and chuckled

YARA

I cleared my throat and darted my eyes around the house

Ma: Out with it

Me: Huh?

Her: Talk Yara. You've been biting your nails and darting your eyes around the house

Me: I don't know how to say this but...

Her: Start from the beginning

Me: Goldie asked me to marry her husband

Her: What?

Me: Well not now, when she passes away

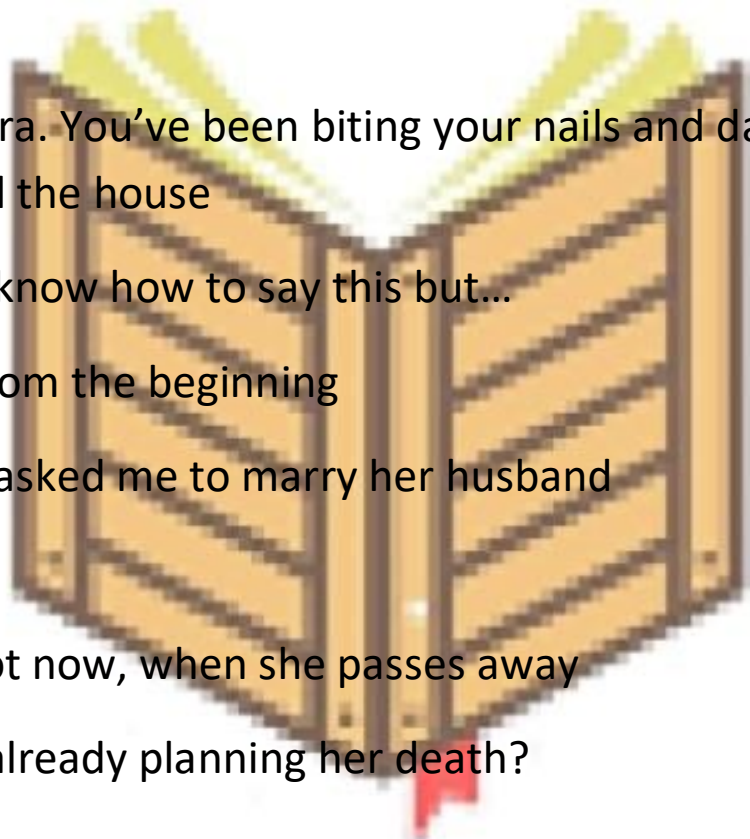
Her: She is already planning her death?

She clapped once

Me: Mama her cancer can't be cured and the doctors already told her that she got few months to live

Her: What happened to faith? Huh?

Me: Isn't about faith mama



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: That doesn't matter let's talk about the matter at hand.  
Did you agree to her request?

Me: I said I'll think about it. I honestly don't know what to say  
mama

she said Ethan will look after me and maybe take me to varsity

Her: So you can finally get the degree you've been yearning  
for?

I nodded repeatedly

Her: Then what's stopping you?

Me: I don't love him and marriage without love is hopeless. I'll  
be marrying him for myriad reasons and love isn't one of them  
Mama the relationship is bound to fail

Her: Look around you, what do you see? Do you want to end up  
like me and be the housemaid for the rest of your life?

Me: No

Her: Then sleep on it

She stood up

NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Me: Viper we've been here for more than two hours, where is your guy?

He narrowed his eyes around

Him: I don't know man but Diaz will never disappoint me

Me: I don't like this and if your guy isn't here in thirty minutes then I am off

Him: He must be on his way calm down Tooth

Viper and I were at one of our warehouses, we are waiting for someone who wants firearms but it seems like some people don't respect time. I have some errands to run and I won't be waiting for some motherfucker who doesn't know what he wants. If you say 16h00 then make it 16h00 not a minute later

Panther walked in with the client

Panther: And the king arrived (Chuckles softly)

Me: It's about damn time. Do you know what time is it or perhaps you are not familiar with it?

The client looked at Viper

Viper: Ignore him, anger issues

Panther: What's wrong with him?

Me: Let's just get in there and get this done with Panther

Viper and Panther are blood-brothers I met them through their father, he runs illegal gambling and I used to spend most of my time there. It's safe to say we are living the dream and I see no one stopping us, As a kid, I was very aggressive and I can only say I mimicked my father's personality, I grew up around guns and I grew fondness of them at an early age. I grew up to be a person who doesn't take junk and crossing paths with Khumalo brother's was a blessing. My gangster life spiral out of control when my father left, I wanted to do something in order to escape from my reality-something that does not include wearing a tie and a suit. The Khumalo brother's begun to teach me how to flip and to walk and talk like gangster. I am one person who is not scared of retaliation

GOLDIE



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ethan didn't take the news very well, I expected him to understand but I guess I was wrong

Me: Do you think I am selfish?

Him: Do you want the truth?

Me: That's why I asked

Him: Your actions are selfish; they all have to do with yourself. You can't expect me to love another woman whilst I should be mourning you. And did you ever think that maybe I won't care about taking another wife? Raising children is no-brainer

Me: Ethan...

Him: I am not having this conversation with you. If you die...

Me: When I die

Him: I am going to mourn you, I won't lust any woman and if time comes for me to move on I will do so but Yara is out of the question

Me: Okay

I stood up

Him: Where are you going?

Me: Do you care?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

2

ETHAN

I walked out of the en-suite bathroom and sat on the edge of the bed

We often find quick solutions to the problems we face but sometimes it becomes a mission. When it comes to the matters of the heart we tend to struggle with solutions even more, my wife and I have been together for about 12 years and married for 8 years. Our journey of love can take up the whole day, our paths crossed when both of us were at our lowest. My hope was to grown old with her but God had other plans with us, when the doctor told us her cancer is back my world came crumbling down on me. I knew what was ahead of us; I knew our twins will be left without a mother. I am proud of being her husband and I love being married to Goldie. But, God proved to be the decider of things and who am I to go against Him?

Goldie: Are you leaving for work now?

I looked at her

Me: I didn't hear you come in

Her: You seem lost in your own thoughts. I asked if you are going to work or not?

I stood up

Me: I will be working out of the office today so I'll be going later

Her: It means I'll take the twins to the school

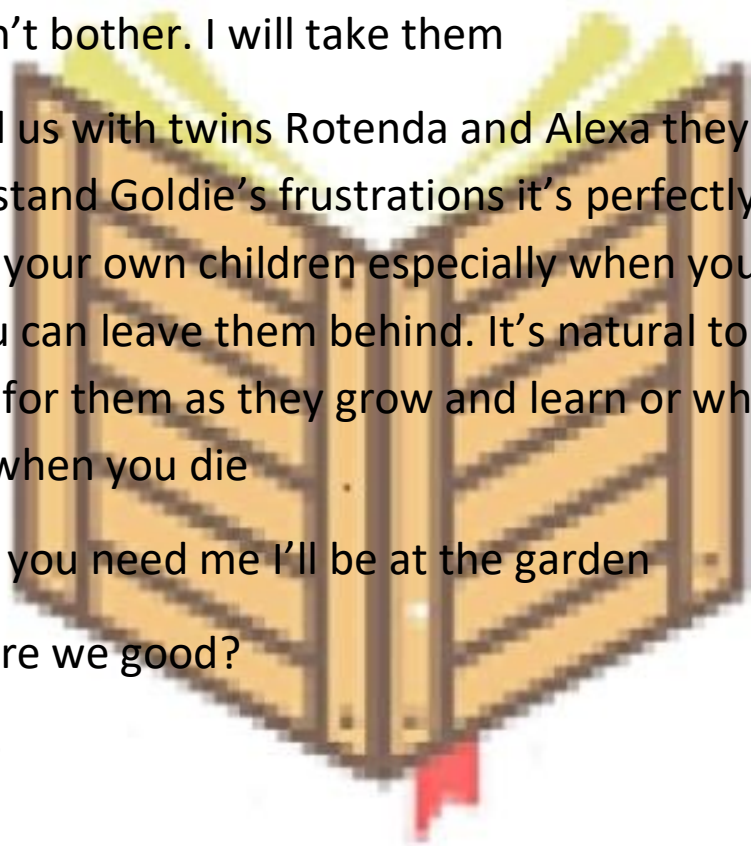
Me: No, don't bother. I will take them

God blessed us with twins Rotenda and Alexa they are 10 years old. I understand Goldie's frustrations it's perfectly normal to think about your own children especially when you know anytime you can leave them behind. It's natural to worry about being there for them as they grow and learn or who will look after them when you die

Her: Okay if you need me I'll be at the garden

Me: Babe, are we good?

Her: We are



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Me: Mimsey

My mother stopped on her tracks

Me: Where are you going so early in the morning?

Her: I have brunch with a friend. What do you want Ayden?

Me: Nothing, I just thought we will be having breakfast together

Her: No, your sister is here. You can eat with her

Me: Thanks but no thanks

I have a sister Amelia (22) currently in University. My father left our family for another woman since their split my mother has been in pieces. My mother was terrified of being alone so much that she begged for his love, she was willing to be treated as less that she is worth. But, as time goes she became a bigger person and let him go. When I am not running from the police I am behind the desk, I work at Tshivhase Insurance firm as a claim investigator. The company was started by my mother so it's safe to say it's a family business. I didn't really want to work there but I had to do something in order to keep police out of my way, I am Ayden Tshivhase (28)

Her: Your father called yesterday

Me: Okay

Her: Is that all you gonna say?

Me: Ha Mimsey what do you want me to say?

Her: Ask what he wanted

Me: I have no interest in him

Her: He is still your father Ayden

I chuckled softly

Me: Mimsey are we really going down that road again? Are you that blind to see that he's trying to fool you, again?

Her: He wanted to see you guys over the weekend

Me: You can play happy family but exclude me. I have no time to waste. You will enjoy your day

I kissed her cheek

My mother is naïve and ignorant and that drives me crazy. I don't know how I can prevent her from getting hurt again but if she wants to swim with sharks again, who am I to stop her?



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Ethan walked down the stairs



Out of nowhere fear crept over

Him: Morning Yara

Me: Morning sir

Him: Can I have two minutes of your time?

I nodded

Him: Goldie filled me in your little talk

Me: She told we spoke?

Him: What do you think? Yara, listen I don't mean anything bad but whatever Goldie said to you it will never come to pass

Me: Oh I see

Rejection can be painful but why am I feeling bad? Emotional rejection

Him: Both of us know they can never be love between us and I don't think you want to be caged in a loveless marriage. You are a lovely girl and any man would be happy to have you

Me: But that man is not you

NOVELSGURU.COM

The twins made their way to us laughing

Rotenda: Aunt Yara

He jumped into my arms

Me: Easy you will get hurt. How are you Alexa?

Alexa: Good aunt Yara

Him: Are you ready for school?

Rotenda: Daddy can aunt Yara take us today?

Him: Aunt is working

Advertisement

I will take you

Rotenda: Daddy please

Me: You will find me when you get back. Allow daddy to take you

Alexa: Where is mommy?

Him: She is resting

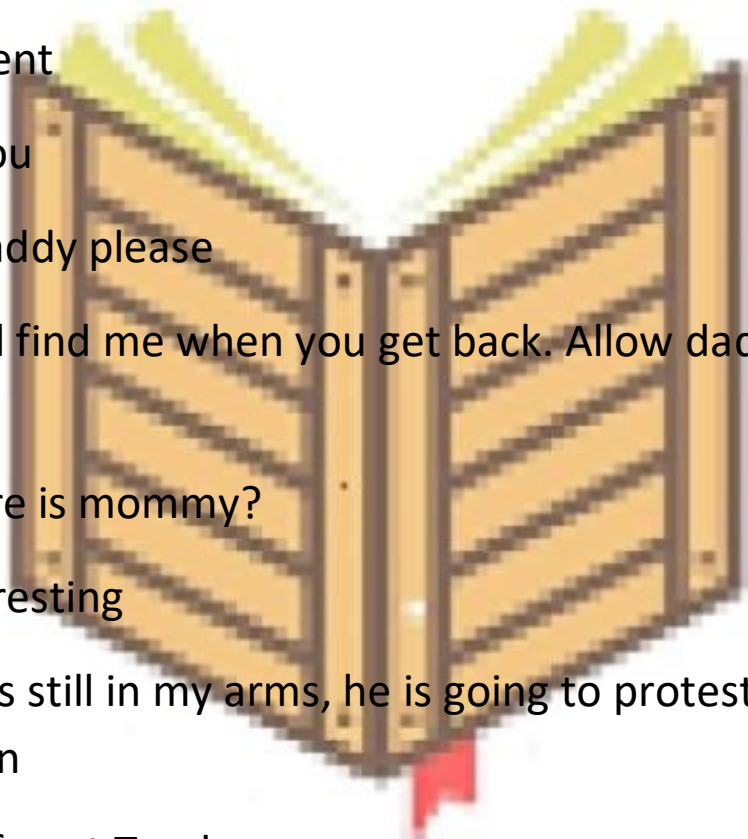
Rotenda was still in my arms, he is going to protest until his father give in

Him: Get off aunt Tenda

He shook his head no

Him: Yara change into something comfortable, you will take them to school

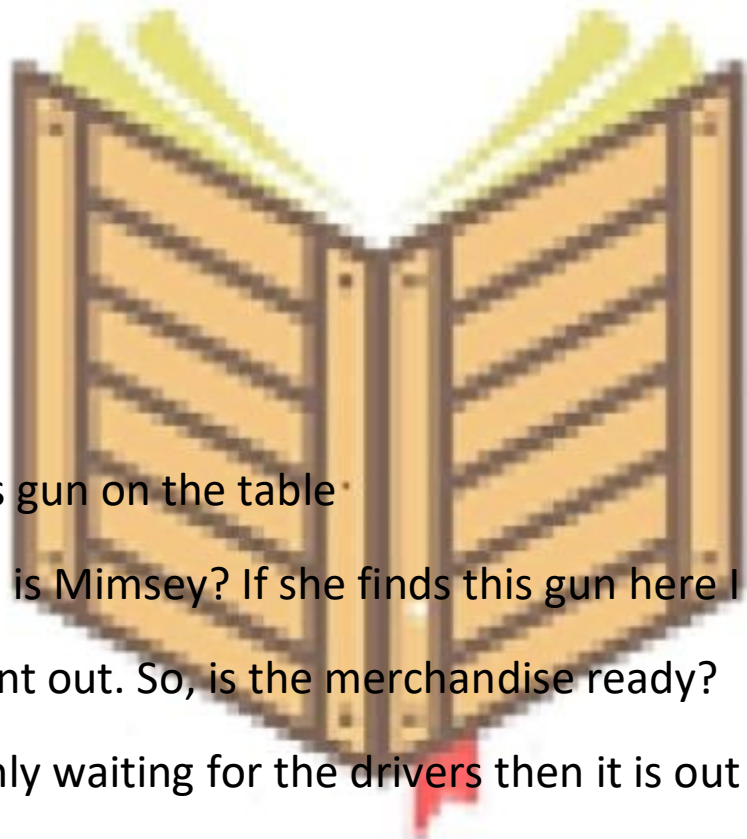
Alexa: But I want mommy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Don't give me that Lex. Aunt Yara will take you, case closed

My relationship with Lex is different compared to mine and Tenda. Lex is her mother's daughter



AYDEN

Viper set his gun on the table

Him: Where is Mimsey? If she finds this gun here I am dead

Me: She went out. So, is the merchandise ready?

Him: Yes, only waiting for the drivers then it is out of the country

Me: About that, do we really have to let those two drunkards ship the merchandise?

Him: Tooth is there anyone you trust with this shipment? We can't ship it out of the country and those two drunkards you talking about have experience

Me: Remember what happened last time, I don't like mess ups

Him: Nothing will go wrong, trust me. Maybe Panther will tag along

Me: Panther? He already said no

Amelia made her way to us

She was wearing baggy t-shirt, the shirt dropped down her buttocks

Her: Viper (Smiles)

Viper gave her a nod

Me: Amelia what did I say to you? I must rehearse this with you over and over?

Her: Chill I was just saying hi, I am heading to my bedroom

Me: Stop walking half-naked around my friends

Him: You still at that? Where trust dude?

Me: Hold it right there Viper and you go and get dressed

Her: Brother...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Now Amelia! (Clicks tongue)

GOLDIE

I was on the phone with my mother

I was letting her in on the decision I've made. The family has to know in case Ethan changes his mind, I don't want them to outcast Yara

Her: I don't know what to say Goldie

Me: Do you think I am selfish?

Her: You are looking out for your children but no Goldie. I understand why son-in-law is refusing, you are asking for a lot

Me: Oh mother, what do I do?

Her: You let everything be, I am still alive-I will take care of my grand children

I sighed

Me: I am not getting any better if anything I am getting worse. I am getting weaker and weaker, pains come and go. It's only matter of time be they find me lifeless

Her: I say enjoy this time left with your family, stop worrying about things that are above your ability. Let things take its course

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

3

YARA

Right when I stepped out of the school some weird guy softly whistled at me

I turned around

Me: Can I help you?

He looked at me

Me: And now you are staring

Him: Correction, looking

Me: Still you didn't answer my question

He walked up to me

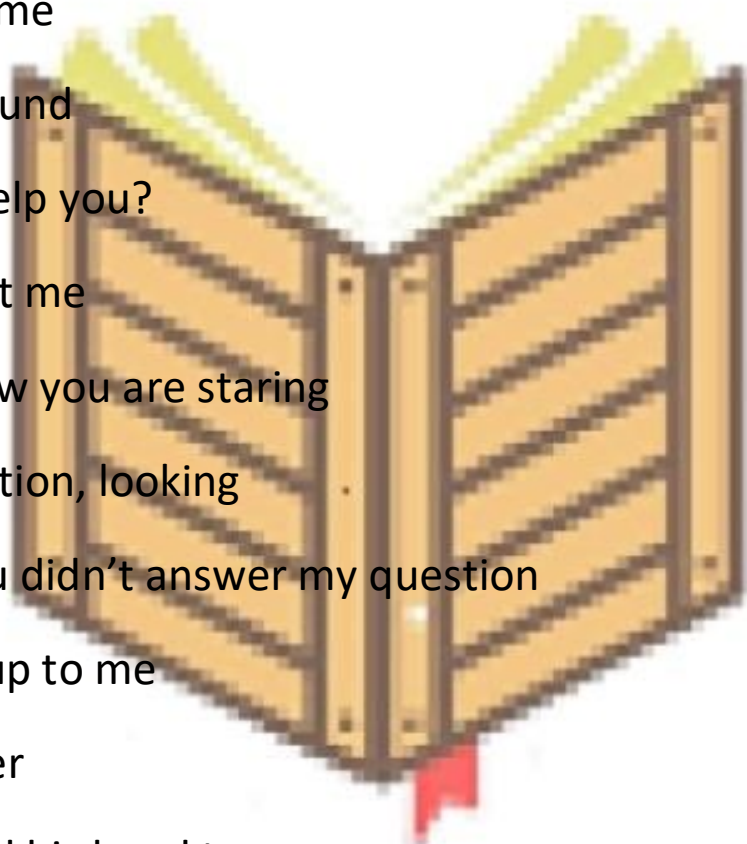
Him: Panther

He extended his hand to me

Me: Sorry Pan...

Him: Panther (Smiles)

Me: Yeah that, can you please excuse me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: That actually hurts, you refused my handshake and now you are pushing me out of the way

Me: That would teach you manners

Him: Wow, isn't too early to be grumpy?

I looked at him

Me: Panther or whoever you are, you don't know me and I don't know you, I suggest we keep it that way. You go your way and I go mine. Okay?

I faked a smile

Him: We will surely meet again

Me: I don't wish to

Him: Qaphela ukuthi ungawi (Be careful to not fall)

Jerk!



ELISA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Maybe I am also being selfish instead of telling Yara to not consider the marriage I am actually telling her to go ahead with

it. I also have reasons of my own; this marriage will take Yara out of this dungeon. At any time I can die and if I do Yara will be left with no one at least Mr Ethan will take care of her. I can't put my hope on Mimi, she has since left and God knows when she will come back

My phone rang, it was unknown

Me: Hello

Voice: When am I getting my mother?

Oh the loan shark

Me: Oh it's you

Him: Of course it's me. When am I getting my money, you haven't given me any in the last two months and interests are not waiting for you

Me: You will get your money

Advertisement

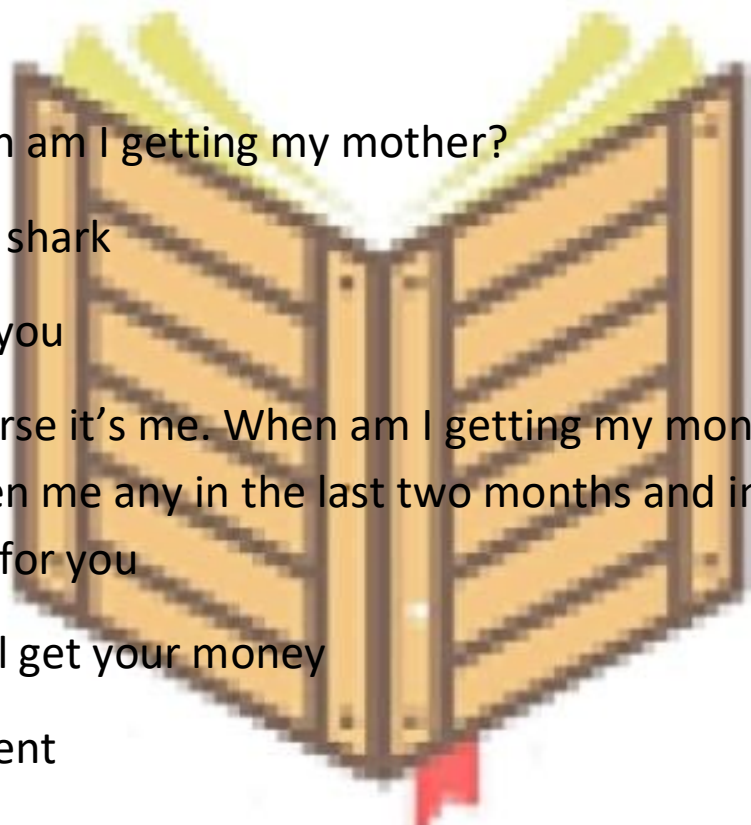
I promise you

Him: I would really hate to hurt your daughter

Me: Leave Yara out of this, you will get your money

Him: I lack patience

He hung up



NOVELSGURU.COM



ETHAN

My assistant opened the door

Her: Sir, your brother is here to see you

Me: Let him in

Seconds later Noah walked in

Him: Mr architect himself

I am an architect at MAA architects and also a shareholder

Me: You didn't say you were coming

Him: I called you

I checked my phone, it was on silent

Him: Don't say it

He sat down

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: Should be asking you that

Me: Elaborate



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Goldie called mom last night

She did not!

Him: Is your wife crazy?

Me: She is anything but crazy

Him: How do you explain this?

Me: She is not thinking straight that's all

Him: Try telling your mother that

Me: Is she considering it as well?

He nodded

Him: Do you like this girl?

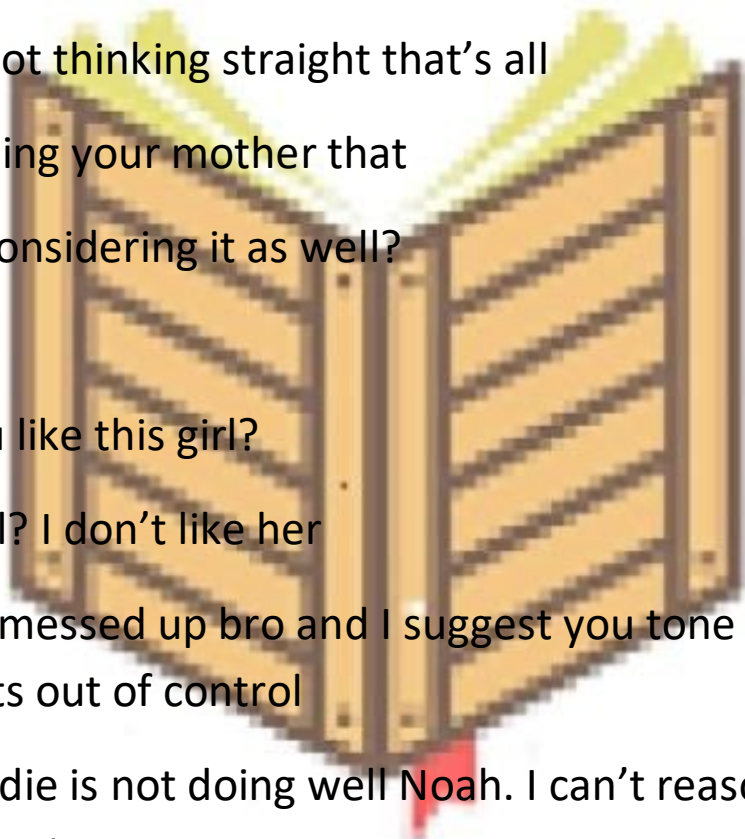
Me: The hell? I don't like her

Him: This is messed up bro and I suggest you tone it down before it gets out of control

Me: No, Goldie is not doing well Noah. I can't reason with her at this moment

Him: Then get ready to marry that girl

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

I received a call from Nosizwe

Nosizwe is my best friend, she is originally from Eastern Cape, she moved to Limpopo with her mother 5 years ago that's also the period of our friendship. Unlike me Nos is a manager at some restaurant. My friend is really trying to make something for herself

Her: Secrets

Me: How are you?

Her: Ndiyaphila wena unjani? (I'm fine and you)

Me: Good

Her: Jonga I saw some posts on the internet and I think you should try your luck

Me: What posts?

Her: Tshivhase insurance firm is looking for a receptionist and personal assist, I've gone through their requirements and you qualify. Ndic'nga ukuba kufuneka ufake isicelo (I think you should apply)

Me: Wow I wanted something like this, enkosi minion (Thank you)



NOVELSURU.COM

Her: I'll pass by your house later

Me: Let me get back to work

Her: Bye

AYDEN

I rested my arms on the table

Me: Did you sort the advert for the posts?

Her: I did sir

Me: Your pregnancy is forcing me to work with someone, ha  
Melisa man

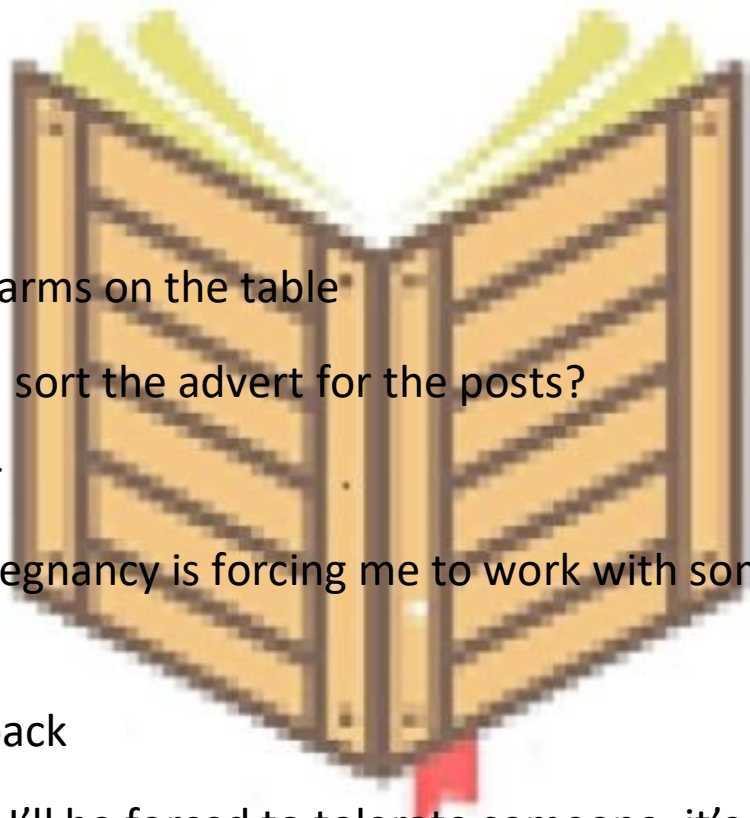
Her: I'll be back

Me: So long I'll be forced to tolerate someone, it's fine

She gave me a file **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: This came for you-the claim of Mrs Williams

Me: I don't trust this lady one bit for all we know she started  
that fire

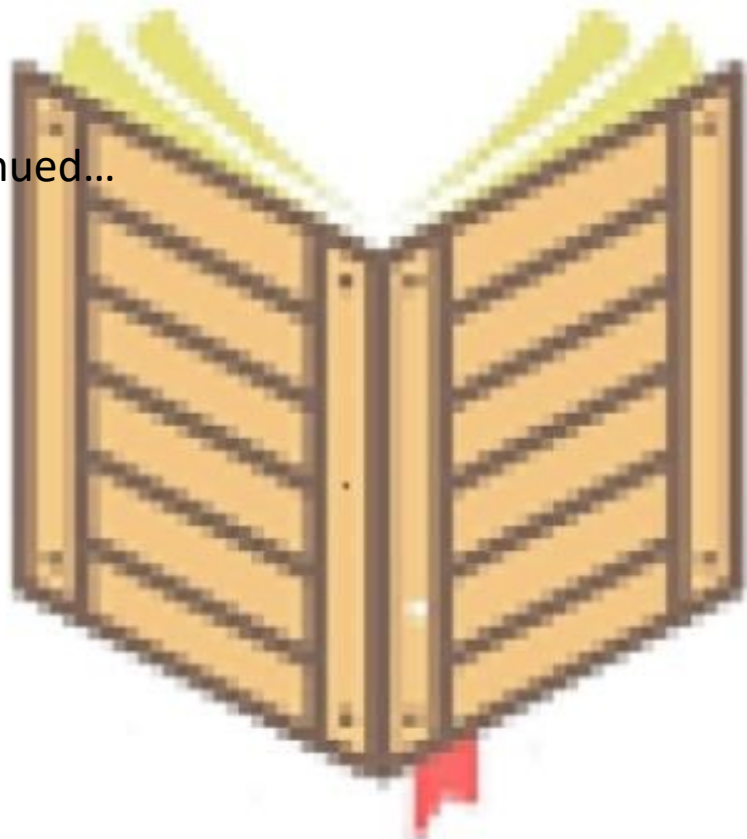


She chuckled

Me: Let me take a look on it before I judge her. I'll see you but hold any call for about 30 minutes

My phone beeped. It was a message from Panther saying one of our drivers is arrested

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

4

ETHAN

After my conversation with my little brother I felt the need to go and see my mother. Maybe she will shed some light into this mess

I sat across her

Her: Where is Noah? I thought he was with you

Me: He said something about seeing his client, I am not sure

She gave me a slight nod

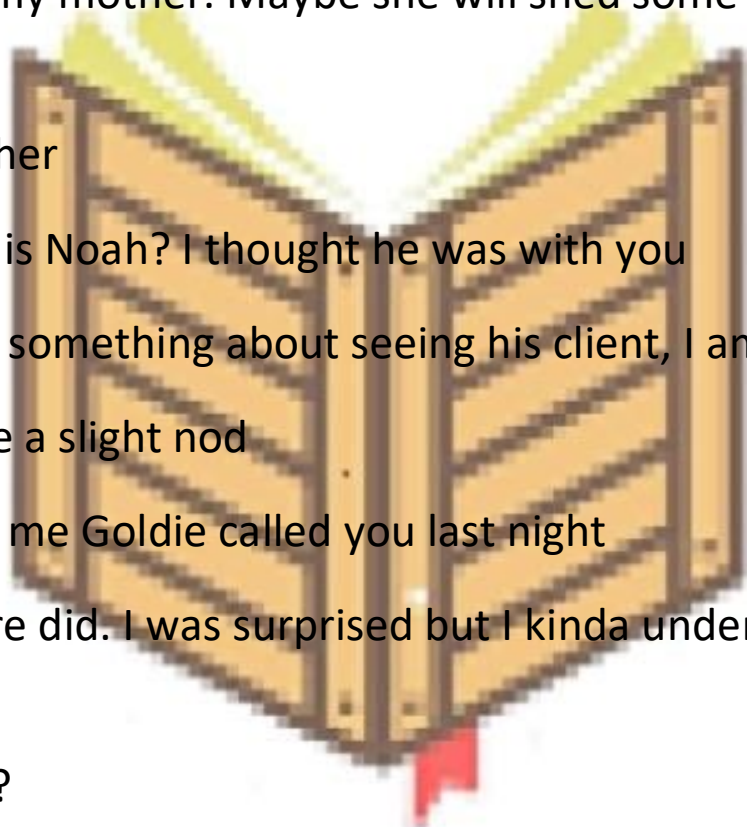
Me: He told me Goldie called you last night

Her: She sure did. I was surprised but I kinda understand her reasons

Me: You do?

Her: She is thinking as a mother and there's nothing wrong with that

Me: But choosing a wife for me, don't you think that's too much?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I know Yara, she basically grew in my eyes and I trust Goldie's judgement. Yara is well brought up and she adores your children and they do too. Ethan love isn't always foundation of marriage; if respect exists between both of you then I see nothing wrong with that

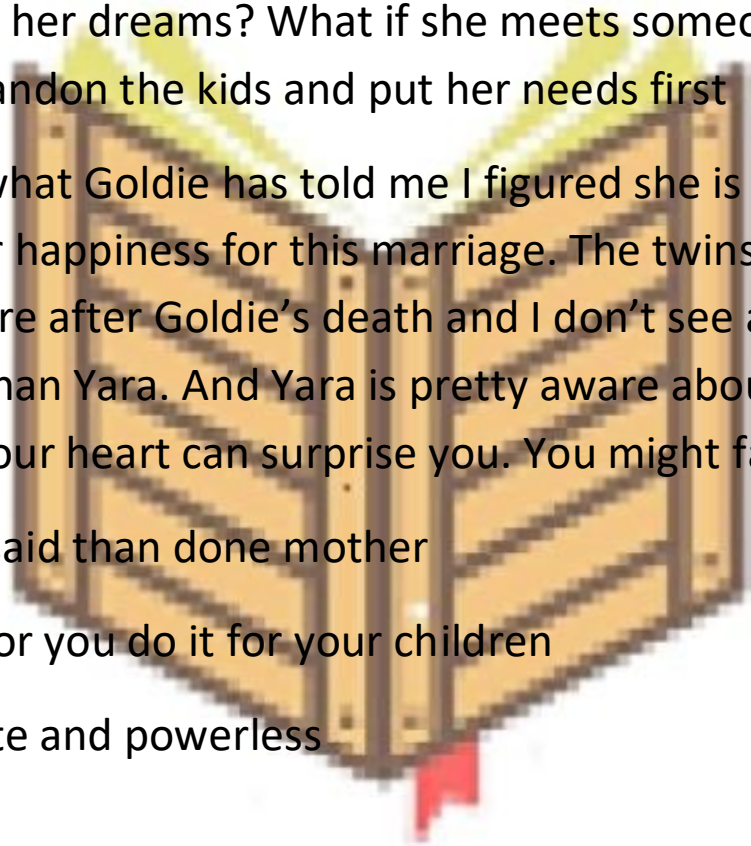
Me: This is a burden to her, imagine having to tolerate me. What about her dreams? What if she meets someone, she is going to abandon the kids and put her needs first

Her: From what Goldie has told me I figured she is ready to sacrifice her happiness for this marriage. The twins will need a mother figure after Goldie's death and I don't see anyone giving them that than Yara. And Yara is pretty aware about this marriage; your heart can surprise you. You might fall for her

Me: Easier said than done mother

Her: If not for you do it for your children

I feel delicate and powerless



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I softly knocked on the door

Me: Ma'am, are you asleep?

She raised her head

Her: No, come in Yara

I stepped inside

Me: Can we talk before I knock off?

She sat up straight

Her: Please take a seat

Me: About your request...

Her eyes lighten, little does she know. Ethan wants nothing to do with me and I am not going to force him. He is not even willing to give it a try, do I blame him? No.

Me: I am sorry but I won't be your husband's wife. Even if I want to...

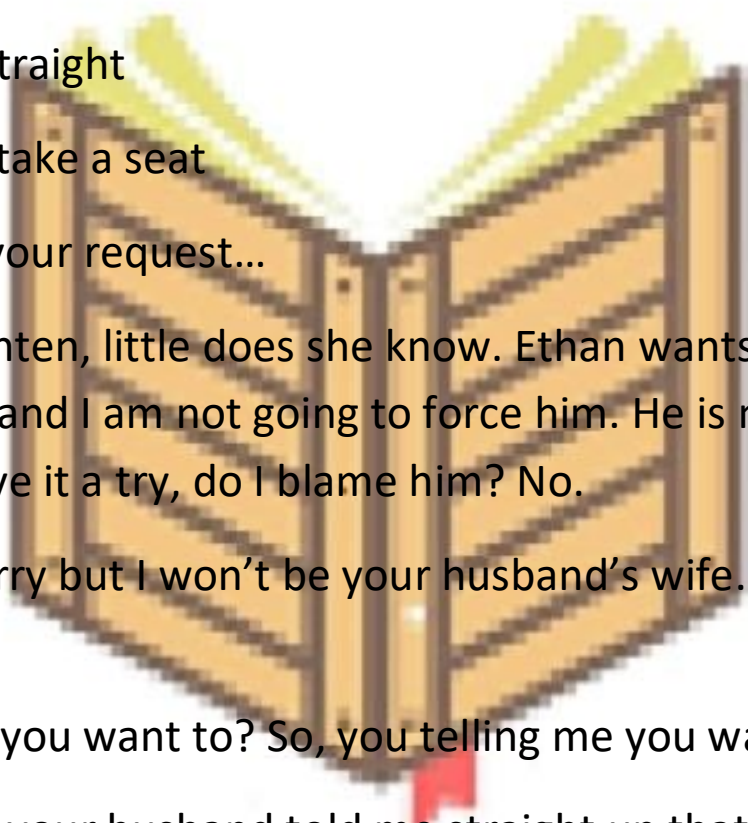
Her: Even if you want to? So, you telling me you wanted to?

Me: Yes but your husband told me straight up that it will never come to pass. Mr Ethan will never agree to it and there's nothing we can do

Her: Ethan talked with you? He didn't say anything to me

Me: I shouldn't have said anything but I thought you knew

She shook her head no





Her: I knew he will never agree but I had hope. And with the pressure... He will never agree to it

Me: Rest assured I will always look after the twins. Even if I find a job elsewhere I will be in contact with them, I promise you

She smiled faintly

Her: Until Ethan find someone else. What sin have I committed to be punished like this? My children are still young to be separated from me they still need my guidance and protection. I am emotionally exhausted, no matter what I do or say I am still going to leave this earth and everyone will move on with their lives

Me: Don't be too hard on yourself

Her: I can't help it. I feel like I am going to control my husband even in death

I noticed her hands were trembling slightly

Me: No, and Ethan is aware of that. Mr Ethan will never do anything to put his children in danger and I trust his judgement. If he moves on he will move on with someone who will give the twins unconditional love ma'am

ELISA

I was calculating the money I owe the loan shark and it was now too much, I won't be able to pay him. The money Yara gives me can hardly pay the interests

I called my eldest daughter

Advertisement

Mimi

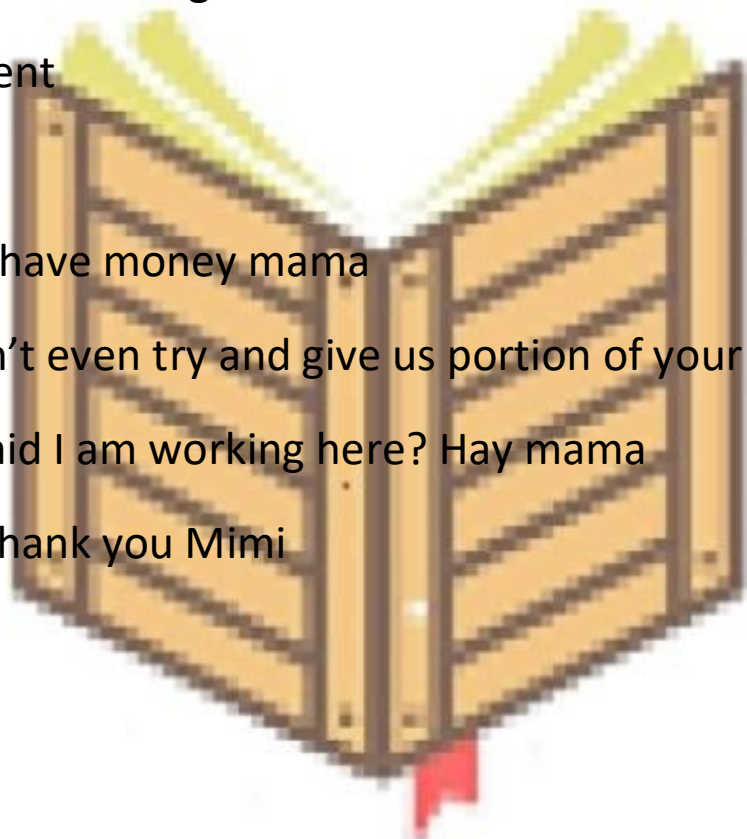
Her: I don't have money mama

Me: You can't even try and give us portion of your money?

Her: Who said I am working here? Hay mama

Me: Wow, thank you Mimi

I hung up



GOLDIE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Rotenda and Alexa jumped into the bed

Me: Do you always have to jump?

A frown left their faces

Tenda: Mommy why didn't you take us to school today? We missed you

Me: Mommy wasn't feeling well

Lex: Is mommy feeling well now?

I gave them slight nod

Tenda: Aunt Yara bought us milkshakes

Lex: Why are you fussing over that? Is not like mommy doesn't

Me: For a 10 year old you got lot to say Lex

Tenda: I love aunt Yara mommy, she always makes sure I am well fed and happy. She is so much like mommy

Me: She does?

Tenda: Yes mommy, she does

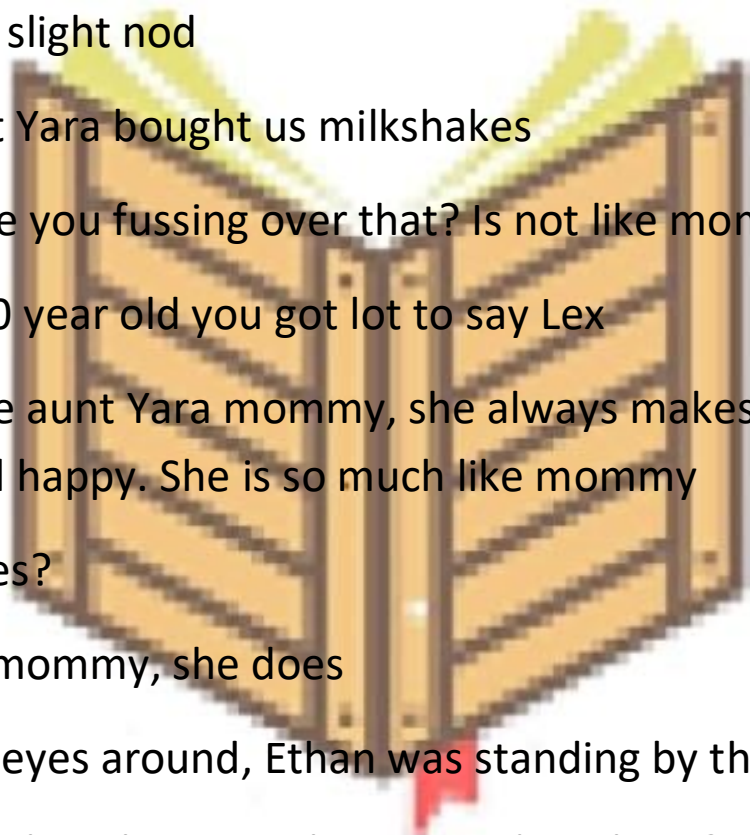
I darted my eyes around, Ethan was standing by the door

Me: For how long have you been standing there?

Him: Long enough to eavesdrop

Me: You two off you go. Go and take a bath before you do your homework

I kissed them



NOVELSGURU.COM

Both: Daddy!

He smiled and closed the door

Him: My wife how are you feeling?

Me: Still alive

He climbed the bed and snuggled me

Him: I see the kids are fond of Yara

Me: It's no-brainer

Him: I will marry her

I raised my head

Him: I am not doing this for you but for my children, your death is going to break them into pieces. They are not prepared...

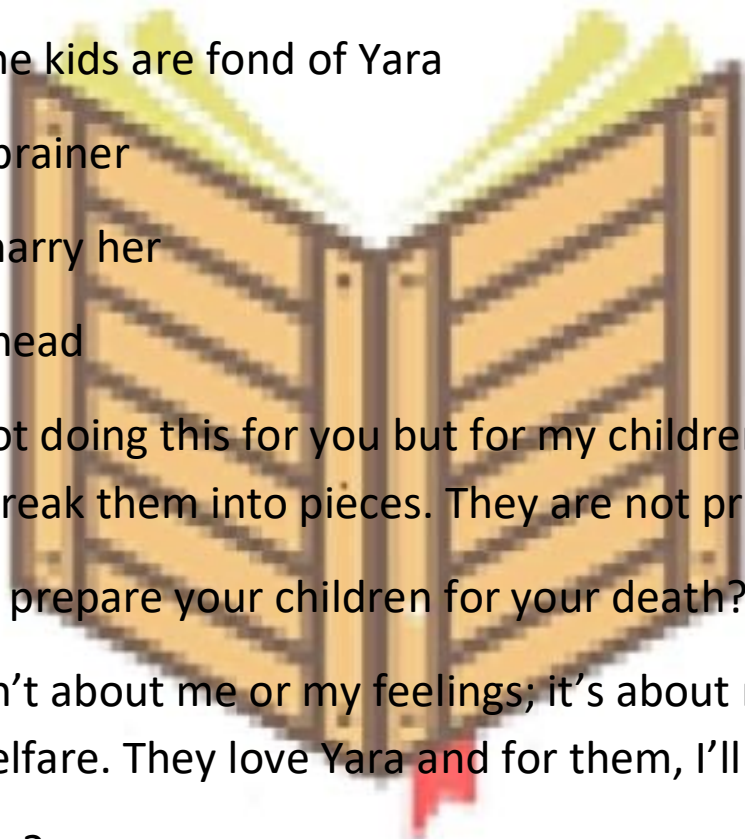
How do you prepare your children for your death?

Him: This isn't about me or my feelings; it's about my children and their welfare. They love Yara and for them, I'll do anything

Me: You sure?

Him: I am. But, Yara must know her limits; they will never be love between us. She can do whatever she wants but not in my presence. Long as she respect me and our marriage, how it will pan out I still don't know but I am ready to give it a try

Me: Thank you babe



NOVELSGURU.COM

I gave him a peck

Me: I have another request...

Him: What now Goldie?

Me: Can you please finance her studies; she has always wanted to hold a degree

Him: There won't be any need for me to do that; she will use the money for Lobola to further her studies. I'll make sure it's enough

Me: That's all I want

Now I can die in peace. Knowing that Ethan will not marry another woman gives me peace. Yes, I am jealous of the woman he will fall in love with but I am also acting as a mother. Yara will be the best mother to my children

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosizwe was showing me the advert. The salary is good compared to the one I am earning right now. If I get this job I'll be able to save maybe in a year or two I'll find myself in Varsity

Me: First thing tomorrow I am going to apply for this minion

Her: I have a good feeling you will get this job

I nodded repeatedly

Her: Out with it

Me: What?

Her: Ucinga ntoni? (You thinking about what)

Me: I spoke with Goldie

Her: Finally you did, she was being ridiculous. She should be focusing on her husband instead of playing cupid

Me: Nos...

Her: Intoni? Uyaphambana (What? She's crazy)

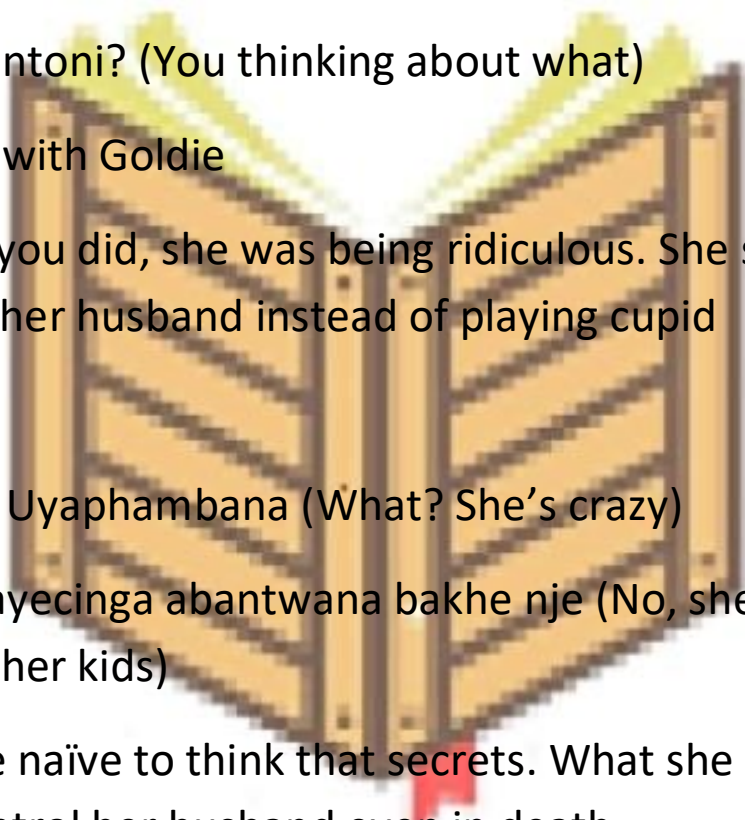
Me: Hayi wayecinga abantwana bakhe nje (No, she was just thinking for her kids)

Her: You are naïve to think that secrets. What she is doing is trying to control her husband even in death

Me: You never liked her

Her: Because she is self-centred and by the time you realise that I'd be too late. As for you madam, you will be stuck in a loveless marriage

Me: Now I regret telling you



Her: No, don't be

My mother walked in

Ma: My children

Nos: Mama how are you?

Ma: Well and you Nos?

Nos: Reasoning with your daughter

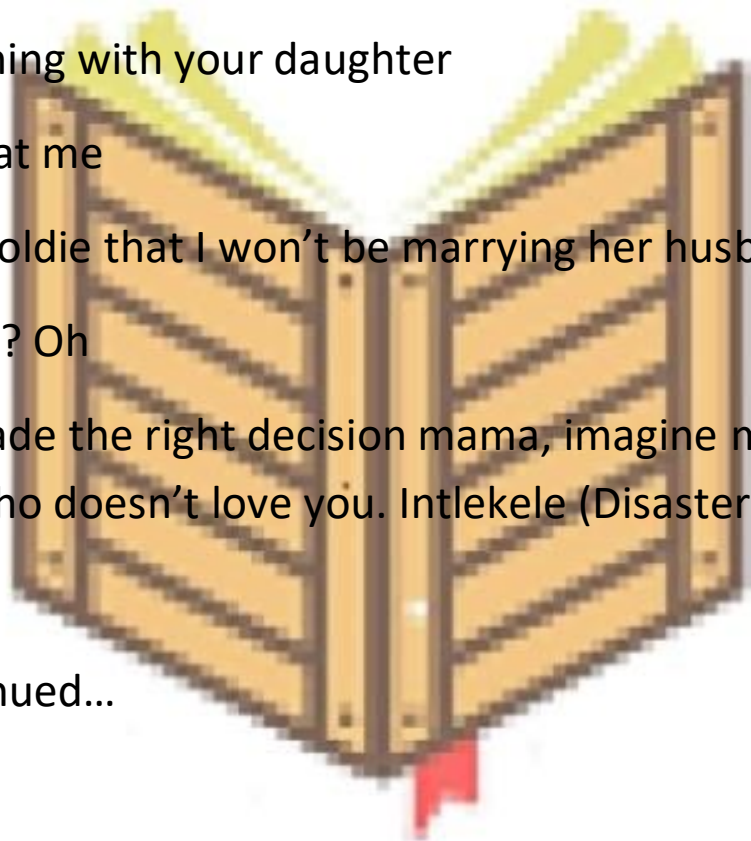
She looked at me

Me: I told Goldie that I won't be marrying her husband

Ma: You did? Oh

Nos: She made the right decision mama, imagine marrying someone who doesn't love you. Intlekele (Disaster)

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

5

YARA

Last night I heard my mother sobbing and praying. I just hope she is not feeling sick again, I don't have money to take her to the doctor

I walked into her drinking tea

Me: Morning

Her: Morning

Me: You look like someone who didn't get any sleep

Her: Just ask why I was sobbing last night because I know you heard me

I kept quiet

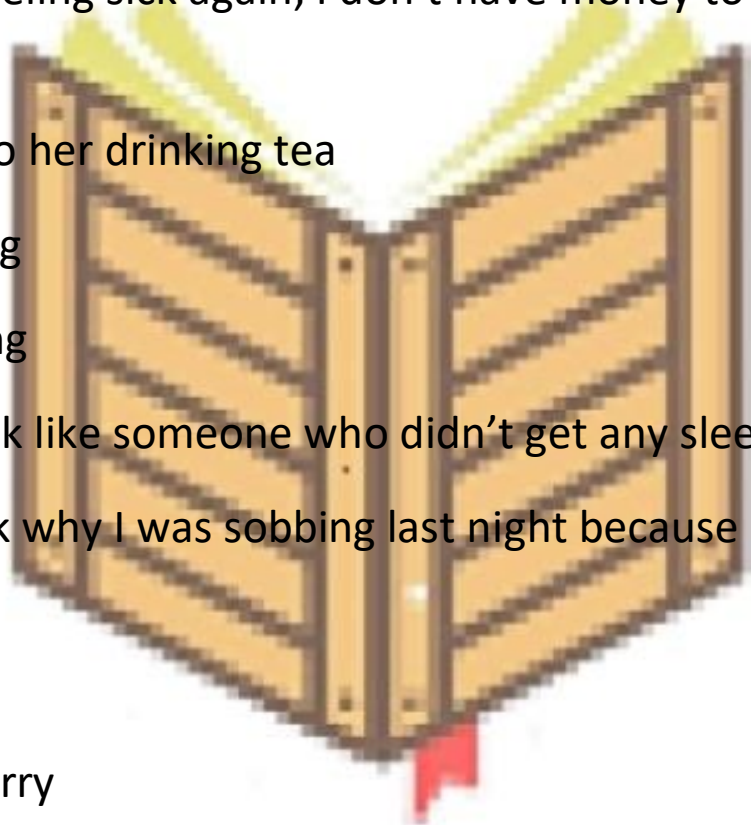
Her: I am sorry

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: What made you change your mind?

Me: It felt right

She gave me a slight nod



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Is that the reason why you were up crying and praying?

Her: I owe someone money Yara

I looked at her

Her: A loan shark to be exact. I haven't paid him in 2 months...

Me: What are you saying? What possessed you to owe money when I give you something every month?

Her: I wanted some personal things and I wasn't going to ask you for money. You've done enough for me

Me: So your best solution was to go to a loan shark... How much do you owe?

Her: R5000.00 with interests included

Me: Unbelievable!

(Knock on door)

Me: You are selfish mom

I went to open the door



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

AYDEN

The arrest of one of our drivers is compromising the mission. If that guy knows what's good for him, he will keep his mouth shut

I poured myself a cup of coffee

Her: When are you starting with interviews?

Me: The advert is up for 3 weeks so hopefully month end

Her: And I don't want you to conduct the interviews

Me: Reason being?

Her: How many girls did you employ because of their looks? And did they last long?

Me: Mimsey I am old now, I have a fiancée

Her: As if you didn't have one before

Me: You can conduct the interview I don't care just make sure you hire someone who will tolerate me

Her: I won't do things on your terms. We are talking about my company here Ayden

I took a bite of my toast

GOLDIE

Yara set pot of tea on the table

Ethan: I see you are getting better mama

Elisa: You can say that my son. I was getting tired of going in and out of hospital

Story of my life

Me: We won't waste time

Yara: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine. We are here because we wanted to give you the news in front of your mother

Elisa: What news Goldie?

Me: Ethan has agreed to take Yara as his wife

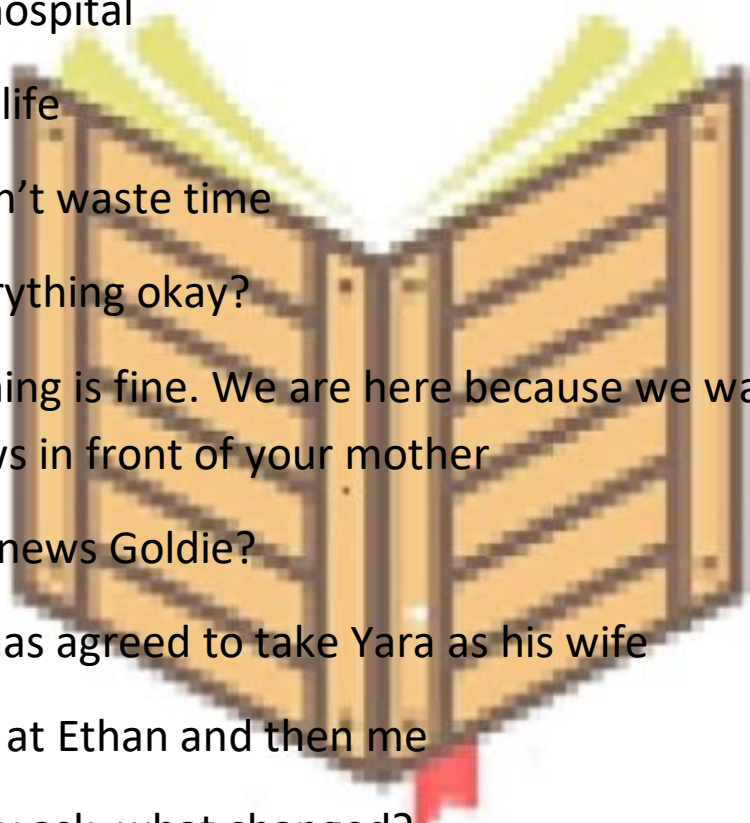
Yara looked at Ethan and then me

Yara: If I may ask, what changed?

Ethan: I am doing this for my children and also giving my wife assurance that her kids will be taken care of

Elisa: Yara has already changed her mind

Me: Yara?



Yara: I did what was fair, I was sure Mr Ethan will never agree to this

Ethan: You can't blame me, it was a bombshell. I needed time to think things through, I couldn't just jump to yes, I'll marry you Yara

Me: And now we are on the same page Yara. What do you think Ma Elisa?

Elisa: I support Goldie, it must have been very hard to come to this decision

Me: It wasn't easy but I had to be the bigger person and do it for the sake of my children

Yara: Okay, we will go ahead with the marriage

Me: Thank you so much Yara. You have no idea how grateful I am to you

Ethan checked time on his wrist watch

Ethan: If there's nothing else

Advertisement **NOVELSGURU.COM**

we will be off mama

Elisa: You will not have tea with us?

Ethan: Have to go to work. Wife?

Me: I will follow with Yara, you can go ahead

He kissed my cheek and stood up

PANTHER

I sat across Viper

A cigar was resting between my lips. I was coming from dropping my nephew at school

Him: Today you didn't come back smiling, what's wrong?

Me: My crush didn't come

Him: You may have scared her off (Laughs) in fact what's so special about this girl? You never chase after a girl Lindokuhle

Me: This one is different from all the girls I've been with brother

Him: How well do you even know this girl?

Me: Isn't about knowing her but what my heart feels like when I see her

Lately I've been eyeing this girl and I have to say I am taken by her. I've never been one to love and commit to a relationship, I've also had my share with girls but none of them have won my heart. But, there's something about this girl, something that

attract me to her. Who would have thought one day Lindokuhle will fall in love? Life has a way to tame you down

Me: Craig there's life besides being a gangster

Him: I just hope this poor girl is ready for what is coming her way

Me: You make it sound like I am made of stone. What's so hard about loving someone?

Unlike me, Craig (Viper) has a wife and a kid. He's doing a pretty job as a family man and also a gangster

Him: Let me not say a thing little brother. Time will tell, I am sure of that

YARA

I've gathered my courage and send my application. The marriage issue won't change my mind about wanting a different job and I am crossing fingers to get it. "If you don't hear anything from us after 3 weeks of applying, consider your application unsuccessful" it's going to be three long weeks of praying

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I took the chicken out of the freezer and defrost it; I was preparing lunch for Goldie

My phone rang, it was Mimi

Me: Sisters

Her: How are you nana?

Me: Good and you?

Her: Not good at all

Me: What's going on?

Her: I need some cash butterfly

Me: It's not even month end, where am I gonna get the money from?

Her: It's an emergency; I'll pay you. I promise butterfly

This is proof that my sister is doing nothing in Gauteng, I don't know if it's pride or what but if I were her I'd come back home

Me: How much do you need?

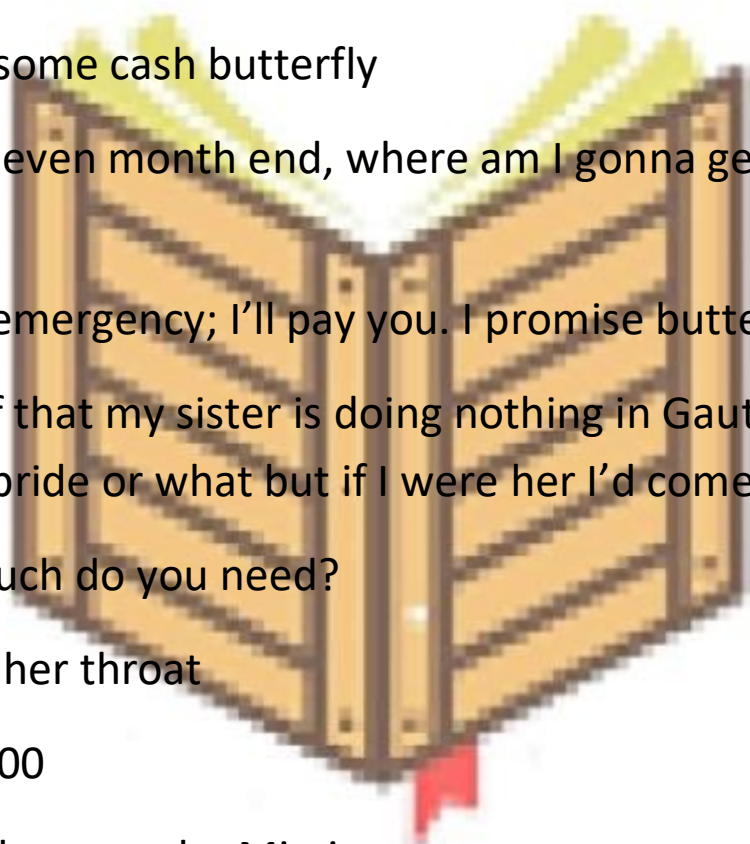
She cleared her throat

Her: R1000.00

Me: So much money ha Mimi

Her: Please. I wouldn't be asking if it was not an emergency

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

6

ETHAN

I was on the phone with my mother

Ma: You did what any husband would do

Me: You know what's funny about this entire thing mom? It means I am stepping in acceptance, I am accepting that Goldie is dying

Ma: Ethan...

Me: I am not ready, I am not. Why is God punishing us?

Ma: We can never question God my son

My assistant called my office

Me: Mom let me attend to something, I'll call you

I hung up

Me: Hello Portia **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Assistant: Sir Mr Tshivhase has arrived

Me: Tell him to come in

I hung





The door opened and he stepped inside

Him: Mr Liremi

Me: Please take a seat Mr Tshivhase

Ayden Tshivhase sat down

Him: Thank you for seeing me; I've been chasing an appointment with you

Me: You'll forgive me but we get lot of appointments and it's a mission to squeeze everyone one in

Him: No problem at all. As I've already said on the phone, we are thinking of having another firm just outside town so we need MAA to draw a plan for Tshivhase firm. It mustn't be too different from the existing one. I don't know if it's possible

Me: Anything is possible. What you can do is forward me the design plan for the existing one and I'll see what we can come up with

Him: How long do you think it can take you? I am asking because we supposed to start with building in about 2 months

Me: It can take anywhere from 1-2 months-this is a big project

Him: I'll hear from you

He stood up

YARA

I am on my lunch break. I decided to go and see Nos; she is going to be furious when I tell her about the marriage

I sat down

Her: Did you send the CV?

Me: Yes, I did. Crossing fingers

Her: Don't stress, you'll get the job. The sooner you get out of that house the better

I looked down

Her: Intoni?

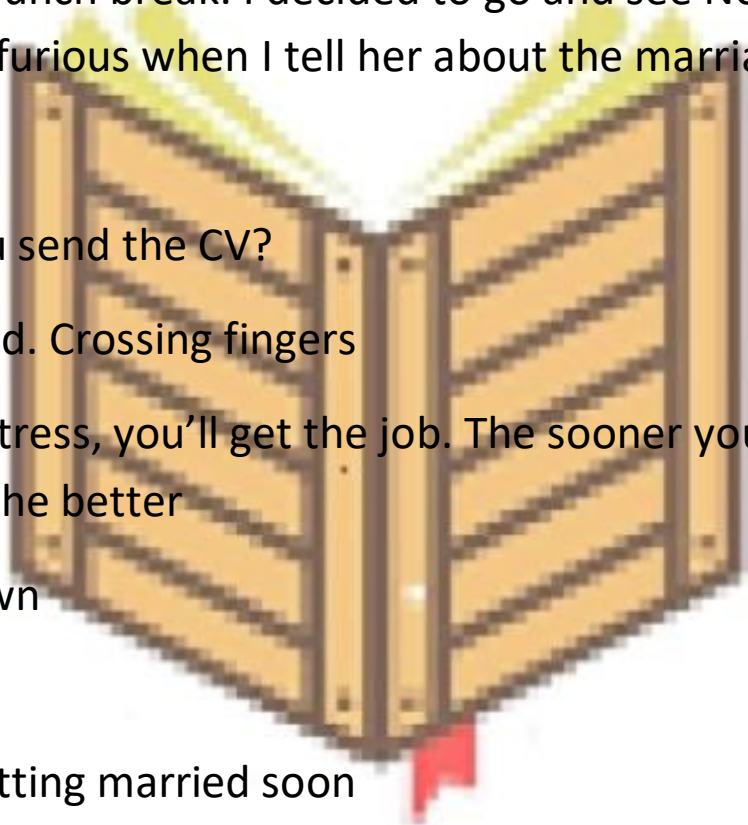
Me: I am getting married soon

The words came as silently as a whisper

She laughed

Her: Stop with joking man

Me: I am not joking



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Ingaba uphambene Yara? (Are you crazy?)

She stood up

Her: What nonsense is this?

Me: You don't understand Nos and I don't expect you to understand but at least respect it

Her: Do you have any idea what you are getting yourself into? This is not a joke Yara, we talking about a lifetime with a man you don't love

Me: Nos...

Her: Uyamthanda? (Do you love him?)

I shook my head quickly

Me: No, how can you ask me such a question?

Her: Then why are you fighting to get married to him? What could it be more important than your sanity?

Me: This is my opportunity to get out of my situation, this marriage is my ticket

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: That's why you've applied for that job

Me: Do you realise I might not get that job?

Her: You are so boring

I knew Nos was not going to understand but this reaction

Advertisement

I didn't expect it

GOLDIE

I balanced myself and rose from the couch

Rotenda was busy doing his homework

Me: Ouch!

I felt a sharp pain in my lower right abdomen

Me: Nana please call daddy

Him: Mommy...

He stood up and walked up to me

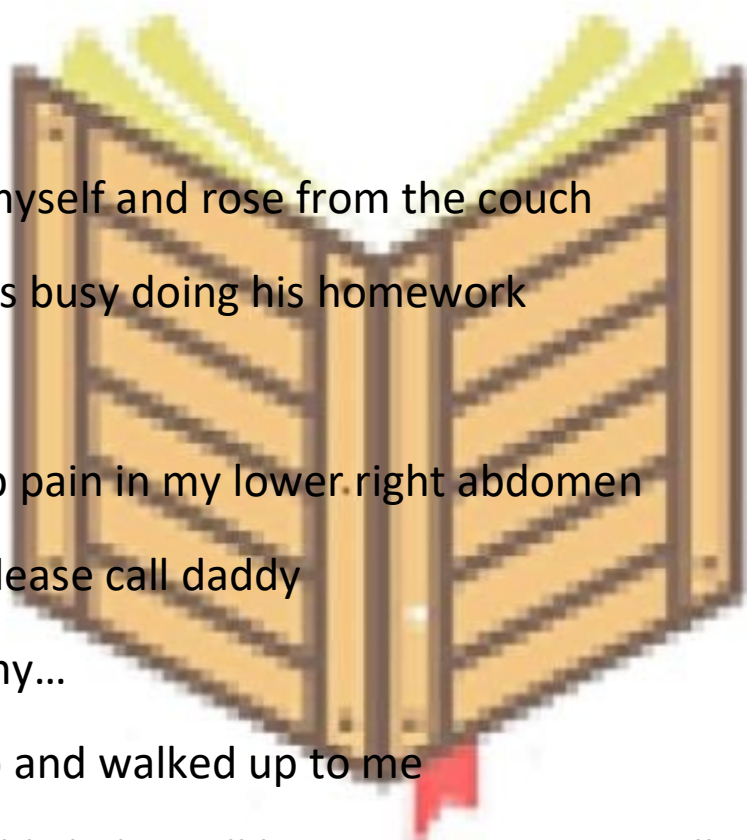
Me: Call daddy baby, tell him mommy is not well

He ran to the phone and called him

I was struggling to breathe. My throat was very dry

Me: Oh Lord! Not now, please

Rotenda ran back to me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Daddy said he's coming mommy

Me: Get me water baby

ELISA

I received a call from Mimi

Me: Now you want my help?

Her: I just need you to talk with Yara mama; you won't like collecting my dead body

Me: Are you in some kind of problem?

Her: Yes, and I need money to settle the debt. Soon as I pay this people I am coming back home

Me: I am not promising you anything but I'll take with her. You know your sister...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: That's why you must talk with her; she listens to you than me

Me: In the meantime stay far from trouble Mimi

Her: I will try

YARA

I kept on checking time

It's been an hour since they've left but they say no news is bad news. I walked to the garden, Lex and Tenda were playing

Me: I think you've played enough for one day

Tenda: Give us 10 more minutes aunt

Me: Don't bribe me young man

Lex: If you are going back inside do that alone, I am still playing

Me: Lex you know what happens when you catch a cold...

Lex: You not my mother aunt Yara

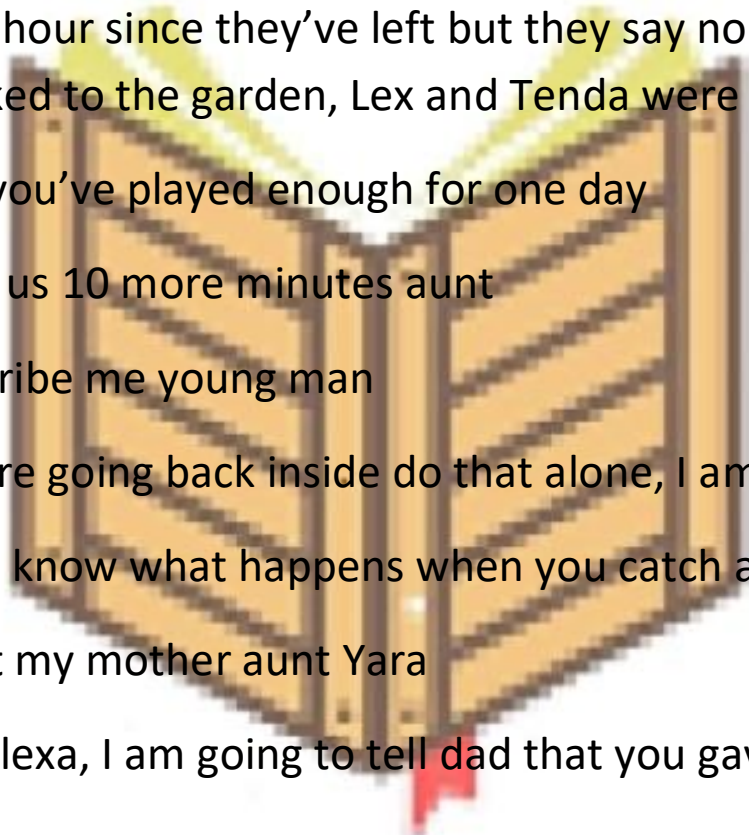
Tenda: Ha Alexa, I am going to tell dad that you gave aunt Yara an attitude

Me: Let her be Tenda

I faked a smile

Lex: Are you playing or you are going back?

Tenda stood up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lex: Suit yourself

She continued to play

ETHAN

Goldie was just staring into the space. The doctor took her blood sample for tests

Me: Babe?

She kept quiet

Me: Come on, you won't talk with me now?

When Rotenda called me I thought the worst has happened. I didn't want my child to witness his mother's agony

Her: And say what? I am exhausted and I am in pain

(Door opens)

NOVELSGURU.COM

The doctor walked beside her bed

Me: Doc what's going on with my wife?

Doc: Mr Liremi I wish I was bearing good news but Mrs Liremi is showing signs and symptoms that suggest she may be entering her final days of life

Goldie didn't react to his statement

Me: Doc it can't be. There must be something

Doc: There's nothing we can do, I'd advise you to let her spend time with her loved ones

Even when her death was expected, it is normal for me to feel sense of shock and disbelief

Goldie: Ethan can you please take me home?

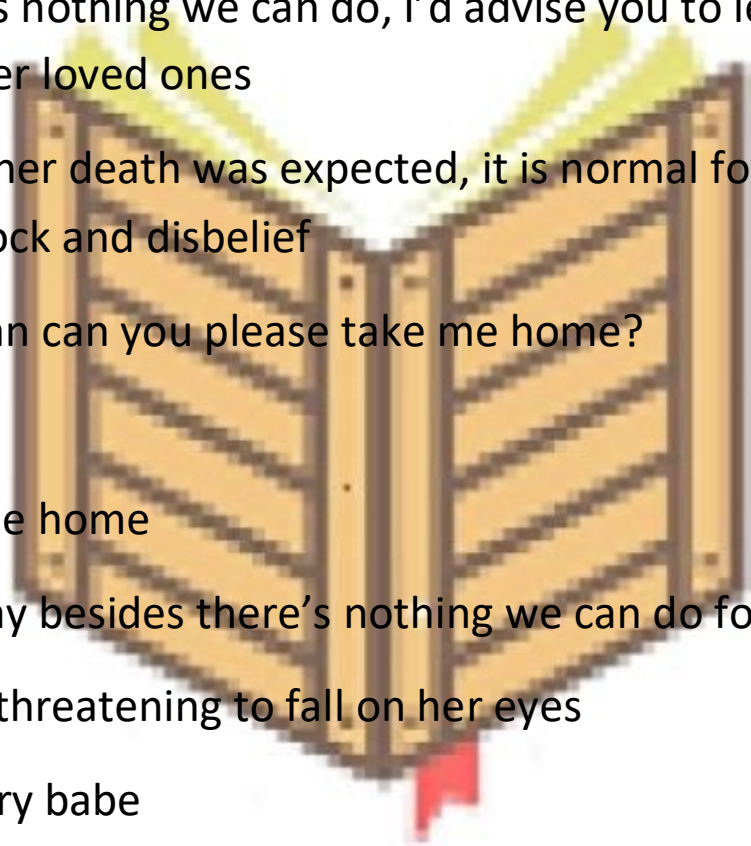
Me: Babe...

Her: Take me home

Doc: It's okay besides there's nothing we can do for her

Tears were threatening to fall on her eyes

Me: Don't cry babe



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...



7

AYDEN

Panther leaned against the wall

He called me to come and meet with him at the warehouse

Me: Why am I here?

I shifted my eyes to the man who was tied up

Me: What the fuck bro? Who is this?

Him: Someone who is going to help us with the issue of that asshole

I noticed a police badge

Me: Tell me you didn't! He is a police officer for Pete's sake

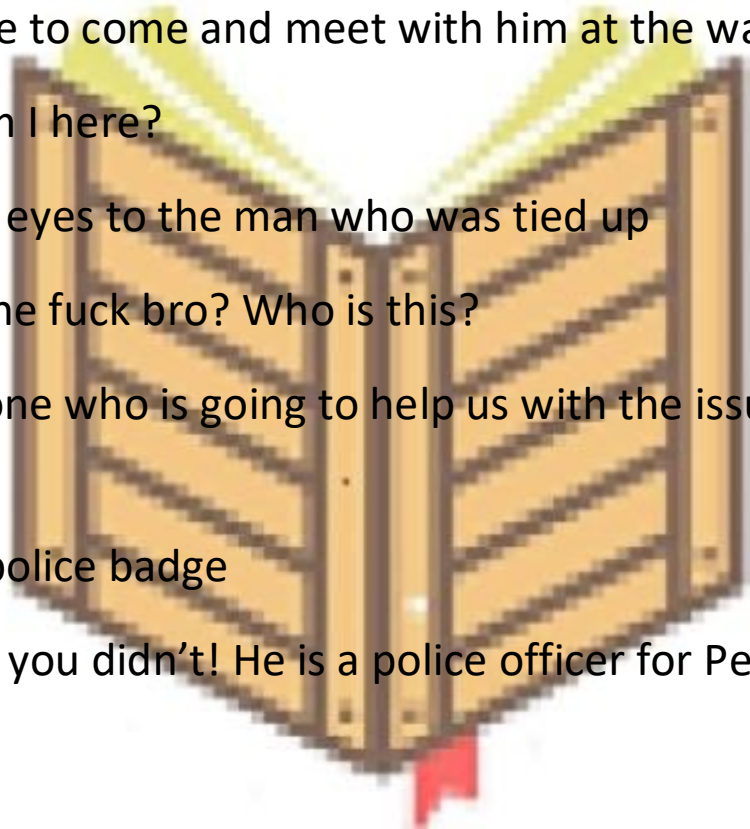
I half yelled

Him: A police officer who values his family, right?

He looked at him

Officer: He is right but can you please untie me, my hands are really sour

Panther: With pleasure



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How is he going to help us? We don't alliance ourselves with the law Panther. Sometimes I feel like you don't think, your actions are accompanied by emotions

Panther: It will do you good if you can listen to me

He sat down

Panther: Your loyal employee sang to the cops, it's a matter of time before they knock on your door

Me: Still that doesn't explain why he is here

I pointed at him

Panther: He is our saviour. He is going to make sure the case go cold

I chuckled softly

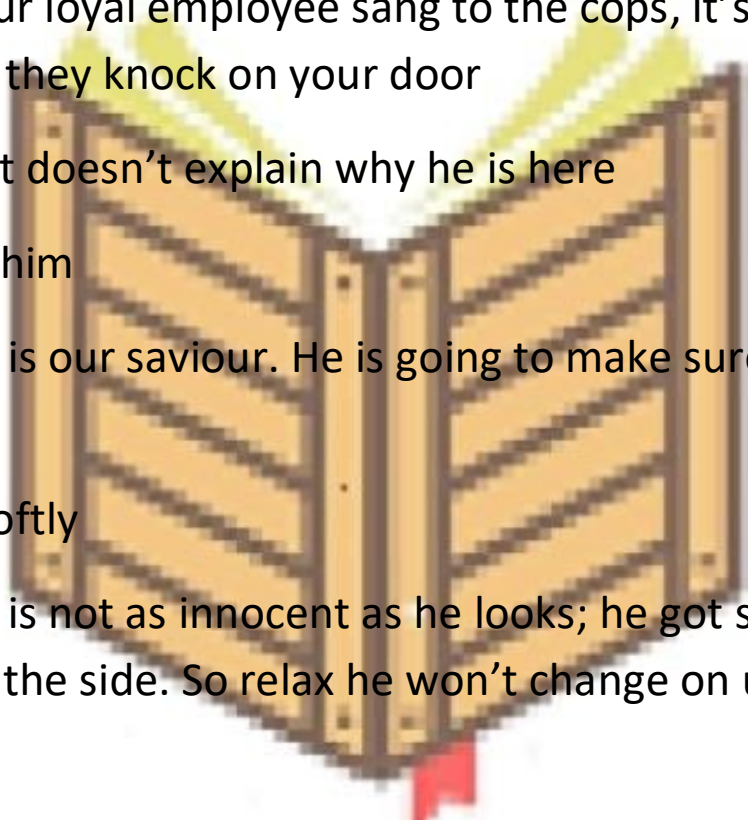
Panther: He is not as innocent as he looks; he got some shady business on the side. So relax he won't change on us, I know lot about him

Me: So what's the plan with him?

Panther: He will work for us but first he will make sure the docket disappear

Me: I can't believe we are actually making a deal with one person who can be the death of us

Panther looked at the officer



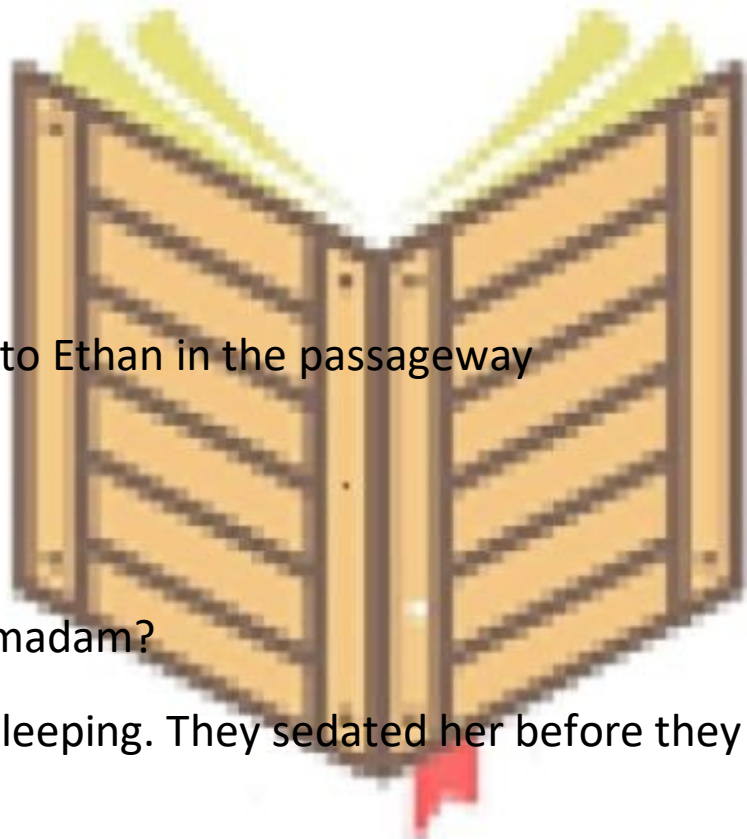
NOVELSGURU.COM

Panther: Do you know what happens when you betray us?

Officer: Yes, you will execute my whole family before you execute me

We never kill innocent people! The hell with Panther!

YARA



I bumped into Ethan in the passageway

Me: Sir

Him: Yara

Me: How's madam?

Him: She's sleeping. They sedated her before they discharged her

Me: I'll make sure I see her before I knock off

Him: That's good. And Yara I think it's time you practice calling me by name, sir won't do

Me: Okay sir... meant Ethan

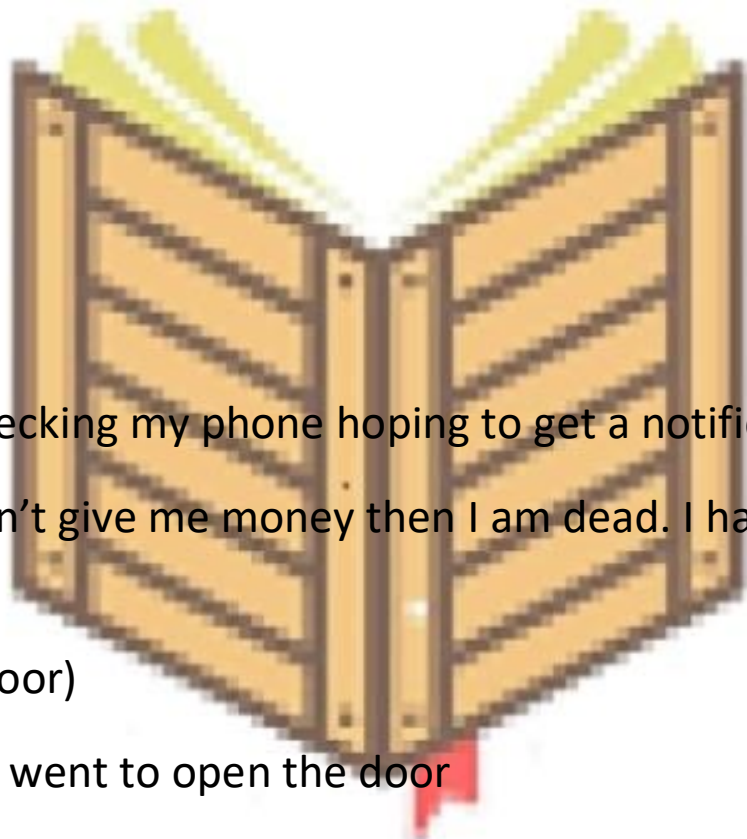
Him: If there's nothing to do you can go ahead and knock off

Me: I first want to see madam then I'll be off

He gave me a slight nod and walked away

I looked at him as he walked away. Oh God what's going on with me, why am I drooling? No Yara, you need to get a grip! It was never part of the plan

MIMI



I kept on checking my phone hoping to get a notification

If Yara doesn't give me money then I am dead. I have no other plan

(Knock on door)

I got up and went to open the door

Chieka was standing by the door with his guys

Him: Where is my money?

Me: Give me two days...

Him: You've been singing that song for the past 2 weeks

Me: I swear to you, you will get the money

I've been working for Chieka as a prostitute. 3 weeks ago I stole money from him

Advertisement

I wanted to escape and go back home. I've been living like this for the past 4 years and no one at home knows what I do. I since left saying I've found a job which I did but when I came here I realized it was all a scam. Too embarrassed to go back home I stayed with a friend who later introduced me to Chieka. The money was good until he started taking it from us; we only get 10% of the money we make

Him: Boys, get to work! Next time you will think twice before you think of betraying me

He turned around

Me: No, please don't do this. Chieka I am begging you, I will pay back the money! (Yelling)

Two of his boys stepped inside and closed the door

GOLDIE

Ethan laid my head on his chest

Me: Next week is our anniversary

Him: I will make sure you get the best gift you've ever received

Me: God knows if I'll make it until then

Him: You will, I know you will

(Silence)

Me: I made a decision, I want to be cremated

He looked at me

Him: Where is that coming from?

Me: I want everyone to get over my death. I want you to mourn me in peace; I don't want my house to be filled with people. People who never cared for me when I was still alive

Him: And what am I expected to do with your ashes?

Me: Scatter or keep them. Long as you fulfil my wish

Him: As you wish

You can never be ready for death, no matter how strong you think you are or convince yourself

Me: Don't be sad, we knew this was going to happen

Him: It's not so easy to accept

Me: I know

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: I love you Goldie and marrying was one of the best decisions I've ever made in my life

Me: I love you too

He tucked my hair behind my ear

My end is near; tonight might be our last night together. But I will die in peace

YARA

I've been trying to call Nos but she is not answering any of my calls

I threw my handbag on the bed and walked back to the kitchen. My mother was cooking

Ma: You look distressed

Me: How can I not? Your daughter called me today demanding money I don't have

Ma: About that...

Me: Don't tell me she called you so that you can convince me to give it to her?

Ma: She is your sister and I am sure she needs money for something important

Me: What is she doing there vele? For someone who doesn't want to come back home I figured she is living large

Ma: I don't know Yara, how can you question me about her business?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I am questioning you because you seem like her agent. Both of you take me as your bank; if it's not you it's her! I am tired of everyone seeing me as their God who will save them from anything

Ma: Is that how you feel? Helping your family is now a burden to you?

Me: Don't make me laugh mama; this is more than helping the family. Try pawning me for your needs

Ma: If that's how you feel then go ahead and leave my house, you feel so grown right now right? Then go and live on your own, let's see how all of that would turn out

Me: I am not having this conversation with you right now

Ma: Do what you do best, walk away. Ndi yone ndevhuwo ine ndai wana heyi (This is the thanks I get)

To be continued...

NOVELSGURU.COM



8

YARA

Alexa was very disappointed when her father said I'll be taking them to school. I don't know if it's my imagination or not but Lex is no longer feeling me-that's if she ever did

I gave them their backpacks

Me: What do you want me to prepare for you guys? For lunch

Tenda: Lasagne aunt (Smiles)

Me: I knew you'll say that but your sister doesn't eat that

Him: Let him be

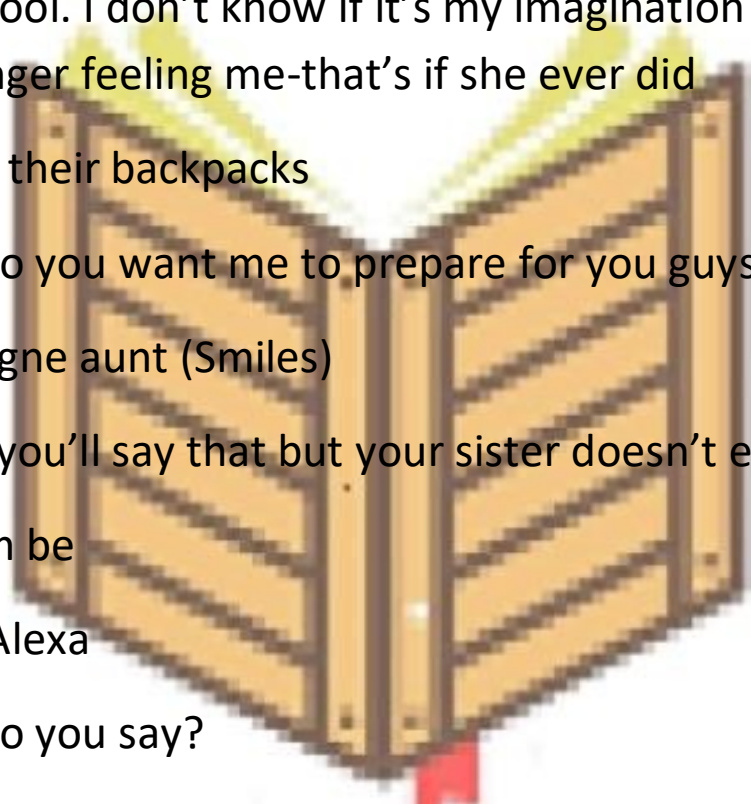
I looked at Alexa

Me: What do you say?

Her: I'll decide when I come back

Him: You are always grumpy Lex and it doesn't suit you

Her: Whatever. Can we go now?



NOVELSCURL.COM

MIMI

I poured water and salt in the basin

Chieka's guys slept with me the whole night without stopping.  
My phone rang, it was my mother

Me: Mama

Her: How are you?

Me: I am good and you?

I will never tell her what's going on; soon as I pay Chieka I am taking the first bus to Limpopo. I won't tolerate his abuse, I refuse

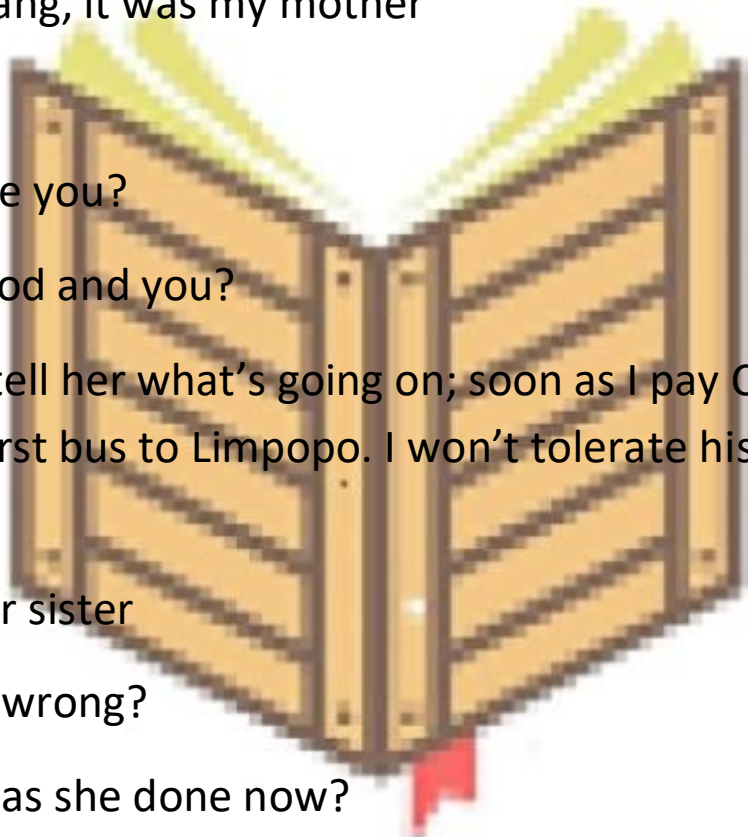
Her: It's your sister

Me: What's wrong?

Her: What has she done now?

Yara has always acted like a saint, in the eyes of my mother she can never do wrong

Me: Last night she told me where to get off because I talked with her about your situation; she told me how much of a burden we are to her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yara wouldn't say that

Her: You calling me a liar?

Me: No mama, I am just surprised. I mean Yara is very obedient

Her: She has changed

I kept quiet

Her: Did she tell you about her engagement?

Me: What are you talking about?

Her: She's getting married to Ethan

Me: What about Goldie?

Her: A lot has been going on here, Goldie is dying. She has cancer so she asked your sister if she can get married to Ethan and she agreed

I don't believe my ears, how can Yara do this to me? She knows very well how much I love Ethan but because of Goldie I was forced to forget about him. Ethan and I dated but things changed when he went to University, he met with Goldie and things between us ended but I never stopped loving him. And Yara knew about this

Me: She didn't tell me anything

Her: I am sure she was going to tell you

Me: Mom I will call you back, there's something I need to do

Her: Okay, no problem

I hung up

How could Yara do this to me? We are sisters and sisters don't do this to each other

AYDEN

I walked to Melisa's desk

Her: Sir

Advertisement

can I help you with something?

Me: I'd like to see applications for those who have applied already

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: You know I can't do that, your mother said...

Me: My mother won't know Melisa anyway I must at least have an insight of the person who might be working for me

She shrugged her shoulders



Her: Okay I will bring them into your office in a bit

I smiled at her and turned around

YARA

After dropping the twins I decided to get myself a snack

I walked into the nearest shop

Voice: And I did say we will meet again

I turned around

I rolled my eyes when I see who it was

Me: Should I get a protection order against you?

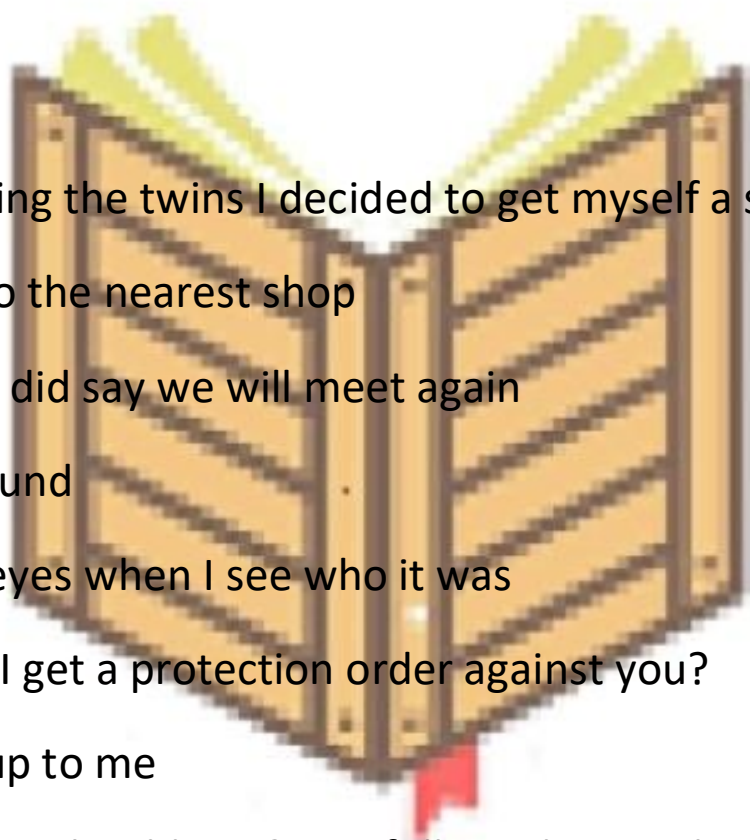
He walked up to me

Him: And why should you? You followed me today not the other way around **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Is this your shop?

Him: No but...

Me: Thought as much



Him: Lindokuhle, well that's my name

I looked at him

Him: You are hard to crack, I like

Me: What's your business here?

Him: Same thing you are doing

Me: No I mean at school. The other day you were parking in front of the gate and today you are here

Him: I am not a serial killer if that's what you thinking. I drive my nephew everyday

Me: Mh I see

Him: You won't tell me your name?

Me: You haven't earned that

He smiled at me

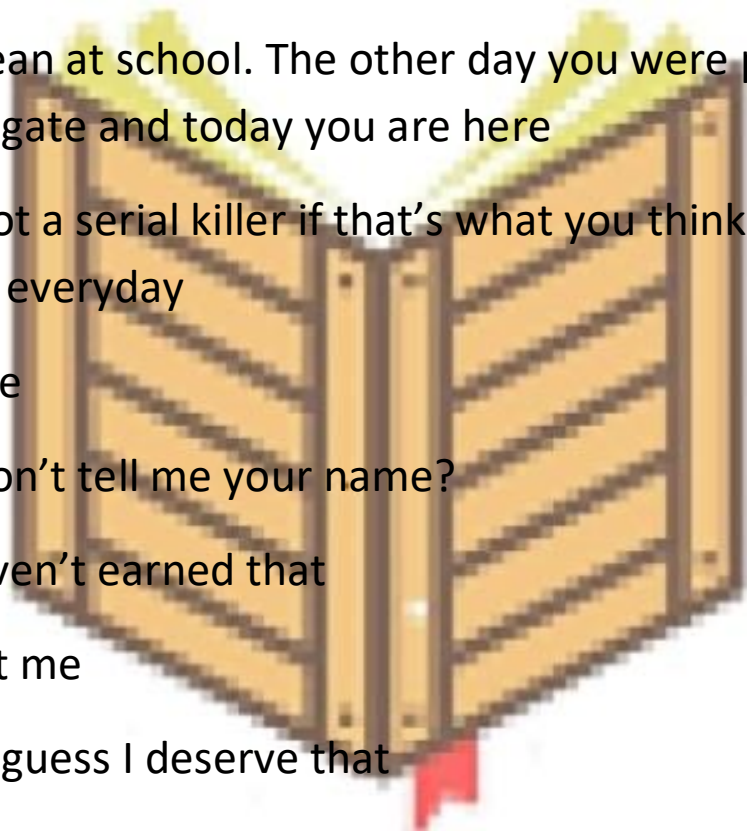
Him: Okay I guess I deserve that

I picked potato chips and a packet of peanuts

Me: Anything else?

Him: Well, since you don't want to tell me your name what about your numbers?

Me: Unbelievable (Laughs)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Next time you might need help and if that happens I am your guy

I walked to the counter

ETHAN

I walked inside the kitchen with the tray in my hands. At least today Goldie was able to stomach food; lately she has not been enjoying food. Her appetite keeps on dropping

Goldie followed me

Her: You are not going to work?

Me: I am working from home

Her: Any interesting project?

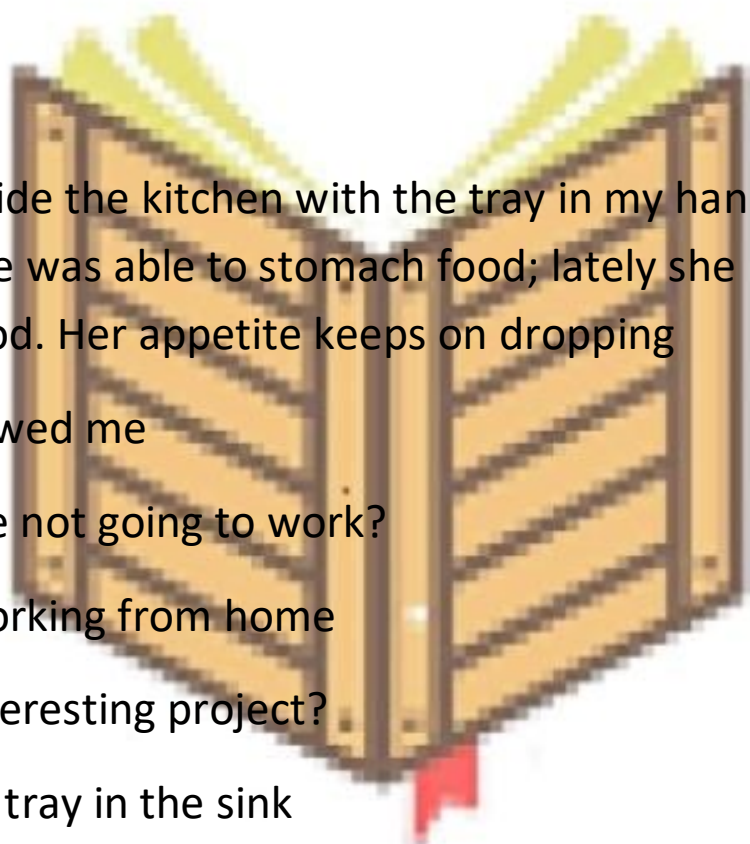
I placed the tray in the sink

Me: Yes, Tshivhase firm approached us yesterday

Her: Wow that's nice. Congratulations

Me: It means more work for me and less attention to you

Her: I'll keep myself busy with something, I am sure there's a novel waiting for me



NOVELSGURU.COM

She laughed

Me: Happy to see you laughing

Her: Do I have a choice?

Me: No you don't

I walked up to her

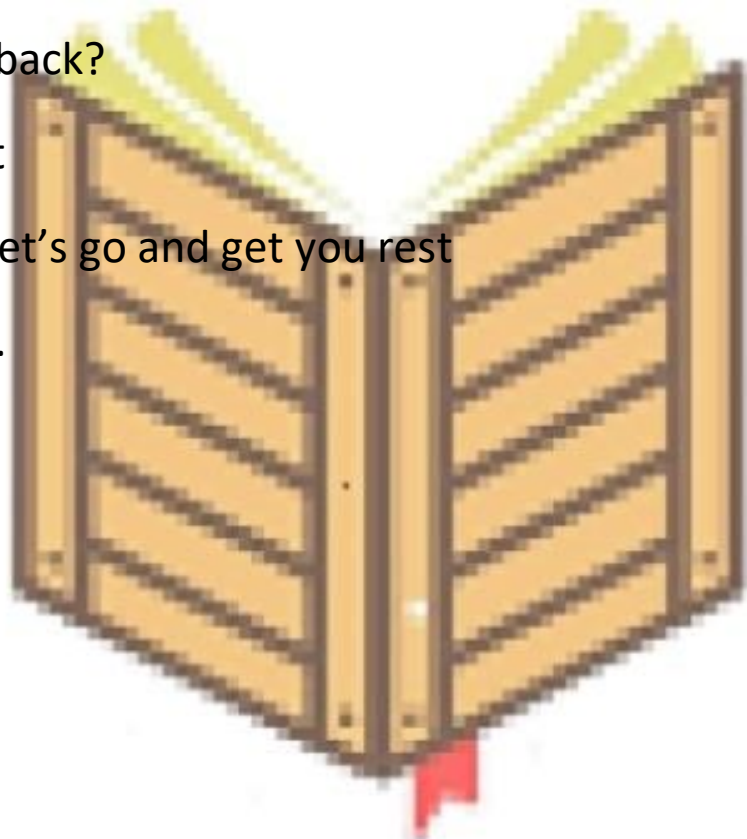
Me: Is Yara back?

Her: Not yet

Me: Okay. Let's go and get you rest

Her: Ethan...

Me: Uh-uh



ELISA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I called the loan shark to come and collect his money. Goldie gave me R1000.00 to buy some things that are needed at home

He sat down

Me: Here, take your money



He looked at the envelope

Him: How much is it?

Me: Enough to make you stop threatening me

He took it

Him: I am not responsible for your problems Elisa; you came to me because you wanted money. You must also pay smiling

Me: Next time wait for me to call you Biza

Him: Easy, I am not the enemy here

Me: Leave now

YARA



Panther dropped me off

I am glad no one saw him, I don't want them to think otherwise and besides there's nothing going on between me and him

My phone rang, it was Mimi

Me: Sisters

Her: How could you?

Me: Sorry?

Her: You heard me Yara. Mom told me about your engagement to Ethan

Me: Oh that...

Her: "Oh that"

She mimicked my voice

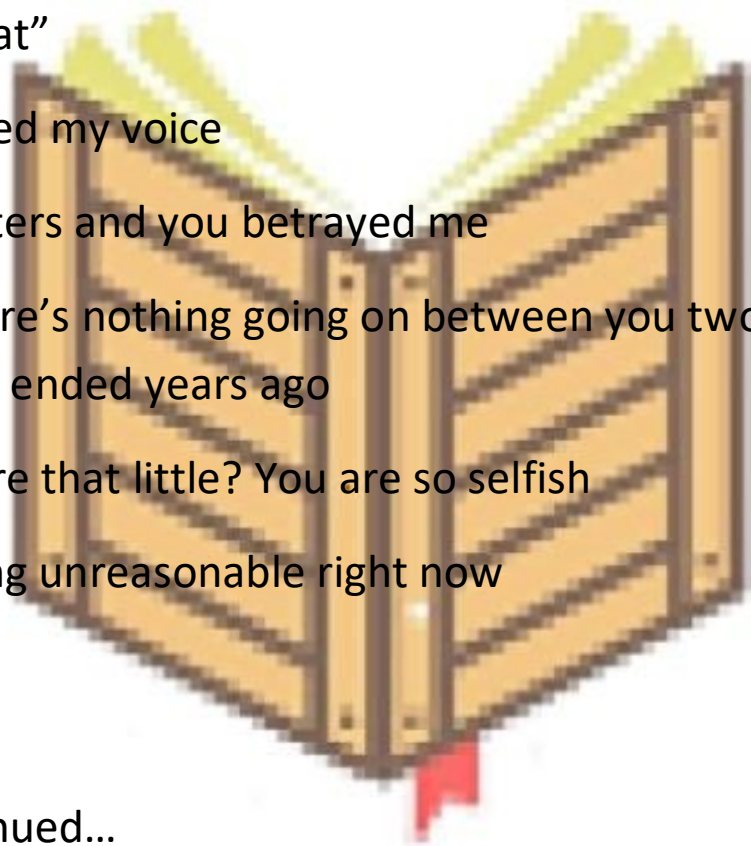
Her: We sisters and you betrayed me

Me: But there's nothing going on between you two. Your relationship ended years ago

Her: You care that little? You are so selfish

Mimi is being unreasonable right now

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

9

ETHAN

I walked into Yara crying her eyes out

I cleared my throat

Her: Sir...

She quickly stood up

Me: What's wrong?

Her: It's nothing

Me: Those eyes don't say "Nothing". Soon you'll be my wife and we gonna have to talk, why not practice now?

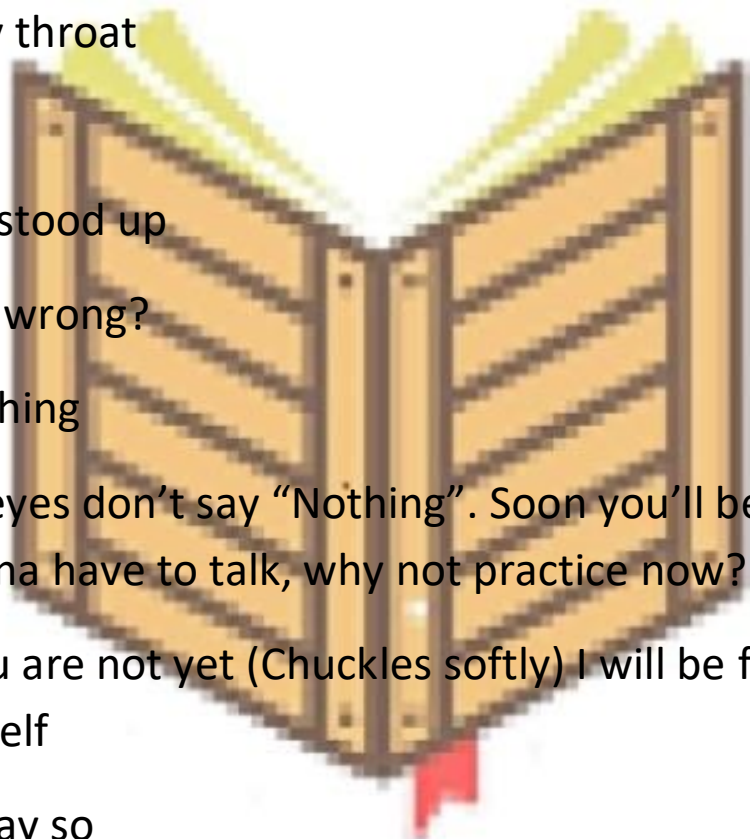
Her: But you are not yet (Chuckles softly) I will be fine, don't stress yourself

Me: If you say so

Her: Is madam asleep?

Me: No, she went to her mother's

Her: Okay. Can I please leave early today? I have some personal things I need to take care of. The lasagne is in the microwave, Rotenda asked me to prepare it for him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes, you can. I'll be going to fetch the twins from school. If I go before you then you'd lock the house

She nodded in agreement

MIMI

I called my friend Buhle to come and see me, maybe she will be able to lend me some cash. Now more than ever I need to leave this place. I must get home as soon as possible

I gave her glass of juice

Me: Thank you for coming mngan' wam

Her: You said it was important. What's wrong?

Me: Chieka's guys raped me last night

She opened her mouth in shock

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why are you shocked? You know I was owing him money and that's how he operate

Her: Still that doesn't give him right to have his way with you. Nawe, why did you steal from him?

Me: I want out Buhle

Her: Out as in quitting this job?

Me: Yes, I am tired. This is not life

Her: You know that's impossible, Chieka will never allow that to happened

Me: He won't know it. And I trust you to keep this to yourself

Her: If you going, you are taking me with

Me: What?

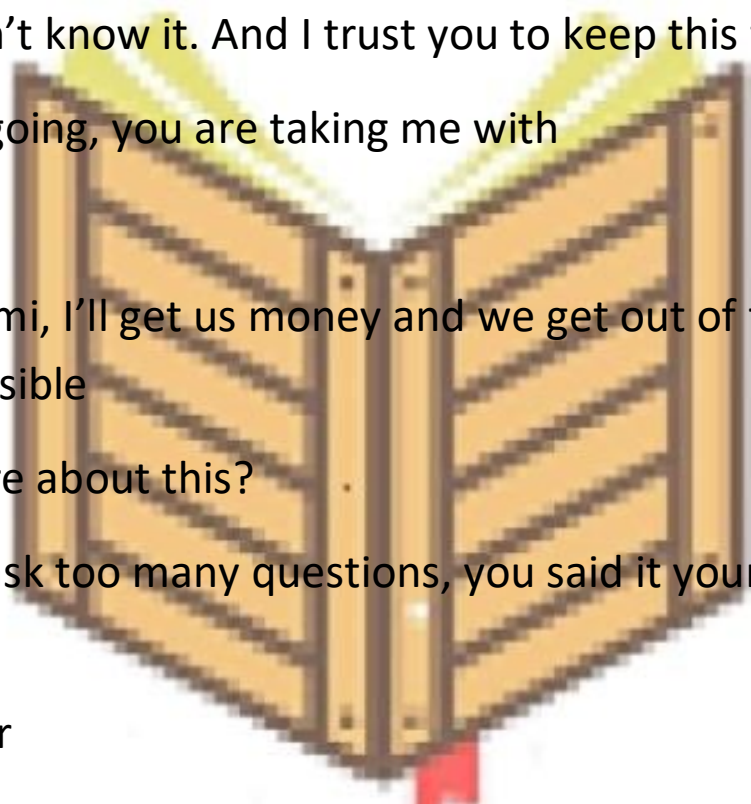
Her: Yes Mimi, I'll get us money and we get out of this place. Soon as possible

Me: You sure about this?

Her: Don't ask too many questions, you said it yourself. This is not life

I hugged her

Her: I have enough cash, you will pay Chieka and then we out of this place



YARA

I closed the gate and walked to the porch

Nosizwe was busy doing her laundry, music was playing by the side

Me: Minion

She lifted her head

Me: I came in peace

Her: Sit down

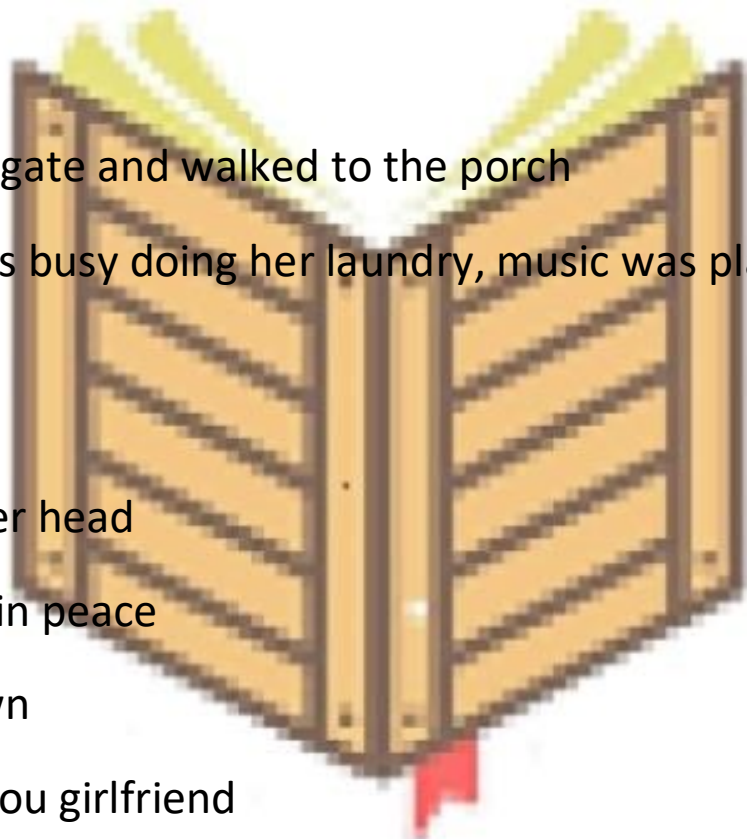
Me: I miss you girlfriend

Her: Is that way you haven't stopped calling me? It's boring

Me: Come on, can we let this sleep? I miss my friend

Her: You are grown so

Advertisement



NOVELSGURU.COM

I won't interfere in your business

Me: Don't be like that

Her: Like what?

She sat on the bench

Me: Making me feel bad. This marriage is always causing a drift between me and loved ones

Her: Out with it

Me: Mimi is not so happy about this arranged marriage

Her: And someone share same sentiments as me

Me: No, hers are total different from yours

She looked at me confused

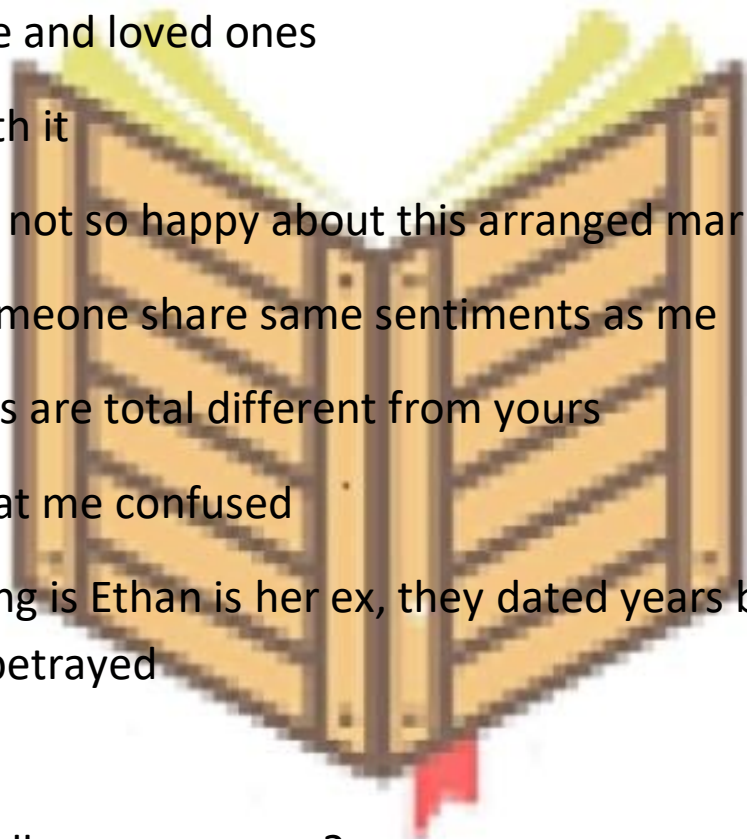
Me: The thing is Ethan is her ex, they dated years back and now Mimi feels betrayed

Her: Wow...

Me: Is that all you gonna say?

Her: I don't know what to say to you Yara, you guys are not married yet but already there's friction. This a red flag, you are not ready for what is ahead of you

Me: My sister will never go against me, she's my blood



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Is that why you are marrying her ex?

Me: Everything is just going wrong

Her: I say it's a sign

Me: Bull!

ELISA

I received a call from Mimi

Me: When are you coming back?

Her: I am not sure yet but you can expect us in 2 days...

Me: "Us"?

Her: Yes, I am coming back with a friend

Me: Ha Mimi, what's that now?

Her: Mom this friend is the one helping me, if it wasn't of her...

I don't even want to think

Me: Our house is four rooms Mimi, where is she going to sleep?

Her: What happened to my bedroom?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Your room is so small to fit two people

Her: Yara's room is bigger and besides she is moving into her new house soon. So I am coming back with her mama

Me: You've already made up your mind so I don't see reason for me to argue with you

Her: Can I ask you something mama?

Me: Go ahead

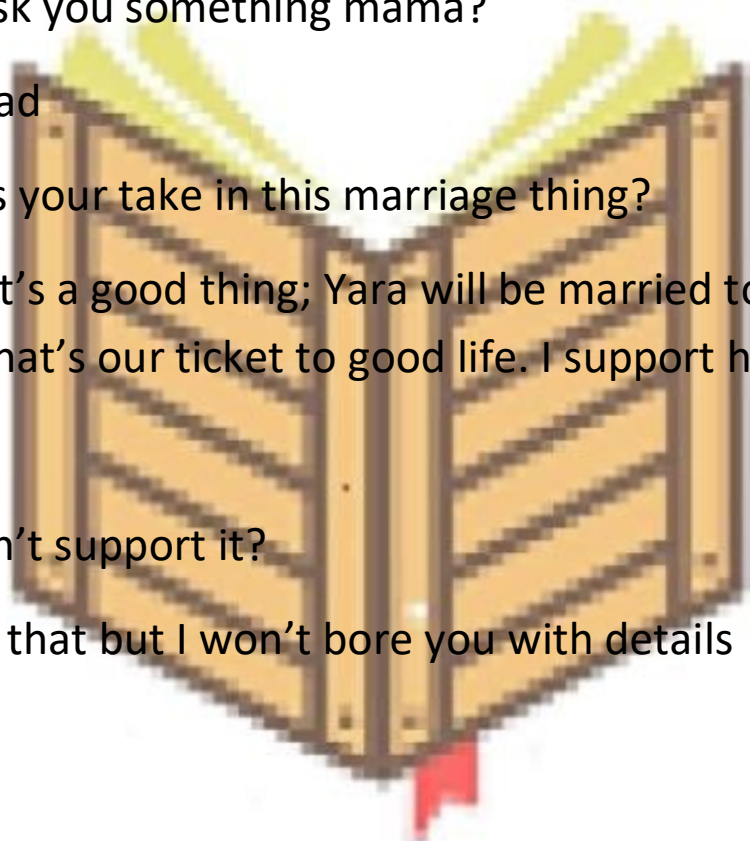
Her: What is your take in this marriage thing?

Me: I think it's a good thing; Yara will be married to a man who is rich and that's our ticket to good life. I support her

Her: Okay...

Me: You don't support it?

Her: It's not that but I won't bore you with details



ETHAN

NOVELSGURU.COM

I drove to the mall with the twins

Alexa was really behaving in a manner I don't understand let alone like it

Me: Rotenda can you give your sister and me time to talk? You can go and wait for the pizza order

Him: Okay daddy

He got out of the car

Me: Princess?

Alexa looked away

Me: Talk with daddy, what's going on?

Her: It's nothing

Me: You are lying. Your brother told me about you and aunt Yara...

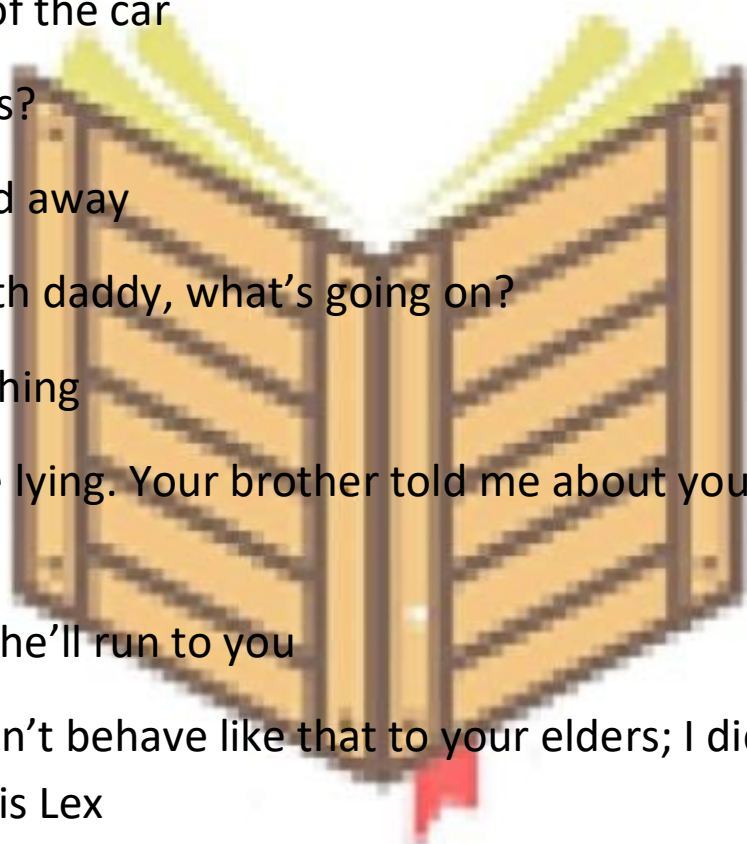
Her: I knew he'll run to you

Me: You don't behave like that to your elders; I didn't raise you to be like this Lex

Her: I just don't like her

Me: Since when? Aunt Yara has always taken care of you; you never had a problem with her, why now?

Her: She is trying so hard to be like mommy and I hate that. I have my own mother and she is not!



NOVELSGURU.COM

She yelled and got out the car

I sighed in disbelief

GOLDIE

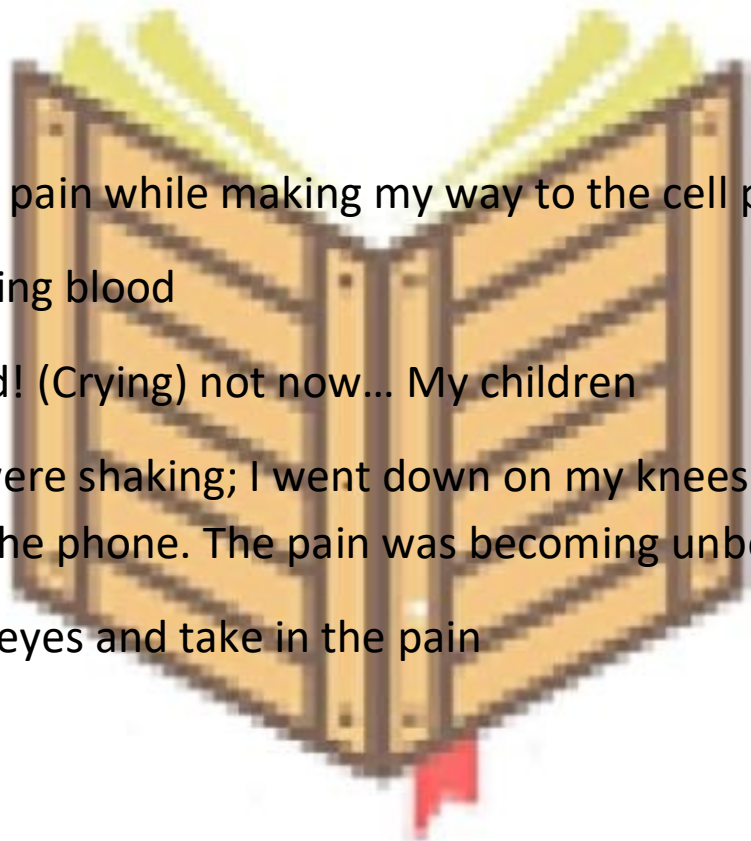
I groaned in pain while making my way to the cell phone

I was coughing blood

Me: Oh Lord! (Crying) not now... My children

My hands were shaking; I went down on my knees and crawl my way to the phone. The pain was becoming unbearable

I closed my eyes and take in the pain



YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

My mother hand me a letter

Me: What's this?

She smiled at me

Her: Letter from the Liremi family

Me: They brought it today?

Her: Yes, they did. I am so excited

Me: I am sure you are. Have you talked with Mimi?

Her: Yes, she said she is coming back

Me: She is?

Her: Yes, she also said she is coming back with a friend. She will be staying with us

Me: Who's the friend? And how can Mimi even think about coming back with a friend when she is fully aware about our situation at home

Her: Situation that will soon change. Soon I'll have my dream house and all thanks to you my daughter

Me: Seems like this has always been your plan mama

Her: It wasn't

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: You could've fooled me. I am the one who is going to marry a man who don't love me

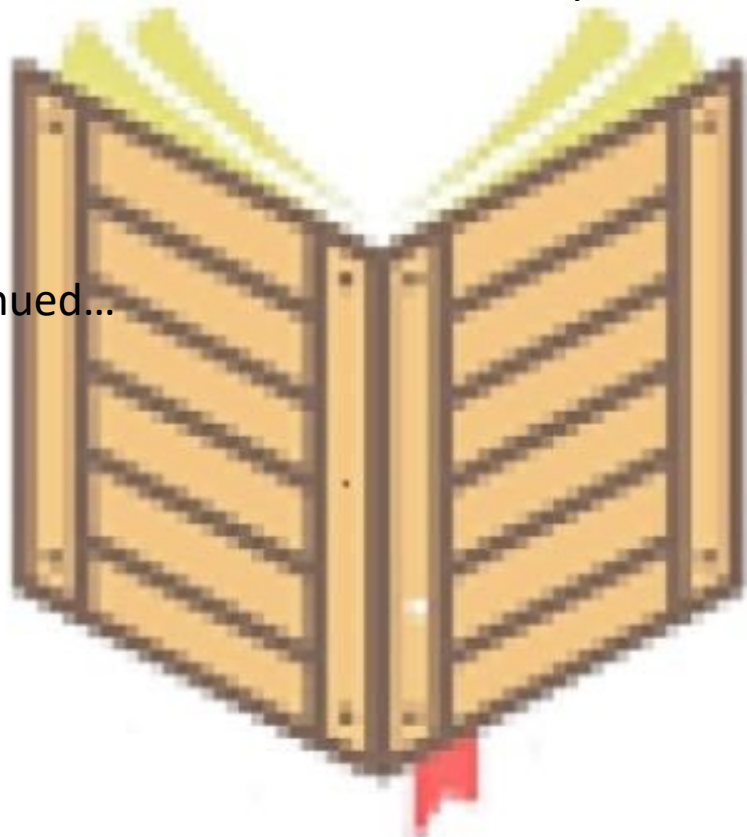
Her: It's not that bad

Me: Just so you know the money for Lobola is going straight to my account, I want to further my studies mama and that's why I am marrying Ethan. It's not all about you getting your dream job

Her: But...

Me: No buts... I will decide on how much you'll be getting and that's final

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

10

ETHAN

My worst nightmare came true last night, God remembered His daughter and she was ready to meet her greater. When the twins and I returned from the mall, I found her unconscious on the floor. I had bit of hope that she'd survive but this time she left the house and not return with me. To say I am hurt would be an understatement. I am shattered, heart-broken. I lost my other-half, I knew she didn't have much time but now that she is gone... My heart just can't take it

The more the twins cry the more I realise our lives will never be the same. At least she was able to say goodbye to her children but that did more damage than good. Goldie left a huge gap and no one will ever fill it... Alexa hasn't left her room since we got back last night; Rotenda at least is trying to be strong but for how long?

I opened and stepped inside. Alexa was curled up under the duvet

Me: Nana?

She was crying... Oh my Lord!

Me: Lex, talk with daddy please

I pulled the chair and sat next to her bed

Me: Alexa, look at me

She hesitated

Me: Nana don't do this, daddy is here

Her: Why? Why did she leave us daddy

Her voice cracked when she uttered those words

Her: She can't just leave us, she can't... She promised us daddy but now she is gone

Me: It was time for her to rest nana, mommy was suffering. Her body couldn't take the pain

She shook her head no

Her: No daddy (Crying)

I pulled her into my arms

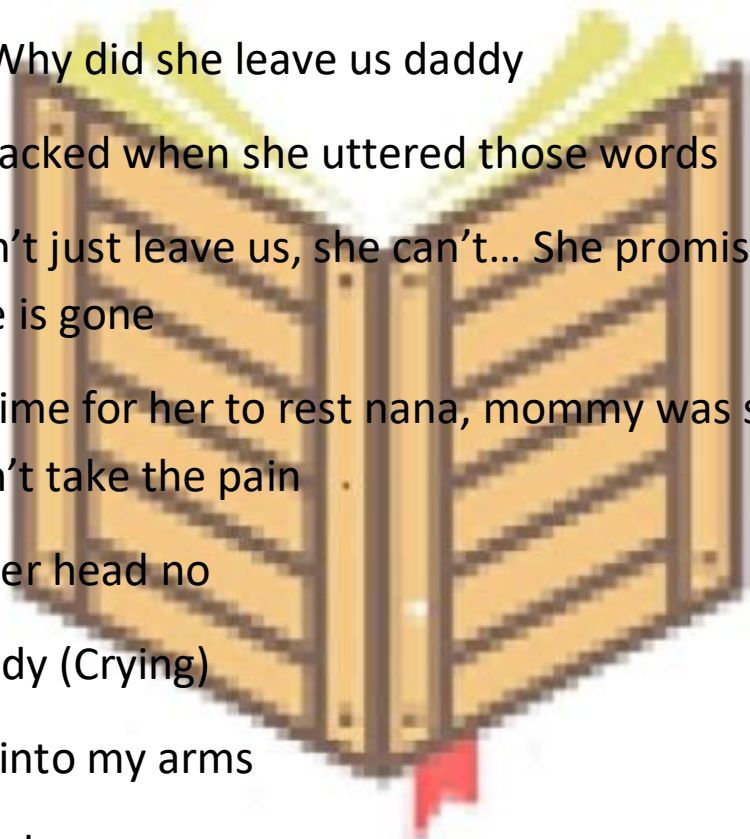
My heart sank even more

Me: We must let her rest

Rotenda walked in... He jumped into the bed

Him: Daddy...

Me: How are you feeling?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Hurt and angry at God

This is too much, I thought I was ready and strong but I was wrong

YARA

I wrapped doek around my head and cover my shoulders with a shawl

I still can't believe that Goldie has passed on, you think you are ready for something but when it's time for you to experience it you realise you were never ready. I can't imagine how the twins are feeling, one moment you have a mother and the next moment she is no more. You are forced to say goodbye to her and at that same time you start to question God

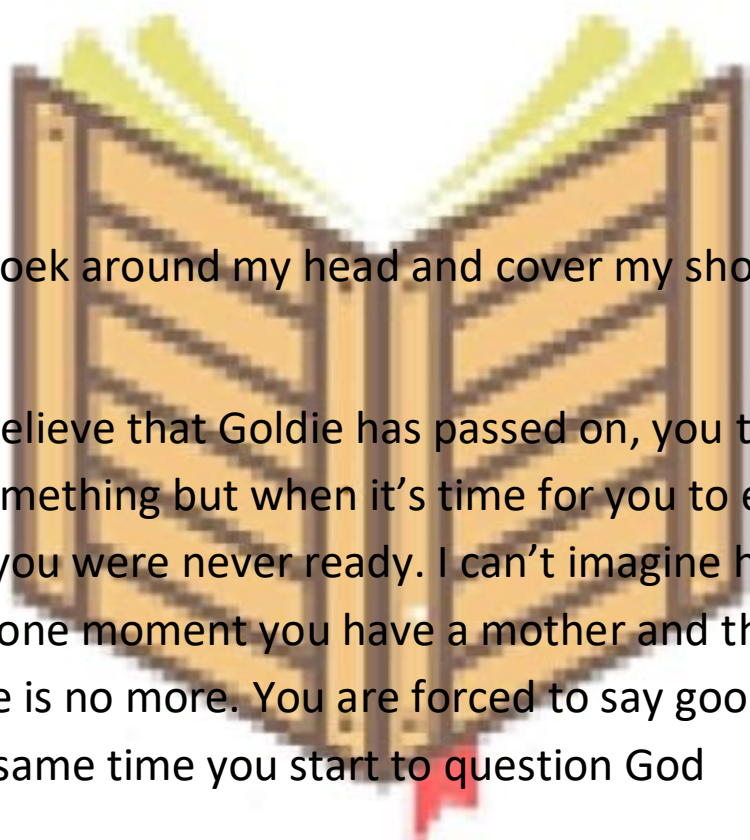
My phone rang, it was unsaved number

Me: Yara speaking

Voice: Oh Yara

Advertisement

what a beautiful name



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Sorry who is this?

Voice: Panther

The corner of my mouth rose into a smile

Me: And you decided to call me today?

Him: I was busy and today when I woke up, the first thing on my mind was you

Me: Liar!

Him: How are you?

Me: Good and you?

Him: I am talking with you

Me: Do you ever stop?

Him: I will but only if you agree on that date...

Me: There will be no date Sir

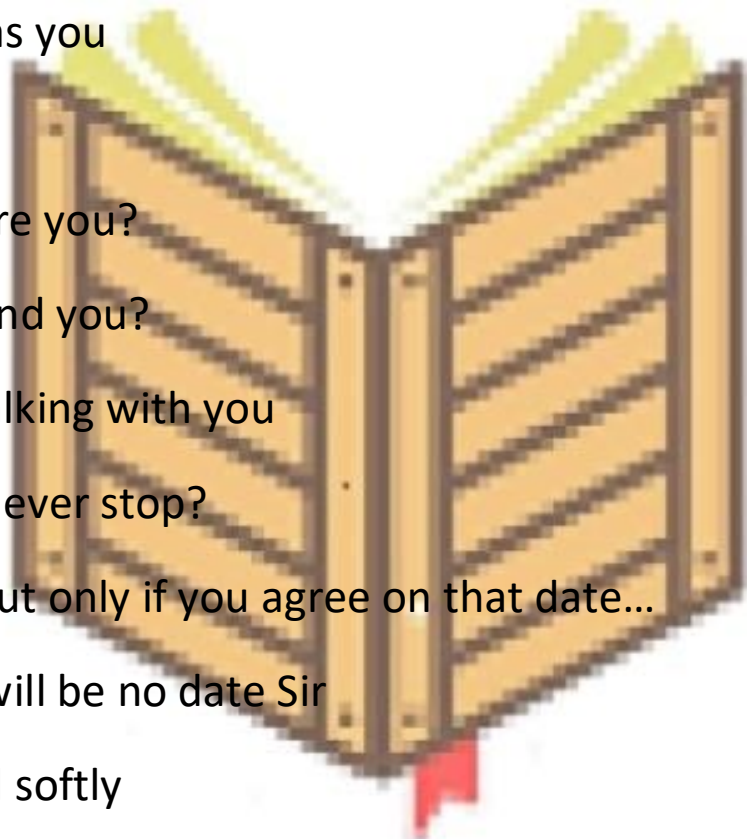
He chuckled softly

Him: Maybe not today but maybe in the future

Me: Dream on. Anyway I have to go

Him: Ouch I called and you cutting me up already...

Me: It's not that, I am actually on my way to work. The lady of the house passed on



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: My condolences. You have my numbers, so...

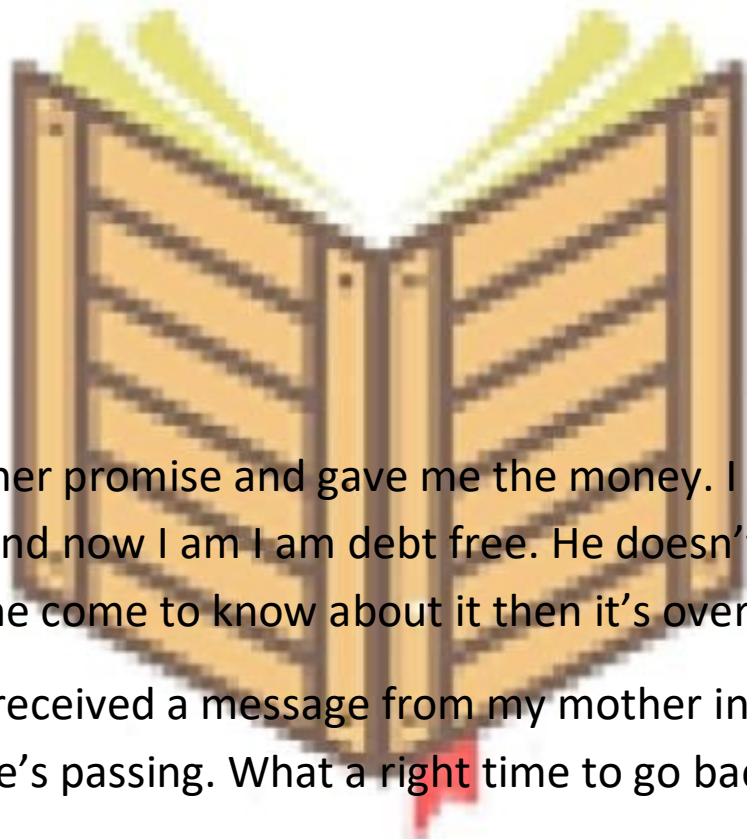
Me: I'll save them

Him: Bye. And stay beautiful

He hung up

Wow! What am I doing?

MIMI



Buhle kept her promise and gave me the money. I paid Chieka his money and now I am I am debt free. He doesn't know about my plan, if he come to know about it then it's over for me

Last night I received a message from my mother informing me about Goldie's passing. What a right time to go back home

(Knock on door) I went to the door

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Buhle

Her: Good news

Me: What?

She stepped inside

Her: Chieka and his guys went to Western Cape

I jumped up and down

Me: Oh my word! (Screaming)

Her: We have to use this time

Me: I know someone who drives to Limpopo every Friday, let me call him

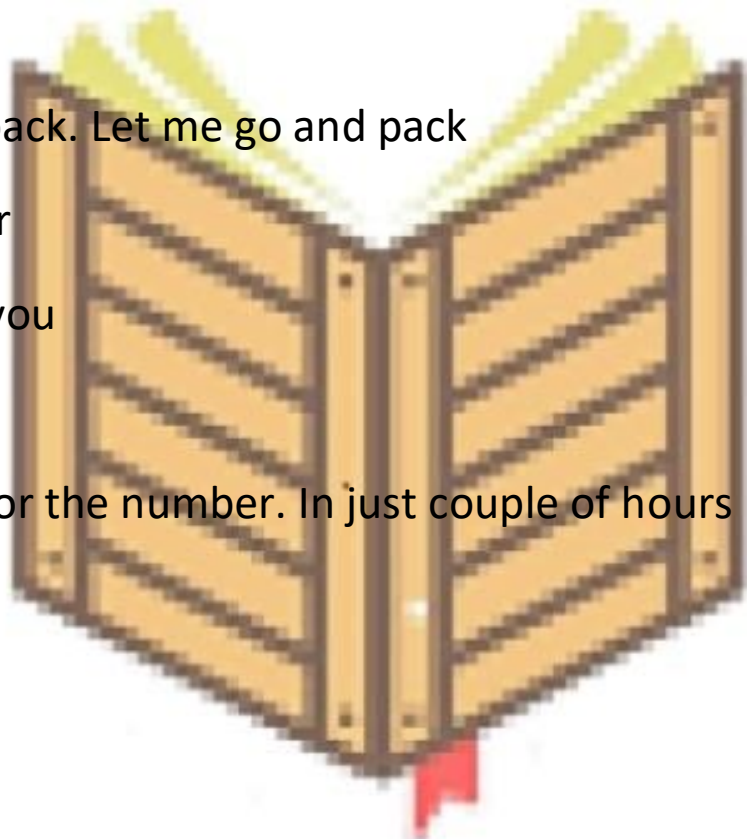
Her: I'll be back. Let me go and pack

I hugged her

Me: Thank you

Her: Sharp

I searched for the number. In just couple of hours I'll be where I belong



PANTHER

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

I drove off at Ayden's place. Unfortunately Viper couldn't make it

We fist bumped

Him: Where is Viper? I thought this was important

Me: He went to PLK, it was an emergency. I'll brief him later

Him: Okay, now what's the emergency?

Me: Last night I received a call from Chieka Alich

Him: What does that punk want now?

Me: Guns

Him: We aren't getting into business with him

We used to work with Chieka but we had to cut ties with him when we heard about his involvement in trafficking young girls. We are everything but traffickers

Him: He's no Panther

Me: I know but he doesn't get the message

Him: Try harder! The Unfazed are not dealing with Chieka and that's final

Me: There's more...

Him: Finish me **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: He's planning on coming down here

He chuckled softly

Him: I am going to kill him

Me: Whoa wait a minute; we are not killing the Nigerians Tooth

He stood up

Him: No one will be ready for his arrival Panther

I scratched my chin

YARA

Ethan left about an hour ago; he went to fetch his mother and Goldie's mom. My mother was preparing something for them

Rotenda hasn't left my side since I came here; with Alexa is a different story. She is distant and won't talk with me

Me: Rotenda how about you go and check your sister?

Him: She doesn't want to talk with me

Me: There's only one thing that can cheer her up

Him: Ice cream!

He half yelled

Me: Yes, and now go ahead and give it to her

He ran to the kitchen

Ma: I am almost done cooking, did Ethan said what time they would be here?

I turned around



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No

Ma: You look stressed

Me: It will be my first time seeing Goldie's mother after the marriage issue, what if she thinks somehow of me

Ma: I am sure Goldie told her, stop worrying too much

Me: Mama about our conversation we had last night...

Ma: You've already made your point Yara no need to rub in on

Me: I didn't want to say that

She looked at me

Me: I am sorry for the way I talked with you-it wasn't necessary to demand my Lobola way in that way

Ma: It's your money

Me: Yes, it is but you are my mother. I just wanted you to know that it's for furthering my studies; it's what Ethan agreed to do

Ma: It's okay Yara, I understand



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

11

ETHAN

I sat opposite my mom and Goldie's mother. They will be here for few days since Goldie's wish was to be cremated there won't be much to do, they just here for moral support. The rest of the family will come tomorrow

Ma Sithole: Where are my grandchildren?

Me: I last saw them with Yara

Goldie's mom is aware of what Goldie has asked of me but I really don't know how she feels about it

Ma: It feels weird to be in this house without koti (Sighs)

Ma Sithole: We will get used to it, what more can we do?

Ma: When are you having her body cremated?

Me: Tomorrow morning...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma Sithole: Oh my daughter (Sobs)

Ma: Let her rest, she was really in pain

Me: Can you please excuse me?

Ma: Where are you going?

Me: I just need some fresh air

I stood up

I bumped into Noah at the door

Him: Where are you going?

Me: I just need to be far from this house

Him: Let me drive you

He patted me on my shoulder

MIMI



We dragged our bags out of the taxi and get out

The minute the neighbour saw me they started whispering but I don't blame them. I am sure they thought I'll come back in a body bag

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Welcome to Venda girl

Buhle: Ubuhle (The beauty)

Me: It's been long since I've set my foot here



Her: Home is where the heart is...

We opened the gate and stepped into the yard

Neighbour: Murena Mimi ndi inwi? (Lord Mimi is this you?)

I faked a smile

Me: Ndi nne (It's me)

Her: Manje ulimi luzongibulala (Now the language will kill me)

She laughed

Me: Uzoqina (You will be strong)

I am just happy we've escaped Chieka's clutches; he will never find or hear from us

My mother walked out of the house. She covered her mouth with a hand

Ma: Nwananga no vhuya hayani (You are back home my daughter)

She hugged me

Me: Ndo vhuya mama (I am back)

Buhle: Ndi masiari mama (Afternoon)

Her accent is so funny but at least she is trying

Ma: Masiari a vhudi (Good afternoon) let's get inside



NOVELSOURU.COM

She helped with our bags

YARA

After Ethan left the house I decided to take a walk and I ended at Nosizwe's... the mood in the house is so heavy, I couldn't take it any longer

Nosizwe jumped into the bed and crossed legs; I laid my head on the pillow facing the ceiling

Her: So how's going?

Me: Ethan is so broken; I never thought I'd ever see him like this

Her: It must be painful; I can't even imagine the pain he is feeling

Me: Now I am asking myself if I'll fill Goldie's boots or not

Her: You my girl is up for a challenge you not ready for, it won't be easy but you signed up for it

Me: Ima kancinci (Come on)

Her: So uzakuba nomtshato okanye uzosayina nje? (So you going to have a weeding or you will just sign?)

Me: We agreed on signing, akukho nto yokubhiyozela (There's nothing to celebrate)

Her: I wish you the best secrets

I looked at her

ETHAN

Noah drove us to the park. We sat in silence, I was lost in my own world and Noah respected that. Noah is my only sibling and he's younger than me when our father passed on he stayed with mom and his wife

Me: Life really has a way of forcing us to do things we don't want/like (Chuckles softly)

I broke the silence

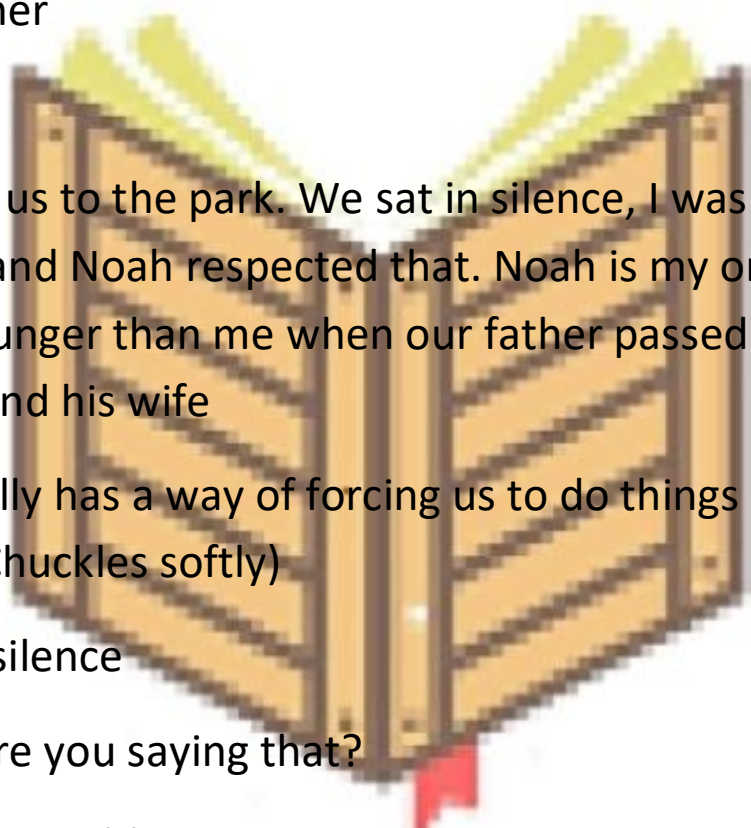
Him: Why are you saying that?

Me: Now that Goldie is no more it is starting to make sense that I'll be married to someone I don't love nor like

Him: Regretting?

Me: What's there to regret? I just don't know brother, what if Yara find love someone else or I do?

Him: I wish I have an answer to that question



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: This is one big mess

Him: Maybe you will fall in love with her

I looked at him

Me: That's impossible Noah. You forgot I once dated her sister?

Him: Fuck, how can I forget that? Mimi

Advertisement

right? Your first love?

Me: Yes. Goldie and Mimi are the only girls I've ever loved in my entire life and Yara; they will never be something between us. I agreed to this because Goldie entrusted her with her children and I couldn't deny her that

Him: I don't wish to be you right now brother, good luck!

He shook his head

MIMI

Buhle and my mother were having time of their lives, Buhle was telling her stories about Gauteng

Me: Mama when is Yara coming back?

Ma: She should be on her way now

Buhle: Can't wait to see the famous Yara



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: I am sure you two will get along

Me: Yara and Buhle? (Laughs) we not talking about my sister

Buhle: Ha Mimi

Me: Don't say I didn't tell you

The door opened, she stepped in

Yara: Mimi?

She ran to me and hugged me

Yara: You didn't tell me you were coming back today?

Me: It was a surprise

Yara: I miss you so much

Me: I miss you more

Yara: When are you returning?

I am not going anywhere, I am back to fight for what is mine!

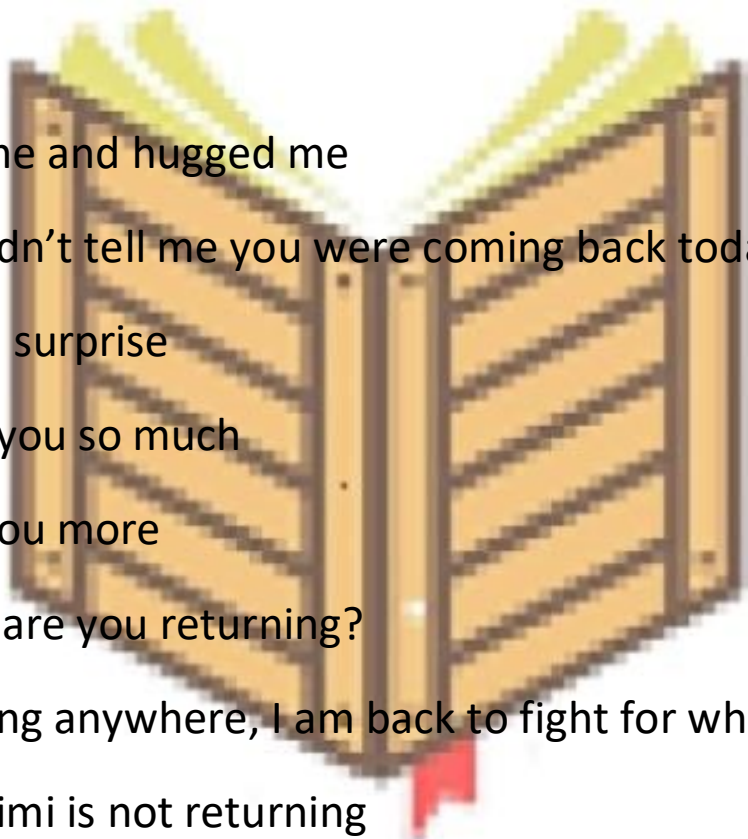
Me: Your Mimi is not returning

She smiled at me **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Oh let me introduce you to my friend, Buhle this is my sister Yara and Yara this is my friend Buhle

Buhle: Nice to finally meet you

Yara: Same here



Buhle: You are really beautiful

Yara: Now you making me blush, thank you

Yara wrapped her arm around my waist

Ma: Today she will sleep with you

Me: She really missed me

My sister and I we've always been close but when I left our relationship suffered but I never thought she can do this to me, this is one betrayal I will never forget. Yes, I get it this is an arranged marriage but that doesn't eliminate the betrayal

Me: Come and help me cook

Yara: What are we cooking?

Me: Your favourite, tripe

Buhle: Mimi and cooking? Wow Yara I give it to you

Yara: She can do anything for me (Smiles)

Me: No lie in that



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

12

YARA

I opened my eyes to the sound of Mini calling my name

Her: Good morning

I smiled

Me: Morning. Why you up early?

Her: Because I wanted to finish doing the chores so that we can go together to Ethan's

My smile disappeared

I completely forgot about the issue of me, her and Ethan. I am sure she is also back to try and mend things with him

Her: So get up and get ready...

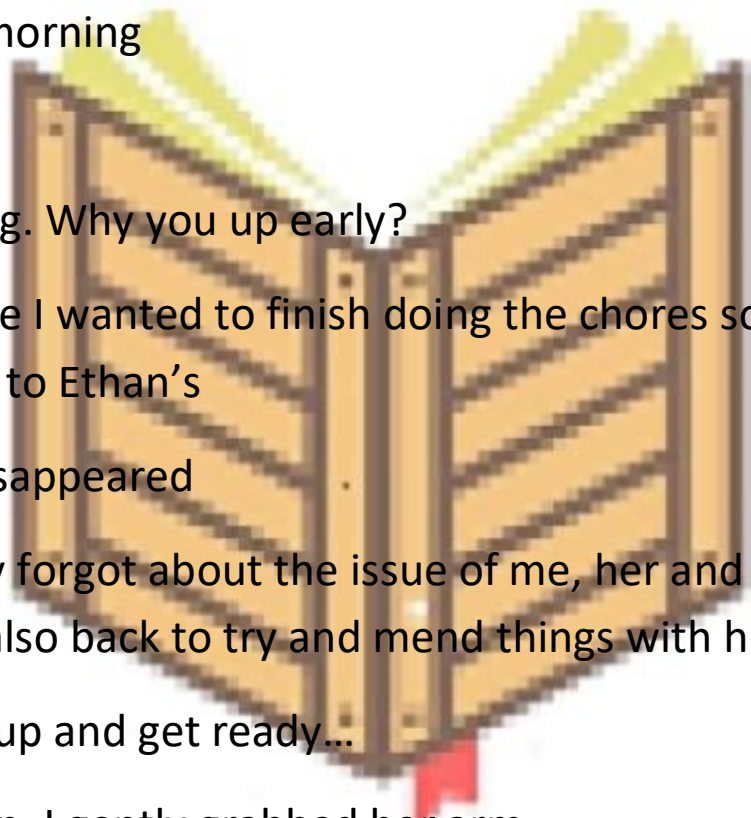
She stood up. I gently grabbed her arm

Me: Are you back to fight for him?

Her: Now is not the time to talk about this butterfly

Me: I need to know

Her: We will talk, time will present itself



NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

Sometimes life can be unfair, today I said goodbye to my life partner. The pain is still raw but I guess it will be numb as time goes

I unlocked the door and stepped in

Ma Sithole: What are you going to do with her ashes?

Me: I still don't know but she asked me to do whatever I like

I went with Goldie's mother, Noah and her aunt for cremation. My mother stated behind with the twins, I couldn't take them with me. They are hurt as it is

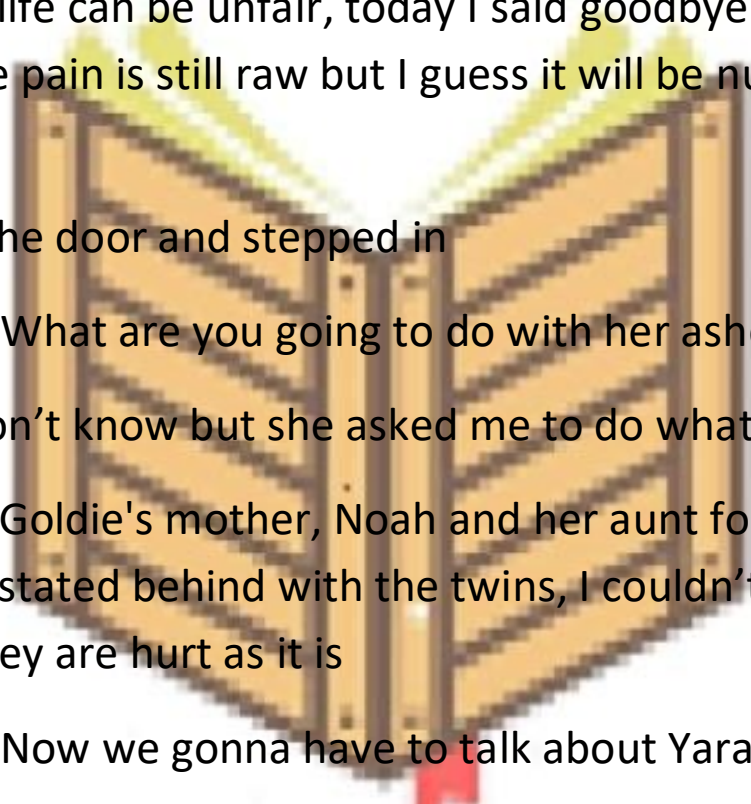
Ma Sithole: Now we gonna have to talk about Yara

I placed the urn on the table. We sat down

Me: Do we really have to?

Ma Sithole: It was Goldie's wish, she must be introduced to the ancestors soon as possible. They must recognize her as their newly daughter-in-law

I sighed



NOVELSGURU.COM



Ma Sithole: My daughter knew what she was saying my son

Me: But you were also a great option mama

Ma Sithole: As their grandmother, yes but I can't play both roles

Me: I guess you are right. The Masia's family have already received the letter, at least give me a week or two to mourn my wife and then the negotiations can start

Ma Sithole: You deserve that, take your time and mourn your wife my son. The world can't deny you that

PANTHER

I received a call from Chieka

Him: So Tooth is still adamant about his decision?

Me: Unfortunately yes

Him: I didn't know Tooth was the leader of The Unfazed

Me: He is not

Him: Then why are you taking orders from him?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's not about orders but working together

Him: Expect me anytime; right now I am still in Cape. Maybe this conversation should take place face to face

Me: We can come to you...

Him: No

Advertisement

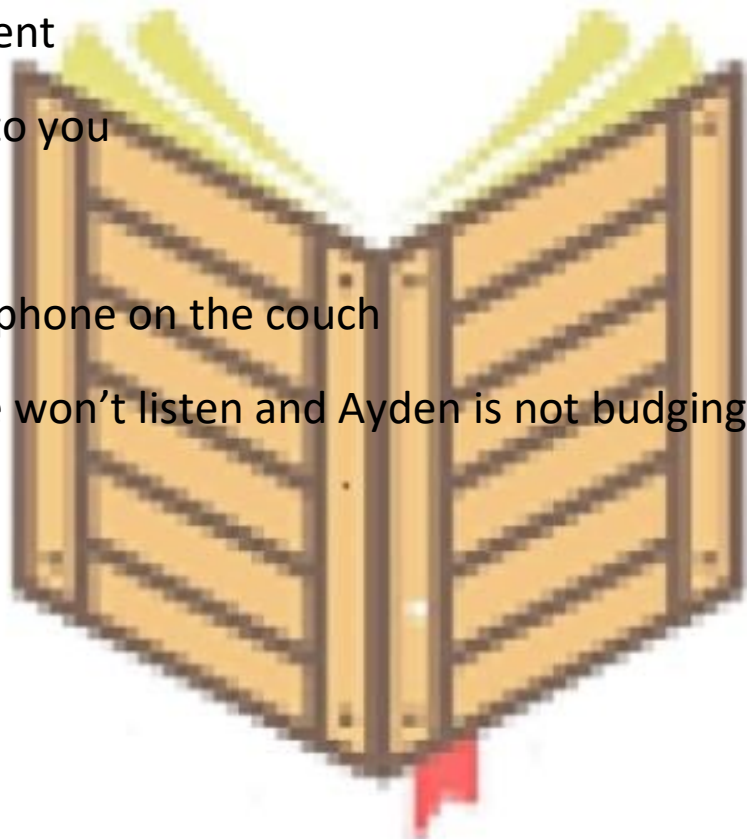
I will come to you

He hung up

I threw the phone on the couch

Dammit! He won't listen and Ayden is not budging. I do not like this one bit

YARA



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I fixed my eyes on Ethan who was combing Alexa's hair

I cleared my throat

Me: Good morning

Him: Morning Yara

Me: How are you Lex?

She kept quiet

Him: Lex?

Her: I am good... Daddy can I be excused please?

Him: But your hair...

Her: Granny will finish up

She stood up

Him: Sorry about that...

Me: It's okay

He stood up and faced me

What do I say to him? Words are failing me

Him: I thought you were coming with your mother, she said she will come today...

Me: She is outside with Ma Sithole

He gave me a slight nod

Voice: Yara? Where are you?

Mimi yelled from the door

Me: Come this side...



My heart was beating out of my chest, I don't know what is going to happen now

AYDEN

Viper sat across me

Me: You need to talk with your brother, he is not listening to me and you know what happens...

Him: That is another issue let's rather talk about your story... Panther told me you want to kill Chieka

Me: Yeah, so?

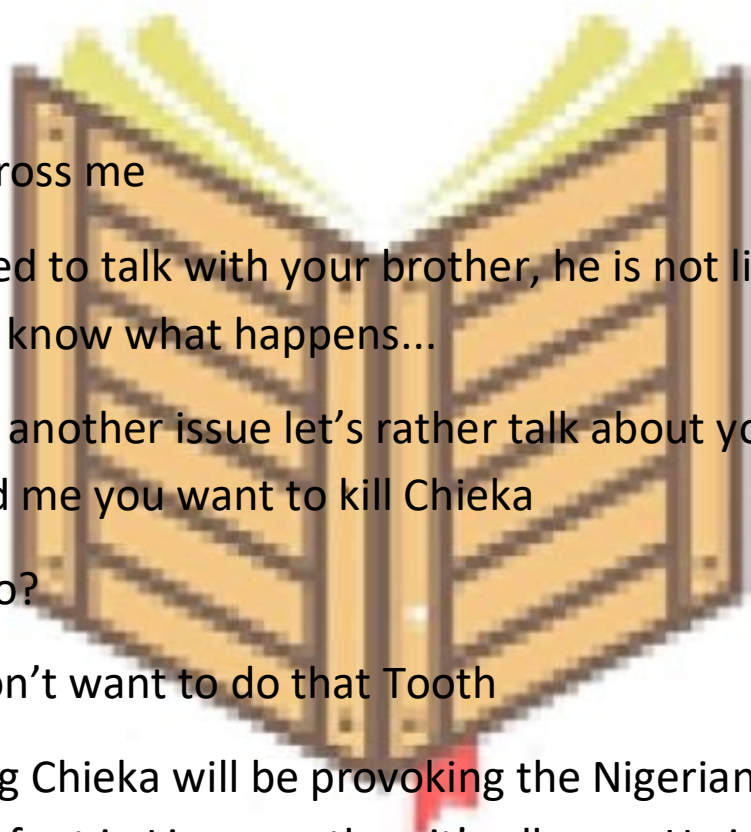
Him: You don't want to do that Tooth

I know killing Chieka will be provoking the Nigerians but if this guy step his foot in Limpopo then it's all over. He is going to do more damage and no one is ready for that

Me: Do you have another solution?

Him: I don't but those people will come for our lives

Me: I know



NOVELSOURU.COM

ETHAN

I have last seen Mimi when she left to Gauteng and we never had any kind of communication. She couldn't have chosen a better time to come back

Me: Mimi...

Mimi: Ethan

She hugged me

My heart felt peace... I broke the hug immediately and looked at her

Mimi: My condolences

Me: Thank you

Yara: Where is mom?

Mimi: She's still outside

I kept my gaze on her

NOVELSGURU.COM

What happens now? I promised Goldie to marry Yara for the sake of our children and now my first love is back. If it wasn't of Yara she was going to help me heal but now, I can never let her in. I was the one who broke her heart before and I am sure she is still hurt by my actions

Mimi: Are going to stand here or we will sit down?

Me: Yeah, right. Please forgive me

Yara: Can you please excuse me...

She half ran to the door

Mimi: Is she okay?

Me: I don't know, maybe I should go and check her

Mimi: Come on, you won't leave me alone. Yara is a big girl

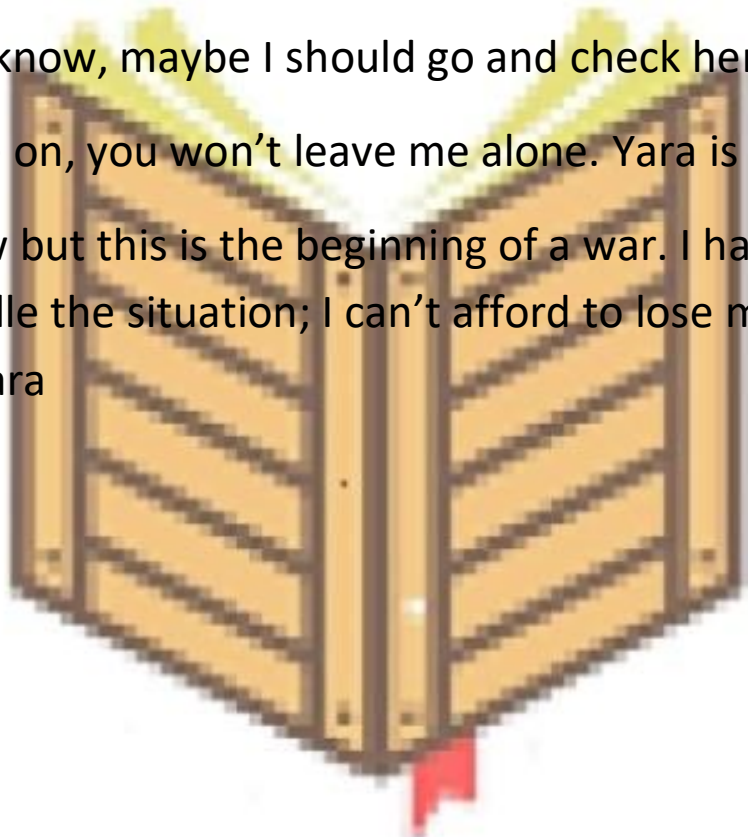
I don't know but this is the beginning of a war. I have to find a way to handle the situation; I can't afford to lose my sanity over Mimi and Yara

YARA

I don't know why I am so affected by the incident that took place inside. What did I expect really? I was too naïve to think their love has died. Even numb a person could feel their love

I called Panther

Him: This is a surprise but a nice one



Me: I knew you'd say that. I hope I am not disturbing you

Him: You can never

Me: I just wanted someone to talk with

Him: What's wrong?

Me: You don't want me to bore you with details

Him: Try me...

Me: Let me just say I am caught between love and war

He kept quiet

Me: Are you still there?

Him: Yes, sorry...

What am I doing here? I am so stupid! Panther is the last person I should be venting to

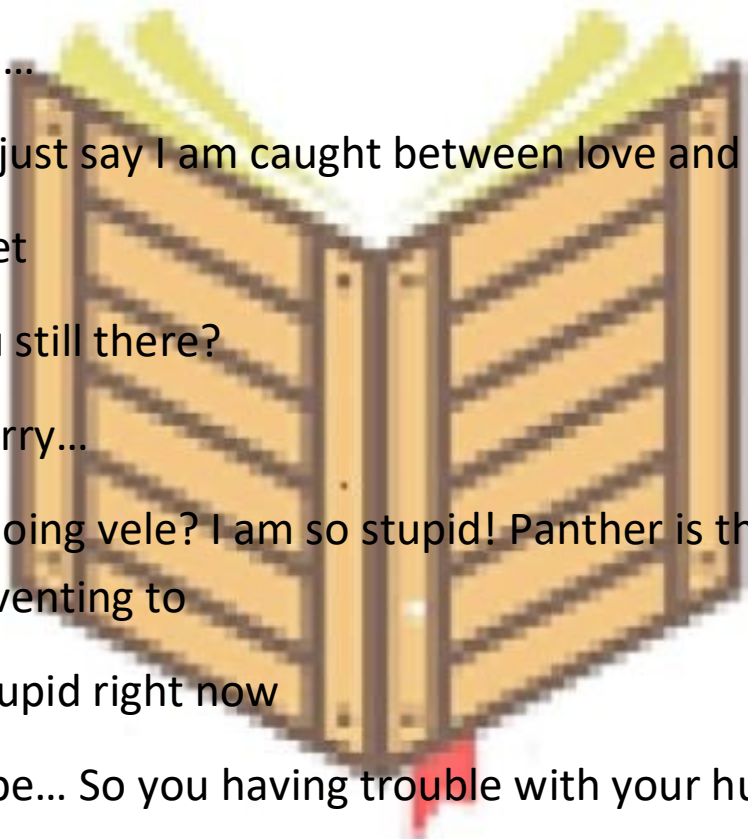
Me: I feel stupid right now

Him: Don't be... So you having trouble with your husband?

Me: It's too early to say that... I thought I'd be able to handle the situation I am in at the moment but I was completely wrong

Him: Too late to escape from it?

Me: So late... I don't have any other choice but to stay and bear the consequences



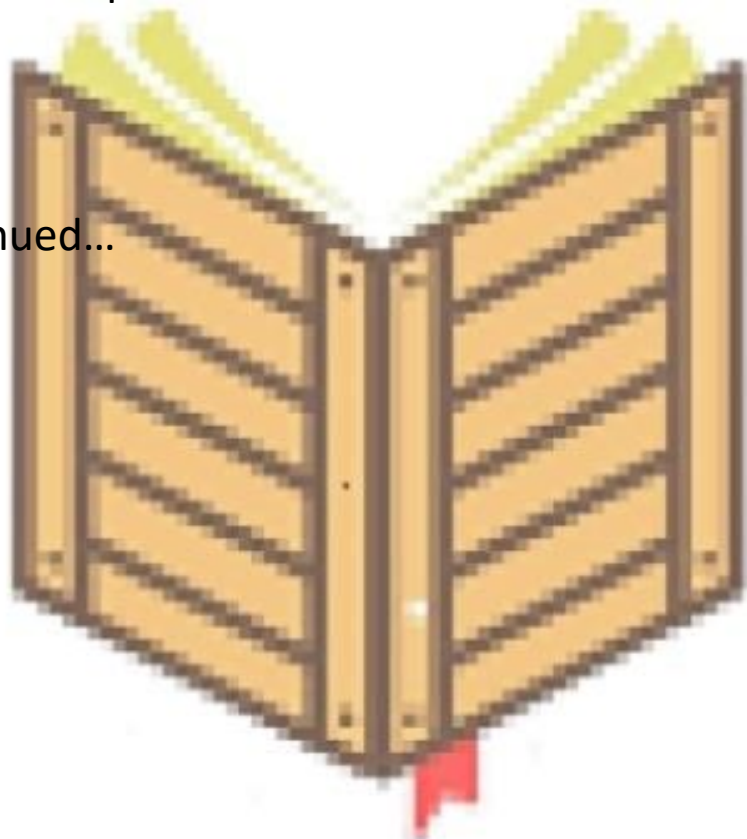
NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Is it worth it?

Me: I don't know

I don't know if it's too early to say but I am feeling some type way toward Ethan. Maybe it's the thought of getting married to him that is making me see him in different eye. Something that's out of the question

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**



13

MIMI

I left Ethan's house an hour ago, it was really nice seeing him after so many years. For the first since his betrayal I looked at him and not get hurt. Is like my heart didn't recall what has happened

My mother shook me

Me: Mama?

Her: I am talking with you

Me: Sorry but I was deep in my thoughts. You were saying?

Her: It doesn't matter, tell me what you were thinking about

I cleared my throat

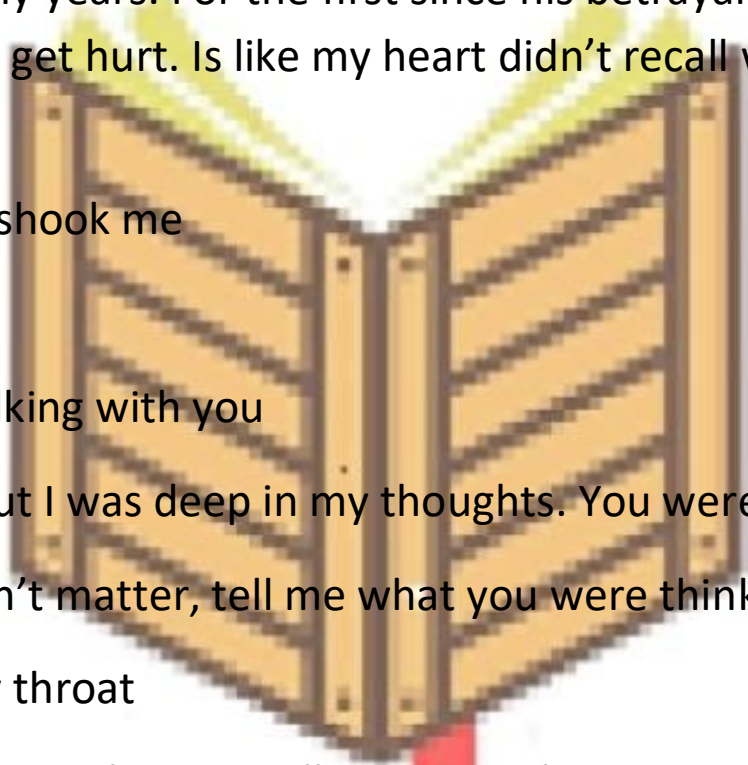
Me: Mama I am about to tell you something I never told you and I don't want you to judge me

Her: I am worried now

Me: Don't be... The thing is, Ethan and I were once involved

Her: Ni khouri mini Mimi? (What are you saying?)

Me: He is my ex



NOVELSGURU.COM

She widened her eyes

Her: Huh? You and Ethan? Lord!

She stood up

Me: It happened years ago mama

Her: Do you still love him?

Me: Ma?

Her: You heard me Mimi

Me: I never stopped

Her: This is not happening. And Yara is she aware of this?

Me: Yes

Her: Finish me! Your sister is going to marry the man you once loved and still love...

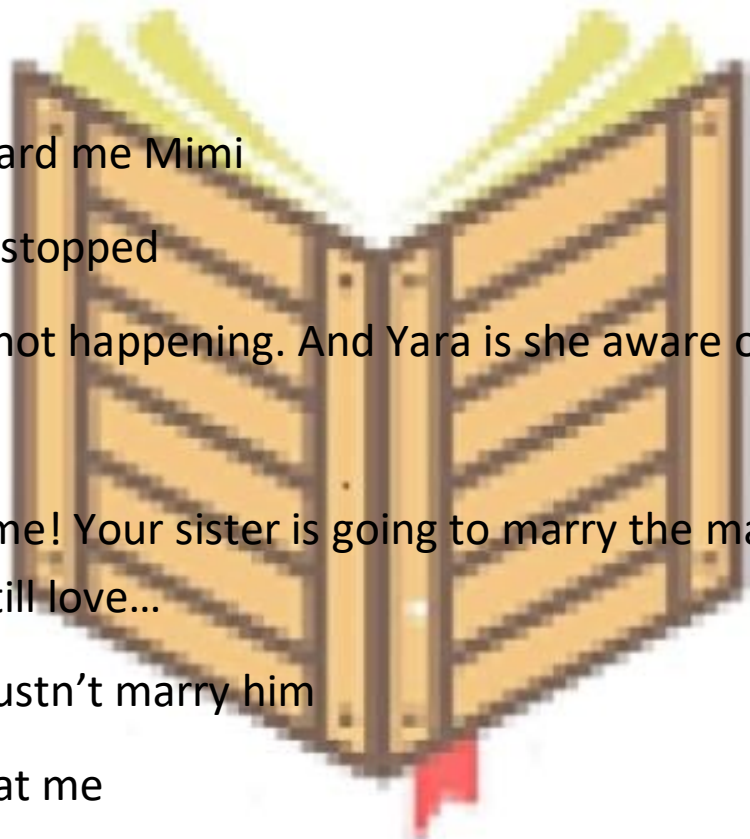
Me: Yara mustn't marry him

She looked at me

Me: Now it's your chance to show me that you really love me  
mama

Her: What do you want me to do?

Me: Stop their wedding...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You haven't been home in years Mimi and you come back to this huge change and expect things to go your way? There's nothing me or you can do about this

Me: There's always something

Her: Not in this situation Mimi... Goldie asked your sister and she won't change her mind. And you should know that because she decided to brush off the fact that you dated Ethan

Me: Yara is selfish

Her: Don't you dare blame the child; she did what was best for her. You since left Mimi, you left us and that put pressure on her. She was forced to work as a house maid just so we could eat

I kept quiet

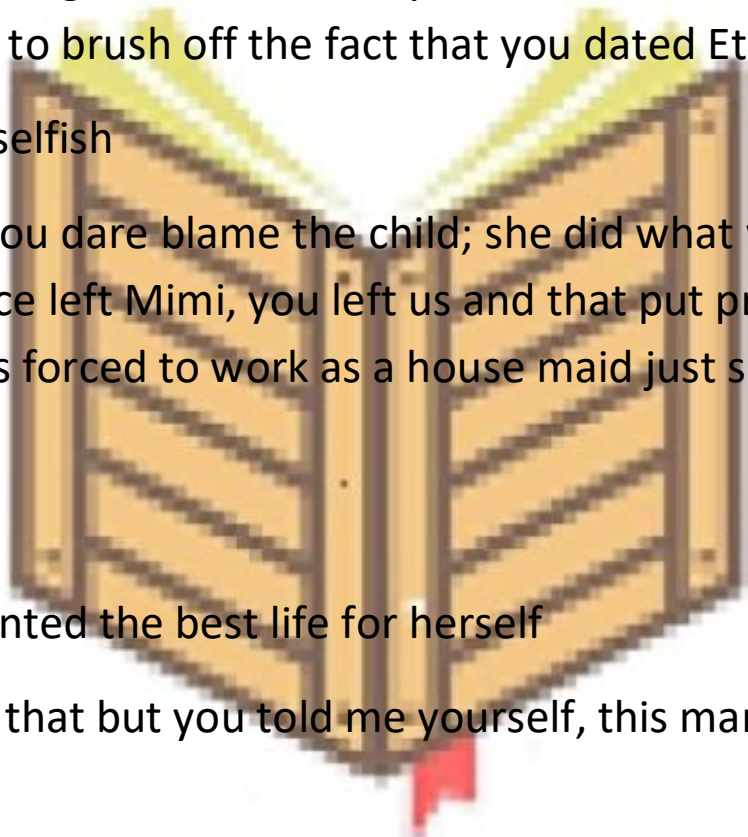
Her: She wanted the best life for herself

Me: I get all that but you told me yourself, this marriage is a faux

Her: Don't start unnecessary fights with your sister please Mimi

Me: I am going to fight for what is mine and if Ethan still loves me then more reason to fight

Her: I am warning you Mimi



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Ethan fixed his eyes on me

Him: About earlier...

I positioned the pillow behind me

Him: I hope I didn't make you feel uncomfortable

Me: I should get used to it?

Him: I don't know what you want me to say Yara

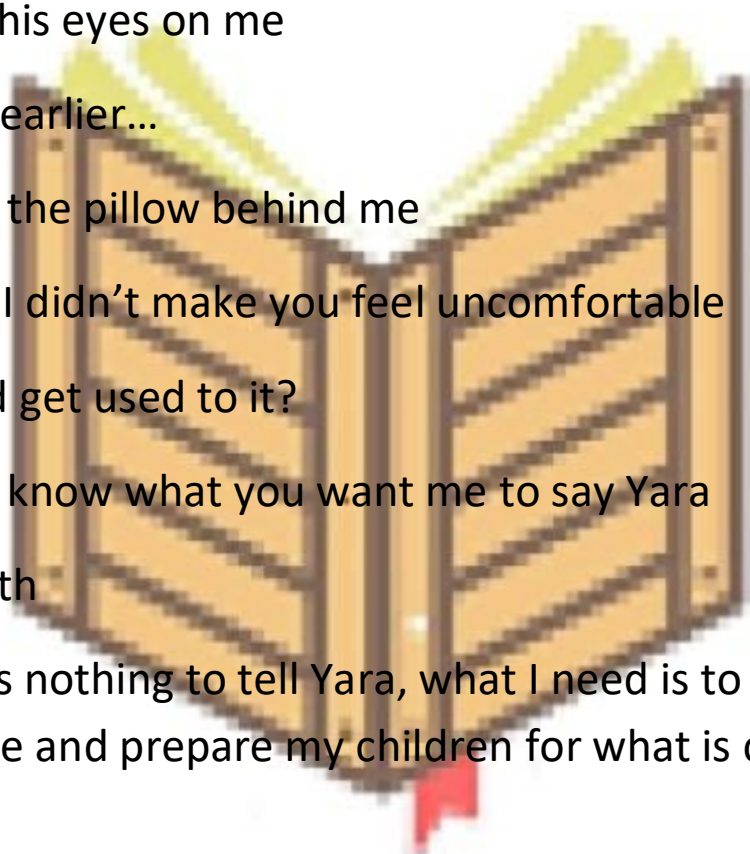
Me: The truth

Him: There's nothing to tell Yara, what I need is to mourn my wife in peace and prepare my children for what is coming

Me: I see

Him: If I were you I wouldn't worry about Mimi... We have a history, yes but that's it

Me: Does Mimi know that?



NOVELSCURL.COM

Him: We haven't seen each other in years and you have to understand that there's a lot that hasn't been said and settled between us

I gave him a slight nod

Him: But that doesn't mean I'll disrespect you, I'll never do that

Me: I understand

He smiled at me

Him: You know you can still walk away right?

I thought for a while

My heart was beating out of my chest. Either way I am screwed

Me: Remember I am not just doing this for myself right? I promised Goldie and going back on my promise...

Him: I know how you feel but she is no longer here

Me: We are doing this for the children and my future, nothing more nothing less

Him: Okay...

NOVELSGURU.COM

ELISA

I kept on checking the time. I wonder what's keeping Yara, she should be here. When I agreed to this marriage proposal I didn't think that it will hit a wall soon, I can't allow my children to against each other. One of them has to surrender and I don't care who that is but one has to

I took my phone and called Yara

MIMI

I decided to take walk around the hood with Buhler

Advertisement

she is so excited. Limpopo is totally different from Gauteng

Her: You never told me your place was this beautiful

Me: I was still blinded by Jozi

Her: I love it here

Me: More like you love your freedom



NOVELSOURU.COM

She chuckled softly

Her: Chieka can go and hang himself

Me: Good riddance

We continued walking

Me: I saw Ethan...

Her: And, what happened?

Me: Chemistry is still there

Her: The man just lost his wife obviously he is acting out of emotions

Me: I don't think so

Her: You are so good in twisting things Mimi

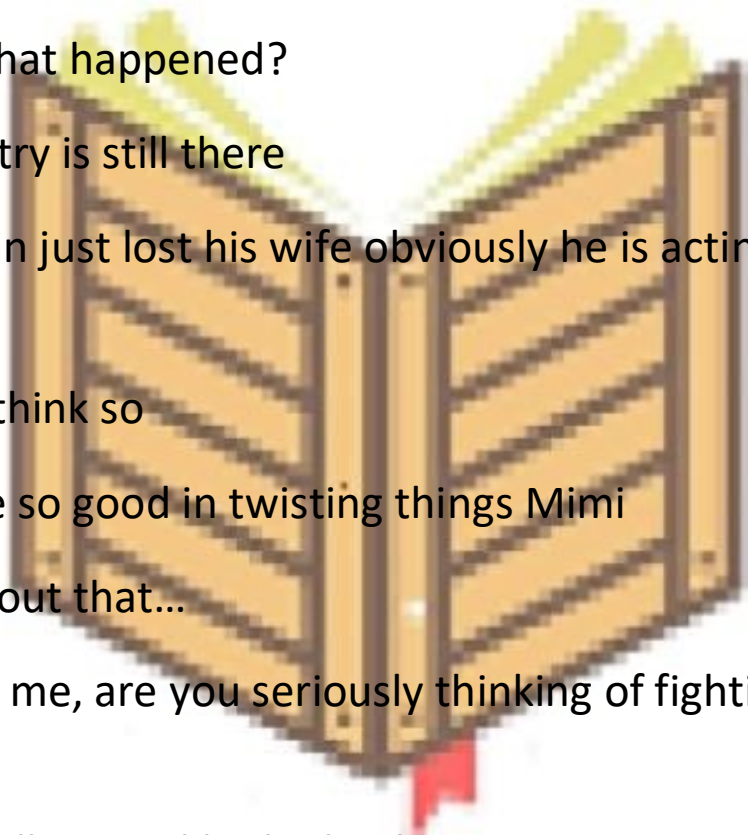
Me: Isn't about that...

Her: But tell me, are you seriously thinking of fighting your sister?

I stopped walking and looked at her

Her: Think about it, we talking about your blood sister and from what I've heard she is doing this for the family and herself

Me: I am just hurt Buhle. Yara wasn't supposed to agree in the first place, she could have looked for a job and save for Varsity



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: We both know how hard it is to find something when you have no qualifications and I am sure Yara tried to find something. She's too young to just agree on marrying someone who doesn't love her

Me: You think?

Her: I know so, try and talk with your sister. Don't judge her before you have know her reasons

Me: Still that doesn't...

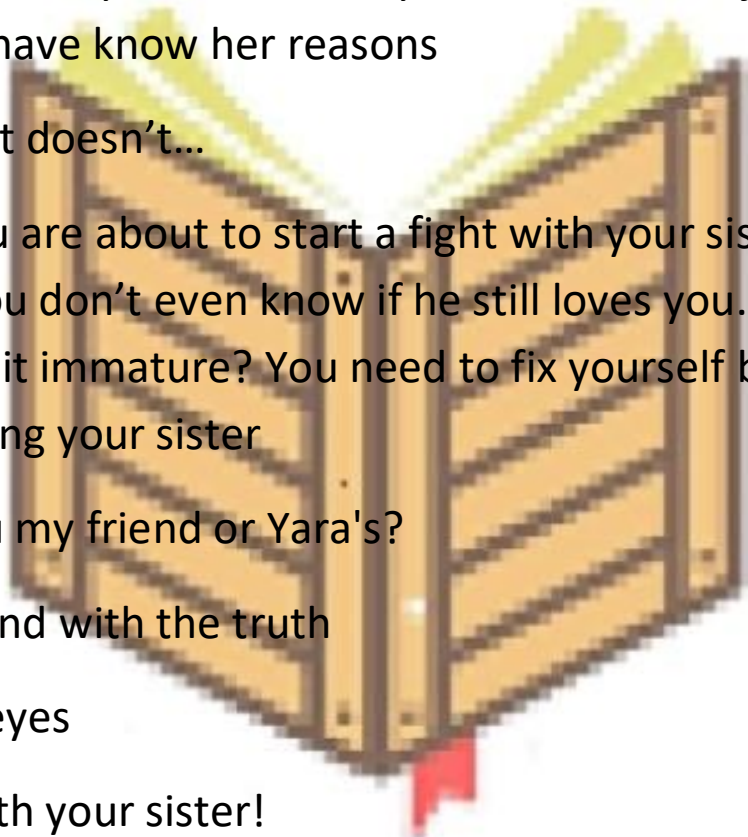
Her: No, you are about to start a fight with your sister for someone you don't even know if he still loves you. Don't you find that a bit immature? You need to fix yourself before you start attacking your sister

Me: Are you my friend or Yara's?

Her: Try friend with the truth

I rolled my eyes

Her: Talk with your sister!



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA



Nosiswe threw her hands in the air

Her: You said what?

Me: I think I am falling for him

Her: You are a fool

I kept quiet

Her: I don't believe you right now in fact I don't want to believe you

Me: I didn't mean to. It happened Nos

Her: Still that doesn't change that you love him

Me: Don't say that, I am feeling bad as it is

Her: So tell me, when Goldie asked you to marry him-were you already lusting her husband?

Me: No...

Her: Then it happened overnight?

Me: Spending time with him...

Her: Spare me the details

She kept her gaze on me

Her: I warned you and did you listen?

Me: You think I am a bad person?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Let me not answer you

She shook her head and laid it against the couch

ETHAN

I placed the pillow on my laps; Alexa laid her head on it

I brushed her hair

Her: Daddy...

Me: Mmh?

Her: Can I go and stay with granny?

Me: Huh?

Her: Please. I just want to spend some time at her place

Me: Why baby?

Her: This house is empty without mommy

It has been a day since she has left us and already her absence is setting us apart

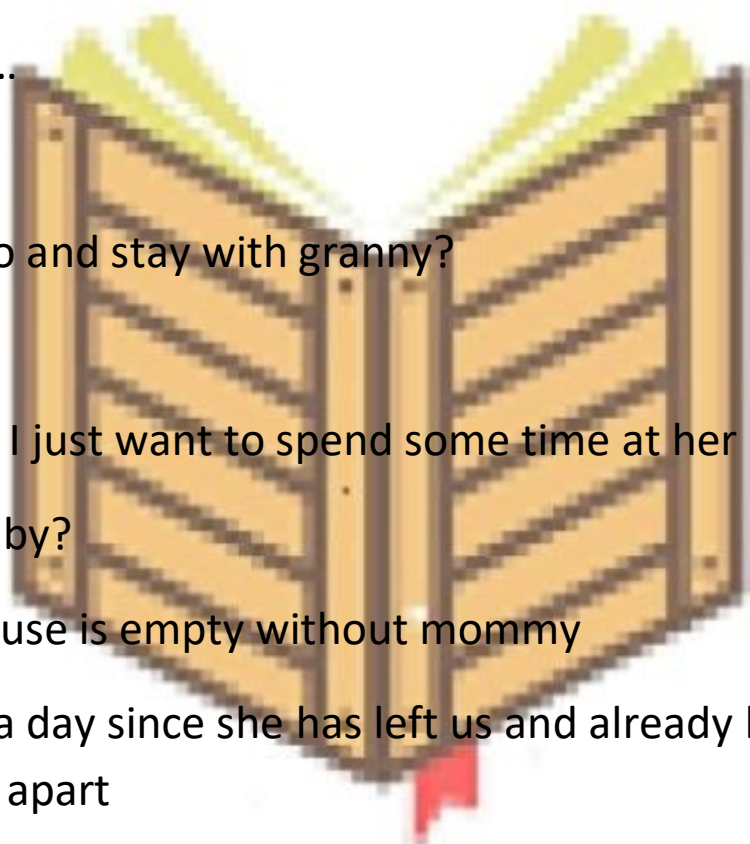
Me: No Alexa, what about school?

Her: Please daddy... I am begging you

I kept quiet and exhaled

Me: Did you agree with your brother on this?

Her: No, he said aunt Yara will take care of him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: And you don't want that?

Her: I want my grandmother

YARA

My mother just confronted me about Mimi and Ethan's relationship. It's hard to tell what's really going on in her mind

Me: Mama?

Her: I am defeated Yara. Last thing I need is my children fighting for a man

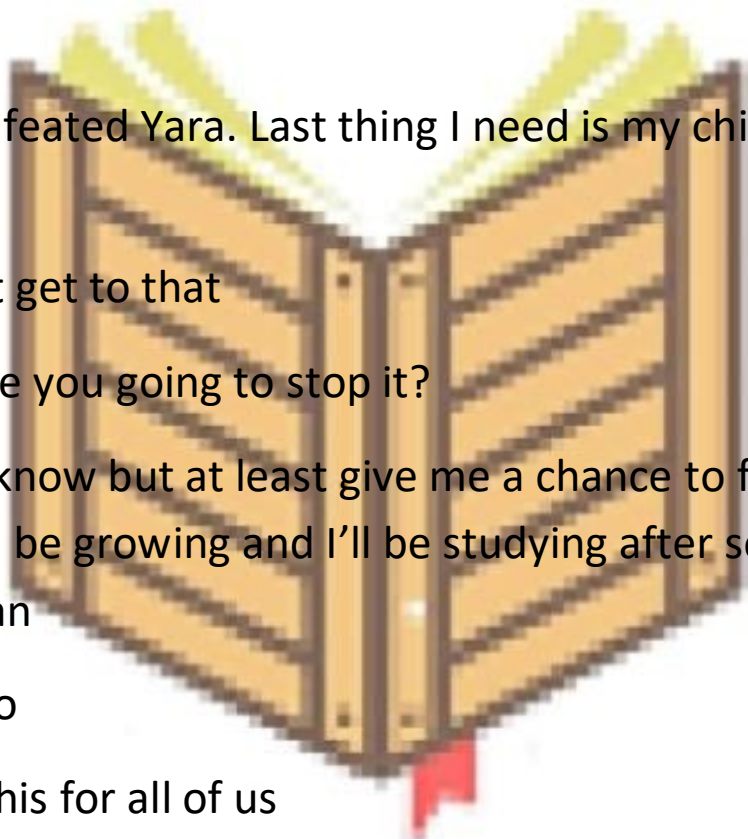
Me: It won't get to that

Her: How are you going to stop it?

Me: I don't know but at least give me a chance to fulfil my wish. The kids will be growing and I'll be studying after some years I'll divorce Ethan

Her: Yara, no

Me: Doing this for all of us



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

14

YARA

[ONE MONTH LATER]

I bumped into Ethan when I walked out of the bedroom

Ethan was looking so handsome; I don't think I'll ever turn a blind eye when I see him

Me: Morning

Him: Morning, you going to work?

Ethan's uncles came to my house the week before last week and pay for my Lobola, right after that I moved in with Ethan. Things have been cool between us, no major problems yet. We changed our minds about signing at home affairs but he bought me a ring. He took off his ring after the negotiations were done; he said he doesn't want to disrespect his memory with his wife. Rotenda is very welcoming but with Alexa is a different story; she is still at her grandmother's. Our marriage is exactly a faux, what connect me and Ethan are the kids only. But on my side, I still feel the same if not worse. We are not sharing the bedroom; I am using the bedroom next to the main room

Me: Yes

Him: You look nervous

Me: I am nervous

He chuckled softly

Him: Ayden is not that scary trust me, you will enjoy working with him

Me: Are we talking about the same person?

I've only seen him twice but already I can say he is arrogant and a jerk. Yes, you got it right. I got the job; I am Ayden's PA and boy! That guy is piece of shit but long as I am getting paid.

Yesterday I went to sign the contract with HR. I am expected to work from 09:00-17:30 with 1 hour break, breakfast and lunch included. My salary is R5000.00 if I am working after hours they will add R500.00 benefits included, pension fund and medical aid. I have to say the salary was more than I expected and with that being said my mom won the lottery

Him: Maybe just a little

Me: Let's talk after 18:00, you will see I wasn't lying

He laughed

Him: I'll see you later

He kissed my forehead

Him: And I'll be fetching Alexa later

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Oh... Let's hope she doesn't change her mind again

Him: She will have me to deal with

Rotenda ran to me

Me: Someone woke up excited

I picked him up

Rotenda: Because I have the best aunt in the world

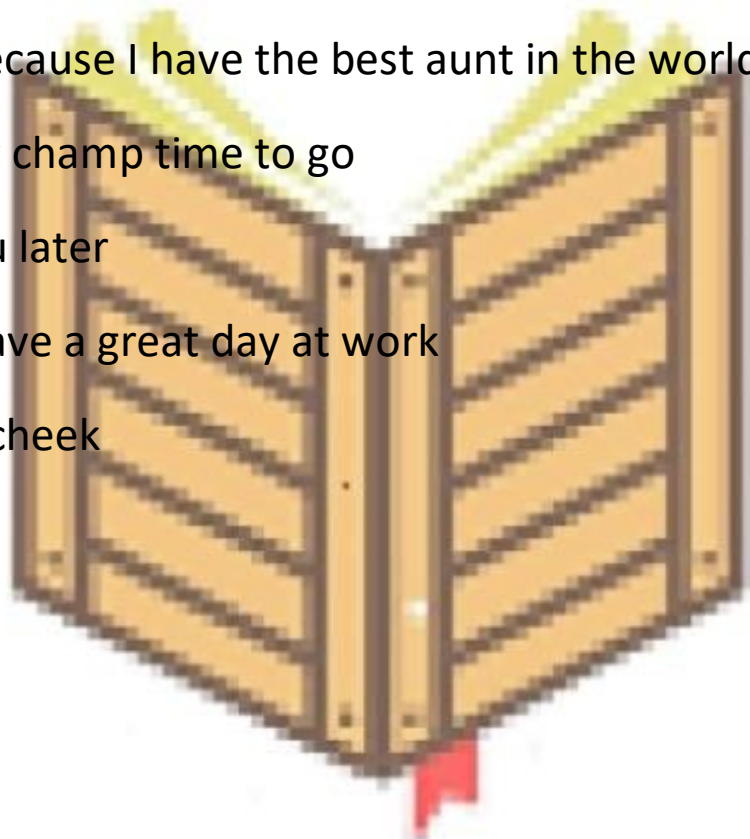
Ethan: Okay champ time to go

Me: See you later

Rotenda: Have a great day at work

I kissed his cheek

AYDEN



NOVELSGURU.COM

I made my way to the eating room. Everyone was already settled around the table

My father was also at the table. My mother is so naïve and stupid, she keeps on taking him back

Me: Morning

They greeted me back

Father: You not having breakfast with us?

I looked at him

Me: No

Ma: Please son, you can't go at work with a empty stomach

Me: I already said no Mimsey

Father: That's not a way to talk with your mother Ayden

Me: Hold it right there... You won't come from where you stay and tell me shit

Ma: Ayden!

Father: If I were you I'd listen to your mother boy

Me: Tell me does your wife know that you are still sleeping with your ex wife?

Ma: Now you went too far and I won't allow you to insult me

My sister laughed

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amelia: Drama so early in the morning

Ma: Get out of my face Ayden

Me: Mimsey...

Ma: I won't repeat myself Ayden

I clicked my tongue and turned around

My mother will never see my father for the man he is

MIMI

Me: Buhle! (Yelling) we going to be late

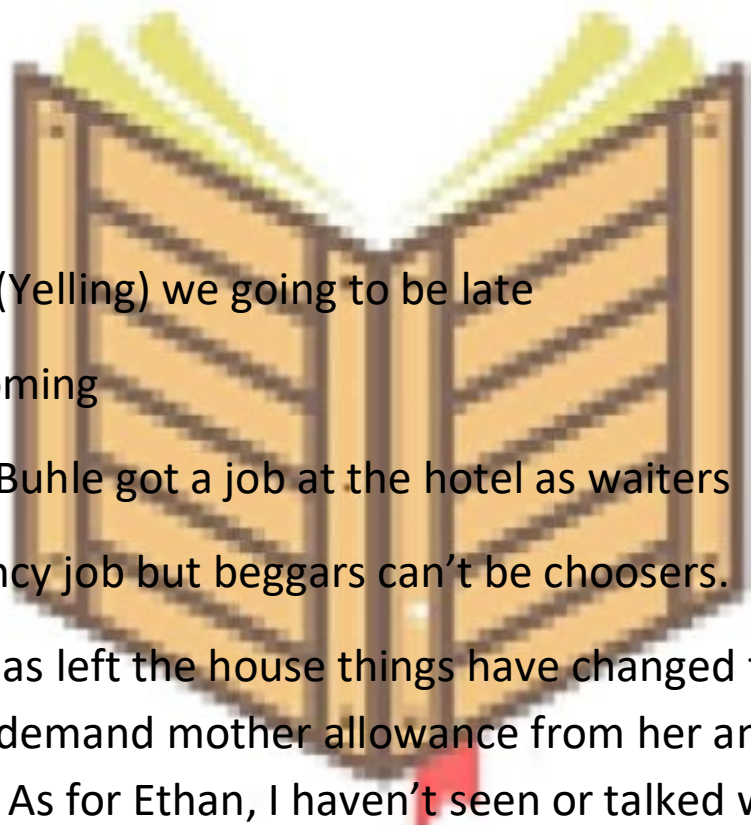
Her: I am coming

Myself and Buhle got a job at the hotel as waiters

it's not a fancy job but beggars can't be choosers.

Since Yara has left the house things have changed for better, my mother demand mother allowance from her and I actually feel for her. As for Ethan, I haven't seen or talked with him, we last talked when his family came to fetch Yara. We had time to talk about our feelings and even though we love each other Ethan decided to respect Yara and cut ties with me. To say I wasn't hurt would be an understatement, Yara took him from me and there's nothing I'd do about it

Me: I swear I'll leave you behind next time



NOVELSGURU.COM



She came running

Her: I am sorry. We can go now

Me: You want that stupid manager to fire us, right?

Her: I said I am sorry

Me: Mama we are leaving

Ma: Okay girls... See you later

I grabbed Buhle's hand and walked out

YARA



I arrived at work exactly 10 minutes before it's 09:00

My office is opposite Ayden's office, honestly I don't know why he hired a PA as it is said he is forever not in the office but I don't care about that...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sphehile walked up to me, she is the receptionist. She has been working for about two weeks

Her: You early

Me: I didn't want to be on the wrong side of Mr A

We laughed

Her: And did I tell you, you looking beautiful. That afro baby girl I was wearing a long floral dress with no sleeves; I didn't go crazy with the makeup because I am not a fun

Me: Thank you...

Her face immediately changed when she darted her eyes to the door

Me: What?

Her: He is here...

I turned around

Ayden is always on point, he wasn't in his suit. He was wearing a jean and a t-shirt but presentable

Me: Oh shit... I am about to pee on myself

Sphehile chuckled softly

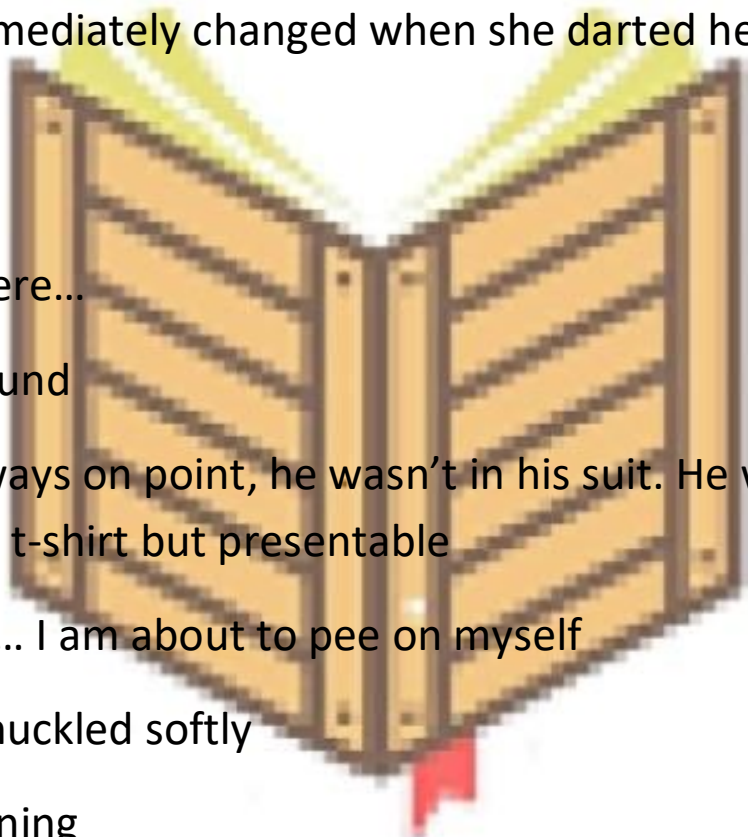
Ayden: Morning

Me&Sphe: Morning Sir

Him: Aren't you supposed to be at your station?

Me: I was just having a friendly conversation with Sphe...

Him: Oh you paid to do that? Didn't know



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No it's just...

Him: Do what you are paid for

He walked into his office

Me: Is he always like this?

Her: He is worse

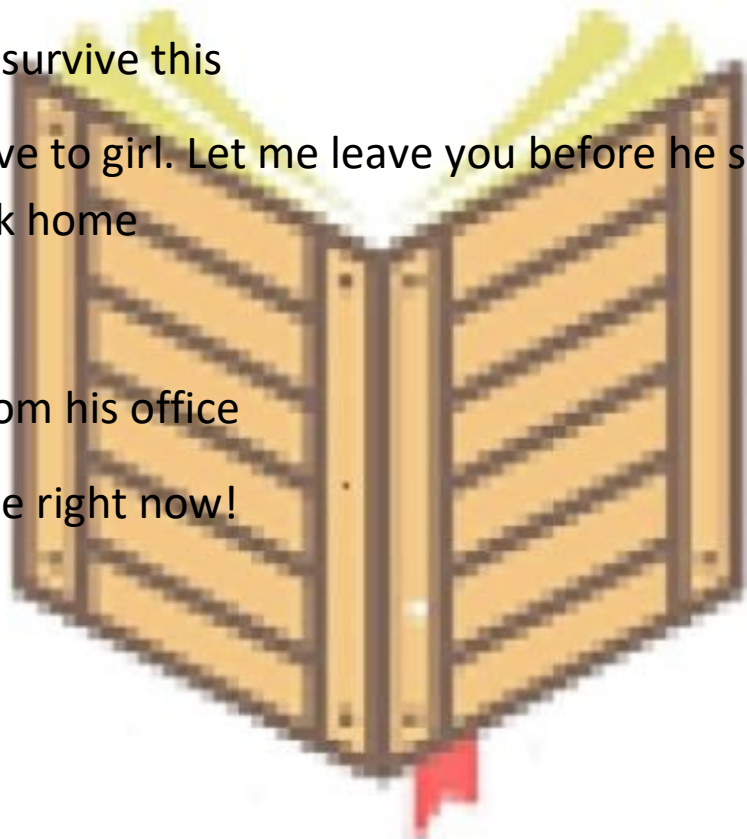
Me: I won't survive this

Her: You have to girl. Let me leave you before he storm out and send us back home

Him: Yara!

He yelled from his office

Lord save me right now!



PANTHER

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I sat opposite Chieka. Viper rested his arms on the table and looked at him

Viper: So you went against our word and come here?

Chieka laughed

Chieka: Not a way to talk with your client

Viper: Last time I check, we didn't agree to supply you with guns

Chieka: That's why I am here

Me: Viper relax...

Viper: Relax? You are tripping Panther. This man shouldn't have set his foot in our province

Chieka: If I was you I'd listen to Panther

He lit his cigar

Me: Gentlemen I really don't see why we must fight

Chieka: Where is Tooth?

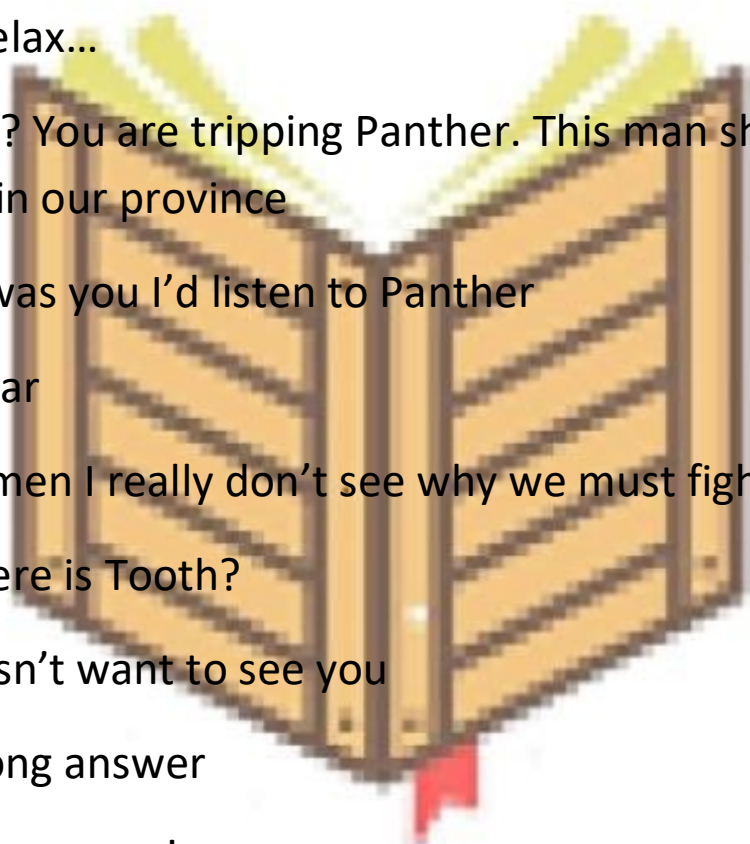
Me: He doesn't want to see you

Chieka: Wrong answer

Viper: Fuck you man!

Me: Viper! You need to control your temper

Chieka stood up and buttoned his suit



NOVELSGURU.COM

Chieka: Don't force my hand. Next time when I see you I want the whole crew of The Unfazed in front of me. No joke about that

Viper: Dream on...

Chieka: I am sure your son would really love to see his father's associate and my men will enjoy tearing your wife's pussy. And you Panther, that little girl of yours would really make a good prostitute

Viper: You threatening us?

Me: If you dare go anywhere near Yara I swear I will kill you

Chieka: Then you know what to do

ELISA

I walked outside and looked at the guys who were building. Since Yara got married things have went from bad to good in fact amazing. She gave me portion of her Lobola money and I am using that money to extend my house. They are almost done. I have to admit though, I was scared for her, I thought Mimi was going to cause havoc but surprisingly she didn't. Yara



NOVELSURI.COM

really got what she wanted; she is now working at one of the biggest Insurance firm. She has also registered at UNISA in few years she will be getting the degree she has always wanted. If it's not God then I don't know

Me: Can I get you something to drink gentlemen?

Worker 1: Yes ma Elisa

Worker 2: It's like you read our minds

Me: Coming right away

I smiled and walked back inside

Things are finally falling into place

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

15

AYDEN

I stood at the door

Me: Yara, my office please

I walked back inside my office. After a min she walked in

Me: I don't bite so relax

Her: Can I help you sir?

Me: Yes, I'd like to inform you beforehand so that we don't fight as time goes on

Her: I don't think I am following

Me: Take a seat

She sat down

Me: I am one difficult person to work with; you must have seen that already

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Unfortunately

Me: I'll that slide. As long as you know your job and do it in time, me and you won't have to cat-mouse. I am hardly in the office and when I am it means I need to work and for that to

happened I'll need your co-operation. Sometimes I'll shift the cases to you and that requires your time to make a research on it. Are we clear?

Her: I think we are

Me: Don't think Miss Masia, thinking is not allowed in here

Her: We are Mr A

Me: Thank you

I took the file that was on the table of the table

Me: Take this file. It's a claim of Naidoo's firm, I want you to go through it and call all the contacts in there

Her: You want me to do it?

I looked at her and scratched my chin

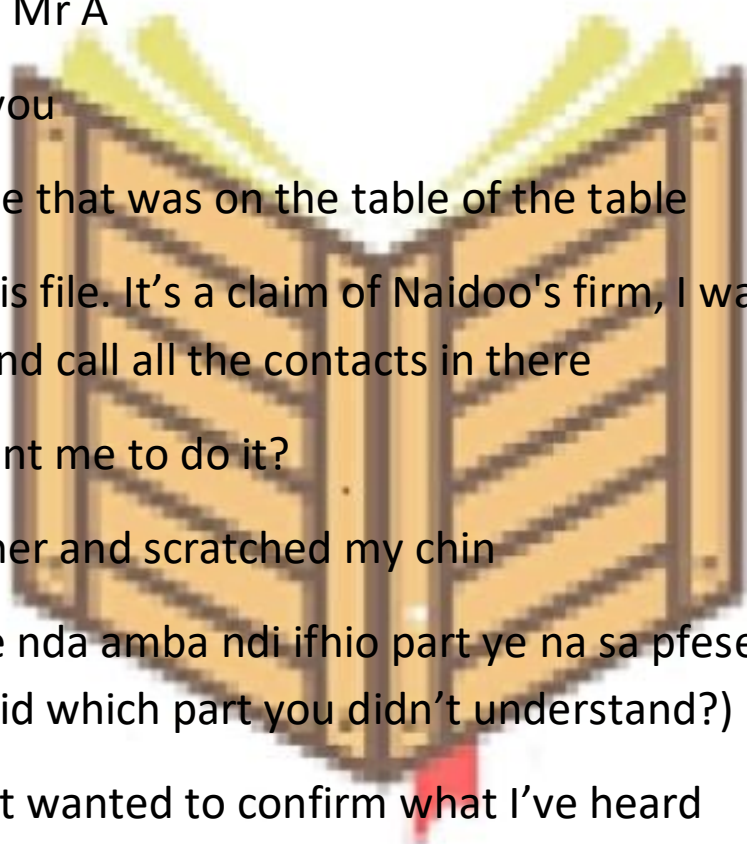
Me: Khazwe nda amba ndi ifhio part ye na sa pfesesa? (From what I've said which part you didn't understand?)

Her: Sir I just wanted to confirm what I've heard

Me: So you want me to repeat myself?

Her: No, I want...

Me: Miss Masia are you sure you are the right person for this job?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: I am Sir but what you are doing is trying to find a fault where there isn't

Me: Seems like you got lot to say

Her: Not at all, as your assistant I am supposed to be in line with what you are saying to avoid making mistakes and if you don't level with me I am going to make a mistake

Me: And I am going to fire you

Her: I don't think you will, I didn't just fall into this job. I applied for it and if they chose me it means I am suitable for it. So if you want to fire me then you'll have to deal with CCMA

Wow! She is so feisty. I've never had an employee of her kind, all of my assistants feared me

Me: Still have something else to say?

Her: Think I am done

I kept quiet

Her: Seems like we are done. If you need me

Advertisement **NOVELSGURU.COM**

you know where to find me

She stood up

MIMI

Mondays are always a nightmare. There's no time to catch a breath but it means more tips for us

I walked into the kitchen to give the Chef the order

Chef: Today it's madhouse

Me: Tell me about it

I sighed and walked out

My eyes darted to the entrance. My eyes dropped when I saw Chieka

Me: What is he doing here?

Luckily Buhle is at the back, I have to tell her before she comes out

NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

I called my assistant to my office... The door opened

Assistant: Sir

Me: Can you please cancel all my appointments for today and apologize to them on my behalf

Assistant: I will do so

Me: I've also sent the draft of Tshivhase plan; I want you to send it to Ayden before the end of today

Assistant: Understood

She walked out

Today I am going to fetch Alexa from her grandmother, I am not sure if she will agree. She since left the day after her mother died and refused to come back. I thought she was just acting up at first but now I can see it's more than that



NOVELSGURU.COM

MIMI

I gave Buhle glass of water

Her: He is here for us Mimi. We shouldn't never left

Me: Who told him we are here?

Her: There's nothing Chieka doesn't know Mimi, he got eyes everywhere and it's a matter of time before he find us

I swallowed hard

Me: This is not happening

Her: It is and we are screwed

Me: What are we gonna do?

Her: I don't know

I sat down and exhaled

Me: I can't have him to know where we stay, I can't

Her: Maybe he is here for something else; he would have called us already

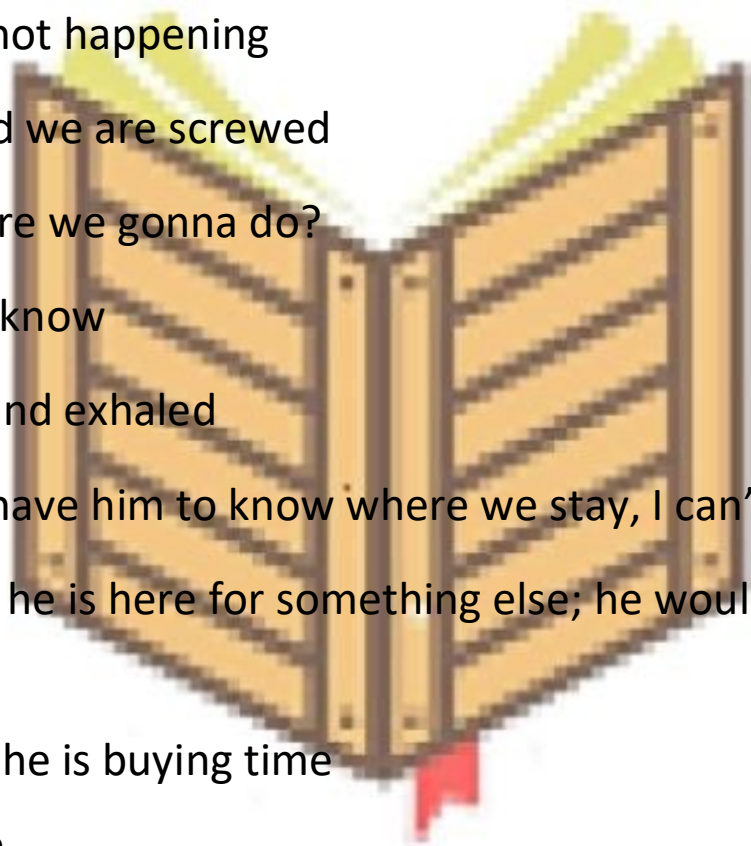
Me: Maybe he is buying time

Chef: Mimi?

He yelled from the kitchen

Me: Oh shit, how am I gonna serve customers without him seeing us?

Her: We give our tables to Evidence



NOVELSGURU.COM

This is not happening!

YARA

I couldn't wait for my lunch break, Ayden was suffocating me Panther invited me for lunch. Panther and I are still hanging out but it's just that nothing more. He has told me how he feels about me and I told him I need time to sort my life out before I can decide on us

Him: For someone who just started working you look bored

Me: How can I be happy if I am working for Ayden?

He chuckled softly

Him: He's at it already?

Me: You have no idea, what's wrong with him? Ha I can't deal with him

Him: You'll get used to him

Me: I still don't get how you two are friends; you are completely different from him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I wouldn't say that

Me: So you like him?

Him: Uh-uh how did this turn to be about me? We talking about Ayden and not me

Me: Whatever

Panther is very interesting person to be around and I do enjoy his company a lot

Him: There's something I need to talk to you about

Me: Sounds important

Him: I don't want you to take this the wrong way but I think we should stop seeing each other for sometime

Me: I don't understand. Is it because I refused to give you a chance? I thought we agreed on waiting

Him: No, that's not the reason

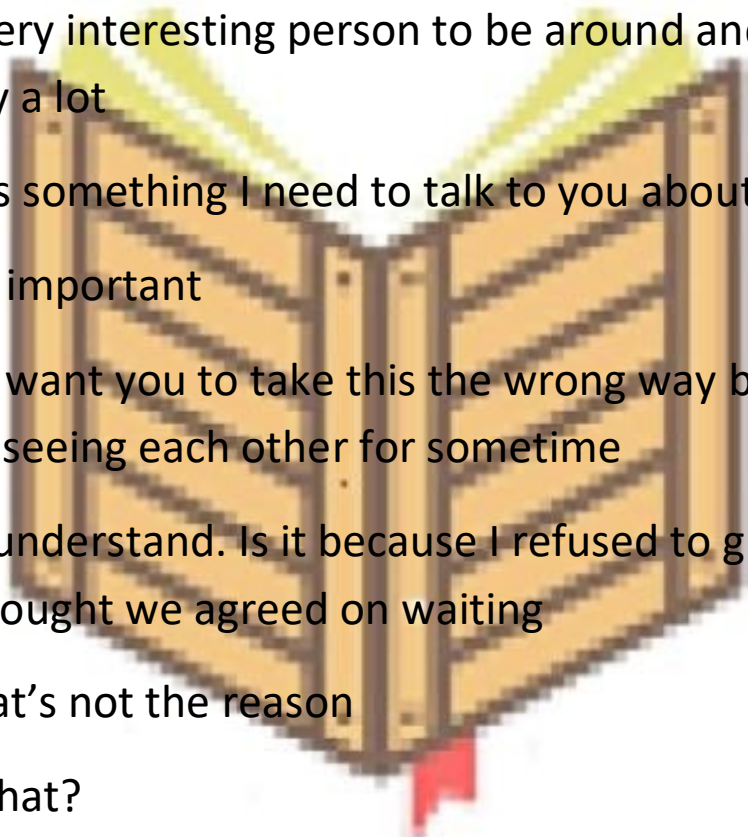
Me: Then what?

Him: I can't tell you but I am doing this for you

Me: Wow, so you are not different from all of them? You just the same

Him: Watch your words with me

Me: Oh really?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I didn't mean it like that

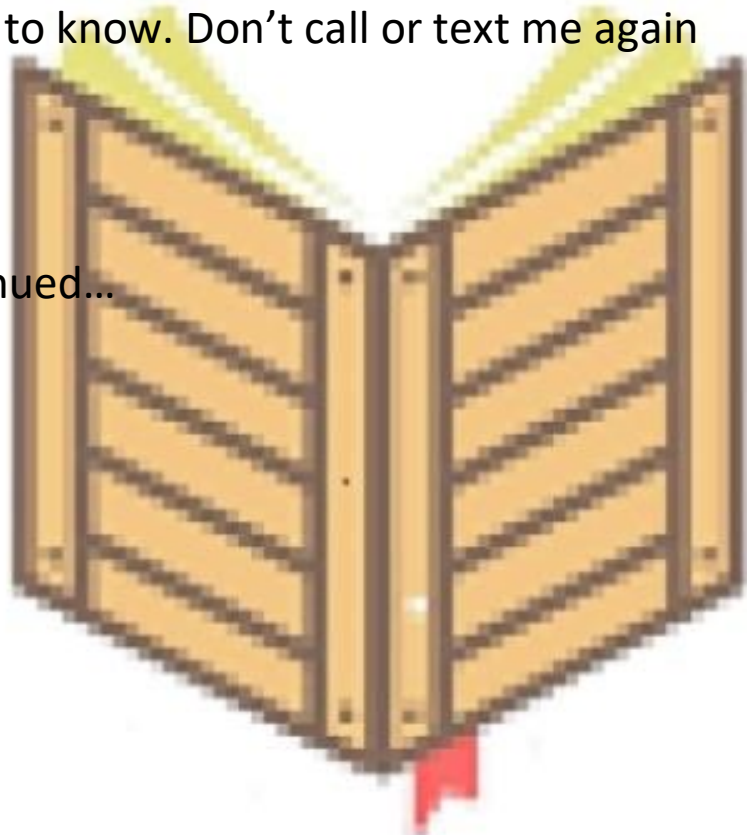
I stood up

Him: Yara!

He grabbed my arm

Me: Let go of my hand. I don't know what's wrong with you and I don't wish to know. Don't call or text me again

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

16

ETHAN

Ma Sithole walked in with Alexa

Alexa: Daddy

She ran to me

Me: So you did miss me?

Alexa: I did

Ma Sithole: Son-in-law

Me: How are you ma?

She sat down

Ma Sithole: Fine and you?

Me: Fine, is this one I've missed

I tickled her

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Alexa: Daddy stop (Laughs)

Me: Rotenda can't wait to see you

Alexa: I miss him too

Ma Sithole: Now go ahead and fetch your bags





She ran to take her things

Me: How is she mama?

Ma Sithole: Eish I feel like she is better now the past few weeks were so hard for her, she'd wake up and cry in the middle of the night. She'd refuse food and lock herself

Me: My poor baby

Ma Sithole: But now I feel like she is starting to accept that her mother is no more

Me: It's really hard. Goldie's death is still a raw wound

Ma Sithole: And how is Rotenda?

Me: He is doing fine, thanks to Yara

She smiled

Ma Sithole: My daughter was right about her

Me: Yeah she was

She looked at me

Ma Sithole: And you? How are you?

Me: I am trying ma, I can't it's easy but I have no other choice

She nodded repeatedly



NOVELSGURU.COM

ELISA

Today I received unusual call; honestly I never thought I will ever hear anything from Yara's father until today. Mimi and Yara don't share a father; I cheated on my husband with Yara's father. Mzoxolo Khumalo, that's his name. We met by chance and I was charmed by him, at first I didn't want to pursue a relationship because I was already in one but eventually I was swept off my feet. In time of our affair my husband was working far from home that's why it didn't take him long to know the child wasn't his. I apologized and then we solved things, he accepted Yara as his and never had any problem with her. The problems started when I kept on going back to Mzoxolo that was when Richard took his things and left me. He left me with two children and Mzoxolo changed on me, he stopped giving me money and I never heard from him. Now he wants me to reunite him with his daughter

Advertisement

where do I even start to tell Yara that her father isn't her father and that her father is a gangster? She will hate me, not only her but Mimi as well. I've lied to both my girls

YARA

I was going through the file Ayden gave me and calling the contacts attached to it. I thought the work was going to be simple but boy! Was I not wrong?

Ayden knock on the door

Me: Come in

He stepped inside

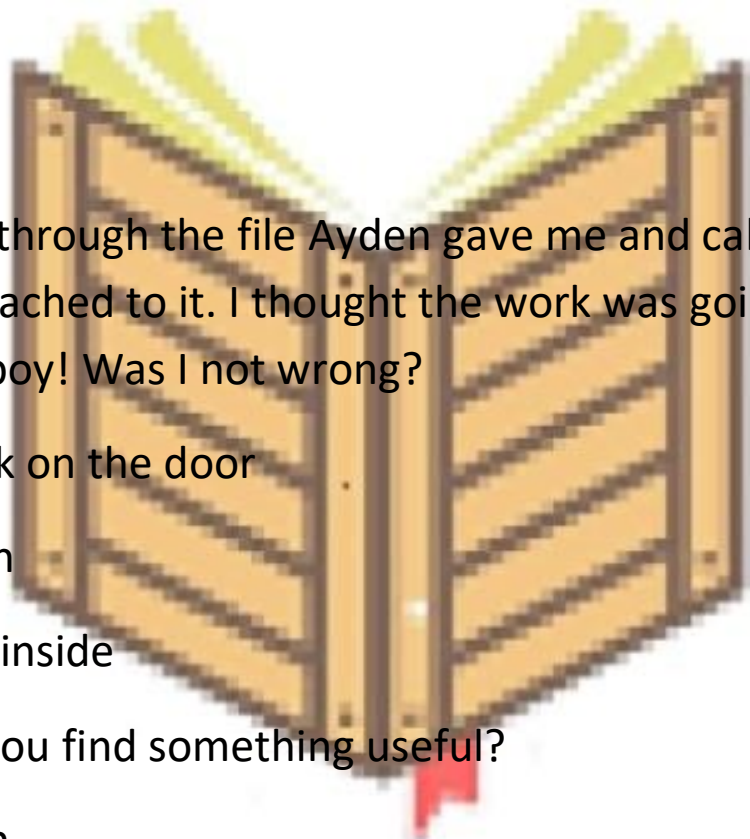
Him: Have you find something useful?

He sat down

Me: Yes, I managed to talk with two employees who were working the night the firm went up in flames

Him: And?

Me: They supported what Mr Naidoo has said, no one started the fire



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Okay good job. When you are done with everything you will let me now

Me: I will do so Sir

He stood up... His phone rang

Him: Panther

He walked out of my office

MIMI

I was at home, we asked the manager to let us go. Luckily he didn't question us since we swapped shifts with another waiter

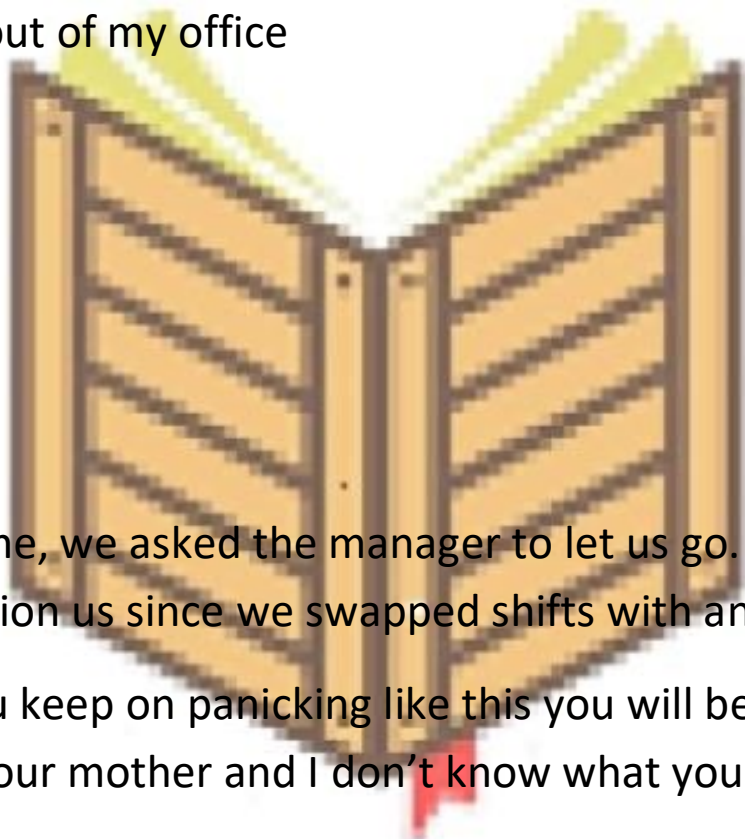
Buhle: If you keep on panicking like this you will be forced to explain to your mother and I don't know what you will say to him

Me: I can't sit still. If he is here then me and you are dead

Her: Calm down...

My phone rang, it was unsaved numbers

Me: Hello



NOVELSGURU.COM

The person kept quiet

Me: Who is this?

Buhle: What?

Voice: Are you with that bitch of yours?

Me: Chieka?

Buhle covered her mouth

Him: Yes baby. Did you think you can hide from me?

Me: What do you want? I paid you the money I stole, what more do you want from me?

Him: It doesn't work like that. It's my business and I am the one who decide on your freedom .

Me: You will play far from me

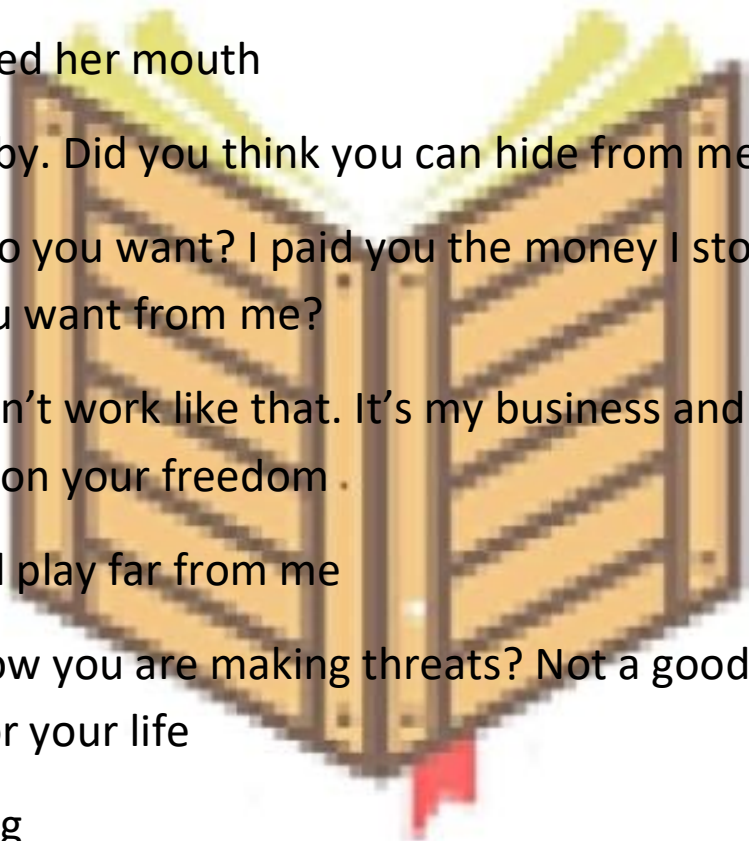
Him: And now you are making threats? Not a good way to negotiate for your life

I was shaking

Him: I'll text you the name of the hotel that I am staying at and I want you and that bitch to show up

Me: What if we don't?

Him: Then your sister and mother will meet their ancestors



NOVELSGURU.COM

So he is having them followed?

Me: Leave my family out of this

Him: Only you can save them

Hu hung up

I dropped the phone

Buhle: What did he say?

Me: He is after us

PANTHER

Ayden hit the table

Viper: I told you he will be livid

Ayden: Livid doesn't even start to describe how I am feeling. I warned you Panther about this but did you listen?

He pointed at me

Viper: Now it's not time for this Tooth. We need to come up with a way to shut this dog



NOVELSGURL.COM

Me: Viper is right, I underestimated him

Ayden: You sure did

Me: Chieka is a powerful man and we need him in our corner

Viper: No we don't need him. The Unfazed don't need anyone

Ayden: Viper is right

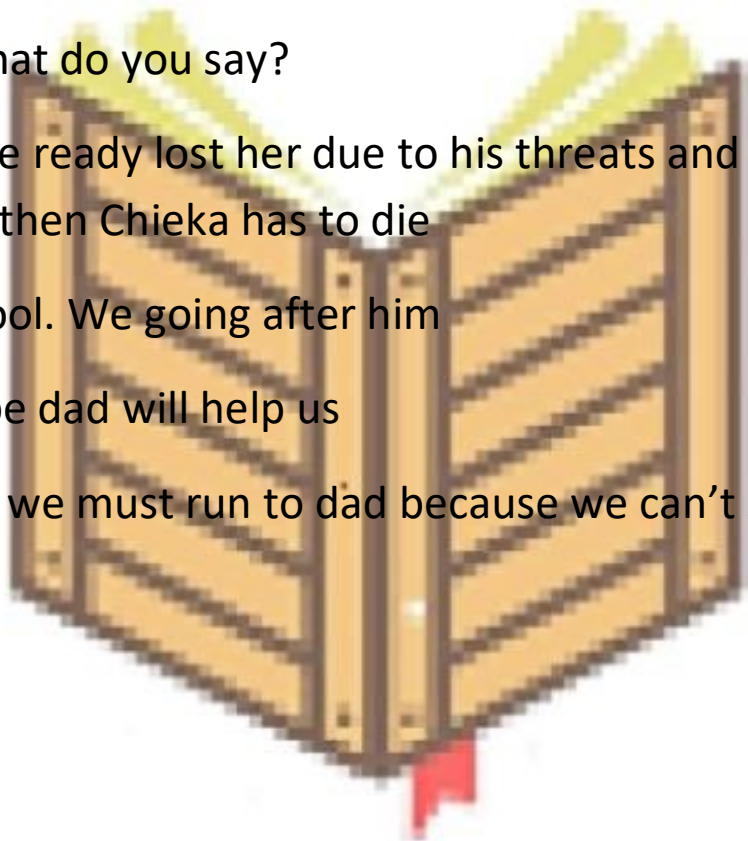
Viper: So what do you say?

For Yara! I've ready lost her due to his threats and if I want to be with her then Chieka has to die

Me: Okay cool. We going after him

Viper: Maybe dad will help us

Me: So now we must run to dad because we can't solve our shit? Nice!



YARA

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I looked at Ethan and smiled at him

Him: And that smile says it all... How was your day?

Me: It was hell (Laughs) you should organize a lawyer for me because soon I'll be arrested for murder

Him: It was that bad?

Me: Ayden is piece of work; I don't think I'll survive working with him

Him: You'll have to

Me: And you how was your day?

Him: Fine. Best part was seeing my princess

Me: I am happy she is back, Rotenda too

Him: I was afraid she'll refuse but she surprised me

Me: That should teach you to wait before you judge a situation

He laughed

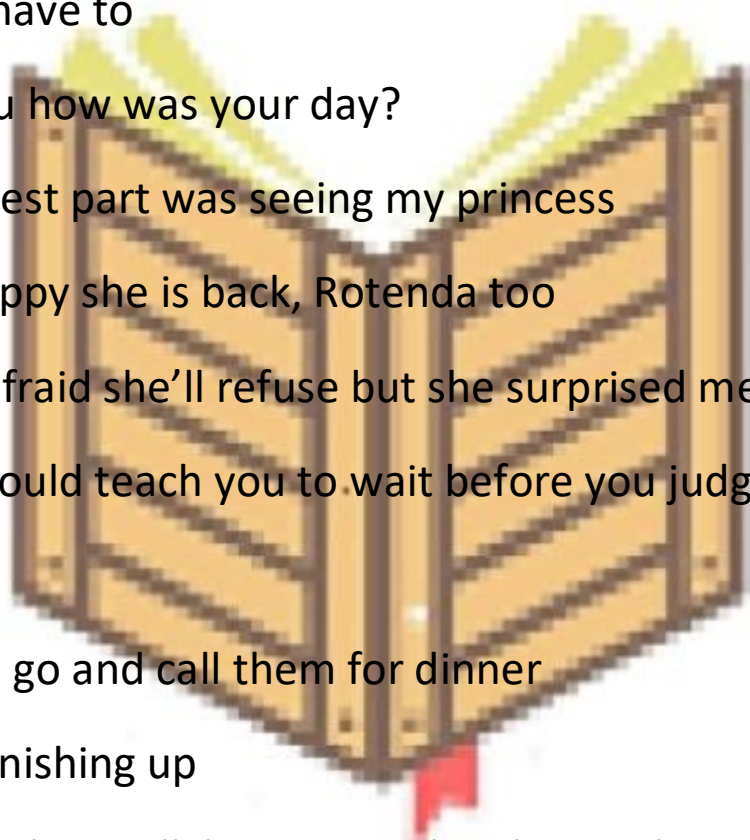
Him: Let me go and call them for dinner

Me: I'll be finishing up

He attempted to walk but stopped on his tracks

Him: This marriage might be a faux but I am glad Goldie chose you to look after our children. I am sure she is happy wherever she is

Me: Thank you Ethan



NOVELSGURU.COM



He smiled at me again and walked out of the kitchen

My phone rang, it was Nos

Her: Secrets

Me: Minion

Her: I received your message. So the guy just decided to end your friendship with no explanation or reason?

Me: Imagine. I know we were not dating but I am still hurt

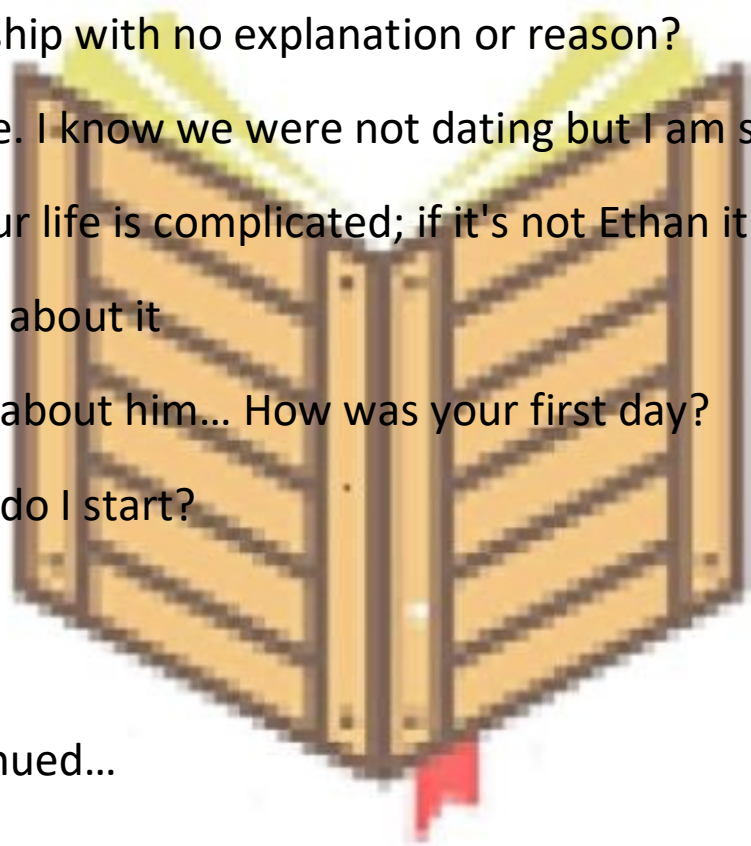
Her: Girl your life is complicated; if it's not Ethan it's Panther ha

Me: Tell me about it

Her: Forget about him... How was your first day?

Me: Where do I start?

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

17

ETHAN

I put the bowls in the sink

The twins were talking about their plans for the day, I am glad they are moving past their mother's death. Also Alexa's attitude towards Yara has changed; last time she was here she gave her hard time. But, I can't really say for sure that she will behave. She loved her mother and if ever she feels that Yara is trying to replace her then she might change on her

Yara: Good morning everyone

Alexa&Tenda: Morning aunt

I turned slightly turned my head

Me: Morning. You are leaving already?

Her: Yes, you will take the twins to school?

Me: Yes, don't worry about them

Her: Are you not going to work?

Me: No, today I am working from home. I need to finalise the design

Her: Okay, I will be off

Me: Have a great day

Her: Thank you, you too

She leaned at kiss the twins

Alexa: Euw aunt are we not too old for this?

Rotenda: I have to agree with you, we are too old for this

Her: You will never get old to receive kisses from me

Me: And since when don't you like kisses?

They laughed

Her: Bye

My phone beeped. It was a message from Mimi

|Her-I want to see you|



AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt a hand on my shoulder. I raised my head, it was my mother

Me: Mimsey

Her: You don't look good

Me: I am fine

The Chieka issue is giving me sleepless nights

She sat across me

Her: Aurora told me she has been trying to get hold of you but you are unreachable. What's going on with you?

Me: I've been busy

Her: Too busy for your fiancée?

Me: Mimsey don't start please, there's lot going on right now and last thing I need is for Aurora to come to SA

Her: Are you starting with your tendencies?

Me: Really? Is that what you think of me?

Her: When you have your eyes on someone you start to ignore Aurora

I kept quiet

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Your wedding was supposed to be in a month time but you postponed it, tell me why?

I stood up

Me: We not having this conversation

MIMI

I stood up and went to plug the kettle

Ma: And why don't you look like someone who is going to work...

Me: I am feeling under the weather

Ma: Buhle as well? No, there's something you girls are hiding from me

Me: There's nothing, I don't know where you got that from  
Buhle walked into the kitchen

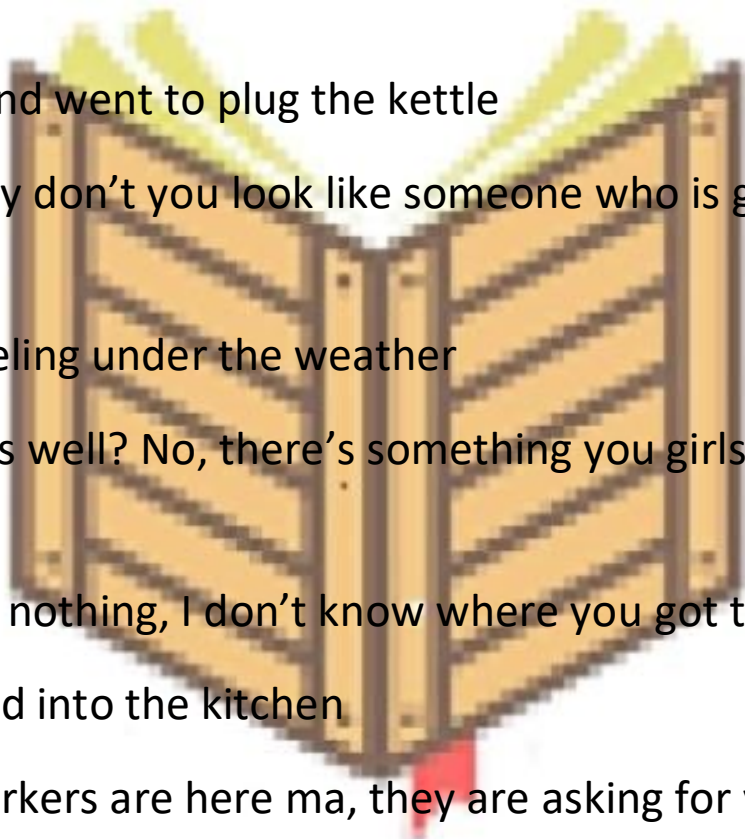
Her: The workers are here ma, they are asking for you

Ma: Okay... I hope you girls are not in some kind of trouble

Me: No, we not

She walked out of the kitchen

Her: And, have you received the address yet?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shook my head no

Her: Maybe he is bluffing

Me: Let's just wait

Her: You are going somewhere?

Me: I am going to see Ethan

Her: What? Mimi you have time to be chasing after Ethan when we have Chieka after us?

Me: Ha don't do that. I just want to see him, that's all

Her: While you at it remember that Chieka might be following you

Advertisement

I don't think Ethan will want to endanger his kids

Me: Can you just give me a break Buhle? I'll make sure he is not following me

Her: AS if you'll know when he is following you

She shook her head and walked out of the kitchen

YARA

I made myself cup of tea and made my way to the office. Ayden is not here yet, at least I'll be able to get some work done before he comes

I pulled the chair and sat down

(Knock on door)

Me: And he is here. Come on in

The door opened

Voice: Good morning Miss Masia

I couldn't believe my ears. I raised my head, it was Panther

Me: Lindokuhle

Him: Yara

I stood up

Me: How can I help you?

Him: Can we talk like adults? I didn't like the way we ended things yesterday

I folded my arms and looked at him

Him: You didn't want to listen to me; you assumed the worst out of me Yara



NOVELSGURL.COM

Me: Was I wrong?

Him: Yes, you were. And for the fact that you compared me to other guys I found that very immature

Me: About that, I am sorry

He walked up to me

Him: Don't ever compare me to other guys, you hear me?

I nodded repeatedly

Him: And don't ever walk out on me, okay?

I took a step back and he took one towards me

Him: Oh, now you scared of me?

Me: No, but Ayden can walk in any time and I am at work. You shouldn't be doing this...

Him: Doing what?

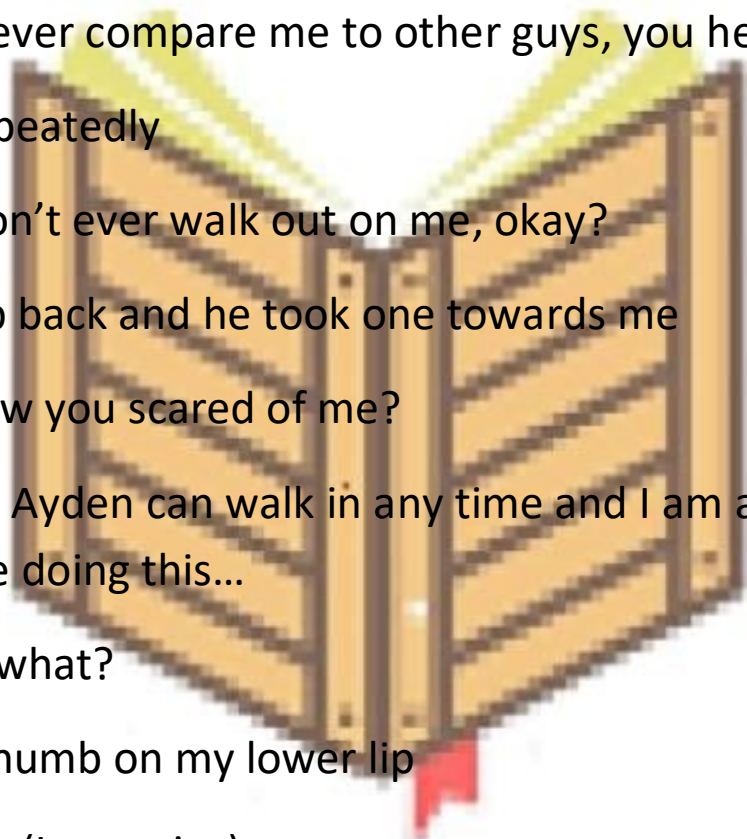
He ran his thumb on my lower lip

Me: Panther (Low voice)

Him: If you want me to stop, tell me and I will

I don't want him to stop but at the same time I want him to stop. What's going on with me?

Me: This is so inappropriate





Him: So, what's fun about being appropriate?

He rubbed his nose against mine

Him: Can I?

Me: Lindo...

He slowly pressed his lips against mine, I wanted to fight him but my body betrayed me. He circled his arms around my waist

MIMI

He fixed his eyes on me

Ethan: I was surprised to receive a text from you

Me: Just because you forgot about me doesn't mean I have to

He kept quiet

Me: I am not saying that to pull you down. I just wanted to see you

Him: You haven't come to see us in about 2 weeks

Me: I didn't say I want to see your family, I said you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Mimi, I thought we talked about this

Me: You talked and I listened; now it's time for me to talk and you are going to listen

I held his hand

Him: Cuddles...

I smiled at him

Me: You still calling me cuddles?

Him: How can I not?

Me: Then why are you fighting us? We had something good, how did it all fade? You can't deny the love between us Cuddly

Him: I left you; I hurt you. That's what I did

Me: But here am I. I don't care about the past; I care about the present and the future. Our future

Him: I love you Mimi and I never stopped loving you but I wasn't the right man for you. And I don't think I am even right now

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: All I care about is the fact you love me. Yes, you left me for Goldie and you loved her but God is giving us a second chance in our love. Do you want to spend the little time left with someone you don't love?

Him: That "someone" is your sister

Me: Yet she married you? But I didn't come here to talk about Yara; I came to talk about us Cuddly

He cupped my face

Him: Don't do this Cuddles

Me: Stop holding things back, they are only going to hurt you

I pecked his lips

Me: Tell me if you want me to stop and I swear to you, I will leave

PANTHER

I wasn't very sure about coming to my father for help but right now we don't really have a choice. It's either we get help or Chieka finish us all

Ayden: At least try to look happy

Me: But I am not happy

Viper laughed

Me: The old man is going to give us hell



NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper: We all know that but what's worse between old man and that bulldog Chieka?

We walked in on my parents' playing cards

Me: Isn't too early to play cards?

Ma: Unkulunkulu usibusisile namhlanje ekuseni (God has blessed us this morning)

Baba: Abafana bami (My boys)

My mother stood up

Ayden: Ma Khumalo unjani (How are you?)

Ma: Ngiy'phila wena? (I am well and you)

Ayden: Ngiy'phila mama

She hugged him

Ma: Nina nobabili (You two)

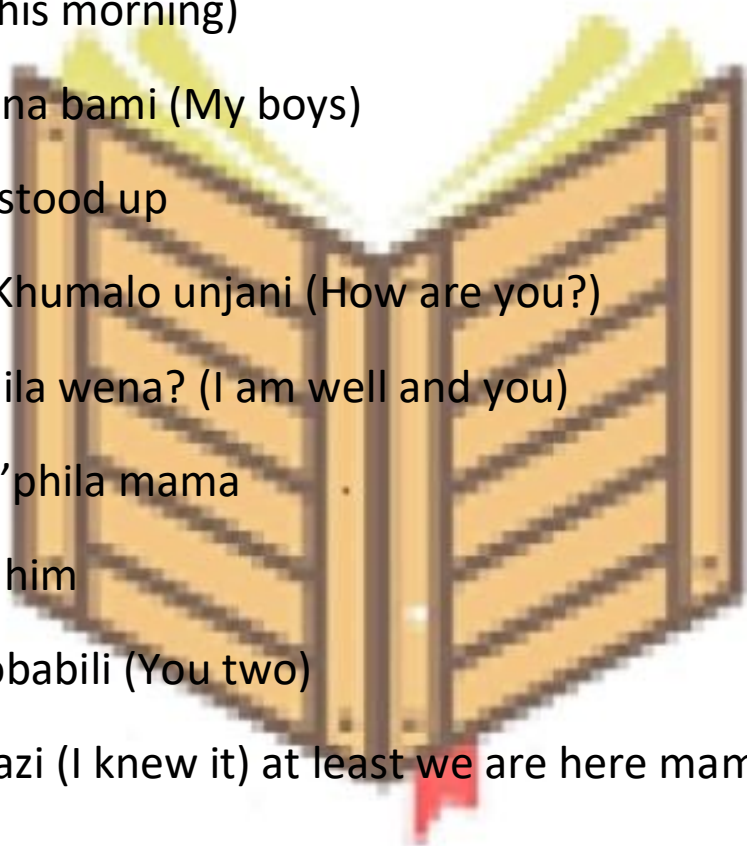
Viper: Bengazi (I knew it) at least we are here mama. Don't scold us

She hugged him and then me

Me: Mama

Ma: Let me go and get you something to eat

We walked up to my father



NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper: Khumalo

He stood up

Baba: The Unfazed (Smiles) you never come to me if there aren't problems. Now talk!

We looked at each other

Ayden: Eish Khumalo...

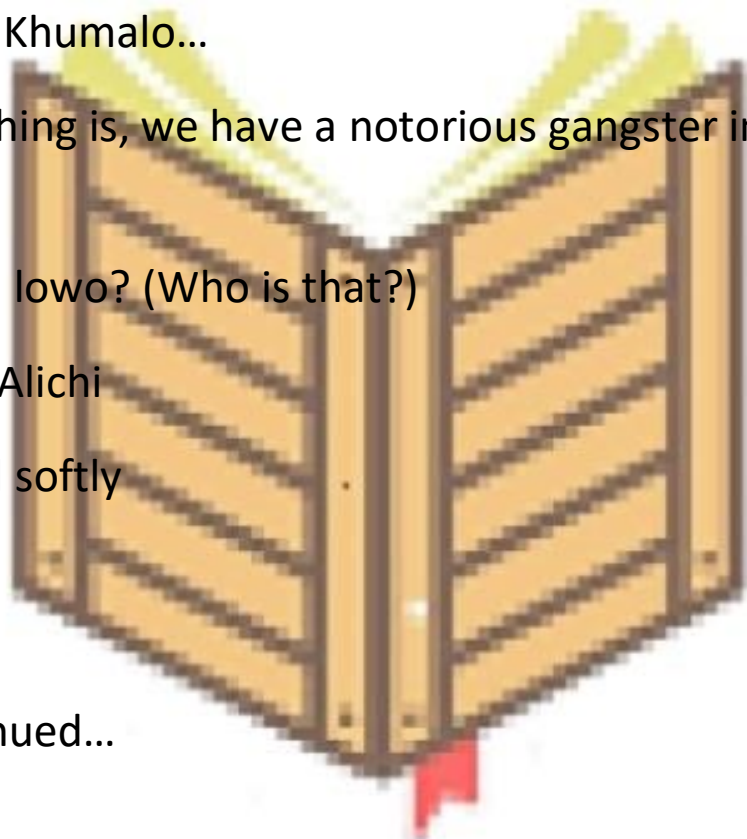
Viper: The thing is, we have a notorious gangster in the province

Baba: Ubani lowo? (Who is that?)

Me: Chieka Alich

He chuckled softly

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

18

YARA

Nos was supposed to meet me for lunch but she cancelled on me at last minute

I took a sip of my milkshake and stood up... Someone bumped into me and I dropped my things

Me: Fuck!

I cussed and he chuckled

Me: I am glad you find that funny

Him: Let me help you

He helped me pick my things

Me: I won't say thank you if you are expecting one

Him: I wasn't

Me: Thank you (Laughs)

Him: Chieka Alich

He extended his hand to me but I just looked at it

Him: Oh sorry about that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's okay... Now if you don't mind, can I please pass?

Him: You won't even tell me your name?

Me: No, why should i?

Him: That's being rude

Me: I don't even know you so, I don't understand?

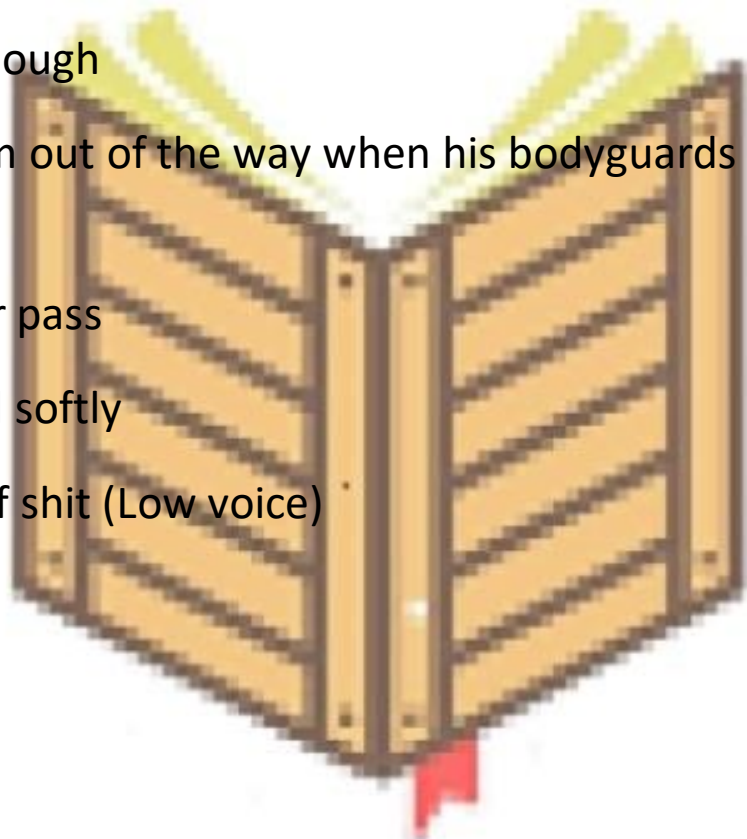
Him: Fair enough

I pushed him out of the way when his bodyguards stood in front of me

Him: Let her pass

He chuckled softly

Me: Piece of shit (Low voice)



ETHAN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mimi was resting her head on my chest

Her: I am green with envy

Me: Huh?

Her: You and my sister under the same roof?

Me: But you know I don't love her

Her: You really don't?

Me: I will never love your sister when I love you

Her: Then why are you fighting us?

Me: Mimi, I just lost my wife and I am still mourning her. I can't just jump into a relationship with you. No!

Her: Maybe I should get going

She sat up straight

Her: For the third time you managed to break my heart. I will stop fighting for you now it's you who will fight for me

Me: Mimi...

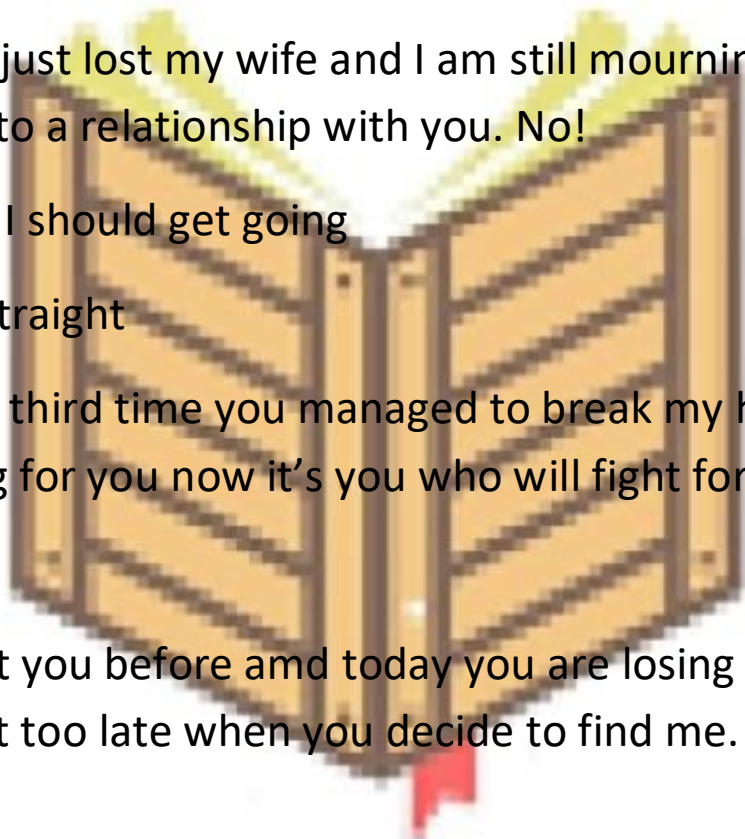
Her: I've lost you before and today you are losing me. I just hope it's not too late when you decide to find me. I love you Ethan

She grabbed her handbag and stood up

AYDEN

I walked to reception

Me: Where is Miss Masia?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Receptionist: Still at her lunch Mr Tshivhase

Me: Please tell her to come straight to my office when she comes back

She nodded

My phone rang, it was Panther

Me: Panther

Him: The old man is requesting a meeting with Chieka

Me: When?

Him: Soon as possible

Me: Then call him and let him know

Him: He is not taking my calls

Me: This Chieka guy is starting to bore the shit out of me

Him: Try and call him

ELISA

I took the box and sat on top of the bed

I was going through the pictures of Yara and Mimi. My daughters are all grown; I never thought I'd manage to raise them on my own. Yes, I admit I've slipped once or twice along the way but it was all for them



NOVELSGURU.COM

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

The door flung open and Mimi ran into my arms

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I lost him mama

Me: Who?

Her: Ethan... I lost him, I thought things between us will change but I was wrong (Crying)

Me: Ah my daughter I told you to forget about him

Her: How can I? I know he loves me

Me: Then give him time to heal. If you two are meant to be then you'll definitely find a way to each other. No one can ever separate what God has put together

Her: You think?

Me: I know so

YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

My phone beeped. A corner of my mouth rose into a smile; it was a message from Panther

|Him- I still can't get over the kiss. Can I come for more?|

I called him

Him: Wow so does that mean I'll be getting one soon?

Me: I am just calling to remind you that I am someone's wife

Him: You could've fooled me

I smiled and bit my lower lip

Him: What? Are you feeling hot?

Me: Urg whatever... Let me get to work before I get fired

Him: Talk later

I hung up

I stood up and walked to Ayden's office

Me: Mr A

He raised his head

Me: You were looking for me?

Him: Yes. Please sit down

I sat down

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: There's a function that is taking place this coming Friday, one of our clients invited us. I was supposed to go but unfortunately I can't, you will have to go on my behalf

Me: Me? Isn't too early for that?



Him: For what? Are you not working here?

Me: I am but to attend functions alone?

Him: You'll be fine

Me: Uh...

Him: Are you objecting Miss Masia?

Me: No Mr A

Him: You can take a plus one with you

I looked at him

Him: And she looked at me

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

19

YARA

I looked at my mother and then Mimi

Me: What's wrong with her?

Ma: Ethan

Me: Ethan?

Ma: She went to see him today and it didn't go well

Me: Oh... Do you think talking with her would help?

Ma: I don't think so after all you are to blame

Me: Me? Ha mama

Ma: Don't even think about provoking her

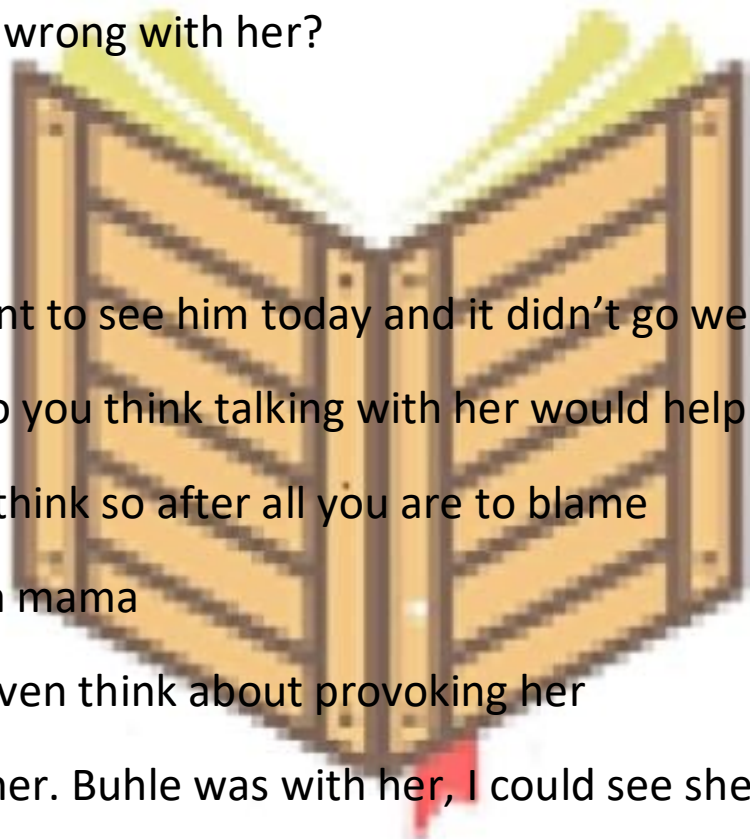
I looked at her. Buhle was with her, I could see she was hurt

Ma: I miss you, how's life as a married woman?

Me: Nothing has changed mama. But, we are trying to be civil with each other and I am working. And school is coming along

Ma: Are you managing though?

Me: Yes, I am... And you how are things here at home?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at Mimi

Ma: I feel like she is in some kind of danger

Me: What makes you say that?

Ma: These days she is jumpy. She's also in panic-mode

Me: What could be the problem?

Ma: I wish to know

I shook my head

Me: Before I forget here's that money you asked for

I gave her R500.00

Ma: Thank you

ETHAN



I held Goldie's picture

Me: Why did you leave me? Huh?

A tear escaped my ear

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We had dreams my love, we made promises. Now I don't even know if I'll ever let another woman in my heart again

As much as I want to forget Goldie ever existed in my life I just can't and what Mimi is doing is not fair. She can't emotional blackmail me if she is fully aware of my feelings to her. It's hard enough for me to live with Yara under the same roof I've shared with my wife

The door flung open. Rotenda ran to me

Me: Champ

Him: We waiting for you, the movie is about to end

I wiped my tears and put the picture inside the drawer

Him: Daddy, are you crying?

Me: No, I am not

Him: You miss mommy? I do too

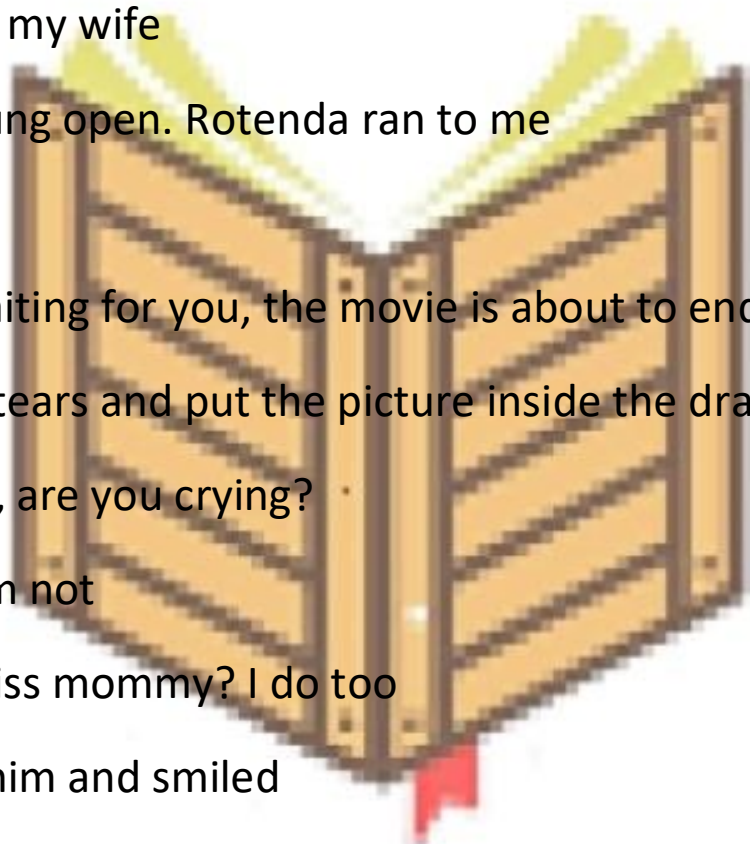
I looked at him and smiled

Me: Look at you, acting like a man

Him: I learnt from the best

I picked him

Me: Now let's go and finish that movie



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I sat across Mimi

Me: Hey

She smiled faintly

Me: You so quiet

She shrugged her shoulders

Me: Talk with me

Her: What's there to talk about?

Me: Mimi, I am sorry about everything. I didn't mean to hurt you like this, but I did it for my future and I hope one day you will realise that. You are my sister yes, and I shouldn't have agreed to marry Ethan but I had a reason. And I have achieved that so far

NOVELSGURU.COM

Advertisement

I am studying and working. The twins connect me and Ethan

Her: Do you love him?



Me: Do you want me to be honest with you?

Her: Please

Me: I like him but I think the thought of being his wife curved in and birth that feeling. I wanted someone to love me too but Ethan was not the right person. Ethan has shown me countless times that he loves you and not me. Trust me when I say I will never pursue a relationship with him, I will not hurt you to that extent. At first, I wanted us to have more than a faux marriage but I later figured that's impossible

Her: Thank you for being honest with me Yara

Me: I'm telling you this so that you stop seeing me as your enemy

Her: I am sorry for being selfish, I didn't want to listen. I acted with little information I had and that was not fair. Like what I am doing right now, today I went to Ethan and proclaimed my love to him. What kind of person am I? The poor man just lost his wife and I am acting like a bitch

Me: No, you are not acting like one. I know how much that guy drives you crazy, you once had something good

Her: Truce?

Me: Truce...

We interlocked our pinky fingers

Her: I love you butterfly

Me: I love you too

We hugged

AYDEN

I took my chance and called Chieka. Surprisingly he answered

Him: I've been waiting for your call

Me: Oh is it?

Him: Yes

Me: Panther told me he has been trying to call you but it seemed like you were not interested in talking with him

Him: Because I wanted to talk with you

Me: Is it?

Him: How much do you trust your friend?

Me: What are you trying to do?

Him: Answer question

Me: I trust him with my life

He chuckled softly

Me: Seems like you have something in your chest. Choke it out

Him: I wouldn't trust someone who once smashed my girl



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What did you say?

Him: You heard me...

Me: Panther will never do that to me. You are just trying to come between us and it won't work

Him: Then ask him what happened last time in Mexico City when we went there for auction

I clenched my jaw

Him: I just want us to continue our business without any hassle and now I think you know why Panther didn't want me to continue working with you

Me: No, we don't want to work with you because you are a damn trafficker and unfortunately we learnt that late. And your trick didn't work, try something else next time

I hung up

After a minute a message came through. It was Chieka; he sent pictures of Panther and Aurora

Me: Son of bitch! **NOVELSGURU.COM**

I threw my phone against the wall

ETHAN

I was sitting in the garden with Yara

Me: Beautiful night

Her: So beautiful. I could sit here all night

Me: And die with coldness

She laughed

Me: Who would have thought that one day we could sit like this as husband and wife?

Her: As husband and wife? (Laughs) it is weird. A month ago I was your maid and today I am your wife

Me: That's life for you

(Silence)

Me: Mimi was here today

Her: She told me

Me: You know, right now I don't know if I am coming or going. Everything is a mess. It's like Goldie left with my senses

Her: She didn't, it's normal to feel like this but as time goes you'll be able to reason with clear emotions

Me: I feel like going away

Her: Running away won't solve your problems. You must face them

Me: You are smart for your age



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Is that a compliment?

Me: Yes, it is

Her: Thank you

(Silence)

Her: There's a function at work this coming Friday and I am going in place of Ayden

Me: And you need a date?

Her: Yes. I don't have anyone...

Me: I'll go with you after all; I am your husband (Smiles)

I looked at him and smiled

I'll never hurt my sister, what I feel for Ethan is not love but lust. I believe my soul mate is somewhere waiting for me

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

20

MIMI

I've been standing in the kitchen for a while now; the cup was resting between my hands. I was deep in my thoughts. How did I become the person I am today, from being the innocent Mimi to a prostitute? How did I reach to a point where my life would be in danger? There's a lot going on right now and I don't even have answers to each of them. At any time Chieka can come with his guys and demand me, my mom is not aware of things I've been up to. It is going to break her

I felt a hand on my shoulder. I turned around

Me: Mama

Her: Wanna talk about it?

Me: Ma?

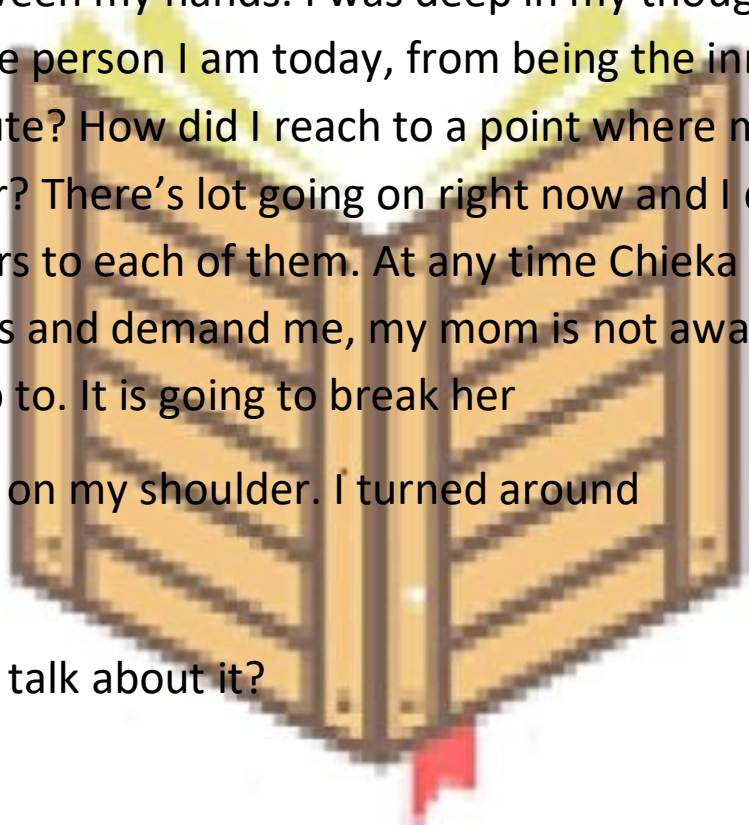
Her: Whatever that is in your chest

I faked a smile

Me: There's nothing mama

Her: I know you my daughter and you can't fool me

Me: It's really nothing



NOVELSGURU.COM

She kept quiet

I put my hands on her cheeks

Me: I just want to apologize for disappearing on you mama, I left here claiming to go and look for a job but I never looked back. I was obviously your hope and what did I do? I crushed your dreams, I let my sister fend for you, and that was unfair of me. I should have come back but I didn't

Her: You are scaring me Mimi

Me: Don't be. I never asked for your forgiveness mama and I feel like I should

YARA



I lifted Alexa's leg up and put her shoe on

Her: Aunt...

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Me: Mmmh?

Her: This coming weekend there's a play at school and I'd really like it if you could come

The corner of my mouth curved into a smile

Her: Daddy already agreed

Me: Thanks for the invite baby, aunt would really love to come and watch you play

She kept quiet and looked at me

Alexa is calmer now than before. Maybe it was her mother's death that was making her behave cold towards me or maybe I was trying too hard to be in her life. But, now I am just happy she's finally letting me in

AYDEN

To say I slept well last night would be a lie; I didn't want to confront Aurora before I confront Panther. I don't want to believe what I've seen. The thought of my homie making out with my girl upset me but the betrayal from him is what will drive me to put a bullet between his eyes

When I walked in he was smoking cigarette with one hand on his phone. I leaned against the wall and looked at him, I was fuming with anger

Me: Panther



He raised his head

Him: Tooth

He stood up

Him: I didn't know you were coming? What's up?

Me: I am going to ask you one question and I want you to be honest with me

Him: Okay... Ask!

I moved closer to him

Me: What happened between you and Aurora when we were in Mexico City?

Him: Tooth...

His facial expression says it all. He fucked my fiancée

Him: It didn't happen like that...

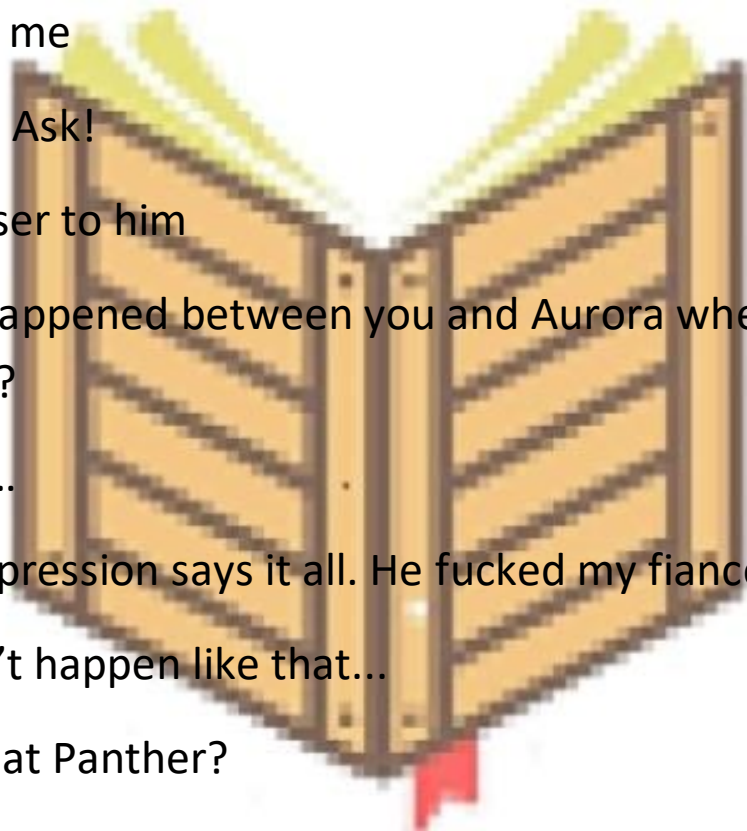
Me: Like what Panther?

Before he could talk I kneed him in the balls

Me: I am going to kill you

I punched him across the face and he fell on the couch

Him: Tooth please don't do this, you don't want me to retaliate.  
Let's talk about this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You wanna talk now? Huh? Why didn't you talk after you fucked my fiancée? My whole fiancée!

He attempted to get up but I went to him and punched him across the face again. Knowing Panther, he didn't let me beat him. He rolled me over and tried to punch me but I moved. He pinned his knee against my chest

Him: We can talk about this; I can explain what really happened. Fuck man!

Me: Now you feel the need to explain?

He let go of me and got up

Me: When were you going to tell me?

I spat the blood on the floor

Him: How was I supposed to tell you? I can't just come and say "Hey man I fucked your girl"

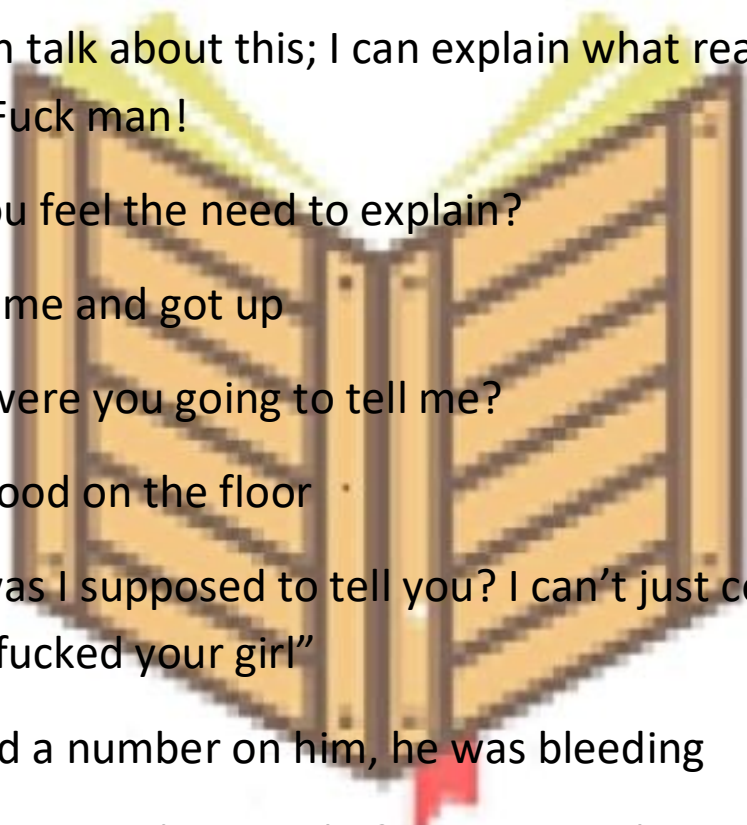
I got up. I did a number on him, he was bleeding

Me: What happened to Loyalty? You are my homie and what you did is unforgivable

Him: I was sloshed

and one thing led to another

I pulled the pistol out of the back of my jean. I pointed it at him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Tooth, no! Don't do this!

Me: Do you know who told me? Chieka! Out of all people, Chieka. I told him you'd never betray me, I defended you. I trusted you and now you going to tell me you were slosed? You want me to believe that?

Him: Can't you see what Chieka is trying to do? He is working on separating us

Me: Bullshit!

I cocked the gun

MIMI

My phone rang, it was my worst nightmare

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath

Me: Chieka

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: I want to see you today

I kept quiet

Him: Mimi?



Me: I heard you

Him: And make sure you make it

Me: Is there really a need for you to threaten me?

He chuckled softly

Him: You do well with threats

Me: Whatever

He hung up

I stood up and went to Buhle. She was helping my mother outside

Me: Buhle...

I waved at her... She walked up to me

Her: What's up?

Me: We have to go. Chieka called me

Her: I am not ready



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**PANTHER**

I know I should have told Ayden about Aurora and me but I knew he would never understand. And Chieka didn't waste time he ran and blab out

Me: I can never do you bad. You have to trust me, it was a mistake

Him: Trust? Don't shit on me!

Me: Now you are not thinking and if you kill me...

Him: The mighty Mzoxolo will kill me? (Chuckles softly)

Me: We are brothers Tooth

Him: No brother of mine will do this. You are nothing to me

(Door opens)

His eyes darted to the door; I pulled my gun out and pointed it at him

Viper: Hey bro...

He froze when he saw Ayden and me pointing guns at each other

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Viper: Wooh what the hell is happening here? Panther? What the fuck! Tooth?

Ayden: Tell your brother to lower his gun

Me: So that you blow my brains? Forget it!

Viper: Stop with this shit! Whatever it is we can solve it, we are brothers!

Ayden: I am Ayden Tshivhase not Ayden Khumalo. You two can go shit on your grandmother's grave; I am not fucking with any of you

It is impossible to reason with Tooth when he is angry

MIMI

Chieka's guys looked at us. They were holding guns

Me: Is there need for this?

Chieka: You can't be trusted

Buhle: What do you want from us?

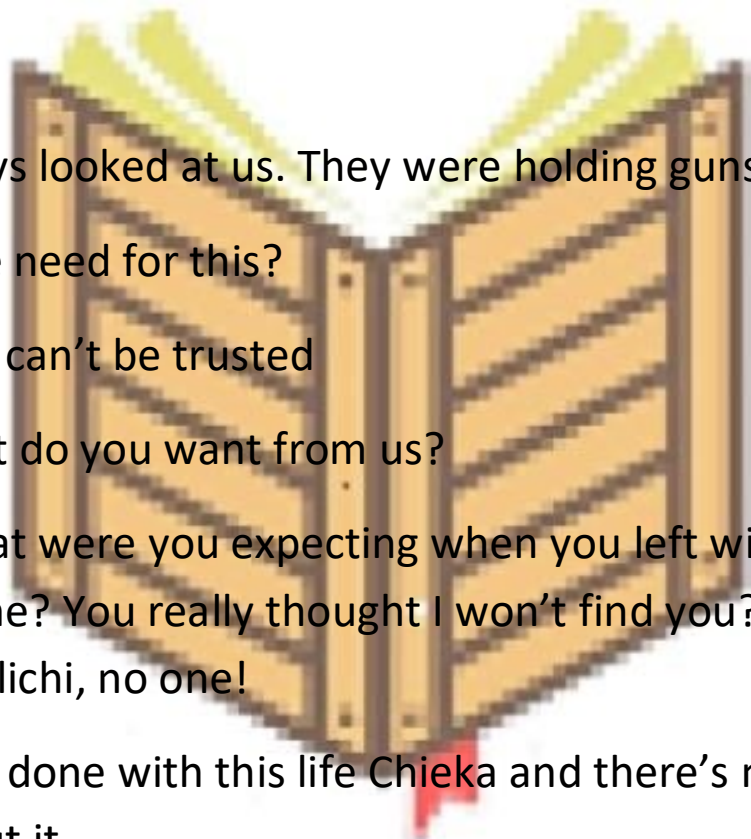
Chieka: What were you expecting when you left without informing me? You really thought I won't find you? No one can hide from Alich, no one!

Me: We are done with this life Chieka and there's nothing you can do about it

Buhle: Yes, you won't force us. We want out

Chieka stood up and grabbed Buhle by the hair

Chieka: I make the rules not the other way around. And you two should have think twice before escaping from me



He reached for the gun that was on the bedside drawer

Chieka: This happens when you betray Chieka

Chieka is a ruthless man with no conscious. His word, his rule

He pointed the gun between Buhle eyes

Me: I am begging you, don't kill her

One of his men held me back. I tried to fight him but he's too strong

Buhle: If you kill me, let Mimi go (Sobs)

Chieka: You ready to die for this bitch

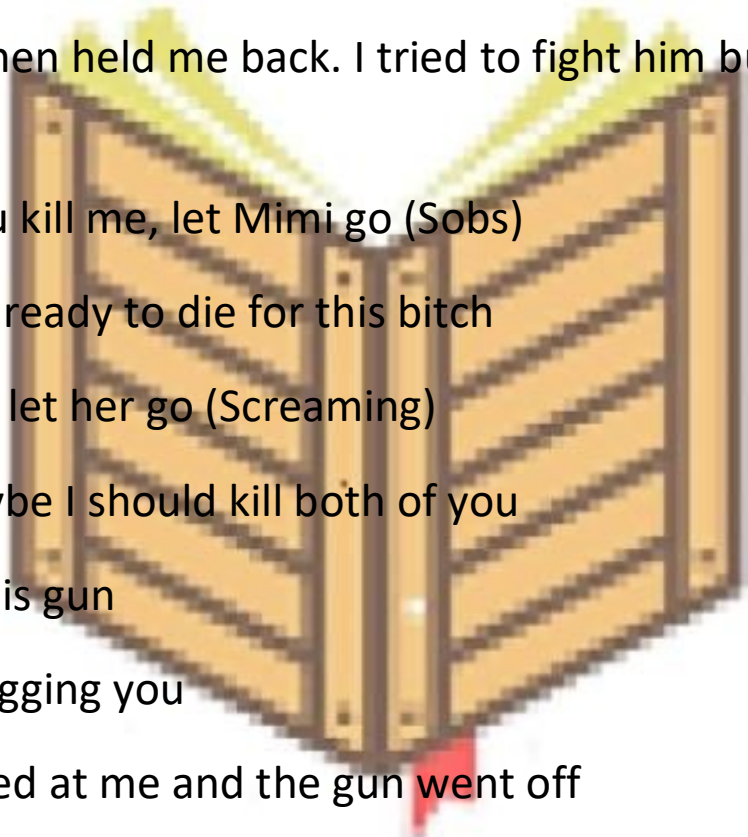
Me: Kill me; let her go (Screaming)

Chieka: Maybe I should kill both of you

He cocked his gun

Me: I am begging you

Chieka looked at me and the gun went off



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

21

YARA

I rested my arms on the table

Sphe: I don't wish to be you right now

Me: I am even scared to go in his office

Ayden has locked himself inside his office. He came here fuming and no one dared to approach him

Me: He has an appointment

Her: What time?

Me: In 45 minutes

Her: Brace yourself and go inside

I shrugged my shoulders

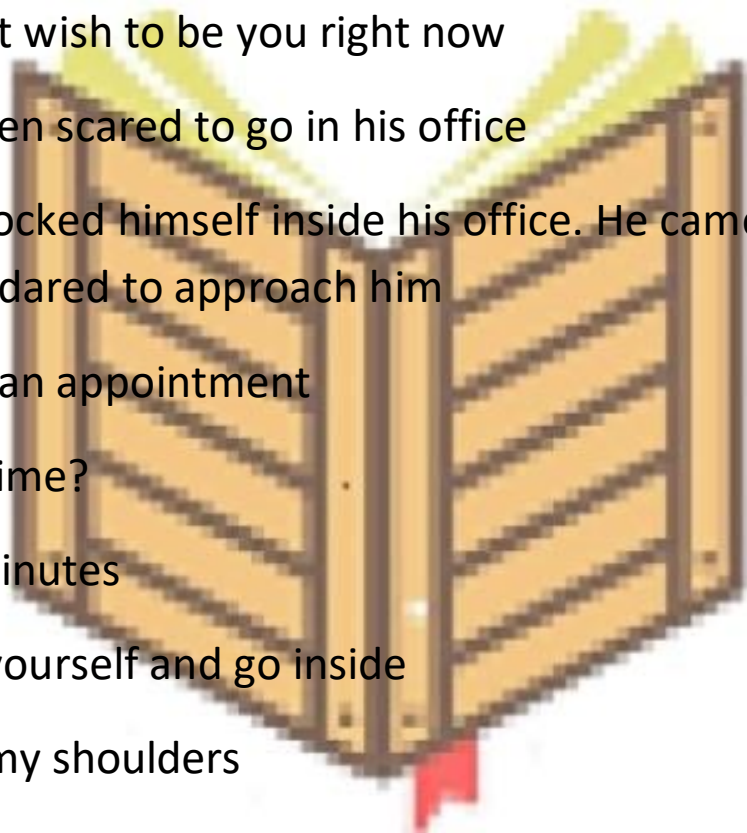
I walked to his office. I softly knocked. There was no response

Me: You can do this Yara

I opened the door

He was lying on the couch. The bottle of scotch was beside him.

Is he drinking?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Mr A...

He didn't dare to look at me

Me: Sir your meeting with Miss Rochelle is in 40 minutes

I stood in front of him. His left eye was swollen

Me: Mr A?

Him: Get out of my face

Me: But sir...

Him: Didn't you hear me? I said out of my face!

I stood there and crossed my arms

He looked at me

Me: I don't think you can go and meet a client looking this

Him: Like what?

Me: Like a scary monster

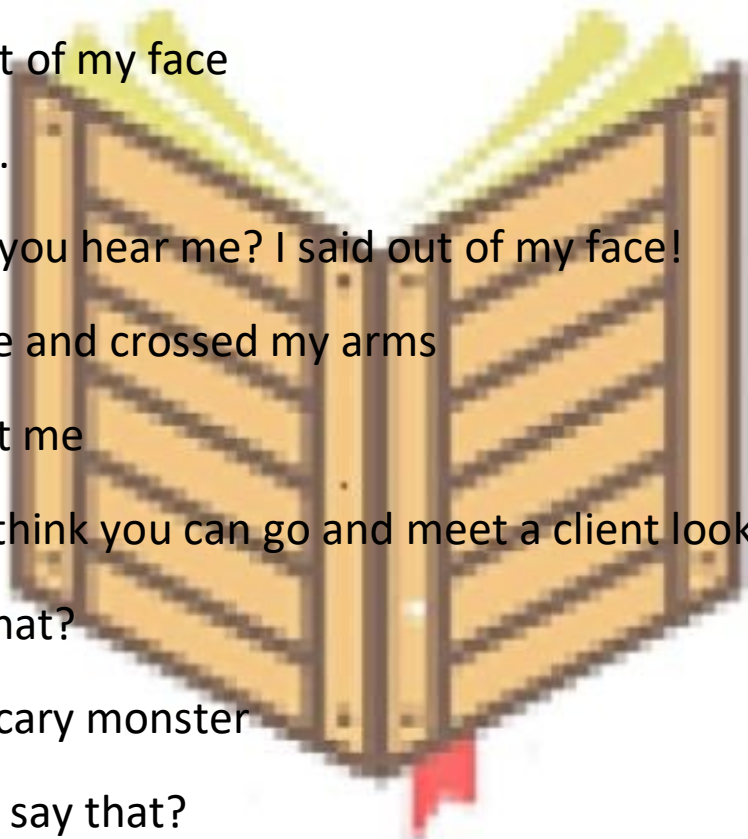
Oh did I just say that?

Him: I am not in the mood for your silly jokes

Me: I wasn't making one. I am going to cancel the meeting

Him: You will not do such a thing

Me: Yes, I will. Unless you go home and change into something presentable and get your eye checked



NOVELSOURU.COM

I walked to his table... He stood up; a glass was still in his hand

Him: I told you to not call

He stood behind me and disconnects the line

Him: You never listen to me, why is that?

I didn't know what to say

Him: You are feisty. Your courage to stand against me is admirable. You are not weak like my previous assistants

I slowly turned around

Me: That shows you are not God

Him: God? (Chuckles) where do you find the courage? Amuse me!

Me: Sir you are drunk and what you are doing is really inappropriate

Him: Wouldn't you be drunk if someone you trusted has betrayed you? I should have killed him

Who is he talking about?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I should have killed him and took his teeth out, one by one...

I widened my eyes

Him: Yes, I should have. I should have honoured my name

Taking teeth out? This man is crazy!

Me: Can you please move aside Mr A?

He pressed me against the table and put his glass down

Him: I loved her but she fucked up. She could have chosen anyone but she went for my friend! My friend!

Me: You really shouldn't be telling me all of this

He looked at me and bite his lower lip. I gently tried to pushed him but he grabbed me by the waist

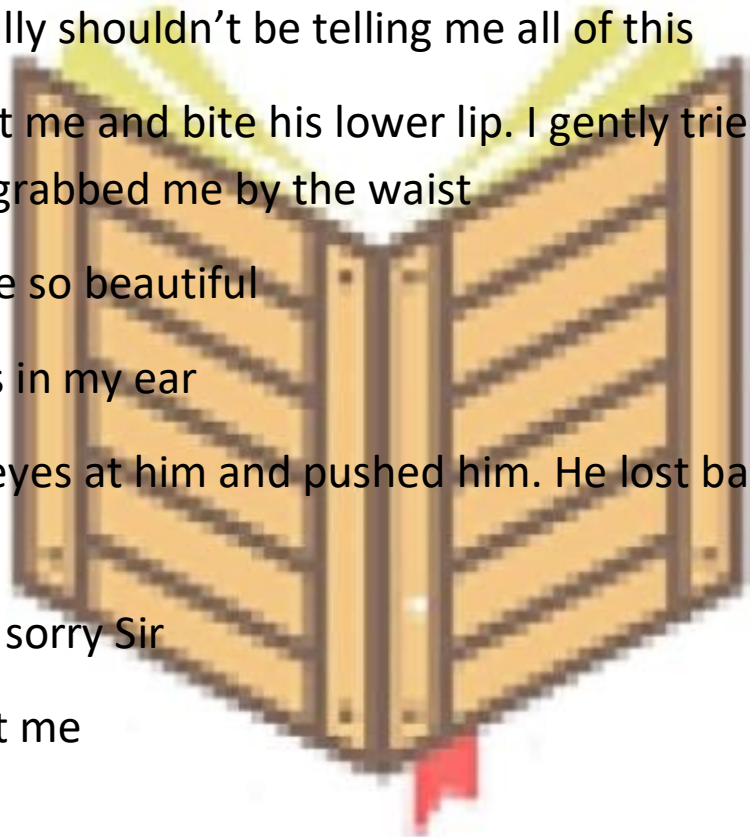
Him: You are so beautiful

He whispers in my ear

I rolled my eyes at him and pushed him. He lost balance and fell down

Me: I am so sorry Sir

He smiled at me



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

When Ayden left I received a call from my father, he is becoming impatient. On the other hand Ayden want nothing to do with me

Viper gave me a cloth with ice

Him: Pressure it

Me: Thanks bro

Him: Why did you do it Lindo? He is your brother for Pete's sake

Me: How many times am I suppose to say this? I was slosed!

Him: And out of all the girls, Aurora was the girl you could fuck with?

I looked at him

Me: You out of all people should know that Aurora always flirts with me

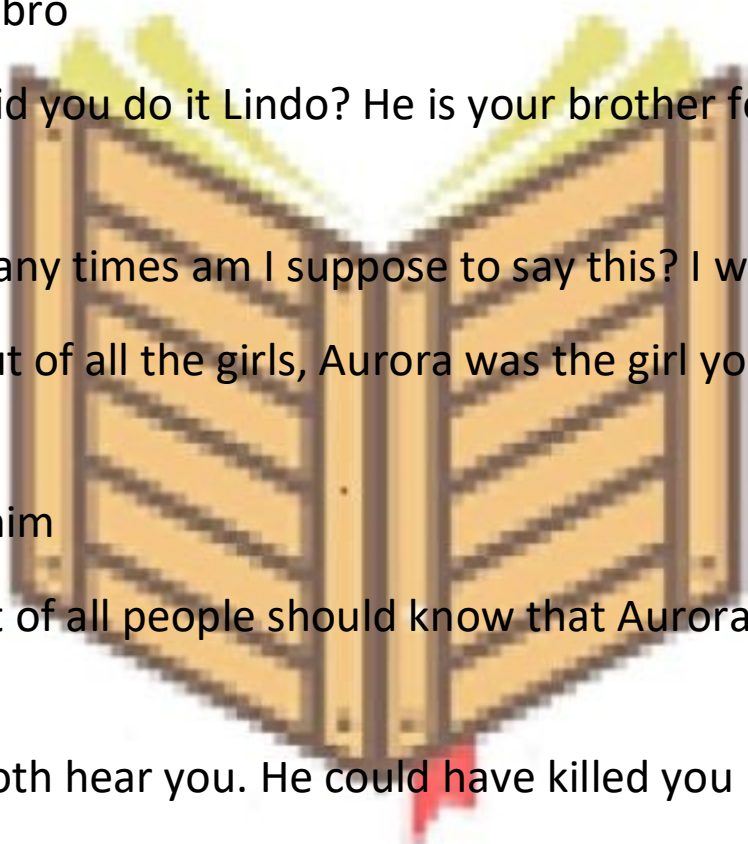
Him: Let Tooth hear you. He could have killed you

Me: He would never. We come a long way. The person who should die is Alich

Him: It's about time. Then what's the plan?

Me: We will lure him and I will kill him myself

Him: The old man didn't find anything on him?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: He did but blackmailing him will only anger him. I know his kind and death is the only thing they understand

Viper whistled

Him: How did we reach here? Fuck!

Me: It's a mess

Me: You have to call Tooth, sort your mess. We can't afford a crack amongst us

I will try

MIMI

I opened my eyes and Buhle was lying on the bed. I crawled to her

Me: Buhle, wake up! (Crying)

My head was pounding

What did they inject me with? The last memory I have was a gun going off but I don't know what happened next

Me: Buhle?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shook her

She moved her fingers

She is not dead! Thank God

Me: Wake up, please

She took a minute before she gathered her strength. When she opened her eyes tears welled up

Her: You are not dead?

We hugged

Her: I thought I'd lost you

Me: No, he only drugged me. The gunshot?

Her: He didn't shoot me

Advertisement

he shot into space

Me: What is he playing at?

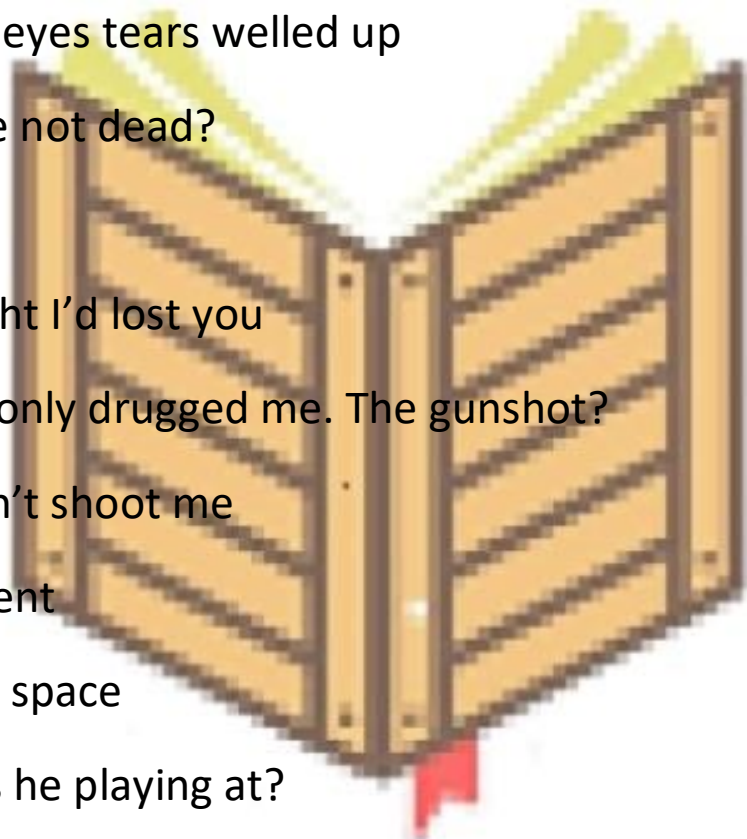
The door flung open

Chieka: You are awake?

He smiled at us

Him: Now let's talk

Me: Please Chieka let us go! We begging you (Crying)



NOVELSGURU.COM

He sat down

Him: Only death will save you

I was shaking

AYDEN

Sphehile walked in with glass of water and pills

Me: Thank you

Her: You welcome sir

Me: Where is Yara?

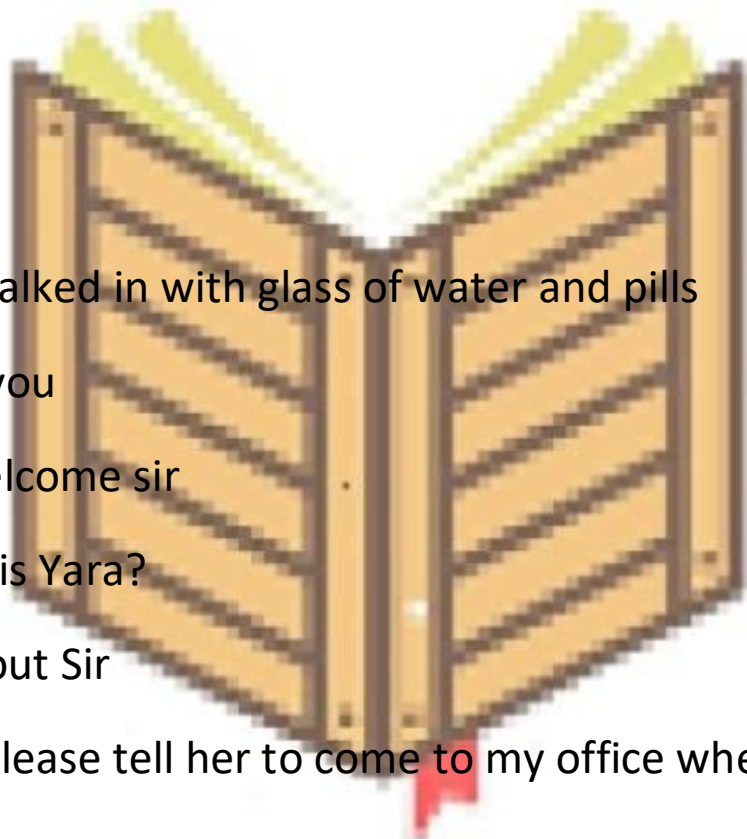
Her: She is out Sir

Me: Okay, please tell her to come to my office when she gets back

She nodded and walked out

Maybe I shouldn't have come to the office

I took my phone out and text Yara



NOVELSGURU.COM

|Me- Miss Masia please come back to the office, I'd like to apologize for my behaviour. Please|

YARA

My phone beeped, it was a message from Ayden

After the incident I came straight to Nos

Her: Is it him?

I nodded

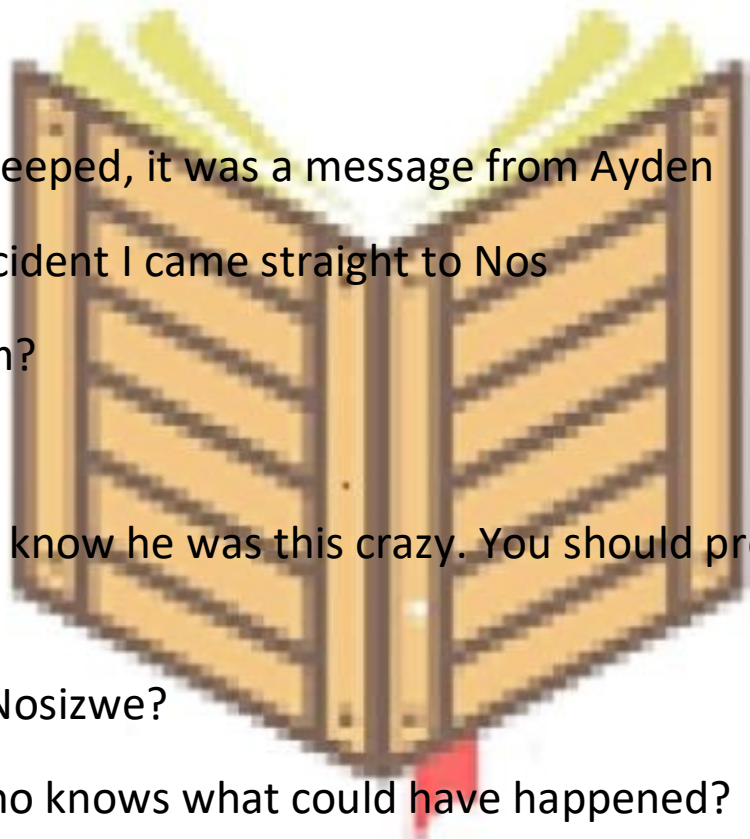
Her: I didn't know he was this crazy. You should press charges against him

Me: Really Nosizwe?

Her: Yes, who knows what could have happened?

Me: If he was in his normal state he wouldn't have behave in that manner

Her: Yoh Yara we can't be too sure. Men are after women in all corners of the world, we don't know what he is capable of. You don't even know him that much



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: But he is showing remorse Nos

Her: All I am saying is, be careful and if he makes you feel uneasy RUN!

Me: I will

I don't think Ayden is capable of hurting me, he was under the influence of alcohol but I understand what Nos is saying. Women are enemies of men

MIMI

We looked at him

"Ghana" we said in unison

Chieka: Yes. You are going to work there

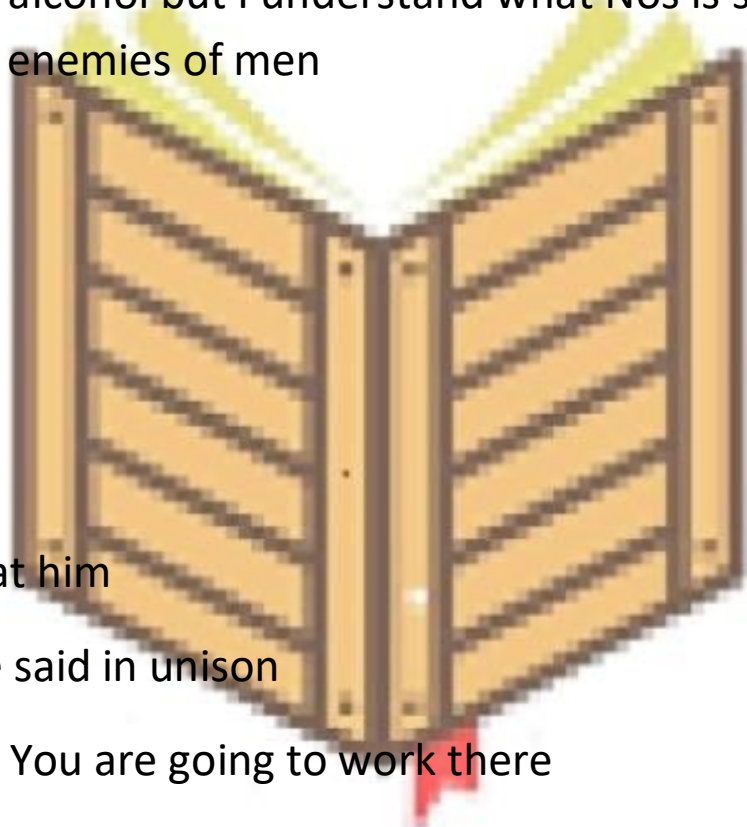
Buhle: No Chieka, you can't ship us off

Him: I am not urging with you both

Me: And if we disagree?

Him: Then I kill you and trust me, this time I won't miss

I looked at Buhle



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Babe?

Her voice cracked

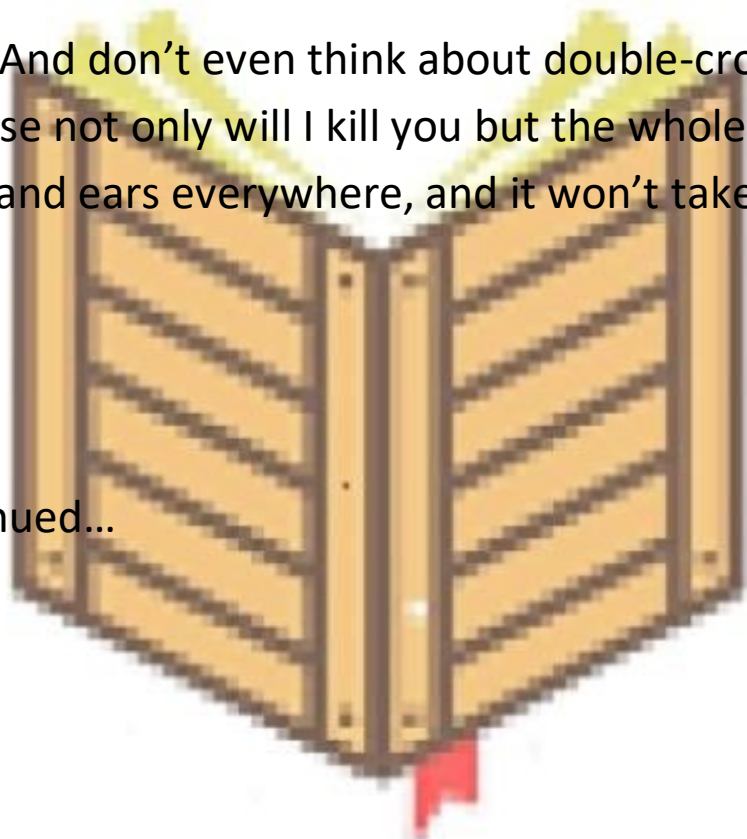
Me: For how long?

Him: You are not returning. That's the price for betraying me

Me: Okay... We will go

Him: Good. And don't even think about double-crossing me again because not only will I kill you but the whole clan as well. I have eyes and ears everywhere, and it won't take me long to find out

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

22

YARA

I sat across him

Ayden: Thank you for coming back

Me: I work here

Him: Yeah, what am I saying?

(Silence)

Him: Please forgive me, I acted like a pervert. I am surprised you didn't call the police on me

Me: You are lucky; my friend wanted me to press charges against you

He buried his face between his hands

Him: I'll never forgive myself. I don't really treat woman the way...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: You don't have to explain. I accept your apology

Him: Thank you

Me: I hope you'll also forgive the person you wanted to kill and took out his teeth

He laughed softly

Him: I said that?

I nodded

Him: I must have traumatized you

Me: Is that why you are called Tooth?

I've seen most of his things and they are engraved Tooth

Him: Story for another day

I stood up

Me: Whatever is hurting you, I suggest you solve it without violence. If you need me I'll be in my office Mr A

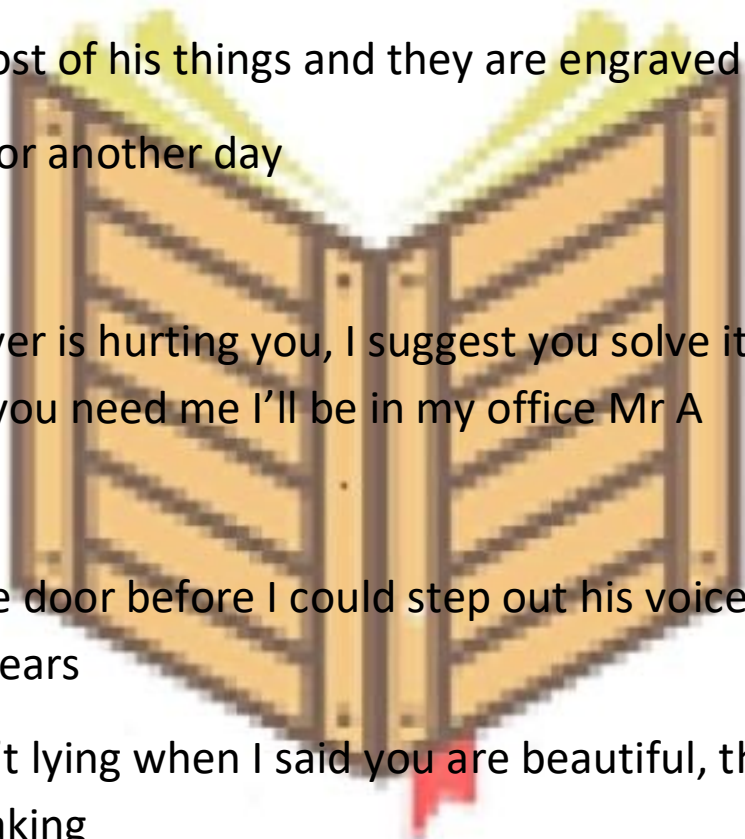
Him: Okay

I opened the door before I could step out his voice erupted again in my ears

Him: I wasn't lying when I said you are beautiful, that was not alcohol speaking

Me: Thank you Sir **NOVELSGURU.COM**

I said that as I walked out... I smiled



MIMI

Buhle passed me the pills

Her: They will help with your headache

Me: Thank you

She sat down

Me: How did we get here?

She held my hand

Her: I got us here. I shouldn't have introduced Chieka to you

Me: You were trying to help me

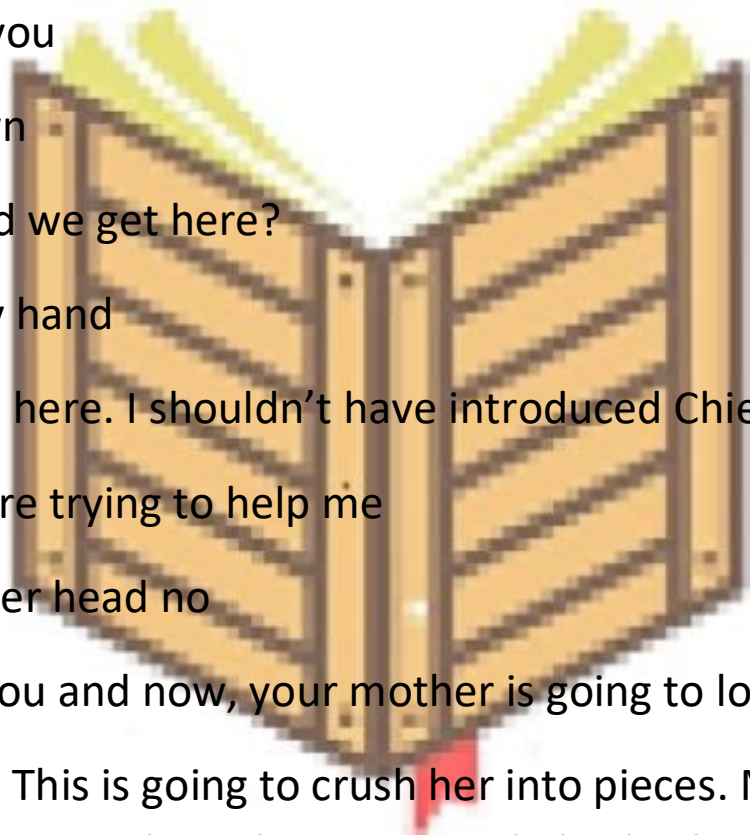
She shook her head no

Her: I sold you and now, your mother is going to lose you

My mother! This is going to crush her into pieces. My butterfly,  
Yara must again pick up the pieces and play both roles

Me: Nonsense, I am old enough to make my own decisions. A  
gun was not pointed at me

Her: The things we do to escape poverty. This shows there's no  
shortcut in life



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Unfortunately we learnt that the hard way

ELISA

I collected the stones and threw them inside the wheelbarrow

My phone rang, I answered without checking the ID

Me: Elisa

Voice: Yam' intombi (My girl)

Only one person calls me that. Mzoxolo

Me: What do you want?

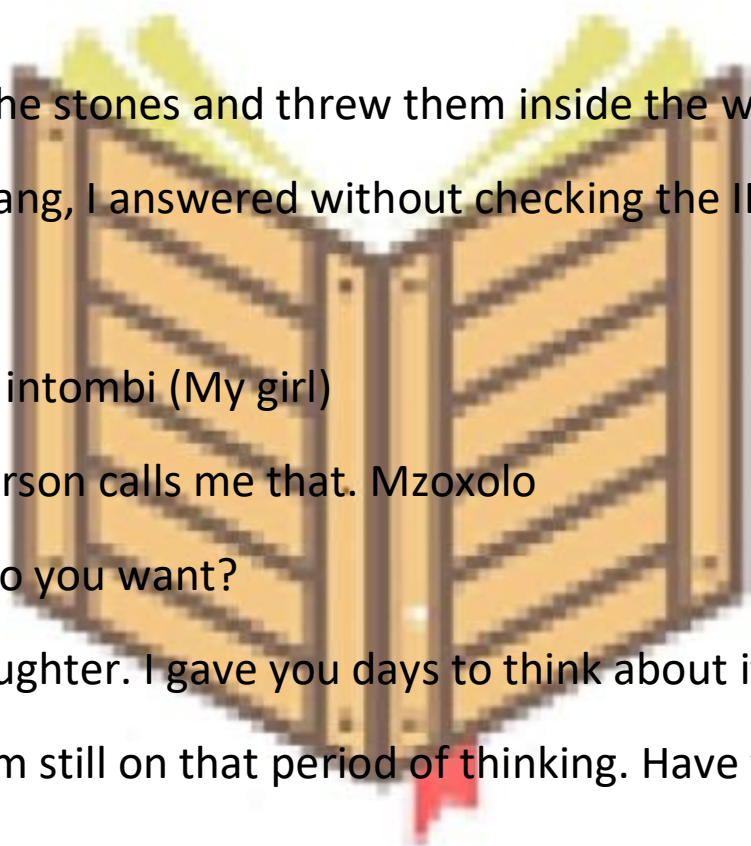
Him: My daughter. I gave you days to think about it

Me: And I am still on that period of thinking. Have you lost your senses?

Him: I've waited for too long

Me: Says someone who abandoned her. Do you think she would accept you with both hands?

Him: Let me worry about that. What I need now is for my sons to know their sister



NOVELSGURU.COM

I kept quiet

Me: Give me a day or two

Him: A day. And it's non-negotiable

I exhaled

Me: Okay

Advertisement

fine. Don't call me I'll call you

I hung up

YARA

I was busy sorting the files on the cabinet

Panther suddenly crossed my mind. I took my phone and called him

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Ntombí ehle (Beautiful girl)

Me: Flattery will get you no where

Him: You missed me?



Me: A lot

Him: Maybe I should come and ask you from your husband

Me: Don't you dare

Him: So you enjoy sleeping alone when there's someone who can snuggle you to sleep?

Panther is aware of my marriage with Ethan. My marriage might be a faux but I vowed to respect Ethan, before the eyes of people we are happily married. So being seen in any compromising situation with other men will ruin/shame Ethan's name. If ever I find someone, I am going to sit Ethan down and tell him about it. And that someone might be Panther, I have to say that I am really taken by him, there's something about him that I am yet to discover

AYDEN

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

My mother walked in

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You are smoking in my house

Me: Mimsey come on

Her: Lindokuhle is here

Me: Tell him to go away



He stood by the door

Him: Not before we talk

Her: Did you two got into a fight? Don't deny because your bruises gave it away

Him: Something like that

Her: Don't break my things

She closed the door

Me: Panther please leave. I don't want to talk with you

Him: I am not leaving before we talk. Kill me if you want to, this time no one will stop you

I kept quiet

Him: I swear Tooth; I would never sleep with your girl. I wasn't in control of my...

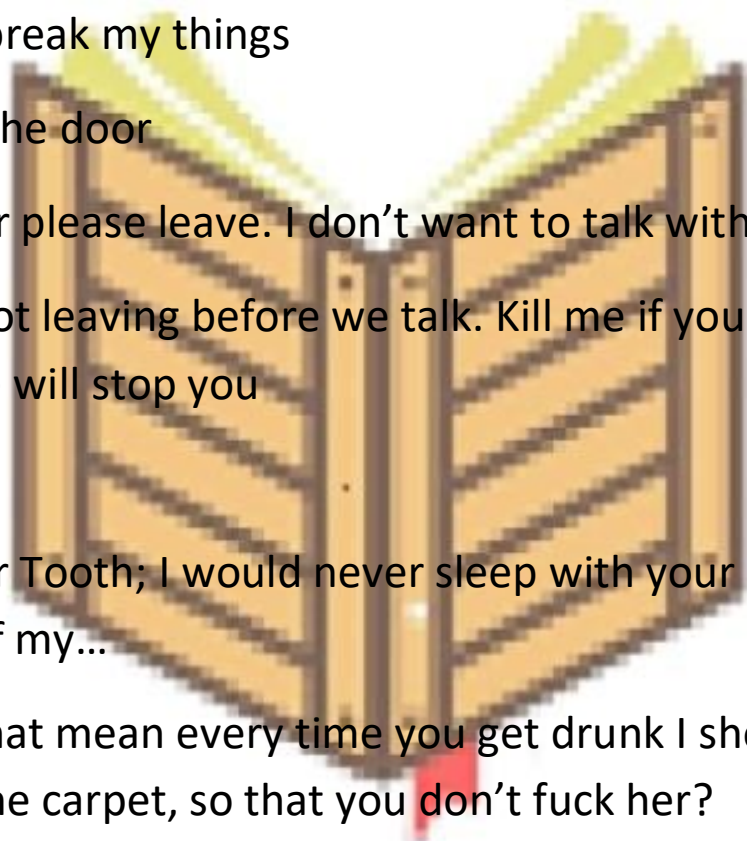
Me: Does that mean every time you get drunk I should hide my girl under the carpet, so that you don't fuck her?

Him: No, you know me man

Me: I thought I did but I was wrong

Him: It happened once

Me: Did she enjoy it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Is this a trap?

Me: I asked you a question...

Him: She did

I took a deep breath and stood up. Panther took a step back

Me: When are we fucking Alichia?

He smiled

Him: When you ready

I'll deal with Aurora later but I won't lose my friend over a cunt.

He's family and family stick together

Ethan

"It's been a long day without you, my friend

And I'll tell you all about it when I see you again

We've come a long way from where we began

Oh, I'll tell you all about it when I see you again

When I see you again"

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was lying on the couch facing the ceiling as the song continued to play

Yara walked in with popcorns

Me: You done already?

I sat up straight

Her: Yes

Me: Where are my bambinos?

Her: They are just finishing their homework

Her phone vibrated. She took it and suddenly her mood changed

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I received a weird message from Mimi

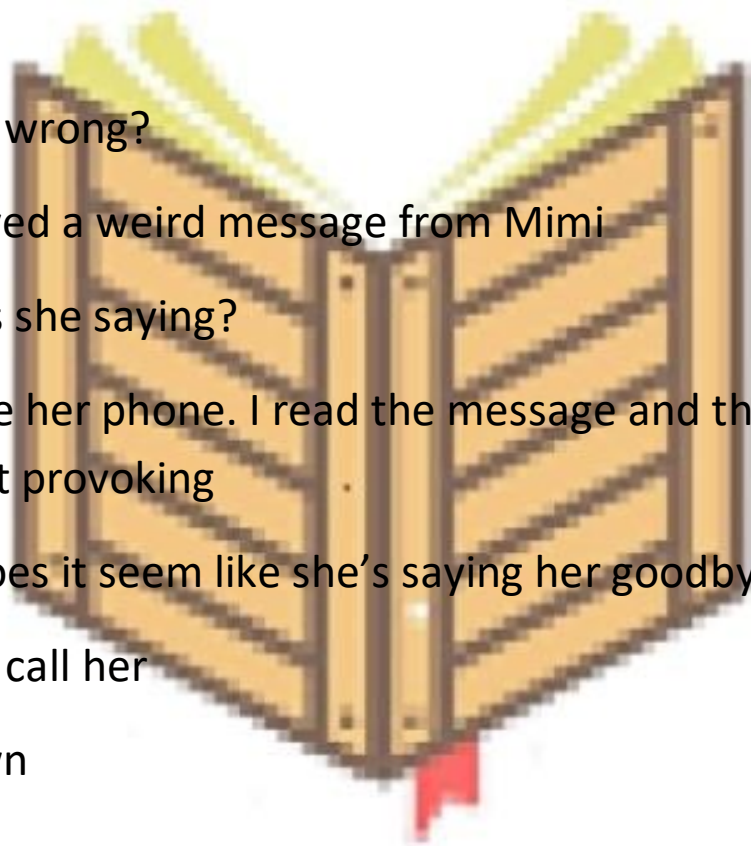
Me: What is she saying?

She gave me her phone. I read the message and the message was thought provoking

Me: Why does it seem like she's saying her goodbyes?

Her: Let me call her

She sat down



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

23

MIMI

I opened my eyes; Yara was still in my arms. She was holding me tight

Last night she insisted on sleeping over. If they had arrived a minute late they'd have found my lifeless body, I was close to gulped down the pills. I wasn't trying to be selfish, I've thought about them but that didn't motivate me enough to stop my suicidal thoughts. What could be worse than living as a slave? At least I'll have peace when I am dead

Me: I am sorry butterfly

I tucked her braids behind her ear. She slightly moved

Her: Morning

Her eyes were still puffy. Because of my decisions everyone is hurting

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I didn't mean to wake you up. You can go back to sleep, it's still early

Tears welled in her eyes

To think one of my reasons for coming back was to initiate a fight with her, and now she is crying for me. If I stayed in Gauteng none of this would be happening but I had to be a fool and come back. To fight for a man who want nothing to do with me

Her: Why? Please tell me, why?

Me: I can't tell you butterfly. I can't even bring myself to say it...

Her: You've never strike me as person who can be this shallow. Something is going on and I'd like to know. Allow me to help you, please

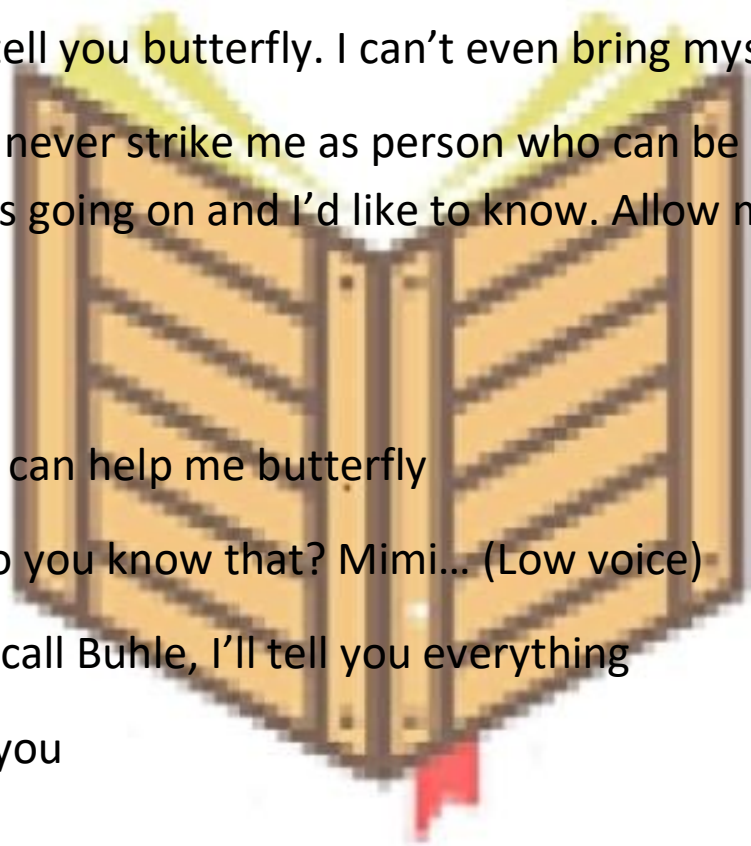
I sighed

Me: No one can help me butterfly

Her: How do you know that? Mimi... (Low voice)

Me: Let me call Buhle, I'll tell you everything

Her: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

For us to beat Chieka we will need extra hands and my father is one of those hands. Being a gangster is in my genes, my father was one but he retired. Being a gangster comes with lot of harm and danger especially if you are a family person, your rivals/enemies target your family in order to hurt or force you to surrender. And that's one of the reasons for his retirement

I pulled the chair and sat across him

Me: Pops

Him: This is a nice surprise

Me: I wish I didn't have to come here but did I have a choice?

Him: You just missed your aunt and siblings

Me: I didn't come for them but I would have loved to see my siblings, I can't say the same about your wife...

Him: What do you want?

Me: I need you to help us take out someone

Him: Who?

Me: Chieka Aichi

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: What business do you have with that punk? I thought you cut ties with him

Me: We did but he is not backing down... He is after us pops and we need you and Khumalo to help us, alone we can't do it

Him: What do you want me to do?

Me: Execute him

Him: It won't be easy but I'll try

Me: I don't want you to try pops; I want you to make it happen. It's the least you could do for me, for all the shit you've put my mother and Amelia through

Him: So you'll insult me even when you are in need of my help?

Me: You will help us or not?

Him: Just tell me the day and time, I'll be there

YARA

I looked at them in disbelief

Buhle: Say something Yara...

Mimi: I know that look...

Me: What look?

Mimi: Judgement look



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I am not judging you at all. I'm trying to process everything, why did you tell us Mimi?

Mimi: What was I suppose to say? "Mama I am a prostitute and I've been one for years now" it's not so easy

Me: It is! Look now, someone is after you

Buhle: We thought we've escaped but we were so wrong

Me: Yes you were. I don't know this Chieka guy but I can tell he is dangerous. And you could've know better than escape

Mimi: We know Yara

She held my hand

Mimi: Please don't tell mama, I won't be able to look into her eyes. If Chieka ship us off...

Me: Chieka or whoever his name is won't ship you off. It's time we show him that he doesn't have power over women

Buhle: Yara

Advertisement

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you have no idea of what you are saying...

Me: Trust me I know

I am not sure of what Panther and Ayden do but I am sure they will be able to help me. Or maybe they will find help for me



from other people but I won't allow this guy to separate us. I am doing this for my sisters and every girl out there who is a victim of his cruelty

AYDEN

Panther sat on the desk

Him: I feel like we are wasting time with this guy. Why are we circling around?

Me: We are attacking him soon. And he won't see us coming

His phone rang

Him: Beautiful... See us? What happened...? Okay, I will send you my brother's address... Bye

He hung up

Me: What's up?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: That was my girl, she want to see us

Me: Yara? In fact isn't she supposed to be at work?

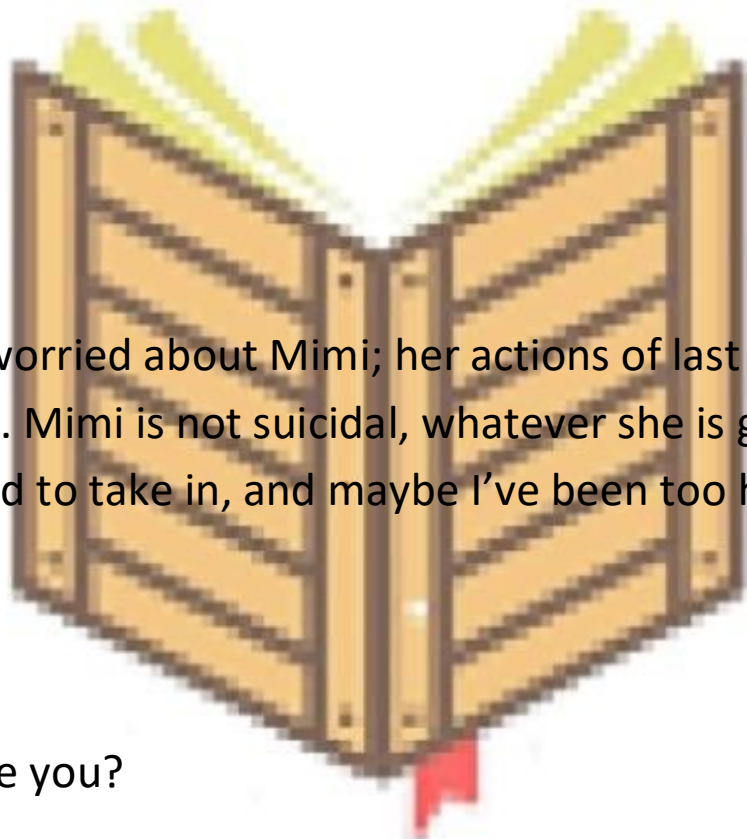
I looked at my wrist watch, she was 30 minutes late

Him: I am sure she has an explanation

Me: Be happy she is always up to date with her work; I was going to fire her

Him: You are sick... Let's go

ETHAN



I am really worried about Mimi; her actions of last night really shocked me. Mimi is not suicidal, whatever she is going through must be hard to take in, and maybe I've been too hard on her

I called her

Her: Hey

Me: How are you?

Her: Better and you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What do you think?

Her: I am sorry...

Me: Why did you do it? And don't lie to me Mimi

Her: I can't tell you over the phone

Me: Do you want us to meet?

Her: No Ethan, we can't. I don't want to put your life in danger

Me: What are you saying? Are you in danger?

Her: Ethan, I am no longer that Mimi you knew. I've... I've changed and my world is... I can't do this

I kept quiet

Her: One day you will understand

PANTHER

Viper: And why are you here again?

Ayden: We are waiting for his girl

They laughed

Viper: His married girl

Me: It's nice to see you laughing in the midst of this mess

Viper: Where is she?

Me: She said she's on her way



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ayden: As we wait

(Doorbell rang)

Viper: Go and check...

I got up and went to open

She stood there smiling; her one dimple complimented her smile

Her: Hey...

Me: Hello... Please come in

MIMI

Buhle: Do you trust Yara?

Me: I do

Her: I am shaking, right now I feel like she is our last hope

Me: After our plot to kill Chieka?

She chuckled softly

Me: If whatever she is planning fail, we gonna have to kill him



NOVELSCURU.COM

She looked at me

Her: Promise?

Me: Promise...

YARA

They looked at me as if I've said something stupid

Ayden: You said your sister know Chieka how again?

This is embarrassing... I swallowed

Me: My sister and her friend once worked for him, or let me say they are working for him

Viper: You see why I told you this guy must die

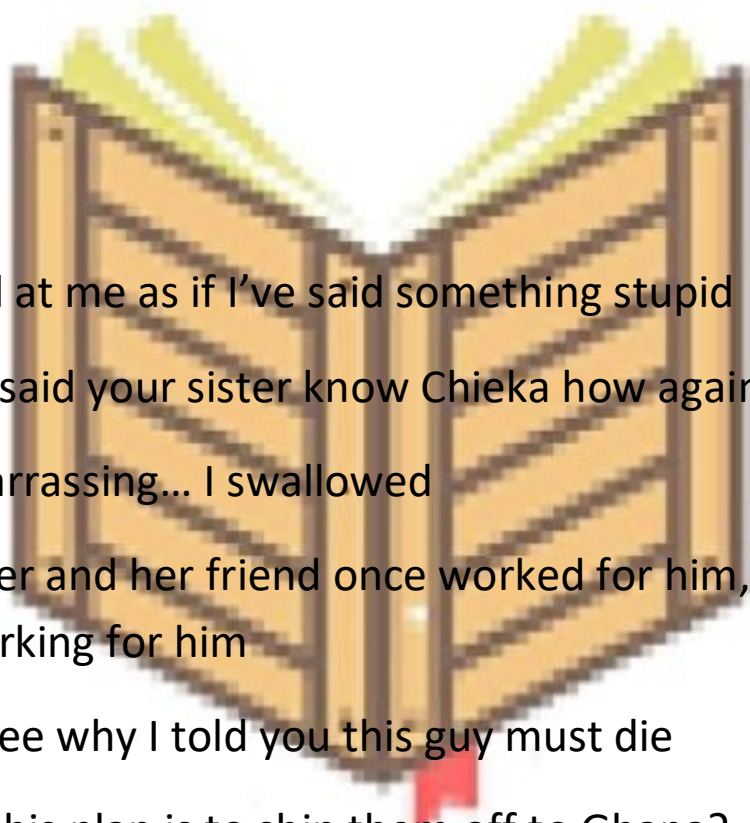
Panther: So his plan is to ship them off to Ghana?

Me: That's what she has said to me

Ayden: Fuck me now! We got him

Me: Wait, do you know this guy?

I did well by trusting Panther



NOVELSGURU.COM

Panther: Let me say, you baby just completed our puzzle. Guys this it, there's no turning back. We got him

He kissed me

Viper: Come on dude, not in front of us

Ayden looked away... You can tell he was uncomfortable

Ayden: Let me call Pops and you Viper call Old man. Seems like this two are busy...

Me: No, I am going to the office. I will not keep you guys

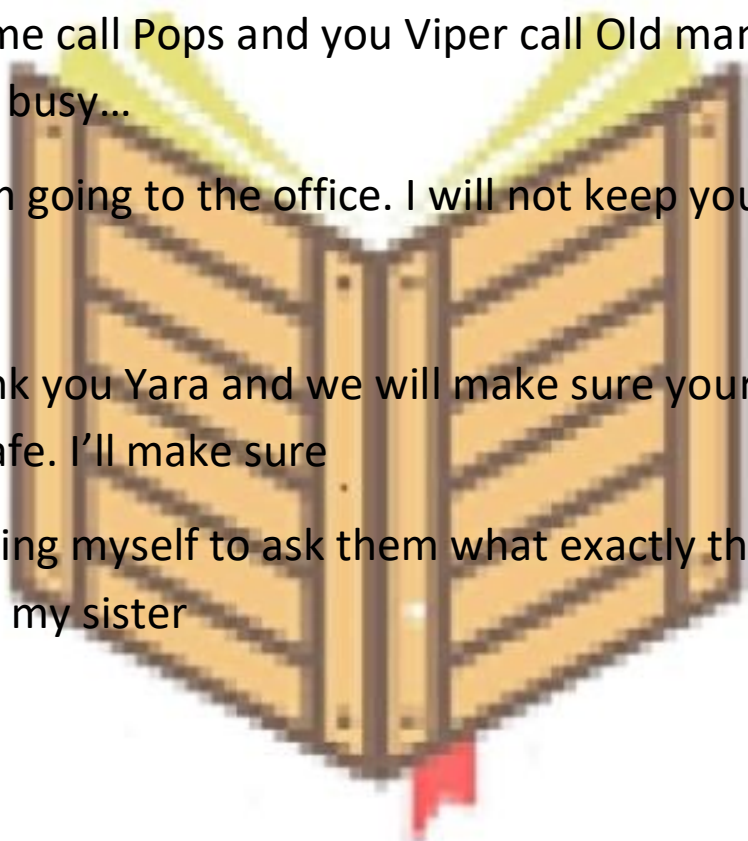
I stood up

Ayden: Thank you Yara and we will make sure your sister and friend are safe. I'll make sure

I couldn't bring myself to ask them what exactly they do, long as they help my sister

To be continued...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**



24

MIMI

(Door slamming) it was my mother

Ma: When are you girls going back to work?

Me: We asked for few days

Ma: Why, so that you can kill yourself Mimi?

Me: No mama

Ma: Tell me, why are you hurting me like this? Huh?

Me: Forgive me

Ma: That's all you know Mimi "Forgive me" do you ever learn mara?

I kept quiet

Ma: No mother should bury her children and you want to do exactly that. Hay man Mimi

Me: I didn't mean to

Ma: You did. I've been asking what's going on with you but you don't want to talk. What you know is gulping pills



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'll tell you, I promise you

She clicked her tongue and walked away

I checked my phone, Yara is so quiet

AYDEN

We were in one of our warehouses

My father and Mzoxolo walked in. Chieka can walk in anytime...

We didn't waste time to contact him

Pops: Is he here already?

Me: He can enter anytime

Panther: What's the plan?

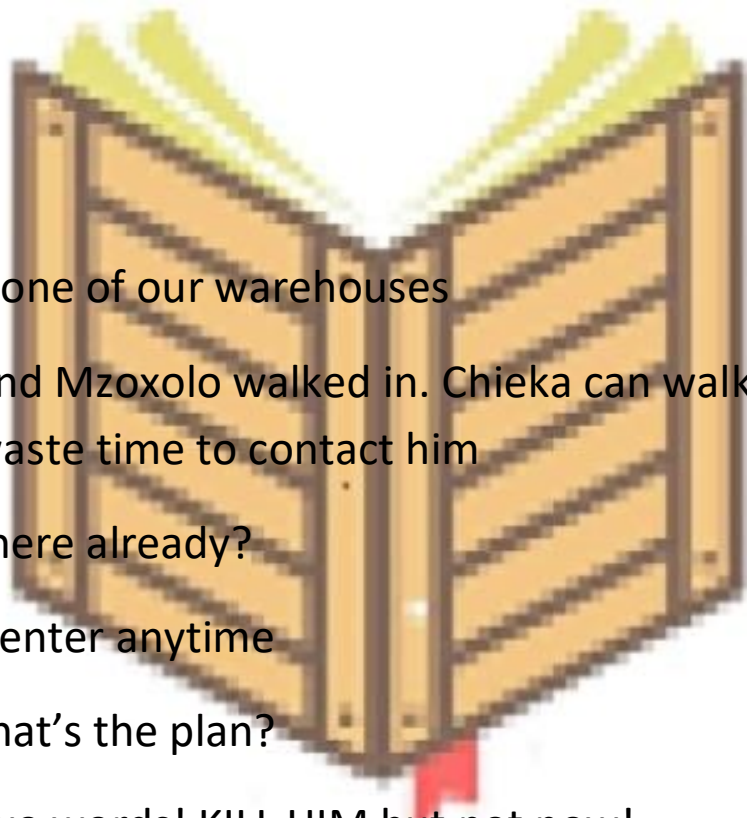
Mzoxolo: Two words! KILL HIM but not now!

Viper walked up to him

Viper: Is he coming alone?

(Door closes)

Panther: About to find out



NOVELSGURU.COM



Chieka: The whole clan is here I see (Chuckles softly)

Pops: Didn't I tell you to stay away from my son?

Chieka: Business is business Tshivhase

Mzoxolo: There's no business here and you know it

Chieka: In fact, what happened to our alliances?

Viper: We no longer want to work with you, we've told you before. You can find anyone to get you guns but not The Unfazed

Panther: What's so hard about that? We are cutting ties with you

Chieka: Is that why you called your folks on me? I didn't know you were weak

I walked up to him, one of his man stood in front of me

Chieka: Easy...

Mzoxolo: I don't have the whole day. You will sit your ass down and listen to us

NOVELSGURU.COM

ELISA

I called Yara

I couldn't talk with her earlier, I am about to risk my relationship with her. But, it's better I tell her before Mzoxolo reach out to her

Her: Mama, is Mimi fine?

Me: Yes, she is fine. I didn't call to talk about her

Her: Okay... I can spare you some minutes

Me: No, we can't talk over the phone. Can you come back here after work?

Her: Mama, I can't spend two nights at home

Me: It's important what I need to tell you Yara

Her: Okay, I will tell Ethan. Should I be worried?

Me: Just make sure you come

Her: Fine. Bye

NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up

VIPER

Chieka hit the table... He was watching a video of his family, they were held captive by Mr Tshivhase's men... This should weaken Chieka

Old man knew which buttons to switch on and Chieka is exactly where he wanted him to be. Ayden's father contacted his people in Nigeria and they abducted Chieka's family, with the help of my father they didn't take time to find them

Chieka: You messing with my family now? I'll fuck you all

Ayden's Pa: You in no position to make threats, you have no one!

Two of his men were already dead

Advertisement

only one was still alive

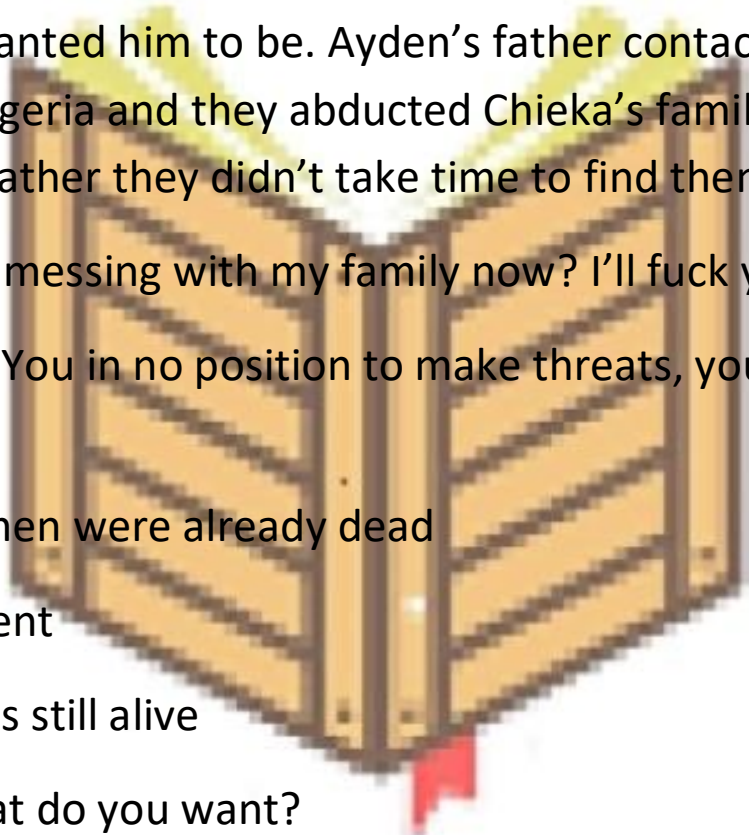
Chieka: What do you want?

Me: We want you to back off

Chieka: If I don't?

Ayden: You are dead...

Old man: He's already dead. So is your family



NOVELSGURU.COM

Chieka: Leave my family out of this... Do you know who I am? I have contacts all over, just one word and your whole clan is dead. You messed with the wrong guy

Old man punched his face

Old man: Now that was a mistake, no one threaten Mzoxolo and live to see another day. You mess with my sons, you mess with me!

Chieka: And no one touches Alichu and...

Ayden's Pa: And nothing. You should have listened to me when I asked you to live my son alone but you chose to come back

Panther: You are going to leave Limpopo right now, and don't even think about coming back. You hear me?

Chieka clenched his jaw

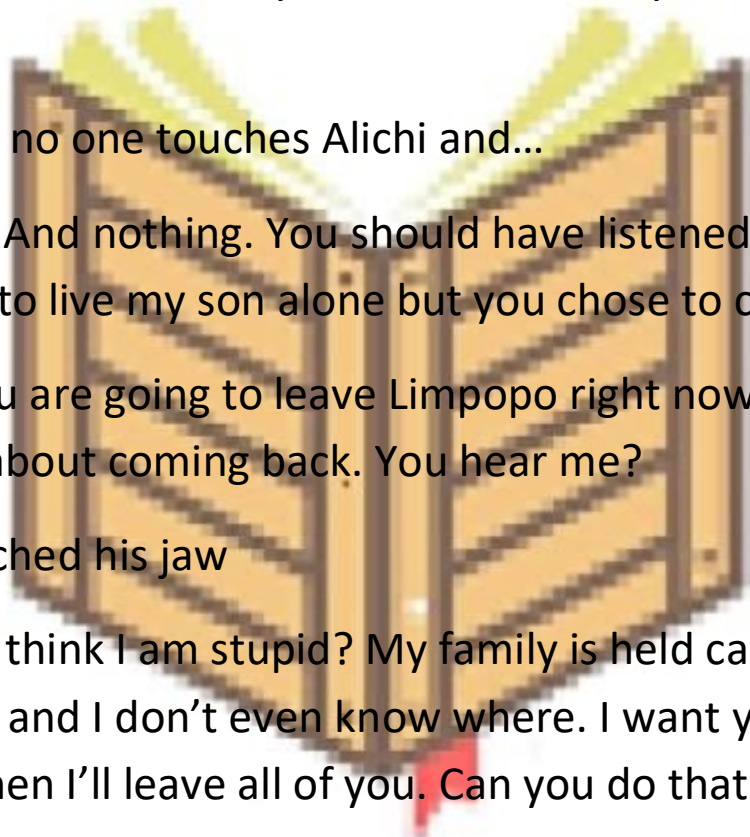
Chieka: You think I am stupid? My family is held captive somewhere and I don't even know where. I want you to release them and then I'll leave all of you. Can you do that?

Me: We are not negotiating here...

Panther: Maybe we should ship them off to Ghana, yeah! That's your next shipment, right?

Old man threw a picture of his daughter at him

Old man: Adamma, she will make a great prostitute



NOVELSGURU.COM

Chieka stood up

Me: Not so fast

Ayden: Here's what will happen, you are going to tell us where the girls are. And don't even think about outsmarting us because one wrong move your whole family is executed

Old man: I will enjoy killing them...

Chieka: How do I know you won't betray me?

Ayden Pa: That's a risk you have to take

Chieka: Okay, okay! I will tell you everything you need to know

Me: Jason! (Yelling)

He came running

Me: Please call the other guys; you are going with Mr Aichi. He will give you something that belong to us

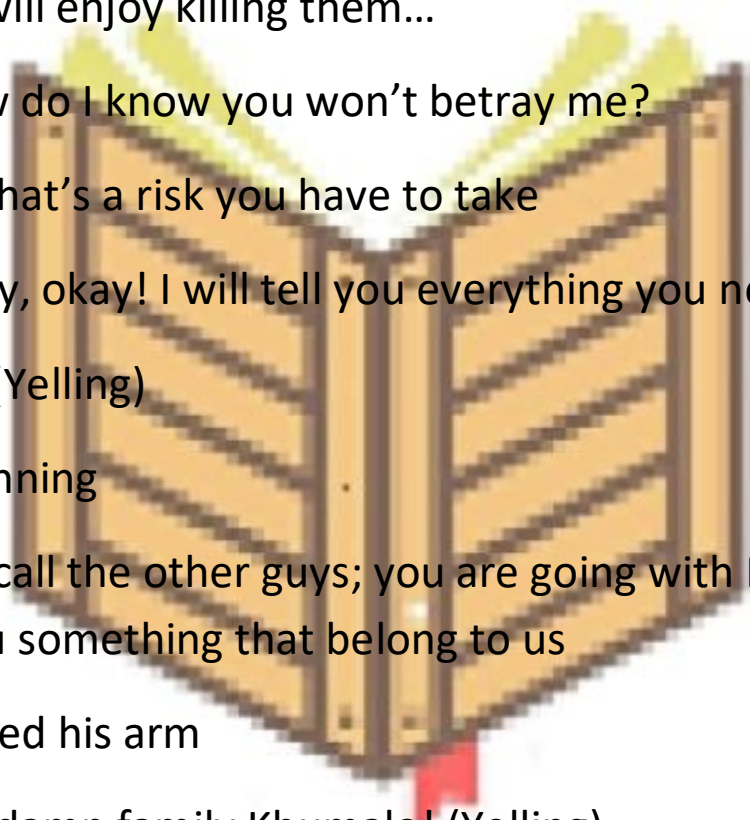
Jason grabbed his arm

Chieka: My damn family Khumalo! (Yelling)

Panther: Go fuck yourself! See you in hell

Jason walked away with him

Ayden: I can't believe we didn't kill him. I wanted to put a bullet between his eyes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Old man: And you are going to kill him

Ayden's Pa: We are just waiting for the girls to be free and then he is a dead man. There's no way we gonna let him walk away free, he can kill us

Me: What about his family?

Old man: For now we will keep them, they're taken care off

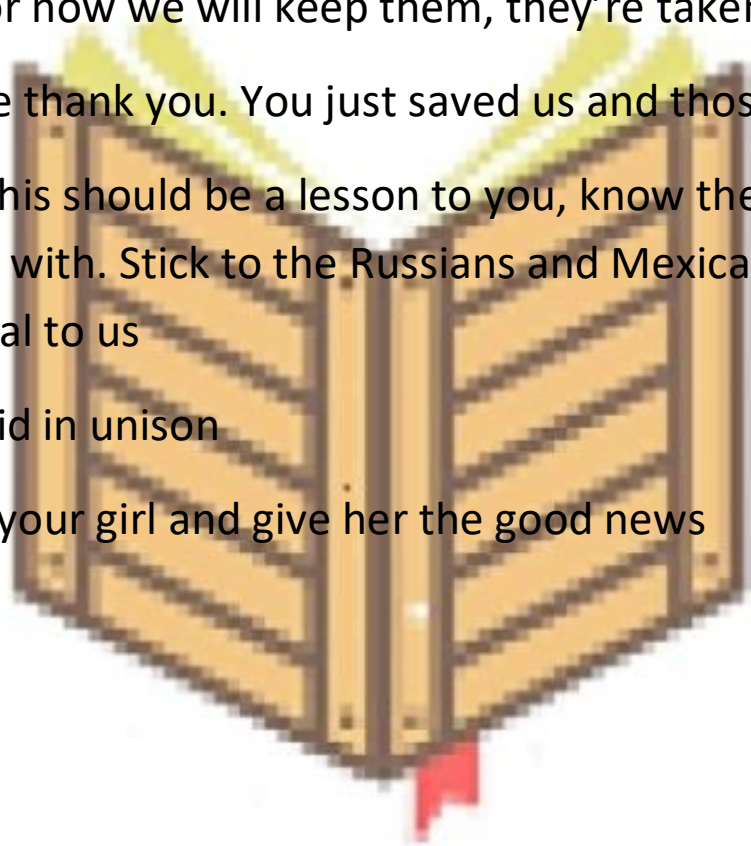
Panther: We thank you. You just saved us and those girls

Ayden Pa: This should be a lesson to you, know the people you are working with. Stick to the Russians and Mexicans, those guys are loyal to us

"Yes" we said in unison

Ayden: Call your girl and give her the good news

YARA



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I was on the phone with Ethan

Me: So is that a yes?

Him: It is. What time should I pick you up?

Me: I'll call you and let you know

Him: Fine, but the twins will be heartbroken. They were looking forward to make you dinner

Me: I'll make it up to them

Him: You have to (Laughs)

PANTHER



I am glad the whole Chieka saga is over, now we can shift our focus on something. Soon as the girls are free, Alichu is a dead man

Old man: Before you go, I need your help boys

Viper: We listening

Old man: I want you to look for someone...

Me: Who is this "Someone?"

He gave me a note; there was a name and surname written on it

Yara? There's only one Yara, this name is uncommon

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What business do you have with her?

Ayden took the note from my hand

Ayden: Is this...?

Me: Yes

I looked at my father

Me: Khumalo khulum' (Talk)

Old man: You will need to sit down for this son

Viper: Another drama unfolding?

Me: Talk! I am waiting...

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**



25

MIMI

I rubbed my eyes whilst yawning. I got off the bed and walked into the kitchen

Yara gave me the best news ever; Chieka won't be bothering me anymore. I don't know what she has done but I am thankful

Buhle: You are awake

Me: I was just resting my mind

Her: We escaped death, didn't we?

I poured myself glass of water

Me: We did. I don't even know how to feel about it

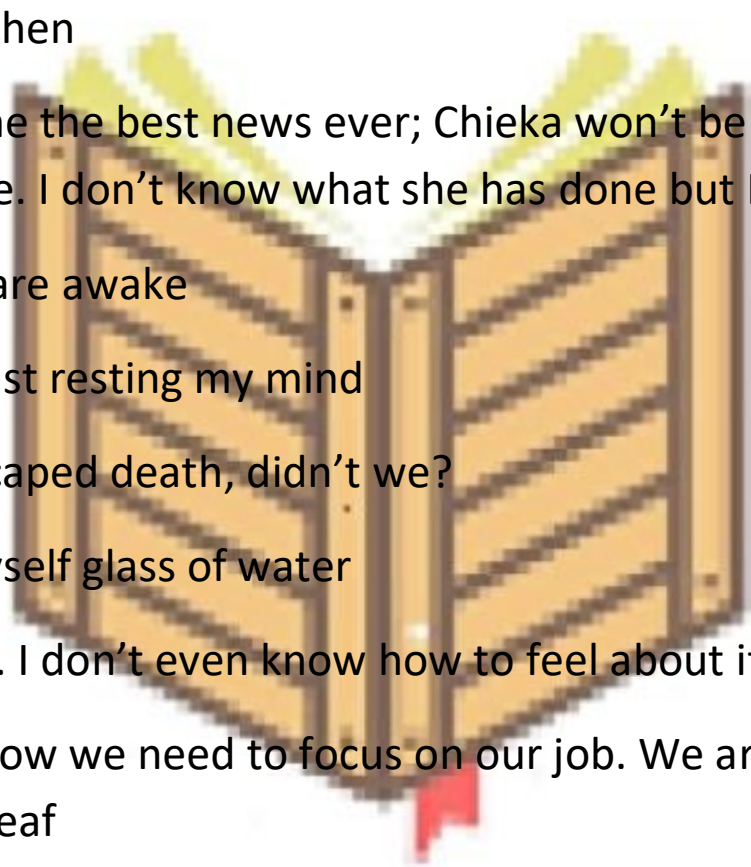
Her: Right now we need to focus on our job. We are turning into a new leaf

Me: You are right about that, I almost lost my family

Her: God came through for us

She hugged me from behind

Her: So, am I allowed to find myself a Venda boyfriend?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ha wena! (Laughs)

PANTHER

I got back home

Overwhelmed is the right word to describe me right now.

“She’s your sister” my father uttered those words and the sun stopped shining for a moment. It was lot to take in everything that he was saying, a part of me wanted to shoot him for lying but I couldn’t cause he’s my father

Voice: Panther

I turned around, it was Viper

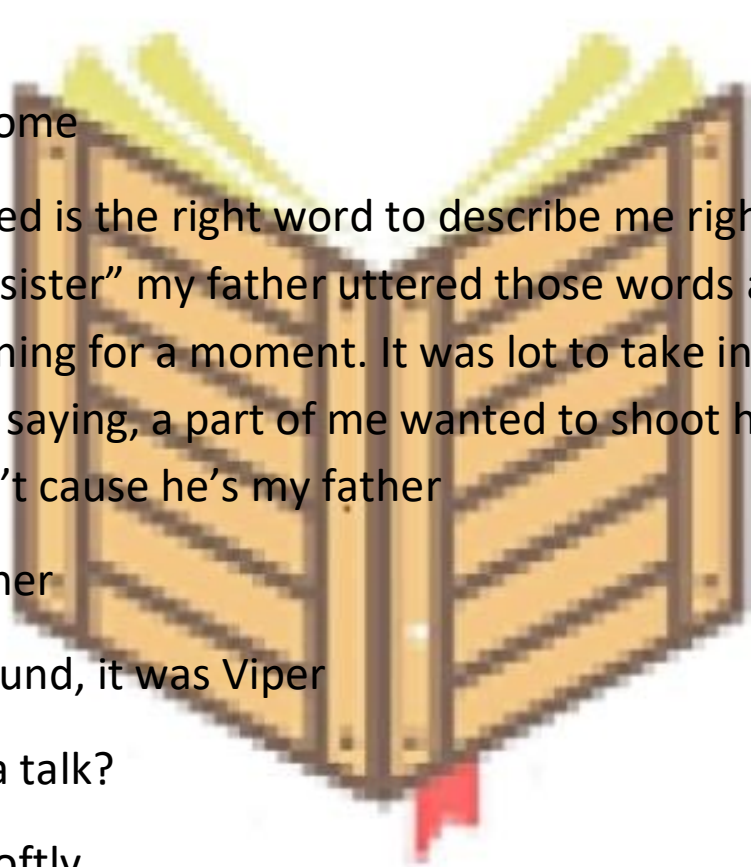
Him: Wanna talk?

I chuckled softly

Me: What’s there to talk about, huh? I nearly fucked my sis...  
sister

I can’t believe I just said that. Yes, she’s my sister!

Him: I’m sorry man



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How can they do this to us? I understand dad but mom too? We old enough Craig, they should have told us

Him: I know...

Me: This is more than just her being my sister. I love her  
I slowly sat down

Me: I love her (Low voice)

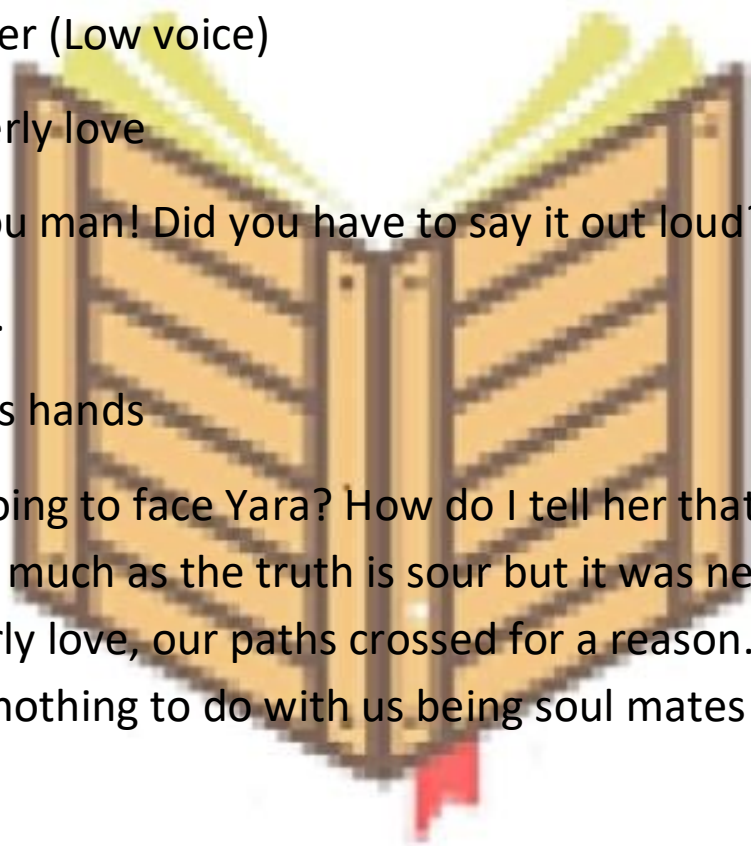
Him: Brotherly love

Me: Fuck you man! Did you have to say it out loud?

Him: Sorry...

He raised his hands

How am I going to face Yara? How do I tell her that I am her big brother? As much as the truth is sour but it was never love. It was brotherly love, our paths crossed for a reason. And that reason has nothing to do with us being soul mates



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

I was woken from my sleep by Aurora's call

Her: Amor (Love)

Me: Mi reina (My queen)

Aurora and I have been together for three years, engaged for a year. We met couple of years back in Mexico, and since then we've been together. Like any relationship we have our ups and downs but lately I've been feeling out of love. Must be the distance

Advertisement

I don't know. Maybe it's time we end the relationship

Her: I am coming back

Me: Oh...

Her: "Oh"? Are you for real Ayden?

Me: I am just surprised that's all. I've been begging you to come back but you showed no interest

Her: I know. I was still hurt...

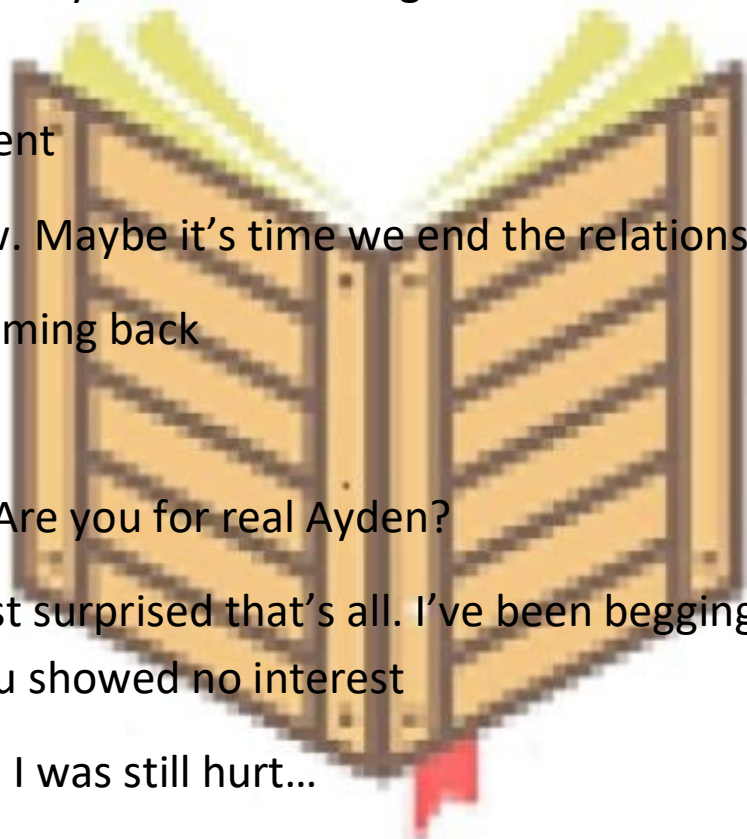
Me: For three months?

She kept quiet

Me: What's going on?

Her: Will talk when I get there

Me: Should be worried Aurora?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She kept quiet again

Me: Why did you call if you knew that you won't talk?

Her: Just wait for me to come back. We really need to talk

Me: I'll book your ticket right away

Her: Thank you

I hung up

I still don't know if I should confront her about her sexual intercourse with Panther or not...

I logged on Facebook account and clicked on Yara's profile. I viewed her picture and smiled. What's going on with me? Why the sudden interest in her?

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

My phone rang, it was Panther

Me: My hero (Smiles)

Him: Hey

Now that was cold

Me: Didn't expect that

Him: I want to see you

Me: Is everything fine?

Him: No

Me: Lindokuhle what's wrong? Why are you cold towards me?

Him: Please don't pressure me Yara

Me: Wow, we doing this again?

Him: You'll understand soon

I had hope Panther to be more enthusiastic but I was wrong

ETHAN

I was in the kitchen preparing something for the twins. Yara said she will call me so that I can pick her up

Rotenda: Where is aunt Yara?

Me: We are going to fetch her soon

Him: Daddy misses her?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Huh?

He jumped off the chair

Him: You are so quiet

Me: So you young man concluded that I missed your aunt?

He laughed

Him: Yes

Me: You are crazy. Go on and call your sister

He started singing

Him: Daddy miss aunty

Aunty miss daddy

I know, I know, I know

I shook my head

It will really hurt my children when it's time for Yara to move on with her life that is bound to happen anytime. My heart hasn't betrayed me and I don't think it will ever. With that being said, if Yara want to date I am not going to stop her. She can do that but my twins will suffer. But, I am not going to be selfish and expect her to be tied up to me for years when there's clearly no love between us. I pray Goldie understand wherever she is



YARA

I pulled the chair and sat down

Me: Thank you for dinner, I truly missed food cooked by you

She faked a smile

Buhle excused herself

Mimi: I'll join her

Ma: Please don't, I need to talk with you both

Buhle: You'll find me in bed

Mimi and I looked at our mother

Ma: I have something to tell you. I want you to know that I didn't mean for any of it to happen

Mimi: Ookay...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Ma?

Tears welled up in my mother's eyes with no warning

Me: Why are you crying?



I asked worriedly

Ma: I love you both and your father loved you too but sometimes in life we do things that we are not proud of

My mother never talks about my father and when she mention him we become worried

Ma: Yara my daughter I'm sorry

She took my hand into hers

Ma: Your father wasn't your real father

I looked at Mimi

Mimi: What did you say?

Ma: She is not your father's daughter

I slowly loosen her grip

Me: You lied to me about my father?

Ma: Please forgive me

I stood up

Mimi: Who are you? I don't know you

Me: Mama?

Ma: Please Yara...

Me: Who is he?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked away

Mimi: She asked you a question...

Ma: Mzo... Mzoxolo Khumalo

This name sounds familiar. I've had it before

Ma: It was a stupid affair, it didn't....

No, this can't be

[Flashbacks]

Ayden: The Great Mzoxolo Khumalo will surely find a way to help us

Panther: Mzoxolo to the rescue

\*\*\*\*\*

Panther's father? My knees felt weak; I balanced myself with a chair

Mimi: Yara?

Tears filled my eyes; I wanted to be anywhere but here. Mimi kept on calling my name, with no warning... I fainted!

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Never in my wildest dreams did I think Panther would be my brother, a whole BROTHER. How can my mother do something so sinister? I shudder to think what could have happened if I wasn't married to Ethan, I probably would have gone ahead and initiate a relationship with him. My whole life was a lie, and my mother made sure it becomes a beautiful lie. Where do I start to familiarise myself with this new family? It is quite clear that my "father" want a relationship with me

(Cell phone rings) It was Panther. I closed my eyes and answered it

Him: Morning

I kept quiet

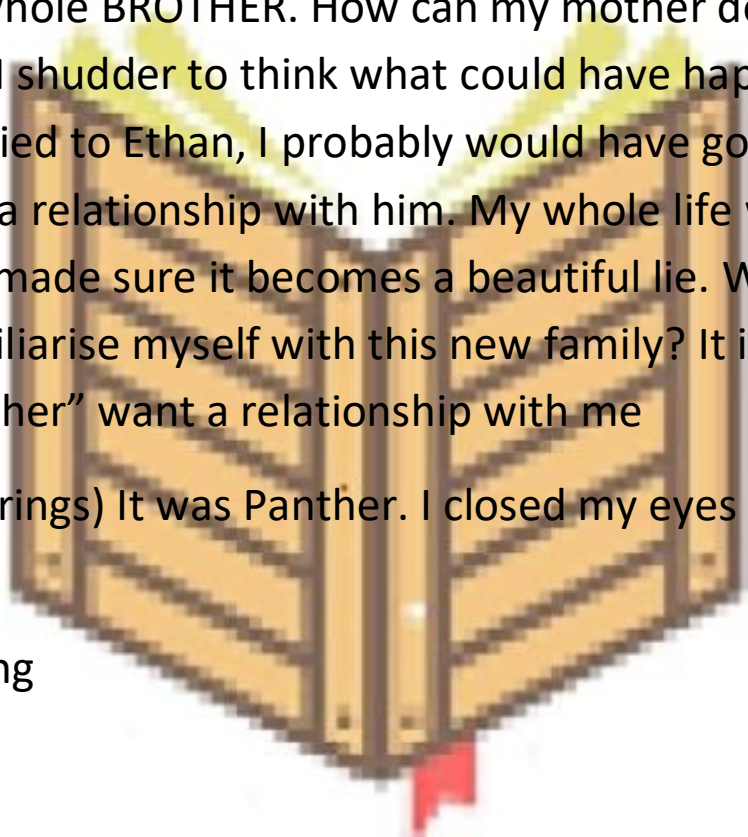
Him: What have I done wrong now?

Me: Hello

Him: You didn't forget about our meeting, right?

Me: Can't you tell me whatever it is over the phone?

Him: No. I'll come and fetch you...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Don't. I'll come by myself

Him: You don't sound good

This is kind of care I wanted but not from my brother. I wanted it to come from Panther, my love Panther but now it's my brother Panther

MIMI

I rinsed the glass and placed it on the table

Ma: Mimi...

I looked at her

Ma: At some point, we will have to talk

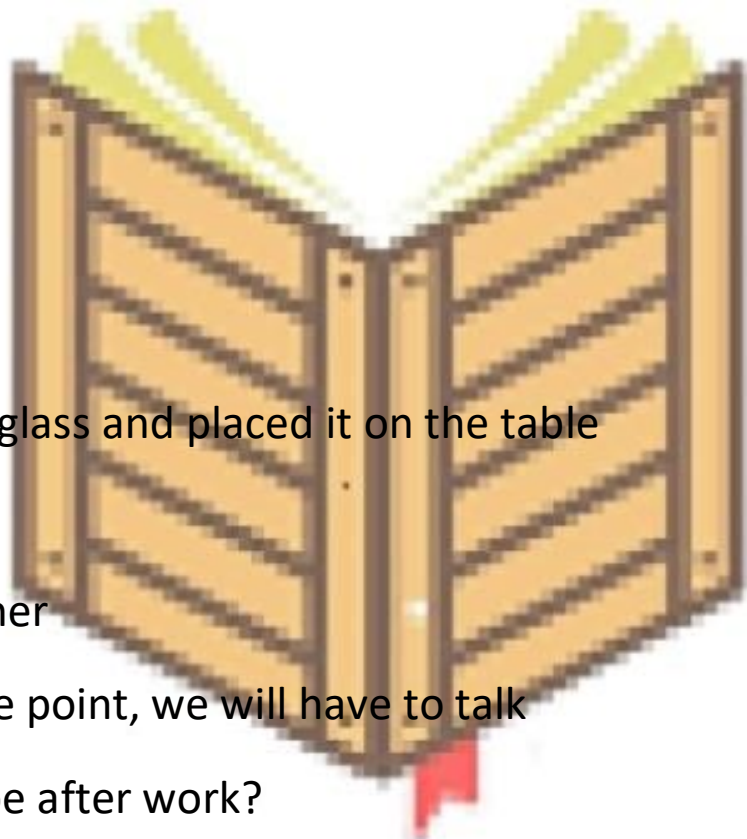
Me: Can it be after work?

Ma: No, you are angry and you don't want to reason with me

Me: Reason with you? What's there to reason about?

Ma: I did what was necessary at that time

Me: That's too bad because I see that with different eye



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: Stop with the attitude Mimi

Me: You call it attitude mama? Okay let me see, you drove dad away from us, you stole that little chance from us. Your affair broke our family, you broke it! Understand?

She slapped me across the face

Ma: Watch your tone with me; I am still your mother

I kept quiet

Ma: Yes, I've made a mistake and I regret it but that doesn't give you any right to insult me. Your father chose to leave...

Me: Are you hearing yourself? He didn't choose to, you pushed him

Ma: You have no insight of what has happened between your father and me

Me: You said it yourself mama. And now, now Yara has to... she has to suffer because of your poor decisions. She almost dated her brother

Ma: This is the reason why I didn't want to tell you

Me: Unbelievable, you are selfish mama

Buhle: Mimi, No!

She walked in the kitchen

Her: Despite everything she's still your mother, at least respect her

Me: Respect? I've always respected her but now... Now I can't even look at her

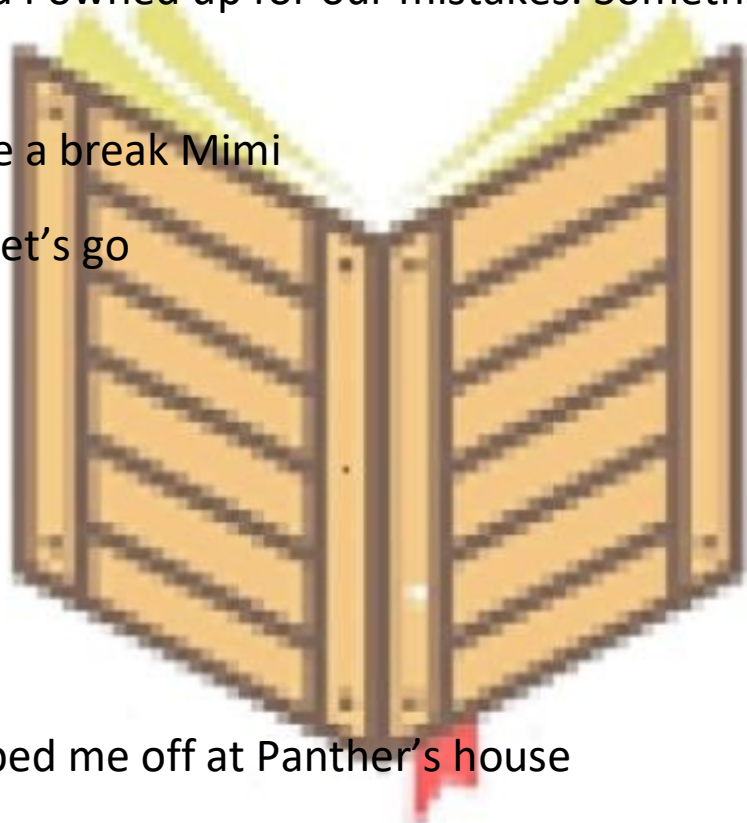
Her: We all make mistakes, and you and me...

Me: You and I owned up for our mistakes. Something she couldn't do

Ma: Give me a break Mimi

Me: Buhle, let's go

YARA



Ethan dropped me off at Panther's house

Advertisement

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Viper was happier to see me than Panther

Viper: Can I get you something to drink?

Me: No, I am fine but thank you

We sat down

Panther cleared his throat

Viper: Do you really think we should be the ones to tell her?

Panther: Do you see anyone telling her? They've already kept this as a secret for years

So they knew?

Panther: Look Yara the thing is...

Me: I am your sister

They looked at each other and then at me

Viper: Hold on, you knew?

Me: My mom told me last night

Panther sat still. He wasn't showing any emotions; in fact I couldn't even tell what he was thinking

Me: At first I didn't want to believe it but it is what it is

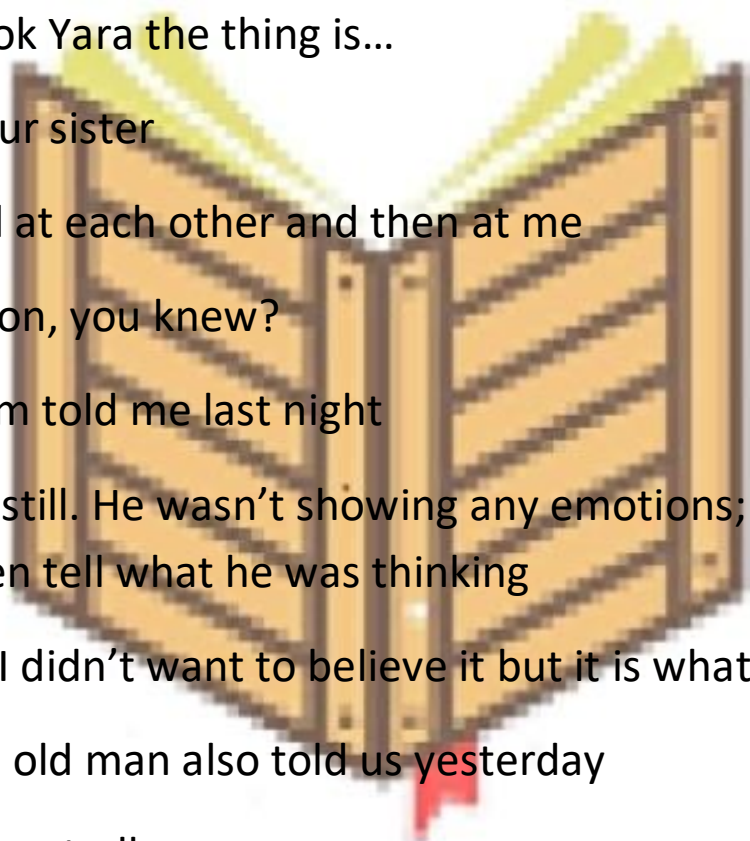
Viper: Yeah, old man also told us yesterday

I nodded repeatedly

Viper: Well I for one, I am happy to have a sister. And from what dad has told us, we are same age

Me: I'm still trying to process everything (Scoffs)

Viper: You and him



NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked at Panther

Viper: Bro khulum' nay' (Talk with her)

Panther: Can you please excuse us?

Viper: No stress

He stood up

AYDEN

I received a call from my father

Me: Pops, everything okay?

Him: Yes. The cops received a tip and they raided Chieka's warehouse, the girls are safe now

Me: Best news ever. What happened to him?

Him: Well, let me say he is about to have dinner with his forefathers

Me: Thank you pops

Him: Anything for you son



NOVELSCURRL.COM



I hung up

My mother smiled at me

Me: What Mimsey?

Her: You and your dad having civil a conversation

Me: It's purely business

Her: No, your heart is softening...

Me: No Mimsey. He is still a coward

Her: Whatever. Anyway the construction workers are ready to start

Me: Do you like the new design?

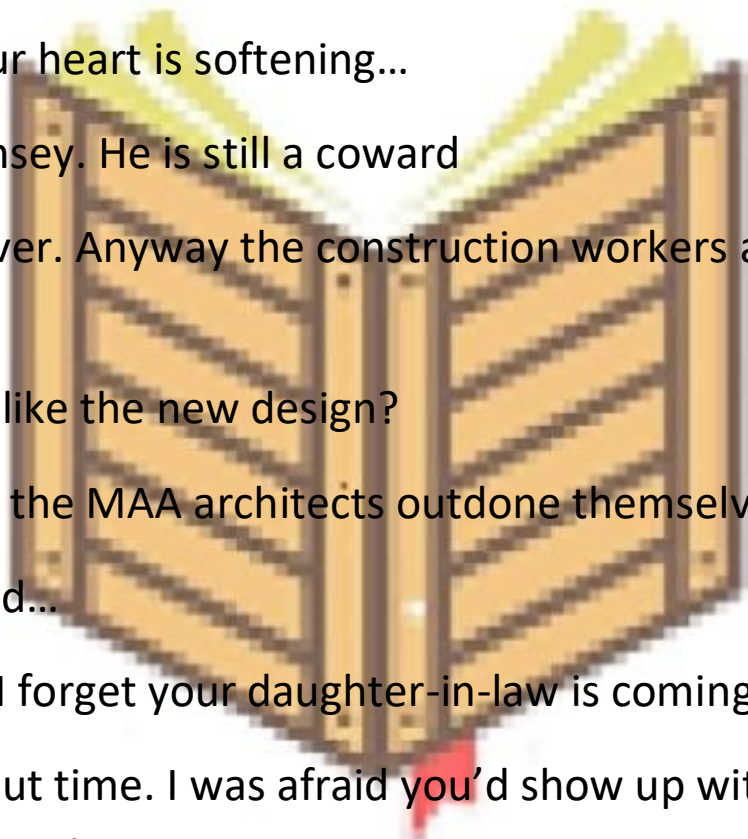
Her: Love it, the MAA architects outdone themselves  
They sure did...

Me: Before I forget your daughter-in-law is coming back

Her: It's about time. I was afraid you'd show up with another girl at my doorstep

Me: What if I'd show up with one?

Her: You wouldn't have dared!



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

Her presence was suffocating me, I don't want to lie

Her: Look at me Lindo

Me: Come on Yara

She moved close to me

Her: Hey, look at me

I hesitated but ended up looking at her

Her: It's crazy I know but there's nothing we can do about it. We met for a reason and that reason had nothing to do with "love". You didn't lose me in fact you gained a sister, a sister that will forever be with you

Me: How are you so calm about this? I didn't even sleep last night

She chuckled softly

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: And who said I did? I cried all night, I couldn't understand anything. And I thought someone will wake me up and realise that it was a dream

Me: But it wasn't

Her: Yes, it wasn't. It's a bittersweet truth

I laughed

Me: Wow, so I kissed my sister

Her: Not once but twice

Me: I wanna erase that memory, Yoh nkosi yam!

Her: The sooner you start seeing me as a sister the sooner that memory fades

Viper leaned against the wall and laughed

Viper: Never!

He walked up to us

Me: Ha-ha very funny

Her: Stop torturing us, it's bad enough as it is

Viper: Old man is on his way here

Yara stood up

Her: I'll get going

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Don't you want to meet him?

Her: Not now, maybe some other time

Viper opened his arms for her

Him: First hug for your big brother

Yara laughed and hugged him

Yara is definitely taking this well than me. And my little brother is happy

Her: Can you tell me your real name now?

We laughed at her

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

27

YARA

I opened Ayden's door and walked in

Me: Mr A

He raised his head

Him: Come on in Miss S

Me: I brought you the files you've asked for

Him: Thank you

Me: And your appointment is set for 14:00

He stood up

Him: With Mr Maseko?

He frowned

Me: Yes, and that face?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: One meeting I am not looking forward to

Me: Why is that?

Him: You will see for yourself, I'll never get use to work with him. We argue on almost everything

Me: But you argue with everyone, well except my brothers

Him: Because they know me

Me: If you say so

Him: I see you already referring them as your brothers?

Me: Because they are...

Him: I thought you'd be in bed weeping and sulking over the revelation

Me: There's a lot you don't know about me Mr A

Him: Is it?

Me: Yes

Him: Maybe one day I'll get to know you

Me: Who knows? Maybe

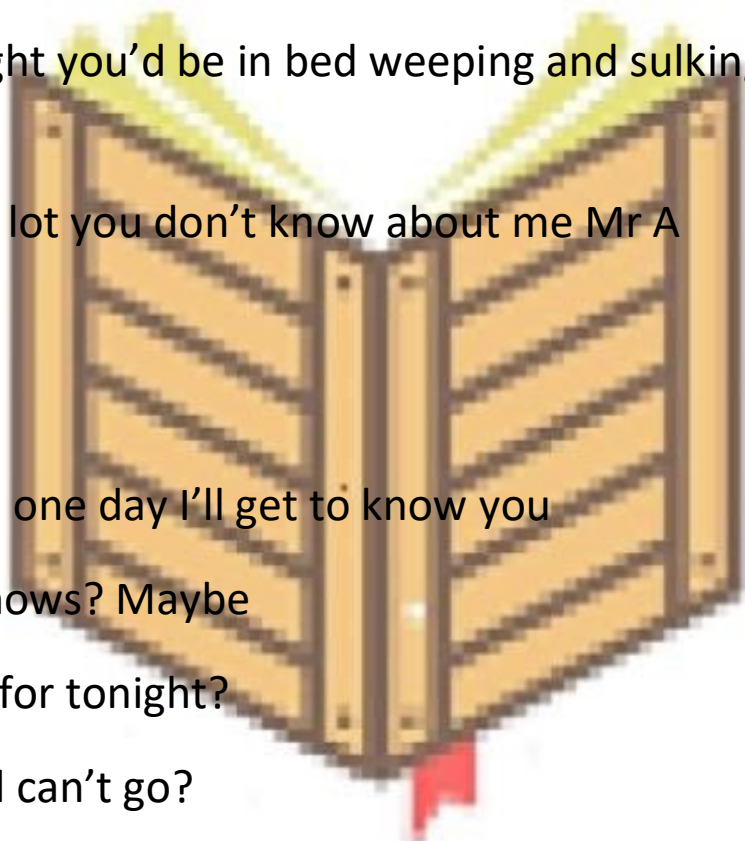
Him: Ready for tonight?

Me: You still can't go?

I'm really not feeling this function. I just want to prepare for the test that is coming in few days

Him: If you don't feel like going there's no problem, I'll cancel and apologize to him

Me: But isn't the client important?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I can make an exception

MIMI

Buhle made her way to me carrying a tray of dirty dishes

I was singing softly

Me: If I let her go

Will I regret it? Will I forget it?

Well, it's somethin' I don't know (whoa)

Her: Someone is in a good mood

Me: Well... I am trying to get my mind off things

Her: Is it working?

Me: As a charm... Are you done with your tables?

Her: No, it's made house today

(Message alert) It was a message from Yara

Her: And now?

I gave her the phone. She read the message and looked at me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's finally over. Chieka will never be a thorn

Her: He's completely out of our lives?

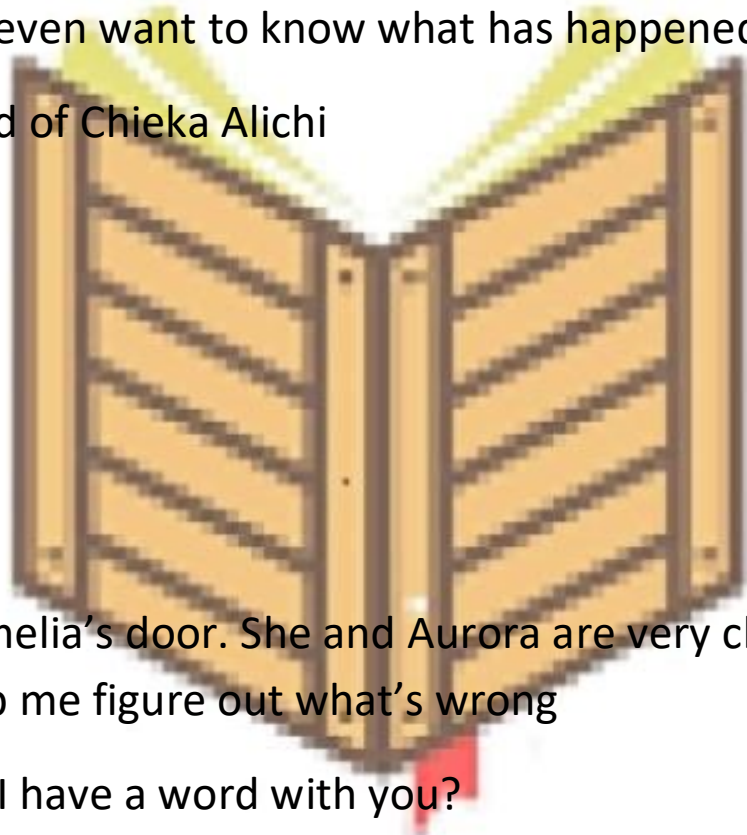
Me: Yes

Her: Thank Heavens. I'm even scared to ask what has happened

Me: I don't even want to know what has happened to him

Her: The end of Chieka Aichi

AYDEN



I opened Amelia's door. She and Aurora are very close maybe she will help me figure out what's wrong

Me: Sis can I have a word with you?

Her: Come in

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

I closed the door... I sat down

Me: When last did you talk with Aurora?

Her: Yesterday



Me: How is she to you?

Her: What do you mean?

Me: Does she sound like Aurora we all know?

Her: Now that you mention it, I thought I was imagining things

Me: No, you not. There's something going on with her and last time she acted like this...

Her: Come on, she won't repeat the same mistake twice

Me: What do you want me to think? She's so eager to come back

Her: I don't see anything wrong with that

Me: If you say so. Let me leave you to your books

I stood up

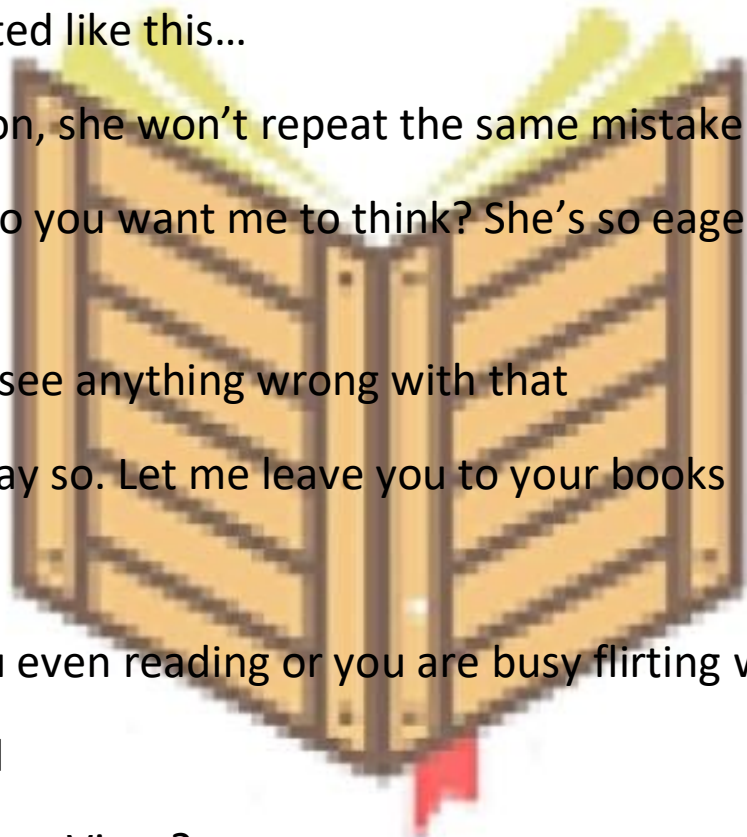
Me: Are you even reading or you are busy flirting with boys?

She laughed

Her: You mean Viper?

I gave her dead stare

Me: Say that one more time Amelia



NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

I was preparing a home cooked meal for Yara, maybe it will cheer her up. Yara loves chicken stew it's her favourite dish after the long day she had

Advertisement

this might do a trick on her mood

She walked into the kitchen

Her: You done?

Me: Almost...

Her: My feet are killing me

Me: How was work?

Her: Work was fine, and you?

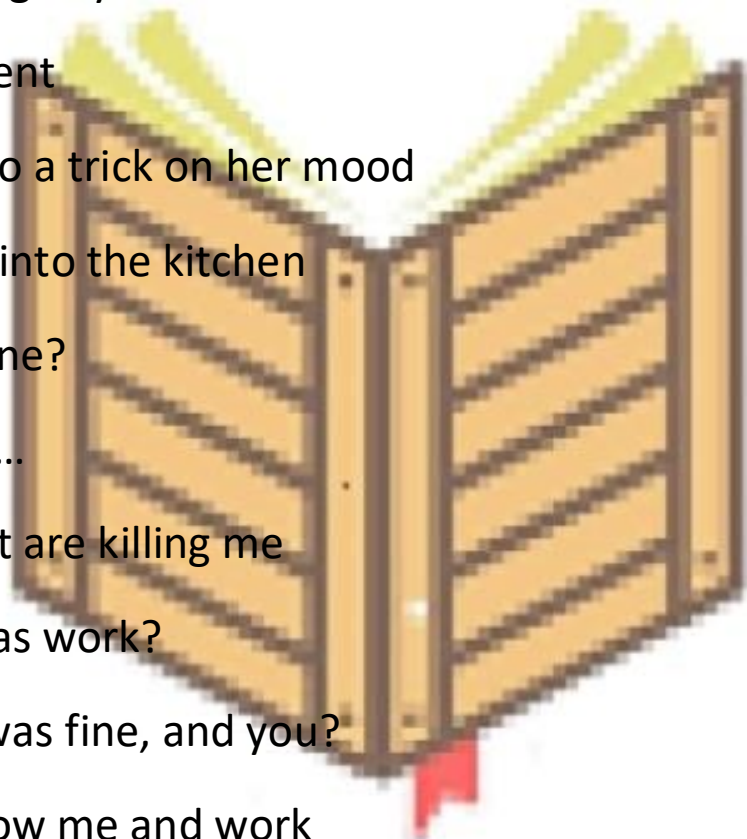
Me: You know me and work

Her: I foresee early retirement (Laughs)

Me: I should try my luck on Lotto, who knows...

Her: Try your lucky

She walked to the stove



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You sure you don't want me to help?

Me: No, you've been doing lot of that. Allow me today...

Her: Oookay sir

(Silence)

Me: I wanna talk with you

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: It depends on how you see it

Her: I am all ears...

Me: I know we've only been married for two months and a lot has happened in that period but...

She sat down

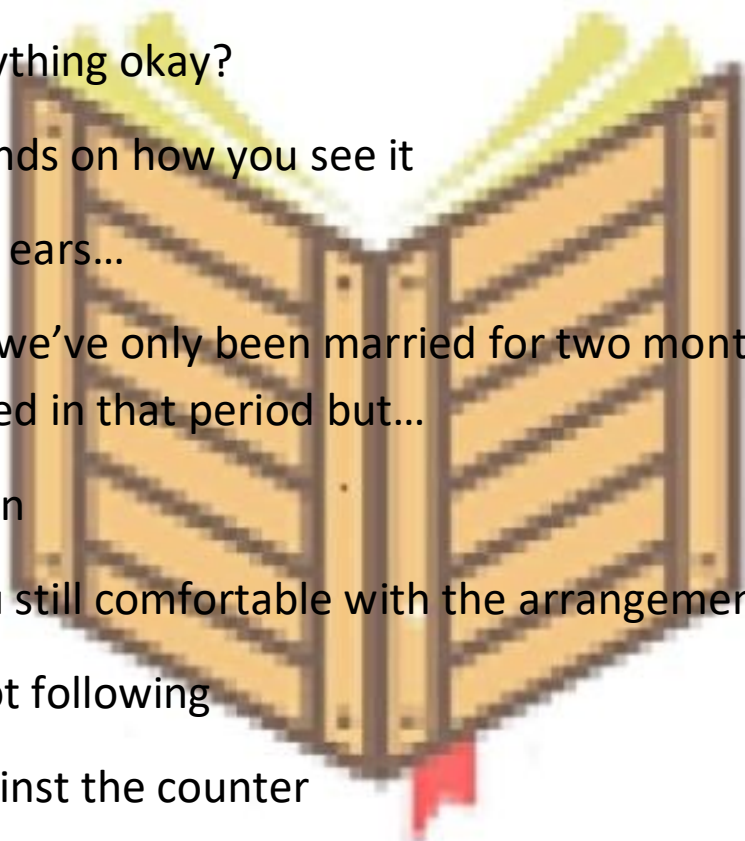
Me: Are you still comfortable with the arrangement?

Her: I am not following

I leaned against the counter

Me: You are working now, you've enrolled in UNISA. You are slowly but surely getting what you've always wanted Yara. I don't want you to wake up one day and resent me because I've caged you in a loveless marriage

Her: Ethan...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No, listen. I was beyond shocked when I learnt about your relation with Panther, even though things never worked between you two but that was indication-this marriage is dragging you back. Because of the respect you have for me and this marriage you weren't able to go through with the relationship. You are young and beautiful, any man would kill to be with you and that man is not this widower in front of you. I want to mourn my wife in peace; I don't want to be rushed into forgetting her. I'll do that on my own time and meanwhile you'll be getting hurt

Her: What about my promise to Goldie? The family will think I used you and your kindness. I don't want to be called names Ethan

Me: Leave that to me. You can still come and spend time with the twins; they can also come to you. I'd make sure you get a nice apartment

She kept her gaze on me

Me: Find someone, who knows... Maybe my late wife will be happy to see you with someone else, now she surely sees things with a different eye

Her: You sure?

I gave her a nod

Me: Maybe in the next life E and Y will connect but now...

Her: I'll definitely hunt you down

Me: And I'll gladly open my arms for you (Laughs)

She stood up

Me: After her gave you new opportunities isn't that important to you? Goldie's death paved great things for you

I hugged her

Her: After her a lot has happened, revelations were made and blood was almost shed

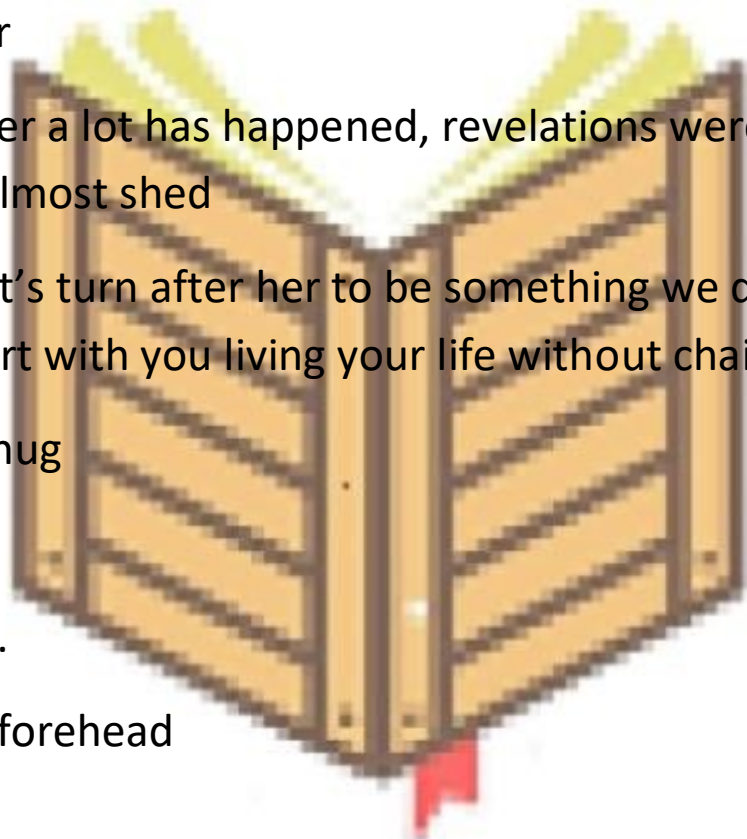
Me: Then let's turn after her to be something we don't regret and that start with you living your life without chains

I broke the hug

Me: Agree?

Her: Agree...

I kissed her forehead



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

28

YARA

I swung the door open

My mother was folding clothes

Me: Mama

Ma: Yara. Please come on in

I sat on the bed

Ma: Thank you for coming

I kept quiet

Ma: Yara, please. Talk with me. We have to close this chapter, and for that to happen, you must let me explain

Me: Mom, I really don't see why we should continue talking about this. What happened has happened, what more can you do?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ma: Allow me to apologize at least

Me: Mama even if you apologize if I don't forgive you then I won't

Ma: Still, I want to apologize. What I did was inhuman; I had no right to hide the truth from you. I should have told you the truth

Me: But, you didn't

Ma: I was scared...

Me: Don't stress about it mama. The truth is out now and nothing can be done about it

She took my hand into hers

Ma: Please forgive me

Me: I forgave you

(Silence)

Me: I have something to tell you

Ma: Go ahead

I cleared my throat

Me: Ethan and I agreed to end the marriage



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

AYDEN

I opened my eyes to a ringing cell phone

Me: Amor

Aurora: Did I wake you?

Me: You did

Her: Sorry...

Me: Why you calling so early?

Her: I wanted to let you know I am boarding the plane today

I sat up straight

Me: Did I make a mistake whilst booking your ticket?

Her: You didn't, I changed it

Me: Tell me Aurora, why are you in a hurry to come here? Are you in trouble?

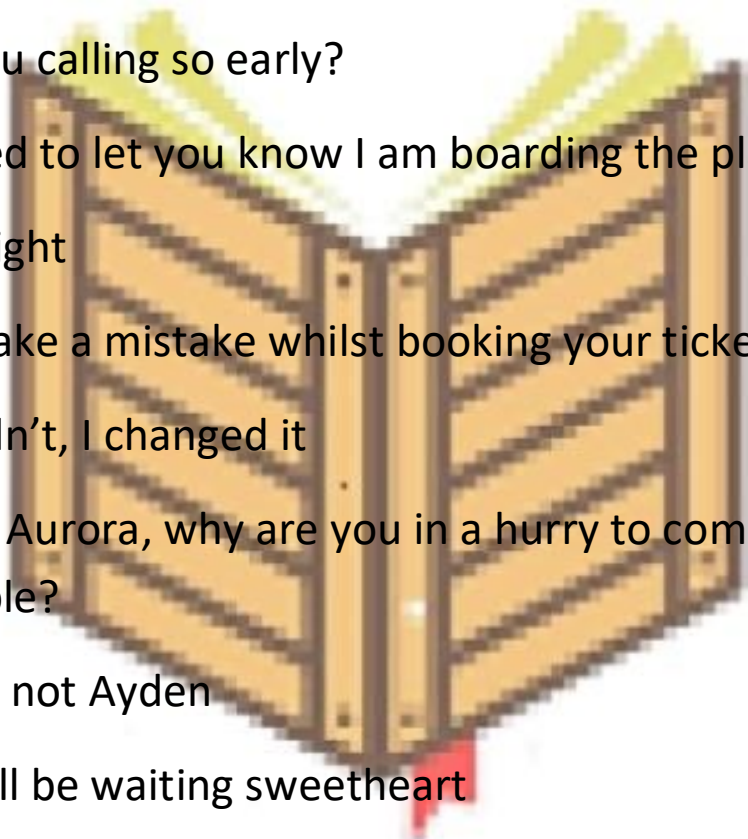
Her: No, I'm not Ayden

Me: Okay, I'll be waiting sweetheart

I hung up

I chuckled softly

Me: This one is playing games with me



NOVELSGURU.COM



YARA

Ma: You did what?

Me: We are ending our marriage. In fact he is letting me go

Ma: Why? Where is this coming from?

Me: Mama

Advertisement

it's only fair we end things. I have needs, I am a woman and I won't get those needs from Ethan

She kept quiet

Me: I will not protest, it was never meant to be

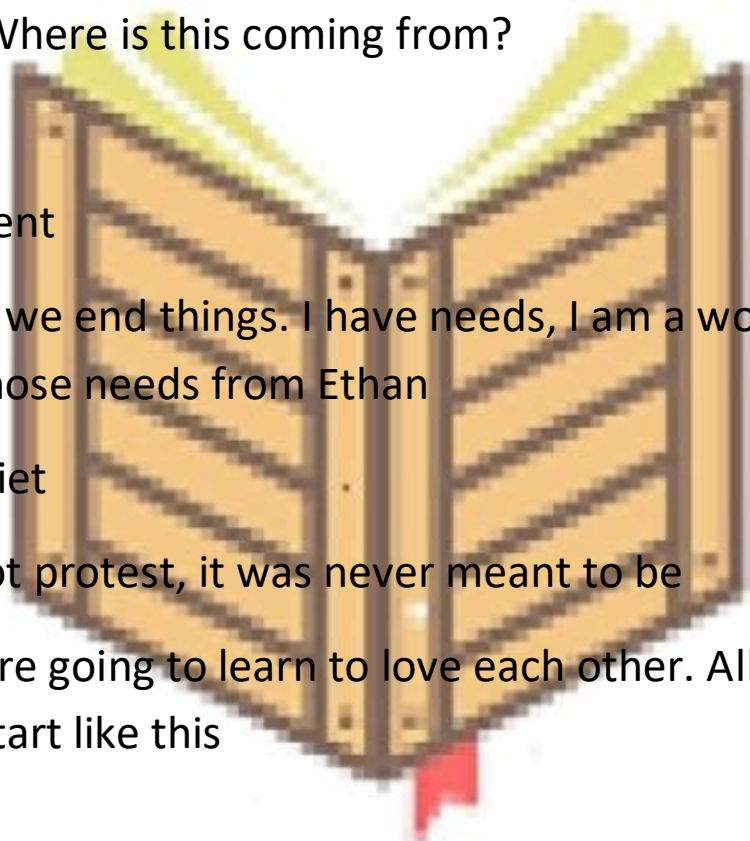
Ma: You were going to learn to love each other. All arranged marriages start like this

I stood up

Me: After how many years? 10? Come on, Ethan is never going to love me and you know it

Ma: Don't you love him?

Me: I thought I did but no mama, I don't. Only one person has Ethan's heart and you know who that is



NOVELSCURU.COM

Ma: Your sister...

Me: Exactly. I am stepping out of the way. If they wanna be together, so be it

Ma: I am going to be a laughingstock. You were only married for two months and it's over already

Me: Really mama? You care about people more than me?

Ma: But at least you are working and you earning...

Me: Unbelievable, that's what you care about?

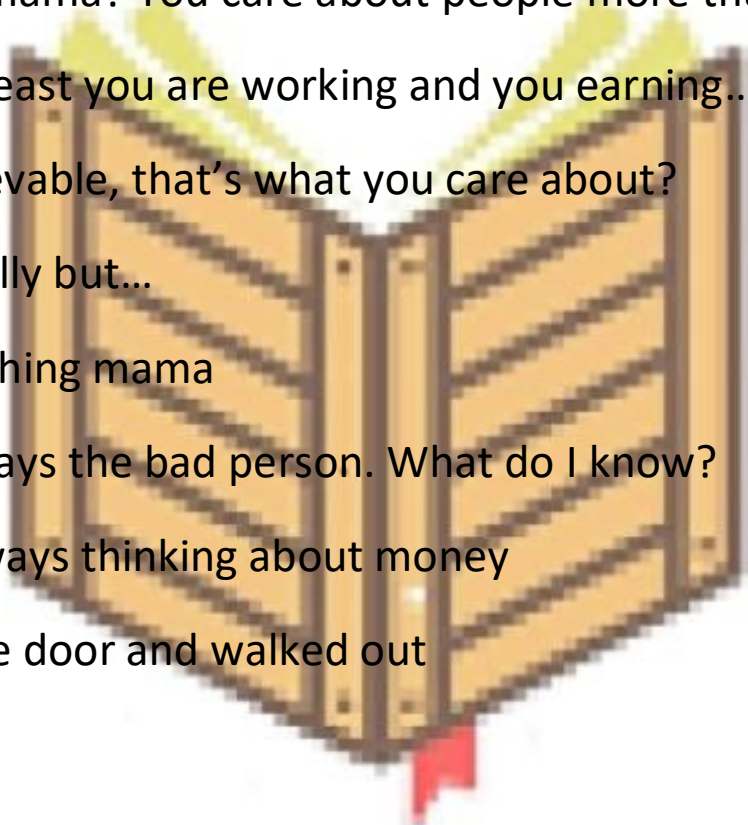
Ma: Not really but...

Me: But nothing mama

Ma: I'm always the bad person. What do I know?

Me: You always thinking about money

I opened the door and walked out



Ayden texted me and told me Aurora will be in SA, I seriously hope she is not here to stir unnecessary fights. Aurora has loose screw and she tend to do things without thinking

I got out of the car and made my way into the restaurant. I sat down and waved at the waiter

Waiter: Morning

Me: Morning

She gave me the menu

Waiter: Can I get you something whilst you go through the menu?

Me: Coffee please

She smiled at me and turned around

Viper made his way to me

Him: Bro

He sat down

Me: Where is Marcos?

Him: He stayed behind with his mother

I have him a slight nod

Me: Aurora is coming back...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It's about time

Me: I guess so

Him: Are you worried Ayden will do something to her now that he knows about the "incident?"

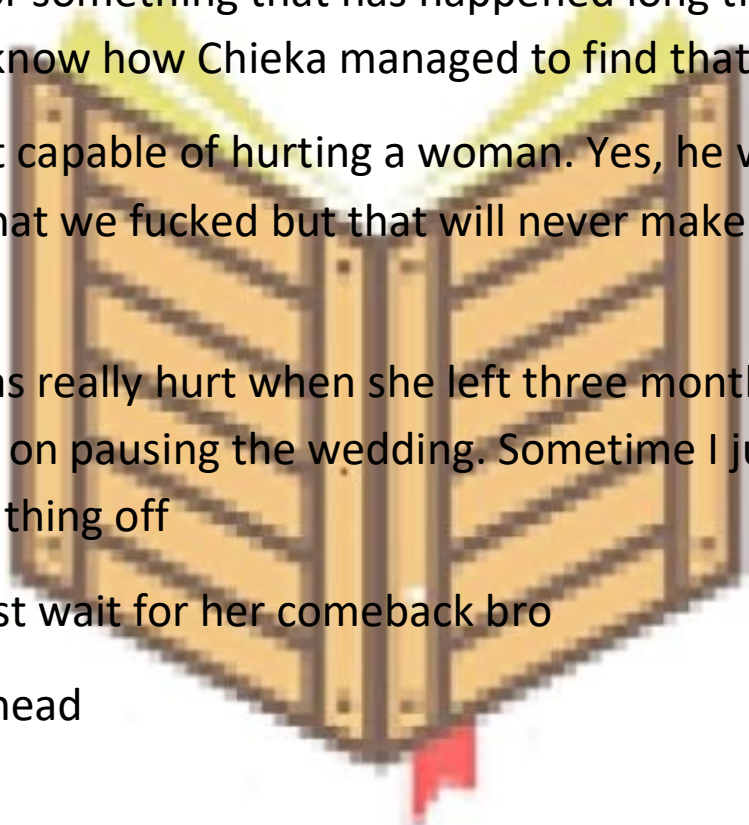
Me: I don't think so besides Ayden can never hurt a woman especially for something that has happened long time ago. i don't even know how Chieka managed to find that out

Ayden is not capable of hurting a woman. Yes, he was upset and angry that we fucked but that will never make his hit a woman

Him: She was really hurt when she left three months ago after they agreed on pausing the wedding. Sometime I just wish they could break thing off

Me: Let's just wait for her comeback bro

I shook my head



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

MIMI

I walked outside and Yara was sitting by herself

Me: Hey

She raised her head

Me: Can I sit?

Her: Yes

I sat next to her

Me: I heard you and mom talking

Her: I'm sure you also heard about Ethan and me

Me: I did. How are you feeling?

She chuckled softly

Her: Kinda relieved

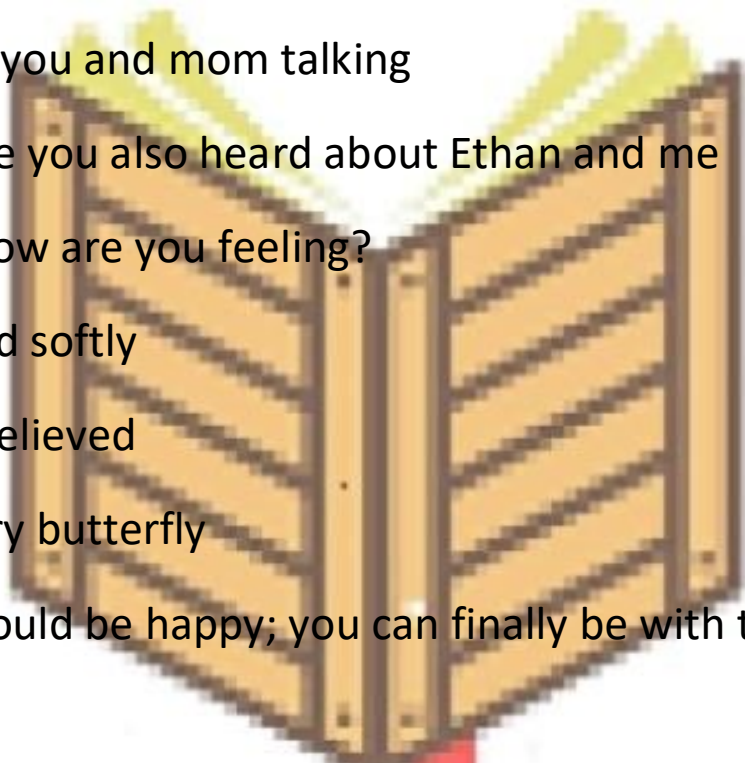
Me: I'm sorry butterfly

Her: You should be happy; you can finally be with the man you love

Me: No, your happiness comes first. Yara you did something for me that I'll never forget. You were ready to face the devil for me and that's why I will put your needs before mine. Now it's not time for me to worm my way into Ethan's heart

Her: I know sister, and I know you two will be together

Me: God will decide that for us... And what's the way forward?



NOVELSCURU.COM

Her: Looking for an apartment and start my own life

I hugged her

Me: Don't be sad, see this as an opportunity to live your life the way you want to

Her: I am not sad and I wish mama could understand

Me: She will, give her time

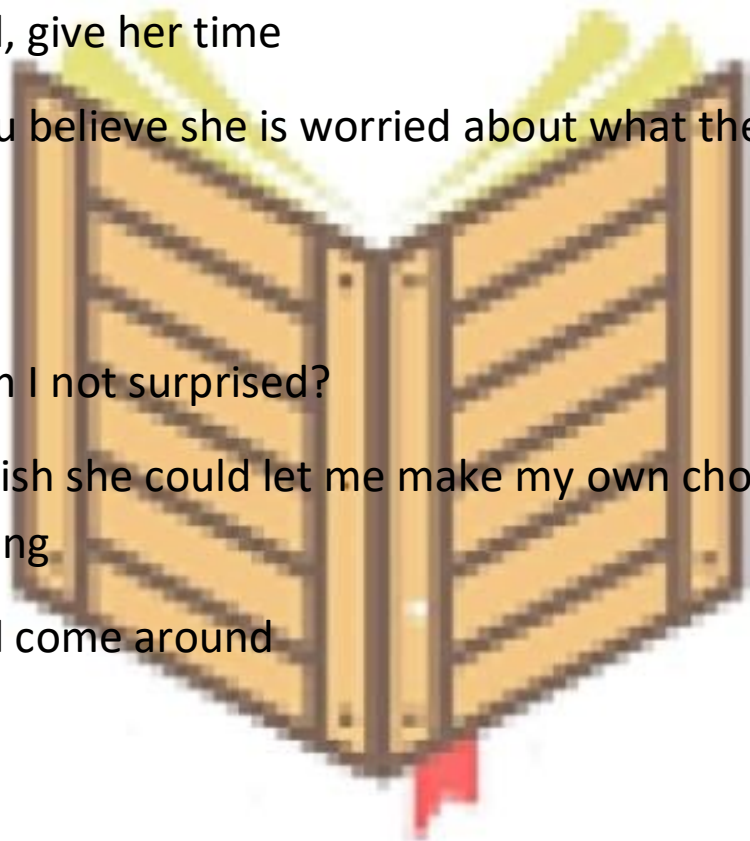
Her: Can you believe she is worried about what the people will say?

I laughed

Me: Why am I not surprised?

Her: I just wish she could let me make my own choices without her interfering

Me: She will come around



To be continued... [NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

ELISA

I stood in the entryway and darted my eyes around

I was in Mzoxlo's house; he called and asked to meet with me

Voice: You can never resist me, I see

I turned around

Me: You startled me Mzo

Him: You in my house after all

He walked up to me

Me: Where's your wife? I don't want to bump into her

Him: What did you expect when you agreed to come here?

Me: Did you give me choice?

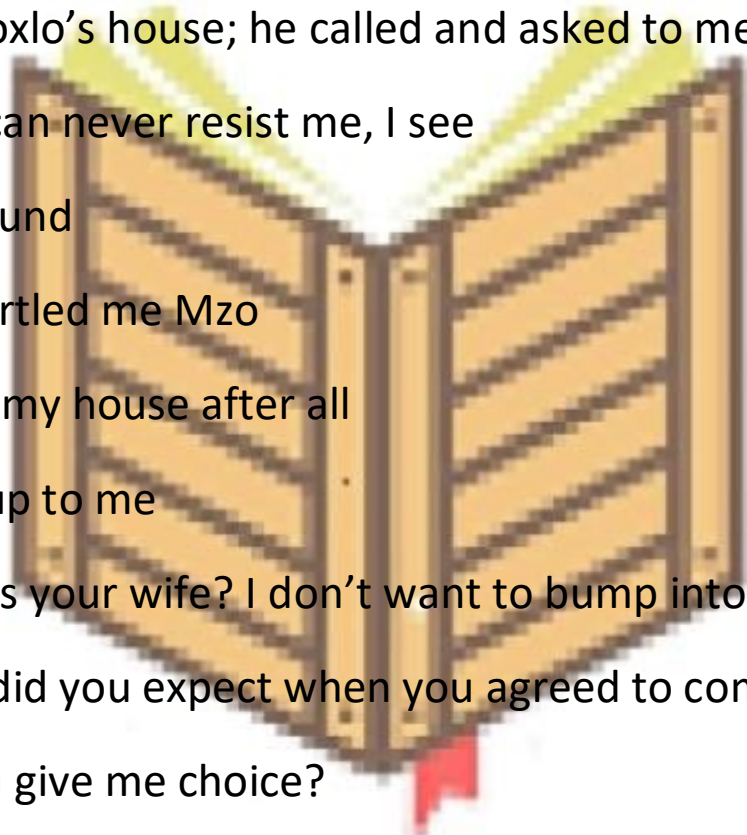
Him: We all have choices honey

He walked inside. I followed him

Him: When am I seeing my daughter?

Me: I don't know, she doesn't want to see you

Him: She what? Elisa, do you think I have time to play?



Me: I didn't say that, you said it yourself

He gave me intimidating look

Him: I won't repeat myself, I hate that

Me: Kill me if you must Mzo but I will not force Yara to come and see you

He walked up to me

Him: Oh, is it?

He took a step close

Him: You are scared of me?

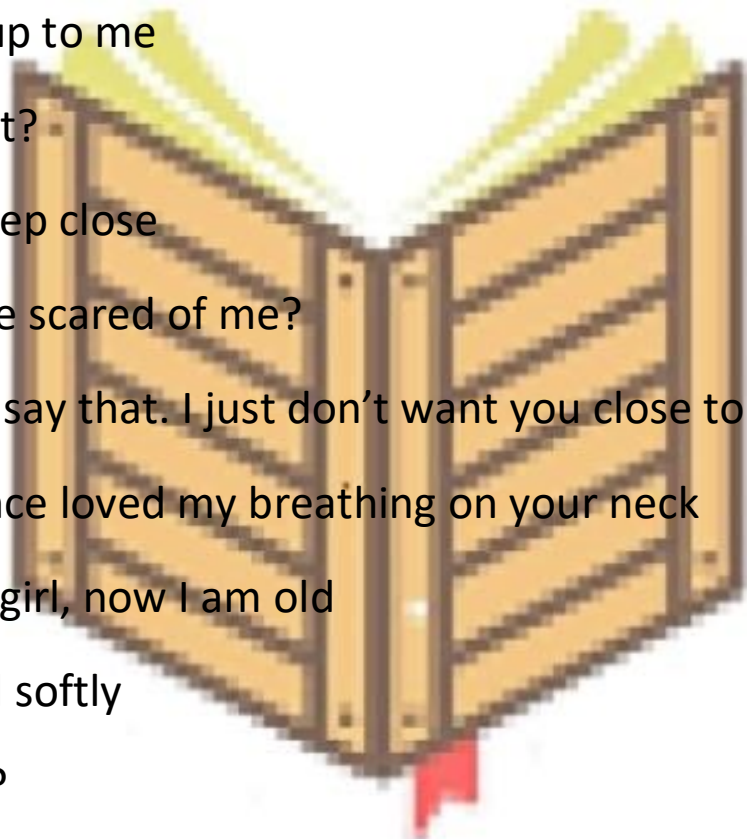
Me: I didn't say that. I just don't want you close to me

Him: You once loved my breathing on your neck

Me: I was a girl, now I am old

He chuckled softly

Him: Really?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA



Nos and I were looking for apartments, so far I've found something I like

Her: Yara make your choice already. I am dead tired

Me: Stop with the drama minion

Her: Do you have any idea how it feels to be on your feet all day?

Me: I don't but I am sure you are going to tell me

Her: You are not funny

I took my phone and capture a picture of the apartment

Me: I think I love this one

Her: You said that to the other one we saw

I rolled my eyes

Her: I am not your boyfriend

I laughed

Her: You know I feel like kissing Ethan right now...

Me: Why?

Her: He did something I never thought he'd do

Me: I knew you'd be the happiest Nos



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Because I was right all along. I want the best for you and I believe now you will fall in love with someone of your choice

Me: After the whole drama with Panther, I'm not ready to fall for any guy

Her: Are you sure?

Me: I am...

Her: Okay, let me keep quiet

My phone rang, it was Panther

Me: Brother

He laughed

Him: Really now?

Me: I can't help it

Him: Whatever dimple, I am calling to invite you for braai later on

Me: Braai? I don't think I'd be able to come, I have test next week and I must study

Nos mouthed "Say yes

Advertisement

please"



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Come on baby sis, we wanna introduce you to some friends. And, besides it's Saturday

Me: We will come...

Him: We?

Me: Yes, I am not showing up alone. I'll come with my partner-in-crime

Him: Is she hot?

Me: Bye big bro (Laughs)

I hung up

PANTHER

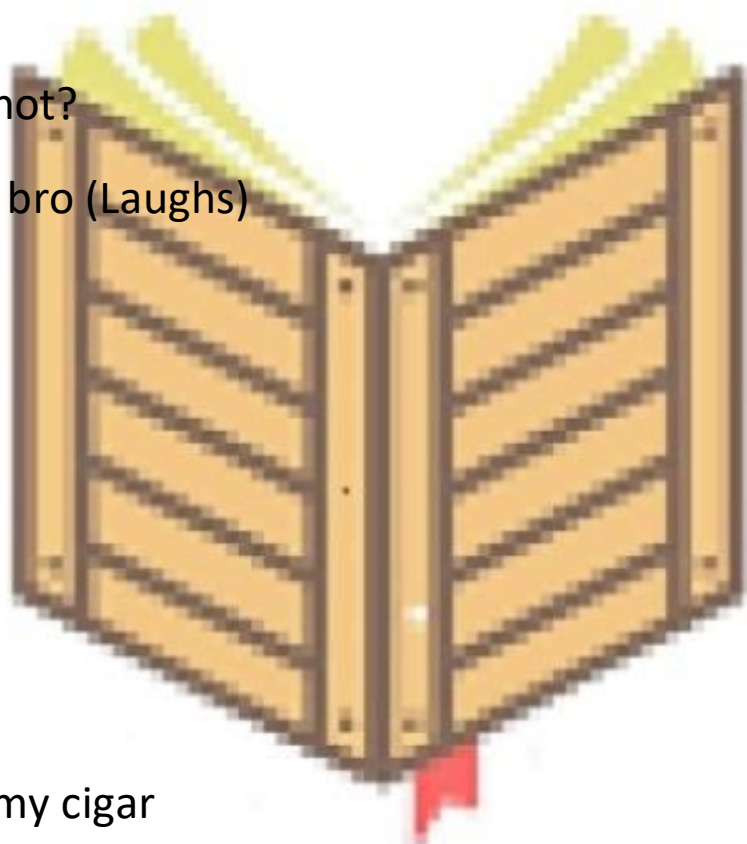
I puffed on my cigar

Me: We on, she said she will come

Viper: Now, that's more like it

Ayden was here but his mind was far

Me: Ayden?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper shook him

Me: Are you fine man?

Ayden: Yes, what were you saying?

Me: Yara agreed...

Ayden: On what man?

Viper: You sure you are good?

He stood up

Ayden: I am

Me: You don't look fine

Ayden: What braai are you guys talking about?

Viper: We want to host Yara, just to welcome her into the family

Ayden: When?

Me: Tonight, you are coming right?

Ayden: I don't know man

NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper: You never turned down an invite

Me: Viper is right

Ayden: We will talk guys

He set his glass on the table and walked out

ELISA

I picked my clothes that were scattered on the floor

Me: I can't believe we did this

Mzo: You still have fire

Me: Your wife can walk in on us and all you care about is my "Fire"

He laughed

Him: Relax, she won't find you. She's on business trip

Me: I hate you

Him: But I tapped that ass

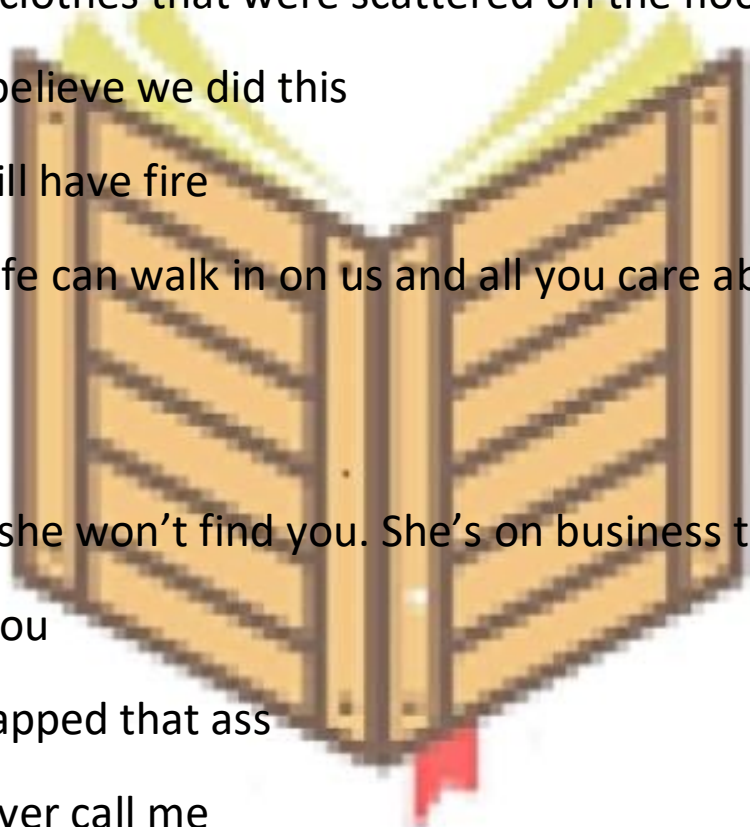
Me: Don't ever call me

Him: You will call me Elisa

ETHAN

I was on the phone with Noah

Him: I'm sorry I couldn't make it bro



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You such a bore Noah, I waited for you

Him: I'll make it up to you

Me: You better

Him: So, when are you going to tell mom about the decision you've taken?

Me: I am still gathering courage

Him: I am proud of you brother

Me: I did what was right

Him: How did the twins take the news?

Me: Planning on telling them tonight

Him: You think they will understand?

Me: I am praying they do

Him: Your kids are considerate, if you break the news nicely to them, they might surprise you

Me: They have to understand



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

30

ETHAN

I checked the time and it was past noon. Alexa and Rotenda were playing in the garden

Me: Hello, can you please come inside for a moment...

Rotenda: But dad...

Me: Please, we need to talk

Alexa: Better be worth it daddy

They ran their way to me

Me: What do you know about worthy? (Laughs)

They followed me inside. We sat on the couch

“We listening” they said in unison

Me: Both of you are aware that aunt Yara has been helping us around since mommy’s death, right?

They nodded

Me: Soon aunt Yara will be leaving the house

Lex: Why?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Tenda: She doesn't love us anymore? She's leaving us like mommy did?

Their voices cracked

Me: No, no! Aunt loves you a lot and she will never stop loving you. She has to move out because it's time. She stayed with us so that we can heal from mom's death but now we have to let her go

Lex: Is it because of me? Please tell her I am sorry, I know sometimes I act cold towards her but that doesn't mean I want her gone

Me: Make space for me

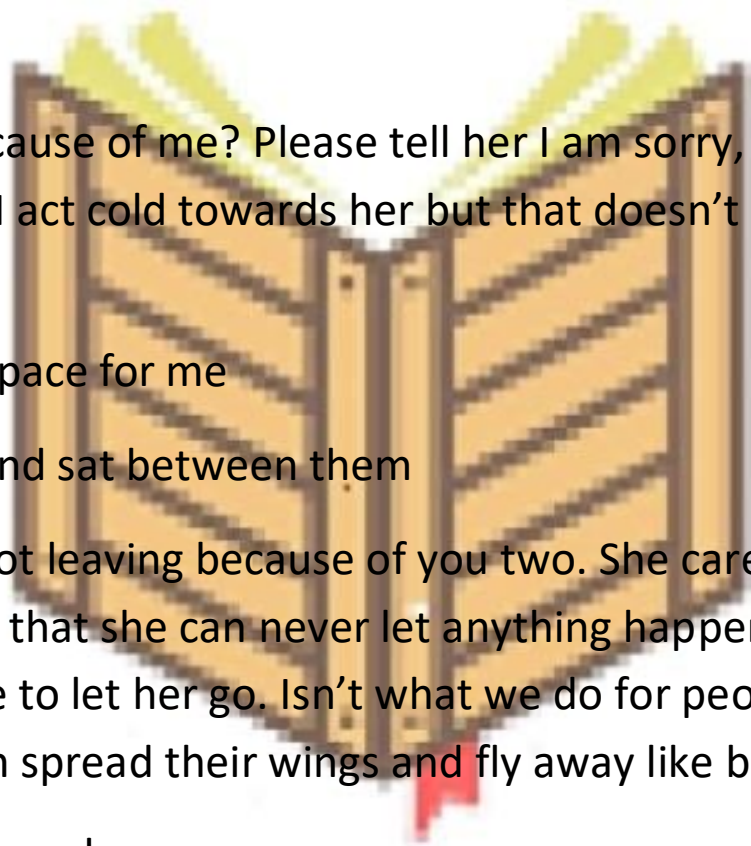
I stood up and sat between them

Me: She's not leaving because of you two. She care about you a lot-so much that she can never let anything happened to you but we have to let her go. Isn't what we do for people we love? We let them spread their wings and fly away like birds?

Tenda: Yes, we do

Me: So, are you allowing aunt Yara to be one of those birds?

"Yes" they said in unison





Me: Leaving the house doesn't mean you won't see her, in her new house there are two bedrooms waiting for you guys. She made sure of that

Lex: Does that mean we can go and visit her?

Me: Yes, you can even spend a week at her place. I'll never stop you

Tenda: Pinky promise?

Me: Pinky promise

We interlocked our fingers

Me: Now it's only the three of us

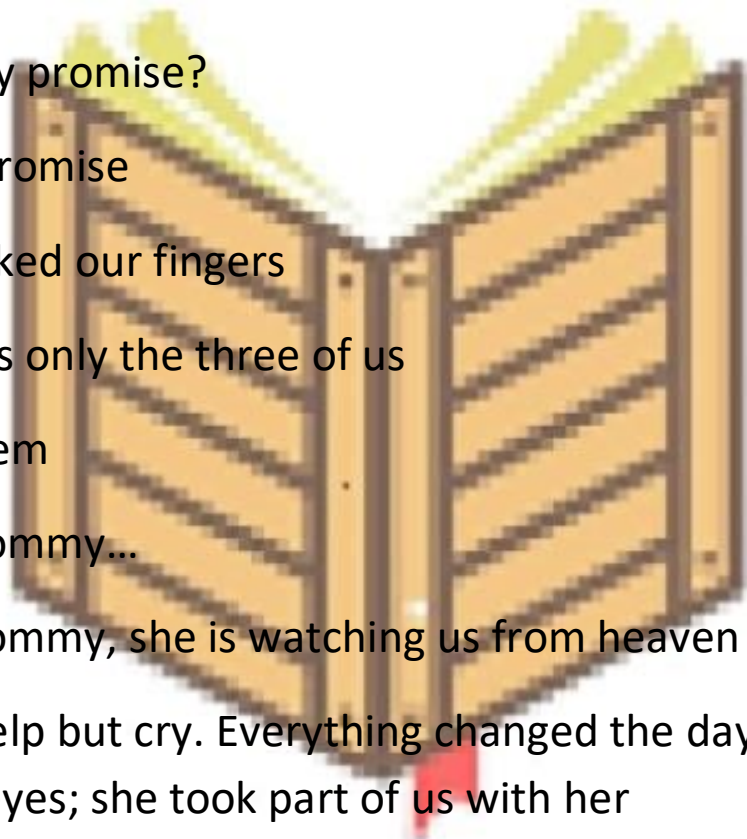
I hugged them

Lex: And mommy...

Me: And mommy, she is watching us from heaven

I couldn't help but cry. Everything changed the day Goldie closed her eyes; she took part of us with her

Me: I'll never leave your side



NOVELSGURU.COM

MIMI

I turned on the TV and pulled a blanket over my shoulders

Buhle: Can I?

Me: You need a boyfriend (Laughs)

Her: Yeah right

I pulled her into the blanket

Her: Where is Ma El?

Me: Have no idea, she since left...

Her: Even an old lady like Ma El is going out .But, look at us. We are stuck indoors

Me: If you looking for someone why don't you go out?

Her: And risk finding another Chieka? Thank you but I'll pass

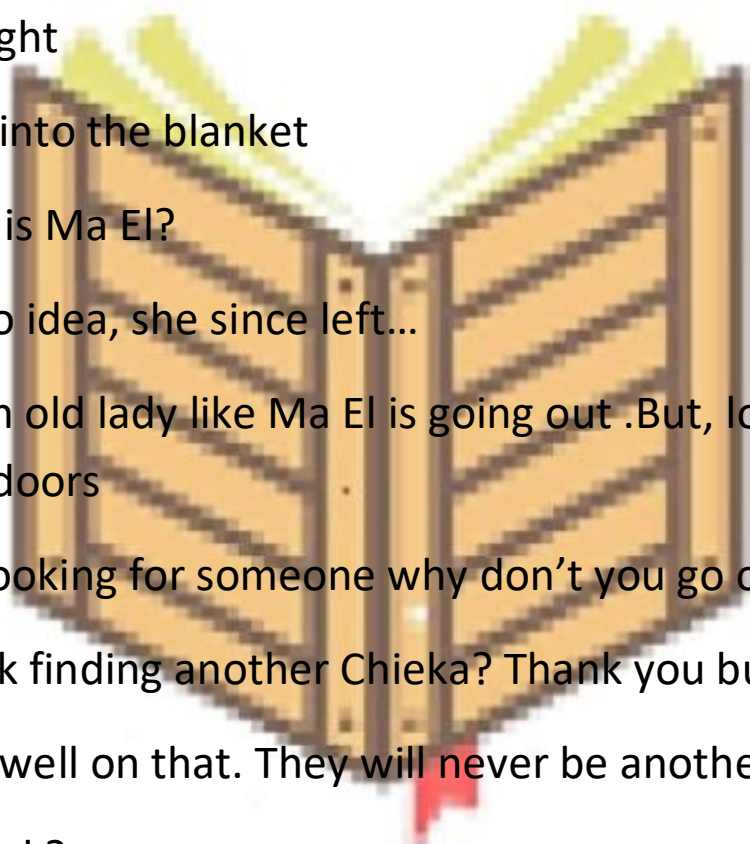
Me: Don't dwell on that. They will never be another Chieka

Her: You think?

Me: I know

Her: You are so matured

Me: Ha-ha learnt from the best



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

AYDEN

I opened my eyes

My beer sat on the table untouched

Ma: Ayden?

I fixed my gaze on her

Ma: What's going on with you?

Me: Nothing Mimsey. I just need to be alone with my thoughts

She shook her head

Ma: You could've fooled me

Me: Do you want me to be honest with you?

She sat next to me

Ma: Go ahead

I sighed

Me: I'd fallen in love Mimsey

She laughed softly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: Of course you are stupid boy

Me: With someone else

She widened her eyes

Ma: What? So you are telling me that you are looking this miserable for some rural girl?

Me: She's not just any girl Mimsey. She's so different from all the girls I've been with not even...

Ma: Just shut up Ayden, shut up! You are not going to embarrass me, okay?

Me: But of course you care only about yourself and status

Ma: Don't annoy me Ayden. I will not let you shame Tshivhase's surname

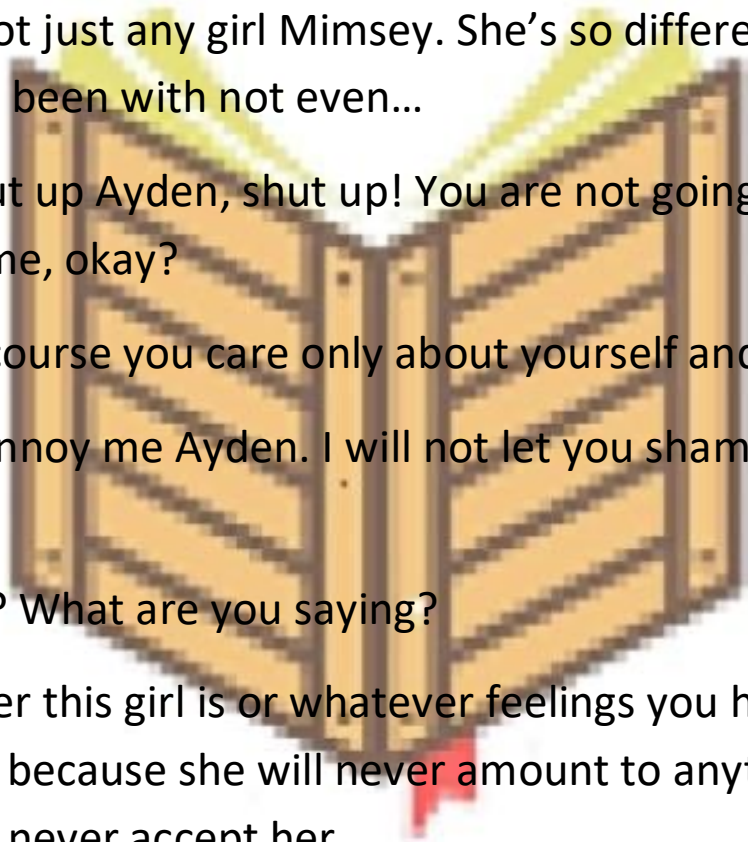
Me: Shame? What are you saying?

Ma: Whoever this girl is or whatever feelings you have for her, I say forget it because she will never amount to anything in my family. I will never accept her

Me: You don't decide my future Mimsey

Ma: What has got into you? You have a fiancée for Pete's sake. So you want to ruin what you've created over the years

Advertisement



NOVELSGURU.COM

huh? Is that what you want?

Me: You talking about the same person who is able to leave her fiancé for months and not give a fuck? It's clear Aurora no longer care about our relationship; it's the end of our story. And I won't stick around because you love her, never!

Ma: Oh is that why you are moving to the next skirt? Ayden Tshivhase listen and listen to me careful, no girl will ever step into this house unless that girl is Aurora

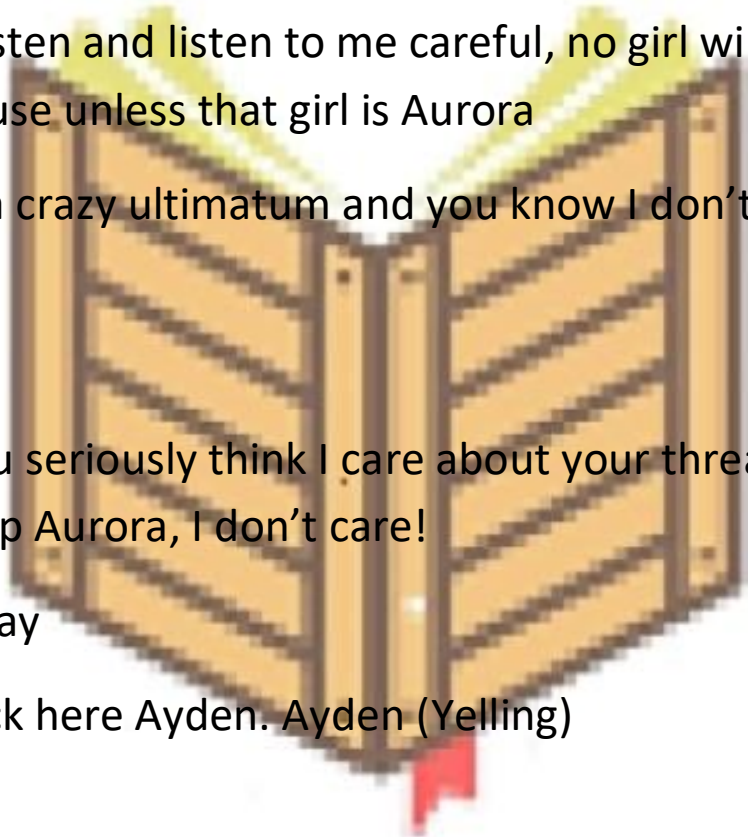
Me: That's a crazy ultimatum and you know I don't how much I hate them

I stood up

Me: And you seriously think I care about your threats? I don't! You can keep Aurora, I don't care!

I walked away

Ma: Get back here Ayden. Ayden (Yelling)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I sat on the edge of the bed

Me: So dad told me he talked with you

Lex: He did

Tenda: And we sad about your departure

Me: Don't be sad, I am only moving out but you guys will always be in my heart

I smiled at them

Lex: We gonna miss you

Me: And I'm gonna miss you too

I kissed their foreheads

Me: I'm just a one call away, anytime of the day

Lex: Don't ever forget about us

Me: Ha I will never forget about you

Tenda: The house will never be the same without you

Me: I wish I could stay but I can't

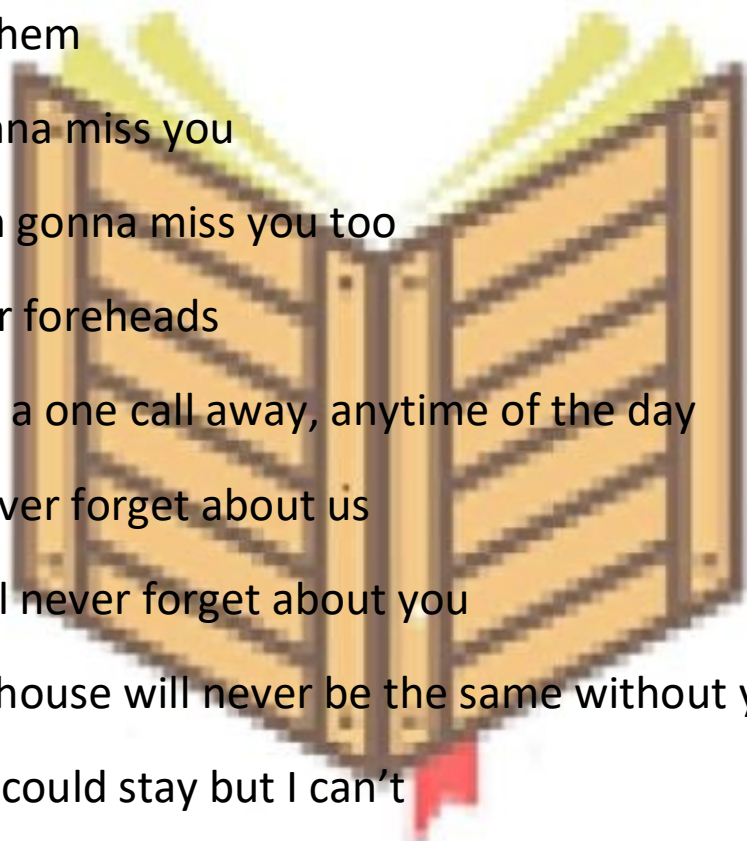
They looked at each other

Lex: We understand

Tenda: And we know you love us

Me: I love you a lot

They smiled at me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Now, let me go and pick a dress for later

Lex: You, stay behind. I am going to help aunt choosing a killer dress

She pointed at Rotenda

Tenda: Who said I can't help

Lex: You are guy, duh!

Me: Maybe he has great taste like us

They laughed and jumped off the bed

ELISA

I sat on the bed

Me: What have I have?

Things were never meant to escalate to that level. I feel so cheap right now, how can I sleep with the man who left me when I needed him the most? Someone's husband at that point. Yara was right, I am selfish and I tend to prove that over and over again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Oh God forgive me

AYDEN

I decided to come and just unwind. I don't know if spending the night with Yara will do me any good but that's a risk I am willing to take. Maybe if I get to know her outside workplace will prepare me for what I'm about to do. I've been trying to avoid what I'm feeling but the more I avoid the feelings the more they threaten to explode

I sat at the table with Viper and some guys

Me: Where is Panther?

Viper: He's on the phone with Old girl

I gave him slight nod

Me: Where is the guest of honour?

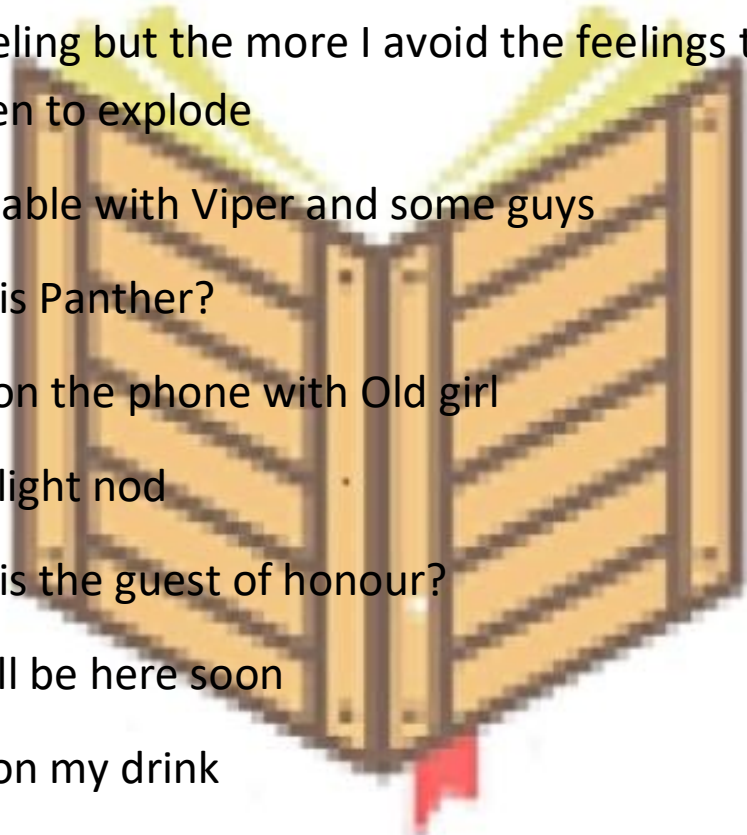
Him: She will be here soon

I took a sip on my drink

Him: I don't know if now it's the right time to talk but I am worried about you Tooth

Me: If it's about earlier I am sorry. I was just in my feelings

When he was about to utter another word his eyes shifted to the entryway. It was Panther with Yara and this other girl but my focus was mainly on Yara. She slowly made her way to the



NOVELSGURU.COM



table, her smile exposed her dimple. I slowly guided my eyes on her features until they reach the table

Panther: And why are you guys not drinking?

The guys laughed

Viper: We were waiting for her

He went and hugged Yara and the friend

Yara: Mr A

She smiled at me

Me: Yara

Yara: Where are my manners, this is my friend Nos. And Nos this is my brother Craig and my boss Ayden

Why me God? Why must I feel the way I do when I see her?

Why can't I become numb to my feelings? I'm not an easy person, but Yara Masia has taken my heart. The feeling might not be mutual, there's no joke in all of this. Yara is the only girl who can tame me, not even Aurora managed to. She's definitely one lady I can marry without thinking twice.

To be continued...

YARA

I don't owe my "father" anything but I owe myself recognition from the ancestors. Because of them, I am willing to give my father an ear. The sooner I'm introduced to them the better, I don't want to experience their wrath

I looked at him

Him: Didn't think you'd come

Me: It was time I give you an ear. The hide and seek game was starting to be boring

He gave me a slight nod

Him: I'm sure your mother has explained everything to you...

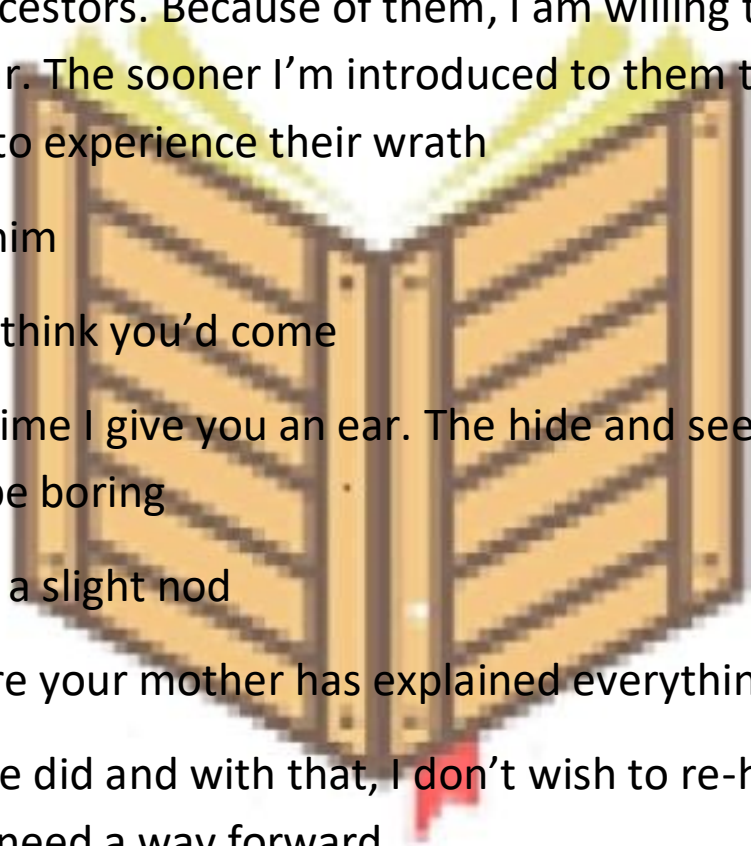
Me: She sure did and with that, I don't wish to re-hear the story. I just need a way forward

Him: You are really my daughter

Me: It's funny you are only realising that after 25 years

Him: I wish I could change the past

Me: Unfortunately you can't



(Silence)

Him: Your brother told me you are married...

Me: Was

Him: You getting a divorce?

Me: Yes. It's an arranged marriage; we decided to end it before one of us gets hurt

Him: I see

ELISA

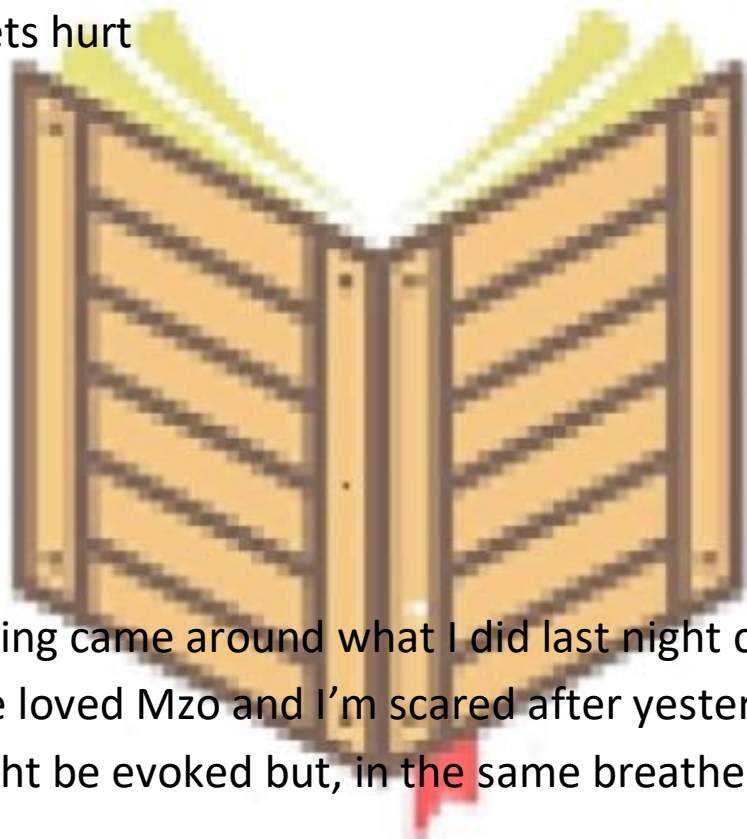
When morning came around what I did last night came back to mind. I once loved Mzo and I'm scared after yesterday my feelings might be evoked but, in the same breathe he has hurt me

Mimi came to my side

Her: You so quiet, is everything fine?

Me: Yes

Her: Where were you yesterday? You disappeared on us



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I went to see someone

Her: Someone? I see

Me: Stop fishing news Mimi

Her: But I am not... I talked with dad

Me: When?

Her: Yesterday. He said Yara called her

Me: She had to, didn't she? Your sister and drama

Her: He will be coming down

Me: He is not welcome here

Her: He's not?

Me: That's what I said and you better tell him that

Her: I wonder if Yara will share the same sentiments with you

Me: A thina ndavha nazwo hezwo Mimi (I don't care about any of that) I've had too much drama to last me and your father's drama is the last thing that I need

NOVELSGURU.COM

AURORA

I know what I'm doing is running straight into the lion's den but it's the least I could do for Ayden. This is something I can't do over the phone; I have to sit him down and try to reason with him. Most people can say I toyed with Ayden but I didn't, love once existed between us but the flame died. Ayden was never committed to our relationship he tried so hard to pretend but I could see through him. If it's not the business then it's the girls he flirts with. We've postponed the wedding three times, whenever it's time for us to get married something always pull us back

He was leaning against the car with his hands buried deep in his pockets. I smiled and dragged my suitcase

Me: Amor

He opened his arms for a hug

Him: Mi amor

We hugged

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: You looking beautiful

Me: Thank you. You not bad yourself (Smiles)

We broke the hug. He pecked my lips

My body can't miss his coldness

ETHAN

I received a call from my mother

Trust Noah to meddle where he is not needed. He ran to my mother and spilled the beans

Ma: When were you going to tell me?

Me: Just know that I was going to tell you mom

Ma: What happened? I thought things between you two were getting better

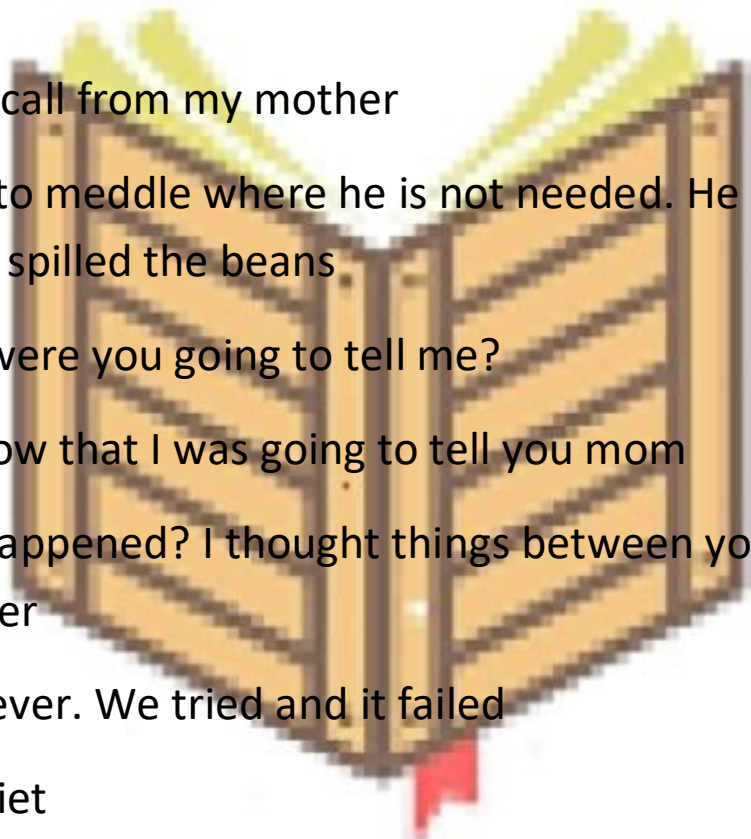
Me: They never. We tried and it failed

She kept quiet

Me: I'd like it if the family can support us like you did when we agreed to get married. Yara and I know what we are doing and we both trust our decision

Ma: There's nothing that we can do/say to change your minds?

Me: Nothing at all



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: And, how did the twins take the news?

Me: Surprisingly well

Advertisement

I was scared for their reaction. They were hurt but I assured them that Yara will forever be part of their lives

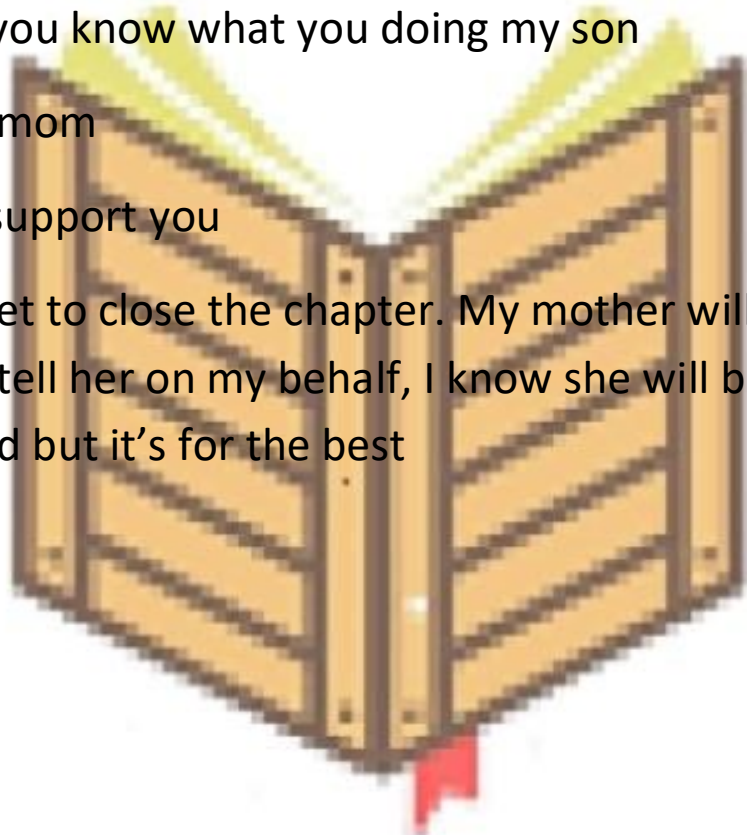
Ma: I hope you know what you doing my son

Me: I know mom

Ma: Then I support you

We finally get to close the chapter. My mother will call Ma Sithole and tell her on my behalf, I know she will be disappointed but it's for the best

AYDEN



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

The drive to the house was long and quiet. Aurora didn't engage too much in any conversation I started. She wasn't her usual self but I am just glad she is here, now she will have to tell it all

She sat down

Her: Where is mom?

Me: She's on her way back

She gave me a slight nod

Me: You good?

Her: I am and you?

Me: I'm eager to know why you rushed back here

Her: Can we not talk about this now?

Me: No Aurora, I don't think I'll be able to wait any longer

Her: Please Ayden

Me: Don't please Ayden me. I need to know what's going on and I suggest you tell me now

Her: The thing is...

(Door slamming) It was my mother

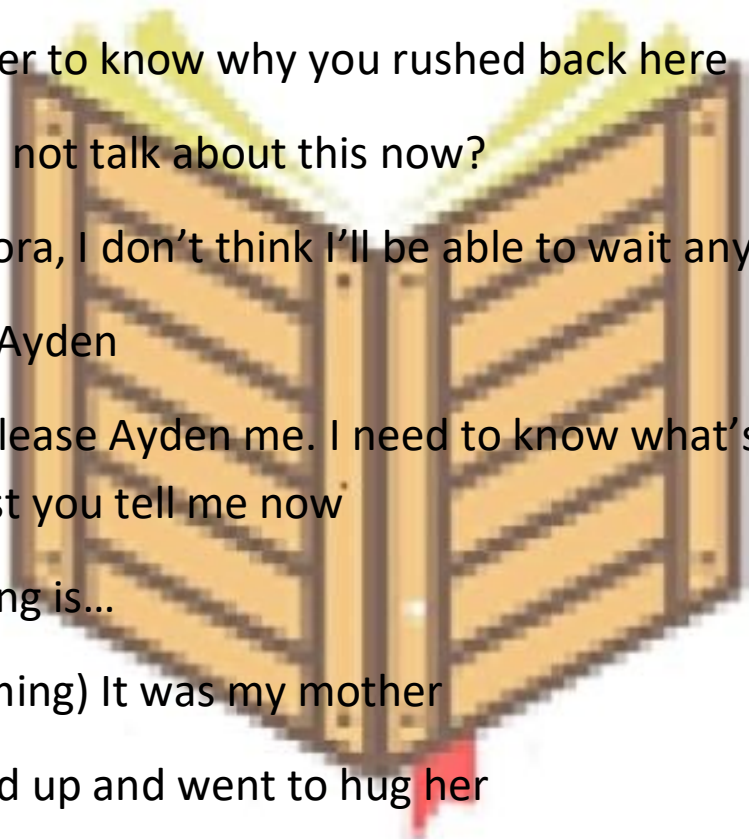
Aurora stood up and went to hug her

Ma: Is this you? Ha you since left us

Her: It's me...

Aurora smiled faintly

Ma: I'm glad you are back, and I'm sure you are not planning on leaving any time soon



NOVELSGURU.COM



She ignored her statement. Now my suspicions are confirmed, she didn't come back for me or our love. She actually came to end things; I've seen this reaction before. She did it before and I took her back but this time it will be forever. Question is, why again?

YARA

Ethan went out with the twins. I called Mimi to come around; Sundays are amazing when they are spent with people you love. Good music and champagne. Hopefully soon I'll be spending most of them in the arms of someone; well it's just a wish

I opened the door for Mimi

Me: Sisters

Her: Am I late? You look like you've already started sipping champagne?

I laughed

Me: After the breakfast date with daddy Mzo? I needed one



NOVELSGURU.COM

We walked into the lounge

Her: Was it that bad?

Me: It wasn't. I actually had a great morning. Seems like I judged him too soon

We sat down

Her: I always tell you to stop judging people. It always backfires

Me: Where is Buhle? I thought she was joining us

Her: Another waiter asked her to stand in for her. She will join us later

Me: We will have time to talk before she comes. So what did mom say about dad?

Her: She is furious. She said he will not set his foot in her yard

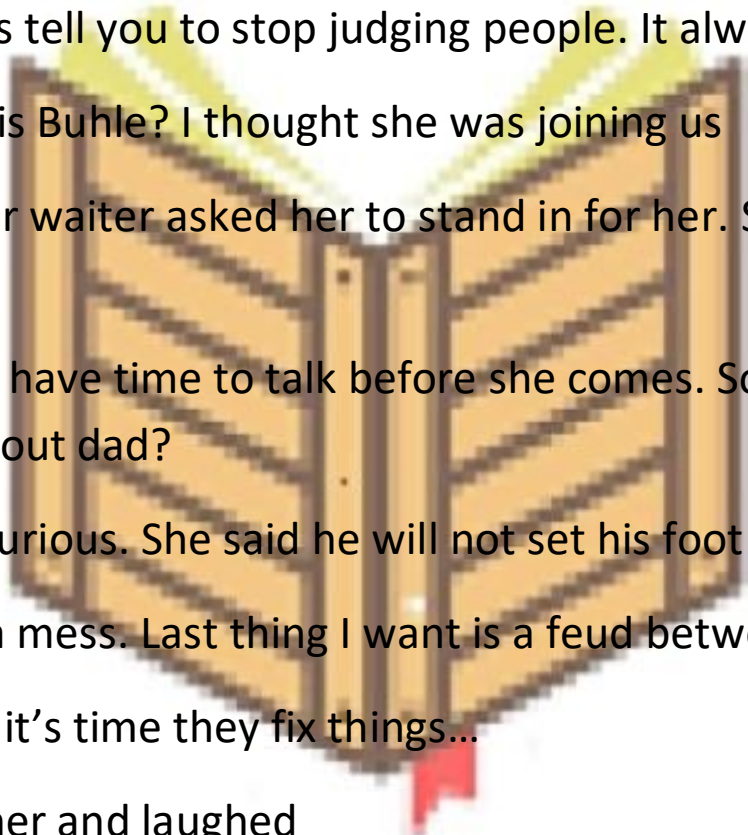
Me: This is a mess. Last thing I want is a feud between them

Her: Maybe it's time they fix things...

I looked at her and laughed

Me: You think they will ever fix things? They are old to rekindle their love and if Mzo is around that might be an epic fail

Her: Mama knows better than starting any flame with Mzo



Me: It'd be very embarrassing Mimi. How am I gonna look into my brother's eyes when I know mom is playing around with their father? She must not even start

Her: Why do I feel like this's the beginning of a huge DISASTER?

I sipped on my drink and laid my back on the couch

ETHAN

Lex: We should do more of this. It's refreshing

Me: Says someone who loves TV

Tenda: This one loves attention daddy. Let's ignore her

Me: For the sake of peace

We laughed

Me: The way you are eating junk food today, I see aunty Yara murdering someone

Tenda: You mean murdering you? (Laughs)

I felt a hand on my shoulder... I turned my head

Me: Zoe Griffins? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

She smiled at me

Her: Ethan

I stood up and hugged her

Me: Wow, it's been long. How have you been?

Her: I'm okay and you?

Me: Well, I am trying

Her: I heard about Goldie. I'm sorry I didn't make it, I really wanted to but you already know. My condolences

Me: Thank you

She greeted the twins

Me: You can join us if you are not in a hurry...

Her: I'd love to

Our fathers were business partners; she's a family friend. We also attended the same Varsity. She moved to America couple of years back

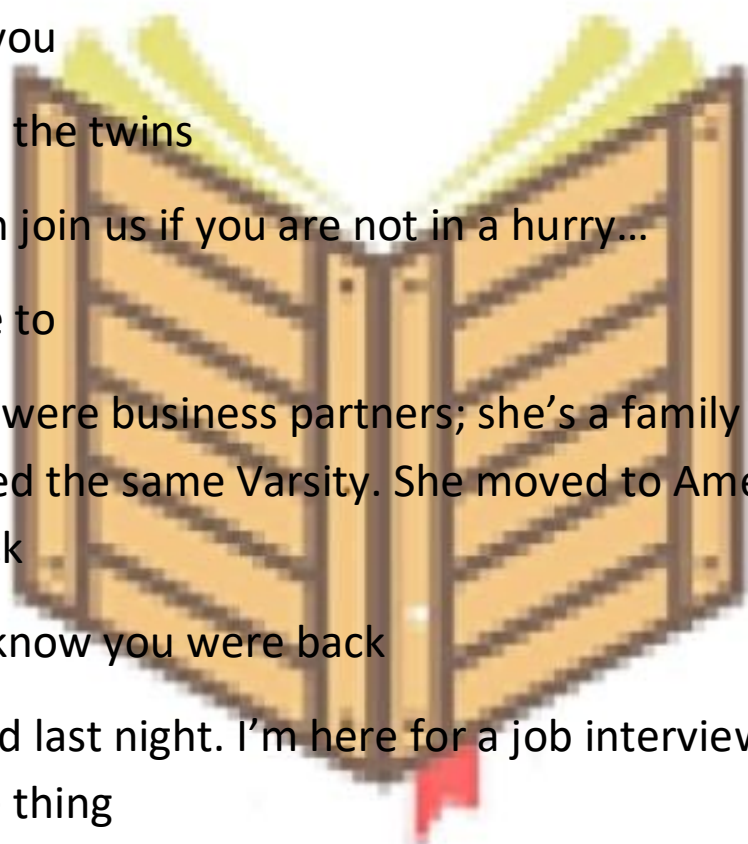
Me: Didn't know you were back

Her: I arrived last night. I'm here for a job interview; it was a short notice thing

Me: You just miss home

She laughed softly

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

AURORA

My mother-in-law was busy going on and on about how much she misses me and how Ayden was miserable without me. I just wanted to shut her up

Her: You should never think about leaving again. These girls are hungry for wealthy guys; they might snatch your fiancé

Me: You don't say

Her: You have no idea. As we speak, Ayden is interested in someone. For all we know, he is cheating on you with her

Me: Huh? What are you saying?

Voice: Mimsey can you just stop?

We turned our heads, Ayden was behind us

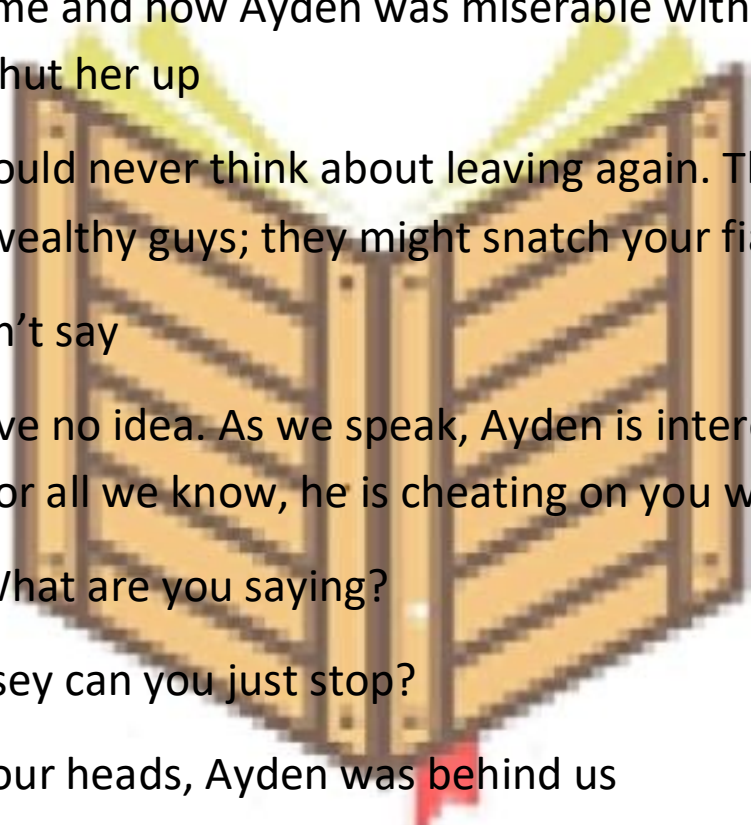
Him: Why are you feeding her with lies?

Her: So you are indirectly calling me a liar?

He walked up to us

Him: Is not your business to tell Aurora

Me: You are not denying it?



Him: Wait up Aurora, if there was something between me and this girl Mimsey is talking about, I'd have told you. Okay?

Her: What do I know anyway?

He looked at me

Him: And you, can we talk now?

Me: Not now Ayden. Maybe later

Him: Suit yourself

He walked away

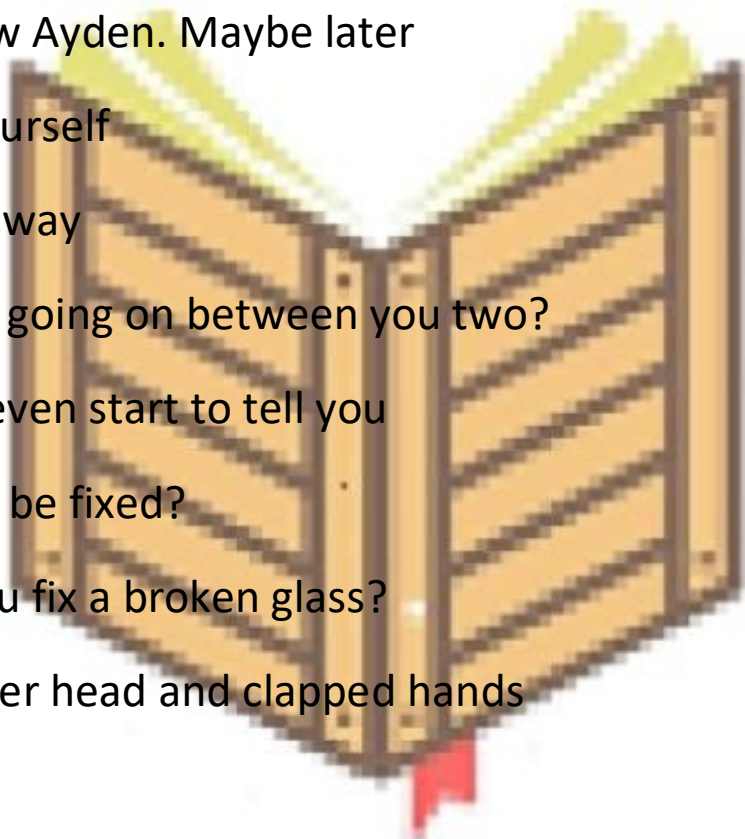
Her: What's going on between you two?

Me: I can't even start to tell you

Her: Can't it be fixed?

Me: Can you fix a broken glass?

She shook her head and clapped hands



MIMI

NOVELSGURU.COM

Buhle and Yara were having time of their lives and so was I. We've already finished two bottles of champagne but we were not that drunk

Buhle: I think we've had enough, don't you think?

Me: You are right

Yara: I can't believe we finished two bottles. And tomorrow I am going to work

We laughed

Me: We should probably get going

Buhle: At least let's finish the movie

(Door closes) Ethan walked in with the twins. After some seconds some white girl followed them

Ethan: It's nice in here (Laughs) is that why you chased me out of the house?

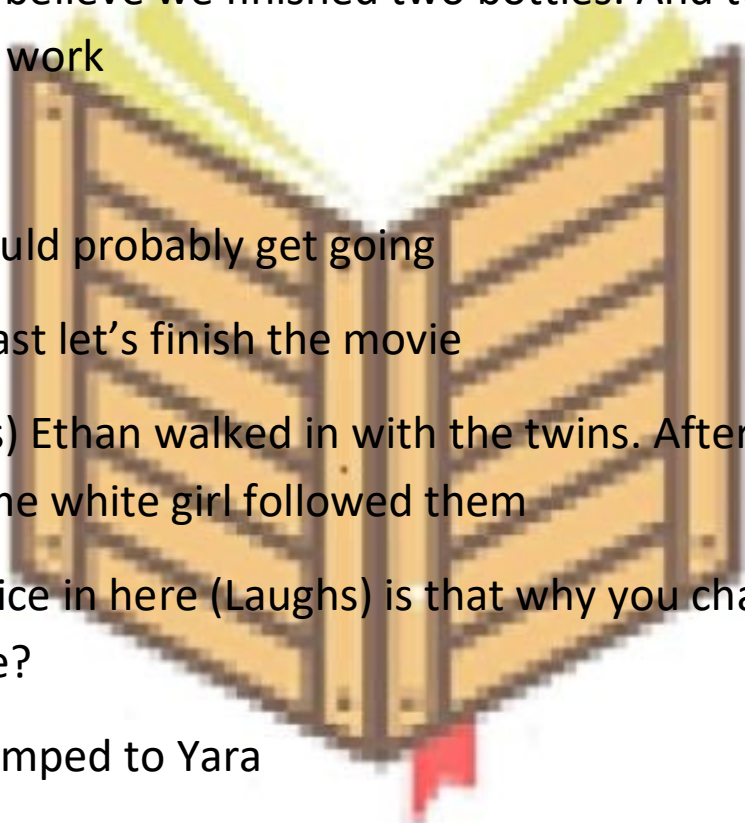
The twins jumped to Yara

Yara: You wanna finish me up? Aunt is so tired

They laughed at her

Ethan introduced us to her. She's beautiful, no lie. I couldn't help but feel jealous

Ethan: And this is Zoe, a very good friend of mine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Yara stood up and hugged her

Yara: It's nice to meet you

Zoe: It's nice to meet you too

I smiled faintly

Me: Buhle, I think we should really go

Ethan: You leaving already?

I stood up

I was burning with feelings. I so wanted to get up and hug him

Me: Yeah. I just remembered I have something to take care of at home

Buhle: You do?

Trust this girl to act foolish. Can't she see I want to get out of this place?

Yara: Do you wanna join us?

Ethan: Zoe wanted to see where I live, she won't be staying

Zoe: Yes, unfortunately I can't stay. But we will surely have a date some other day

Yara: It's a shame

"It's a shame" oh Yara!



NOVELSGURU.COM



Ethan: Tenda go with your sister and take a bath

“Okay dad” they said in unison

AYDEN

Aurora walked out of the bathroom. A towel was resting well on her waist, if it was any other day I'd have grabbed her by the waist and make love to her

Her: I thought you were out

Me: As you can see, you thought wrong

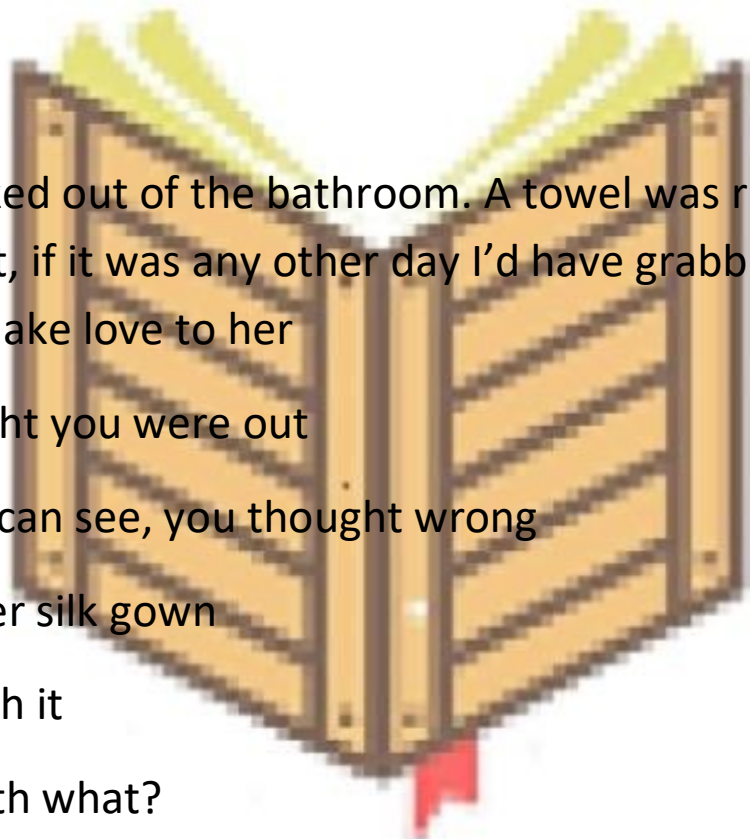
She wore her silk gown

Me: Out with it

Her: Out with what?

Me: I have no time for games. I know what's going on here, what I am waiting for is hearing it from the horse's mouth

She crossed her arms over her chest, wearing the same look on her face. The same look she once gave me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I begged you so many times to come back but you refused and suddenly you wanted to come back

She cleared her throat

Me: Who is he?

Her: Huh?

She didn't expect me to say that but we both know, she is cheating on me

Me: I asked who he is. We both know why you are here Aurora

Advertisement

what I don't understand is why you felt the need to come back and tell me face to face. I just don't

She sat on the bed

Her: Sergio

I chuckled softly

Me: The same bastard you cheated with before. So, you actually made a fool out of me Aurora? Not once, but twice!

It's true what they say, once a cheater always a cheater

Her: It's not how it looks Ayden. I couldn't ignore the love between...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It's not how it looks? You joking, right? It's exactly how it looks!

Her: You know things between us were not so good. Love died and we both didn't want to admit it. I wanted some affection, Sergio was there and one thing led to another...

Me: And you fell in love with him?

She gave me a slight nod

Her: That's not all...

I waited for her to talk

Her: I am... (Clears throat) I am pregnant (Low voice)

I don't know why but a tear dropped. I don't recognize the woman in front of me

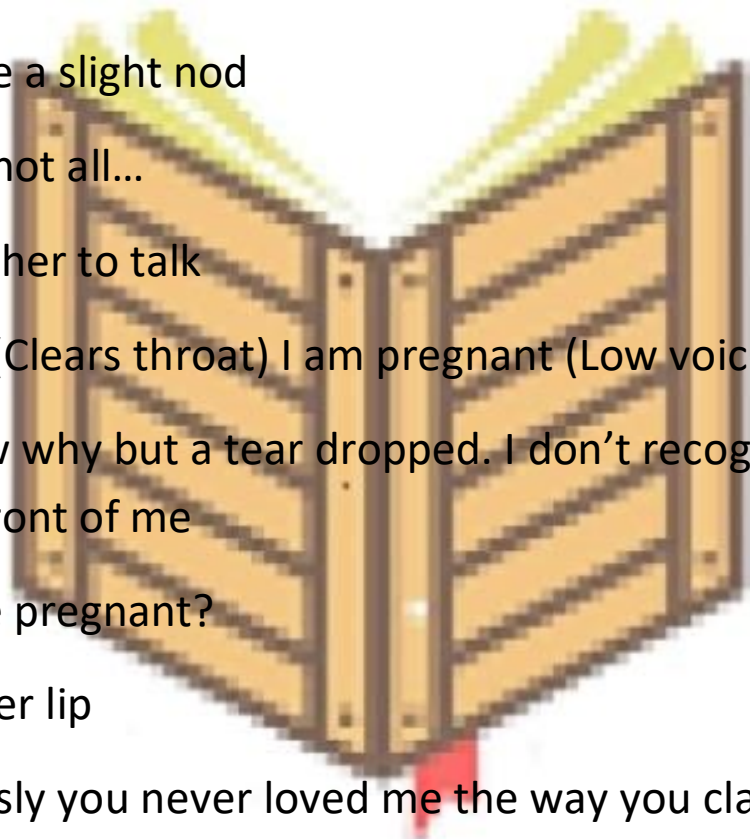
Me: You are pregnant?

I bit my lower lip

Me: Obviously you never loved me the way you claimed. You said you don't want to have kids out of wedlock; you even went as far as aborting my child. But now you are telling me that you are pregnant

Her: Please forgive me Ayden. If I could turn back the time I'd, I swear to you

I stood up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why Aurora? Why didn't you break up with me before you pursue a relationship with him? What was so hard about letting me go without hurting me to this extent? Tell me Aurora, maybe I will understand you

Her: I don't know maybe I thought things between us would work out. I had hope but that hope died. And Sergio was there for me

I stood still and looked at her

Me: Is that my ring on your finger?

Her: No

That no came out as a whisper, to my heart it was a huge blow

Her: When I left three months ago Sergio proposed but I turned down his proposal. When I realised I was pregnant, I then said yes

I kept quiet

She stood up and walked up to me

Her: I didn't want to end things over the phone; I wanted you to listen to my reasons. I loved you Ayden but love wasn't enough to keep us going. There's always something to come between us...

She tried to touch me



NOVELSOURU.COM

Me: Don't! I wanted to be with you, I wanted us to build a family together...

Her: And I wanted that too but it was just a dream

Me: You never loved me, and I was a fool to think you love me

Her: No, that's not true

I gently pushed her

Me: To think I fought with Panther for you. I defended your honour

She looked at me confused

Me: I know about you and him

MIMI



Buhle stared at me without impression

Her: What's wrong?

Me: Huh?

Her: I saw you at Ethan's house. You didn't expect Ethan to show up with Zoe

Me: No, I didn't

She sat next to me

Her: Maybe they are just that "friends". Don't take it to heart

Me: I can't help it. What if he moves on with her?

Her: Then he never loved you

AURORA

Unsure what to say about Panther and me, I kept quiet

What happened between us was a moment of heat. Panther is a very good looking guy, when Ayden introduced him to me I kinda liked him. But, that is not a reason why I fucked him. That night we were both sloshed and Ayden was busy with clients.

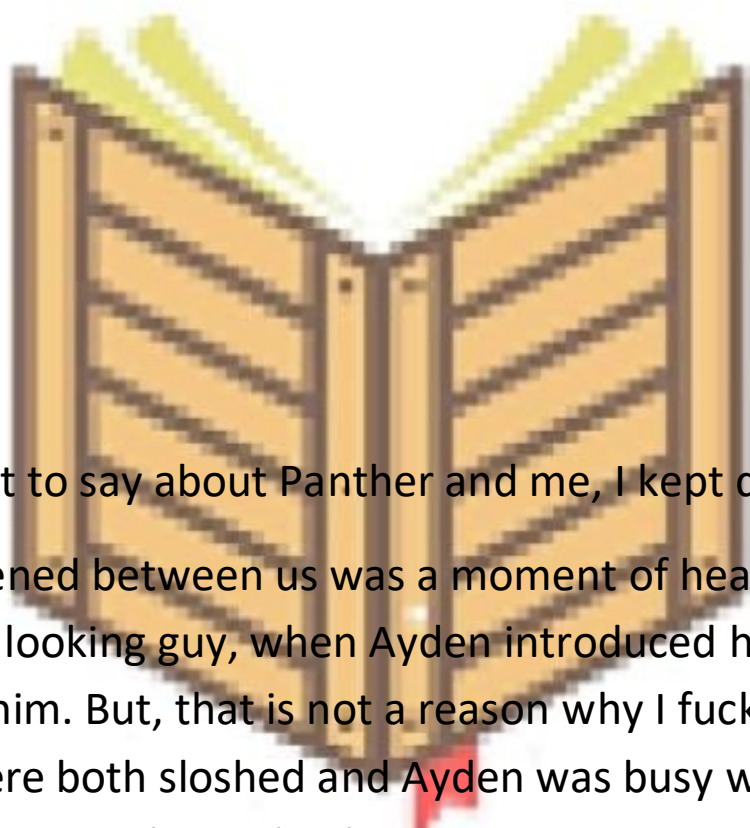
We swore to never let Ayden know

He looked at me blankly

Him: Now you can't talk?

Me: That was a mistake

Him: Everything in your life is a mistake



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shook my head no

Me: I am sorry about Panther

Him: Are you sorry about Sergio?

I looked away

Honestly speaking, I love Sergio maybe more than Ayden. I'd never thought I could love another man who is not Ayden like this

Him: Don't answer me

He grabbed his jacket and walked out

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

33

ETHAN

Yara made her way to the table whilst yawning and rubbing eyes

Me: See what happens when you drink too much?

Her: Don't remind me. Mimi is to blame

She sat down

Her: Where are the rascals?

Me: They should be here any moment

She poured herself tea

Her: Before I forget, I've decided on the apartment that I want. What's left now is to sign the lease and buy few things...

Me: Is it big enough?

Her: Yes, it is

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: If you want you can call me later, I'll drop you off

Her: You sure?



Me: Do you even have to ask? But text me the time, I might forget

Her: I'll do so, and thank you

Me: Stop with that. I promised to look after you and I'll keep on doing that for as long is necessary

I remembered that Mimi was here yesterday and she didn't look good when she left

Me: How's your sister?

Her: She's... fine I guess

Me: Why do I have a feeling that you are hiding something from me?

Her: No, I am not

Me: Yara?

Her: Oh okay, but don't tell her that I told you. She will skin me alive

Me: Out with it

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: She felt insecure with bit of jealous. She was really sad

I looked at her. She laughed

Her: I know it is crazy but Ethan, Mimi loves you and I know that she can't stand any woman that is in your life. She tried

that with me and it nearly broke her heart, and seeing you with Zoe...

Me: She shouldn't feel sad. Our love is obvious; we don't need words to make it concrete

She looked at me and smiled

Her: Does Miss Zoe know that?

AYDEN

I closed the door and made my way to the eating room

Aurora and Mimsey were already settled on the table

Me: Good morning

Mimsey: Ha suka man Ayden, do you know how worried I was about you?

Me: Didn't she tell you that I am fine?

Aurora looked down

Mimsey: Aurora is not my daughter, where were you?

Me: Somewhere I felt needed



NOVELSGURU.COM

Aurora: Ayden can we talk?

Me: Don't even start, please. I want to get ready for work

Mimsey stood up

Mimsey: What's going on with you?

Me: She didn't tell you? Huh, you didn't tell her?

I looked at Aurora

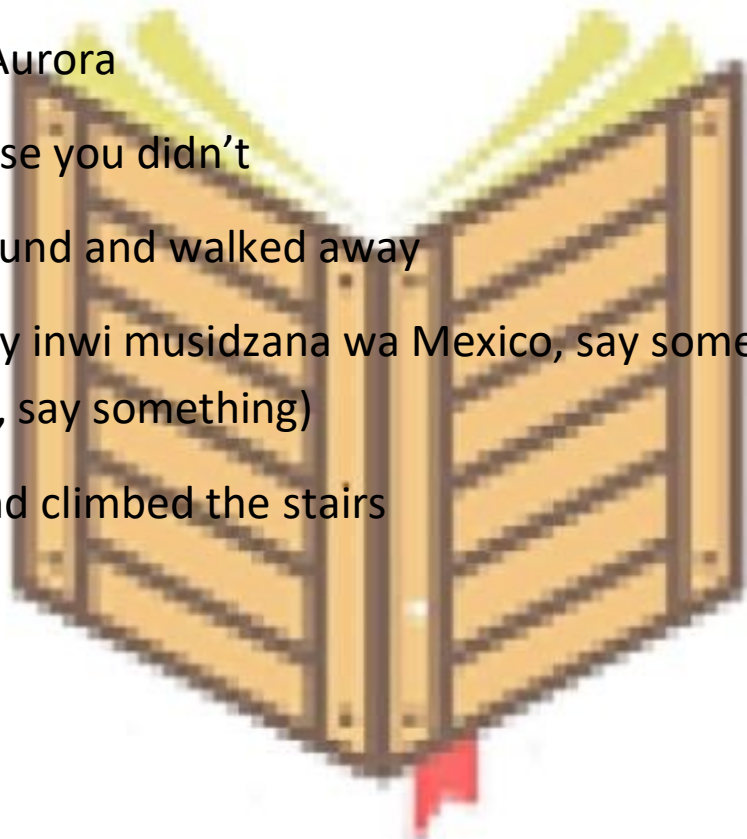
Me: Of course you didn't

I turned around and walked away

Mimsey: Hey inwi musidzana wa Mexico, say something?  
(Mexico girl, say something)

I laughed and climbed the stairs

MIMI



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Yara sent me a message teasing me. I am glad she finds all of this funny; I don't know why I act like a child where Ethan is concerned

Ma: Are you not going to work today?

Me: My shift is starting afternoon

She sat next to me

Me: Care to explain to me what Yara's father was doing here last night?

Ma: Yara's father? You are seeing things

Me: I know that car mama, you can't fool me

Ma: He came to tell me that Yara met with him and he will be taking her to KZN soon

Me: And all of that couldn't be said over the phone?

Ma: What's with the questions Mimi?

Me: Why so defensive?

She stood up

Ma: I will not be questioned in my own house

Me: Stop whatever flame you are thinking of starting because you are going to get burnt. You are too old for games and sneaking around

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ma: You go Oprah Winfrey. Leave me alone

I can see through her

Advertisement

she's playing a dangerous game and Yara will be caught in between. My mother is drama

YARA

I opened Ayden's door and stepped in

He was standing by the window; he kept his gaze outside. A cup was between his hands

Me: Good morning Sir

He kept quiet

Me: Mr A

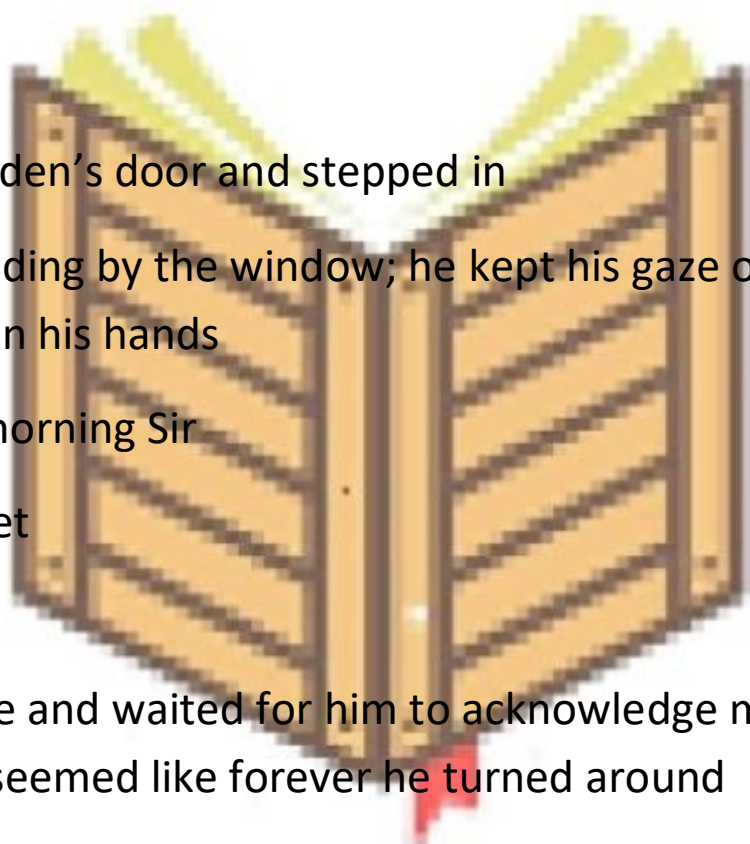
I stood there and waited for him to acknowledge my presence. After what seemed like forever he turned around

Him: Miss Masia, how long have you been standing?

Me: Long enough. I was starting to think you are ignoring me

He moved from the window and made his to me. He set his cup on the table

Me: You look deeply absorbed in thoughts



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You can say that again but let's not talk about that

Me: I came to say good morning and remind you of the meeting that is set for 10:00am

The corner of his mouth curved into a smile. A beautiful smile

Him: To say good morning? Am I not the luckiest man?

Me: You are the luckiest boss

Him: Am I? If you looking for a raise then forget Miss M

Me: And just like that my income raise flew out of the window

Him: Hopefully next time you will be lucky

We laughed

I don't know what happened but next thing we were staring deep into each other's eyes. The feeling was intense I don't want to lie

After some seconds I looked down and cleared my throat

Me: I should probably get back to work

He stepped back **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Yeah, you should. I heard your boss is crazy and arrogant.

We don't him to fire you

Me: You are right. But you forgot one thing, he is cold!

He smiled again

Me: If you need me, I'll...

Him: You'll be in your office

I turned around and walked out

ETHAN

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

My assistant walked in

Ass: Sir Miss Griffins is here to see you

Me: Let her in

She closed the door

I shut the laptop and stood up

(Door opens)

Zoe: Good morning

Me: Morning



NOVELSGURU.COM

We hugged

Her: Sorry to just show up but I was in the neighbourhood

Me: No, it's okay. Please take a seat. Tea or coffee?

Her: Espresso please

I called Portia

Me: Can you please bring us two espressos

Ass: Coming right away...

I hung up

Me: What were you doing around so early in the morning?

I sat next to her

Her: The interview. The building is just down the street

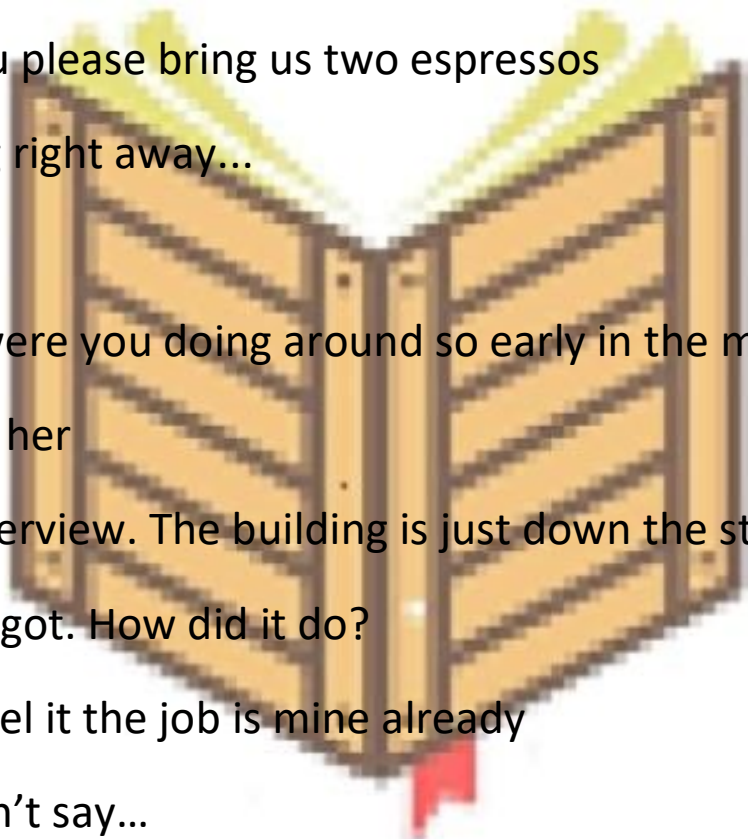
Me: Oh I forgot. How did it do?

Her: I can feel it the job is mine already

Me: You don't say...

Her: You'll be seeing more of me, and you know what that means

Me: I am no longer that 20 year old boy, I have children and they are my number one priority. No more concerts and nights out



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: Who said any of that? I can bring them all in your house

I shook my head and laughed

Me: Tell me, why don't I see the ring on your finger

Her: Ring? What's that?

Me: Ha-ha

Her: Well, I had one but things didn't work. So, we called it off

Me: I'm sorry about that

PANTHER

Aurora sat across me

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: You won't even offer me anything to drink?

Me: So, you came all the way to ask for a drink? Funny Aurora

Her: I wanted to see you before I leave

Me: Ayden told me what happened. Not a nice thing to do, especially to a person you claim to love



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I should have known he would tell you. You are brothers after all

Me: Still I don't know why you are here

She stood up and sat next to me

Her: I wanted to say goodbye

Me: There, goodbye. You can leave now

Her: You won't even give me a goodbye kiss?

Me: You sure you are well in the hand?

She chuckled softly

Her: Relax, I am just joking. On a serious note, can you please look after him?

Me: Ayden is a big boy; he can take care of himself

Her: You know he can't, last time he nearly killed himself

Me: I don't think he would be stupid enough to do it again

Her: But still, I am begging you

This girl is crazy for sure

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

34

YARA

The landlord handed me the contract. I read each and every line to understand, I don't want any surprises. Contracts tend to hide most of them

Ethan: I am green with envy

Me: Listen to you. You have a beautiful house, what is this to yours?

He walked around

Him: You have good taste and I am sure the twins will also love it. It will be your mini paradise

I gave the landlord signed papers

Me: Thank you

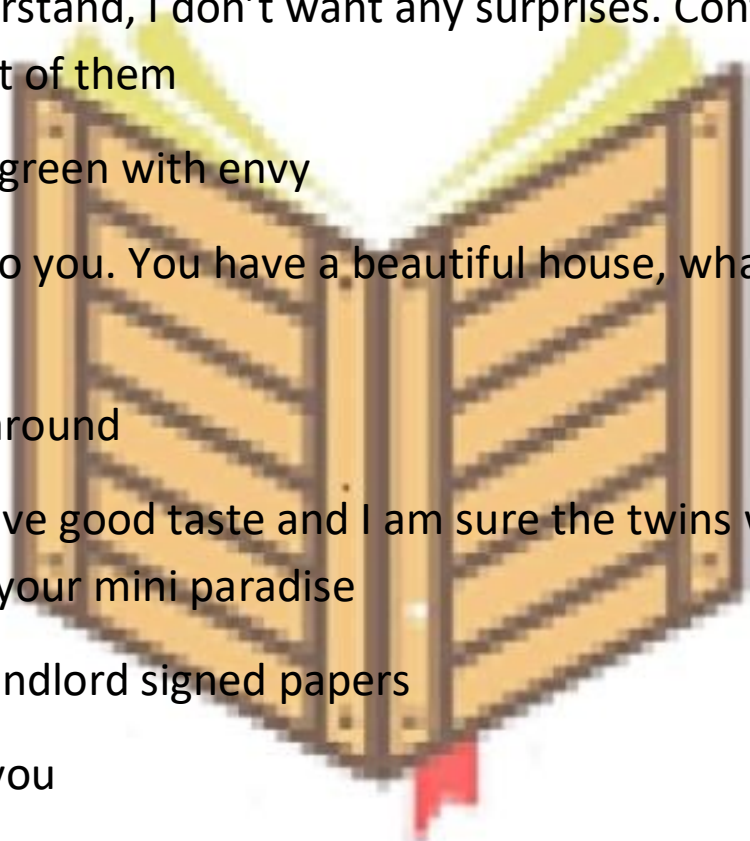
Landlord: Welcome Miss Masia, and enjoy your stay

Me: I plan to do so

She gave me the keys and walked out

I looked at Ethan

Me: I think it's lacking something



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I am even afraid to ask

Me: Whatever! It needs a bit of woman's touch, what do you think?

Him: Women and decorations! (Sighs) this apartment is fine. Like, look around

Me: It's too dull Ethan but give me two days. You will not recognize it

He checked time on his wrist watch

Him: Where are the delivery guys? They should be here already

Me: I will call them. Do you want to give me hand?

Him: I'll think about it (Laughs)

Message alert, it was a message from Mimi. She was informing me that she's outside

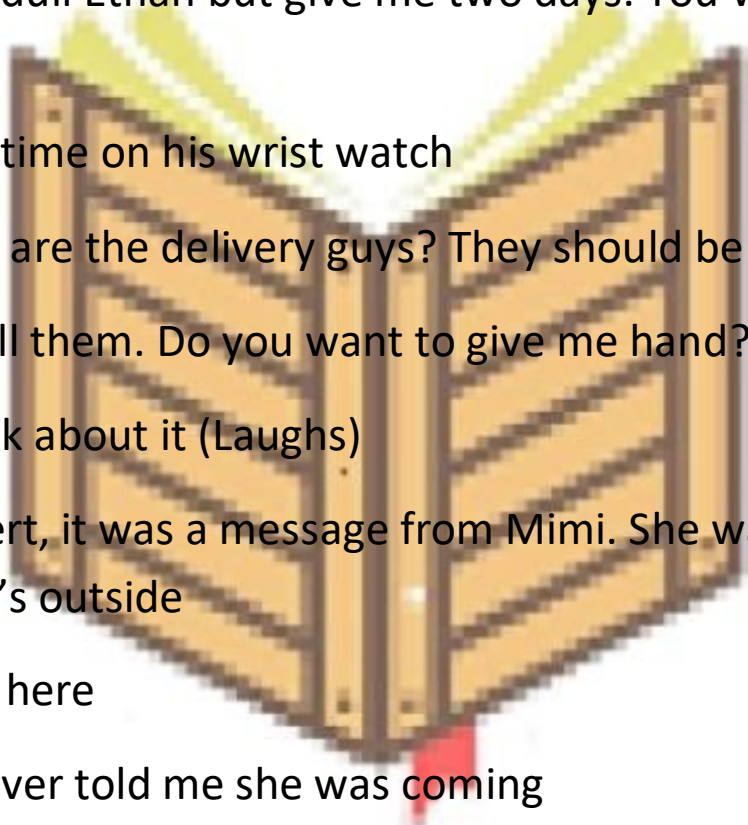
Me: Mimi is here

Him: You never told me she was coming

Me: I also didn't know

Him: You are a bad liar

AURORA



NOVELSGURU.COM

I dragged my suitcase down the staircase

Ayden's mother was watching TV. When she saw me she stood up

Her: You are leaving?

Me: Yes, I'll be staying in the hotel until I leave

Her: Why did you do it Aurora? I still don't understand why you had to cheat on him, you really hurt him

Me: We both know Ayden was no longer in the relationship. It was bound to break. I am sorry for cheating on him but I found love

Her: After so many years of being together? Did he push you to cheat, because if that's then you can try couple's therapy

I didn't tell her that I am pregnant and I will not even bother. Sophia is beyond the word crazy

Me: You out of all people should know. If love is dead is dead...

Her: And, I am fighting for that love. Ayden's father is still part of my life and there's nothing wrong with that

Me: There's nothing to fight for in this case Sophia

Her: Now you are paving way for some rural illiterate girl.  
Aurora!

She threw her hands in the air

ETHAN

I was sitting in the car with Mimi. She kept on stealing glances  
at me

I held her hand and caressed it

Me: Tell me, why are you feeling sad?

Her: I am not

Me: You are lying Mimi

Her: Do you like her? Zoe?

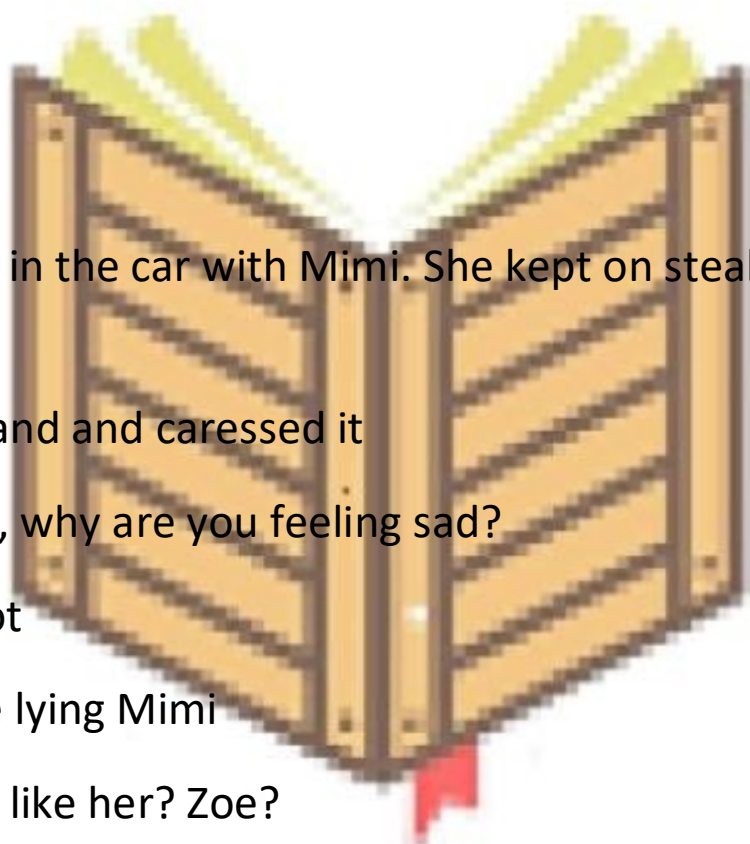
Me: I don't

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Why do our lives have to be this complicated?

Me: Life is complicated. We don't always get the things we  
need in time

She gave me a slight nod



Her: Do you think we will ever be together?

Me: What happened to “I will stop fighting for you, now it’s you who will fight for me?”

She playfully hit my shoulder

Her: I love you and I can’t help myself. The more I said I don’t want you the more I want you. You think I am selfish?

Me: You are not. You are just stupidly in love

(Silence)

Me: I give you my word. They will never be anything romantic between Zoe and me, we come a long way and there was never any indication of love between us. If there’s anyone I am going to give my heart to, that person is going to be you because I love you

I kissed her forehead

Me: Do you trust me?

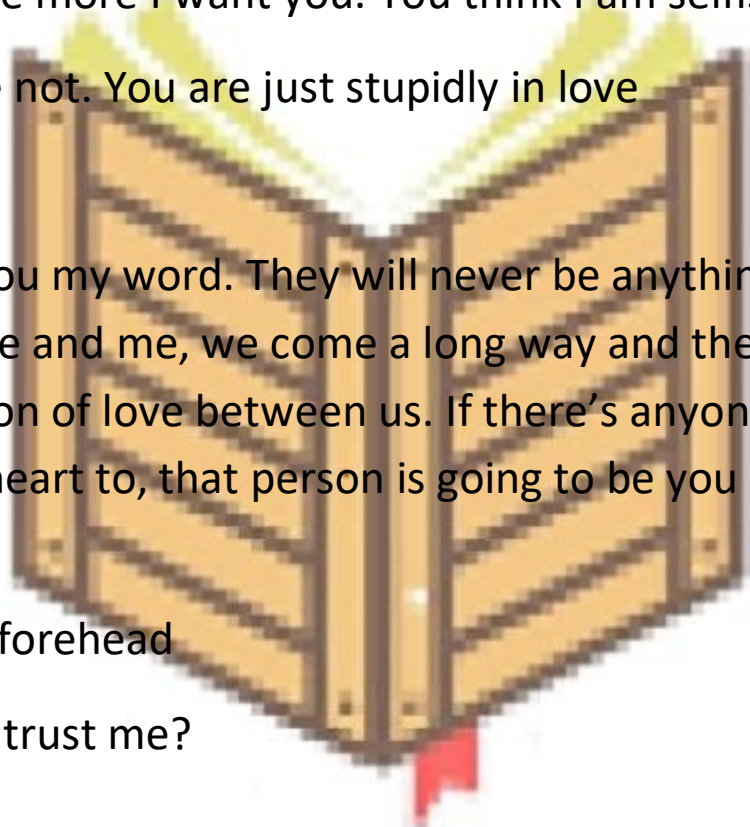
Her: I do

Me: Now, stop acting crazy. It doesn’t suit you

Her: Can I ask something?

Me: Go ahead...

Her: For how long am I suppose to wait for you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't know...

Her: You miss her?

Me: I do and I will always. We shared years and memories but they are just that. I am sure Goldie will also be happy to see me happy with someone else

Her: Even if that someone else is your ex? (Chuckles softly)

Me: Happier...

She cleared her throat

Her: You think the family will be against our relationship?

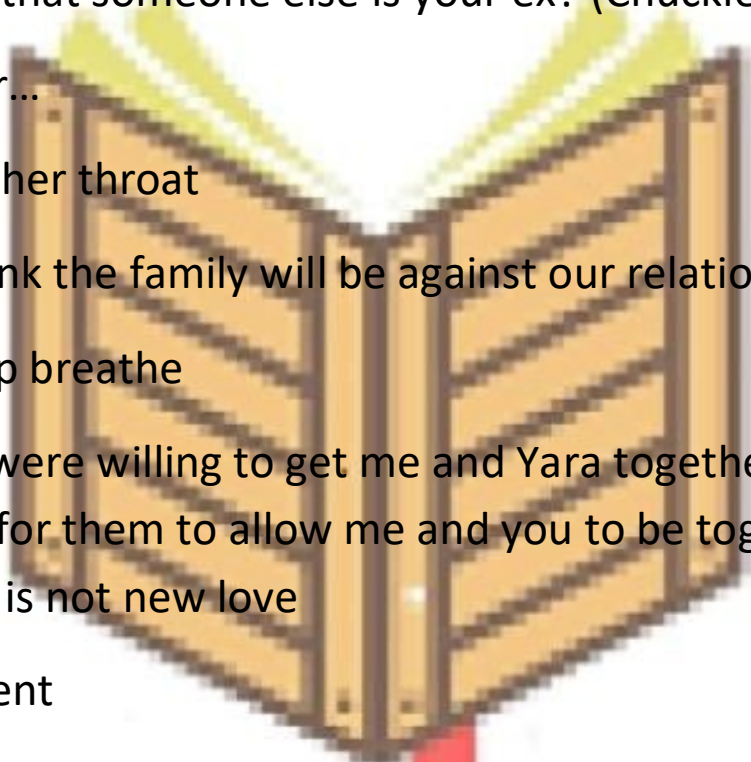
I took a deep breathe

Me: if they were willing to get me and Yara together then it will only be fair for them to allow me and you to be together.

Besides this is not new love

Advertisement

before Goldie you existed and my family is aware about that. When I start a relationship with you, I don't want to feel like I am cheating on the memory our marriage, I want to start a relationship with you when I feel like it's time. Yes, Goldie will forever be part of me but that doesn't mean I am going to bring her into our relationship. That's why I don't want to rush our relationship, I want to open my heart for you and not feel



NOVELSGURU.COM



guilty. But, if you feel like it's too much you can move on. You don't have to wait for me

Her: I lost you before and I don't want to lose you again. So, I will wait for you. As crazy as it sounds but I will wait for you

Me: And trust me, I will never sell you a dream. We are going to rekindle our love soon

Her: I know

Me: I've hurt you before and I'd be a fool to repeat the same mistake

Her: And please tell that to Zoe

I laughed softly

Her: I will batter her, and I am not joking Ethan

Me: I saw your facial expression yesterday; you were ready to punch her

Her: I wanted to, and Yara was busy acting like she knows her

Me: You are insane



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Viper puffed his cigar before he set it down

Me: Where is Panther?

Him: He's handling some business with Old man

Me: Friday is the deadline, is the shipment ready?

Him: Yes, it is. It should reach Congo with no problems

These foreign countries are forever in war but I am not complaining without them there's no income for us. We provide them with firearms and not ask questions

Me: Can I trust you?

He looked at me blankly

Him: What kind of stupid question is that?

Me: Answer me Craig

Him: Of course you can

I gulped down a drink

Me: I am in love with your sister

His eyes widened

Him: Say that one more time



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I love Yara

He kept quiet

Me: Say something

Him: I feel like punching your pretty face man. How can you love my sister?

Me: Because I love her

Him: When did this happen?

Me: I can't really say the exact moment but lately I've been unable to control these feelings. They keep on getting intense and more intense

Him: Panther will kill you (Chuckles softly)

Me: That's where you come in. You'll have to tell him but not now. Yara doesn't even know

Him: When are you planning on telling her?

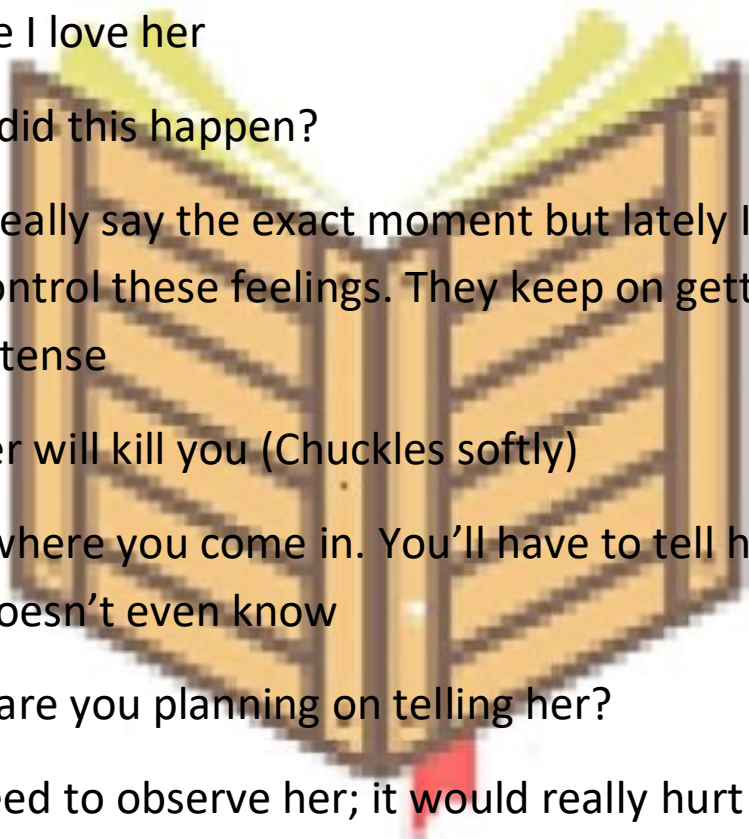
Me: I still need to observe her; it would really hurt to confess my love to her only to find out she doesn't feel the same way

Him: She's a Khumalo and we don't show emotions

Me: Because you are fucked up all of you

He laughed

Him: But bro out of all girls, you chose my sister? Really?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: The heart wants what it wants

Him: This is fucked up

Me: Am I getting any blessings from you?

Him: Yes. But you hurt her; you will have me to deal with

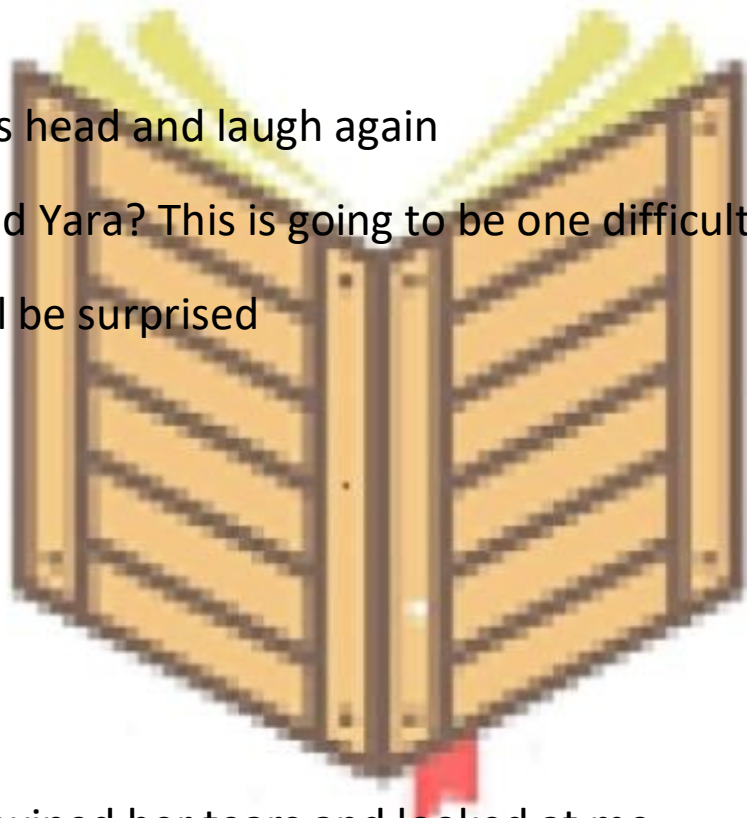
Me: I don't plan to. She's going to be the mother of my children

He shook his head and laugh again

Him: You and Yara? This is going to be one difficult relationship

Me: You will be surprised

PANTHER



My mother wiped her tears and looked at me

Her: Please khulum' nay' Lindokuhle (Talk with him)

Me: Ngizoth'n mama (What will I say?)

Her: I know what I am talking about; your father is cheating on me

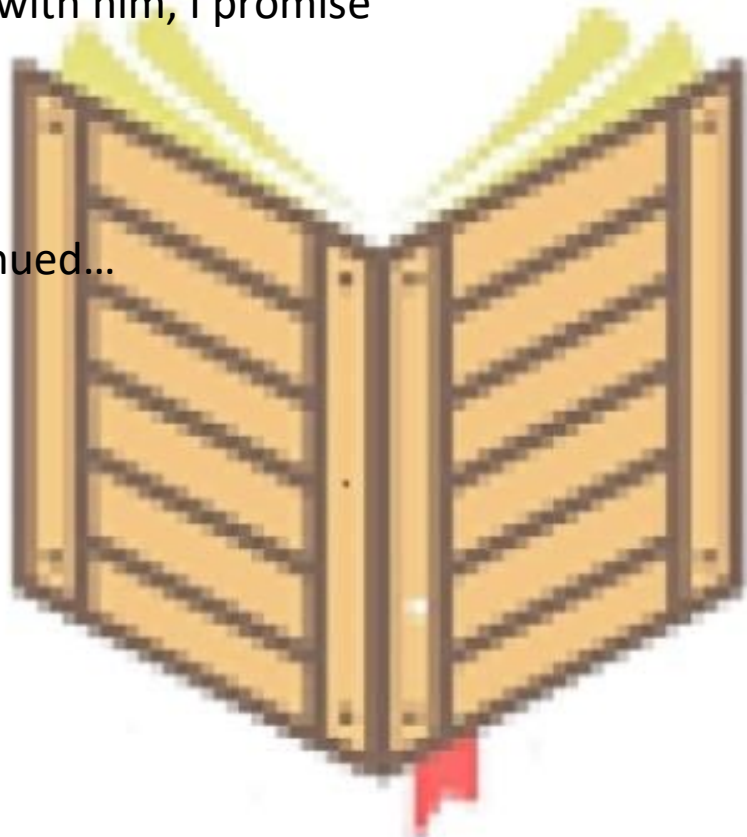
Me: You asking me to do something that is not easy mama. I don't want Khumalo to think I am disrespecting him

Her: Okay Lindokuhle, kulung'le (It's fine)

What is Old man doing? My mother never cried because he is cheating, she last did that with Yara's mother. What's all this?

Me: I'll talk with him, I promise

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

35

ELISA

Mzoxolo ran his finger on my back. It was really ticklish

Me: Stop!

Him: Didn't I say you will call me?

Me: You keep on seducing me

Him: Aren't we too old for this sneaking around?

I turned around

Me: We are

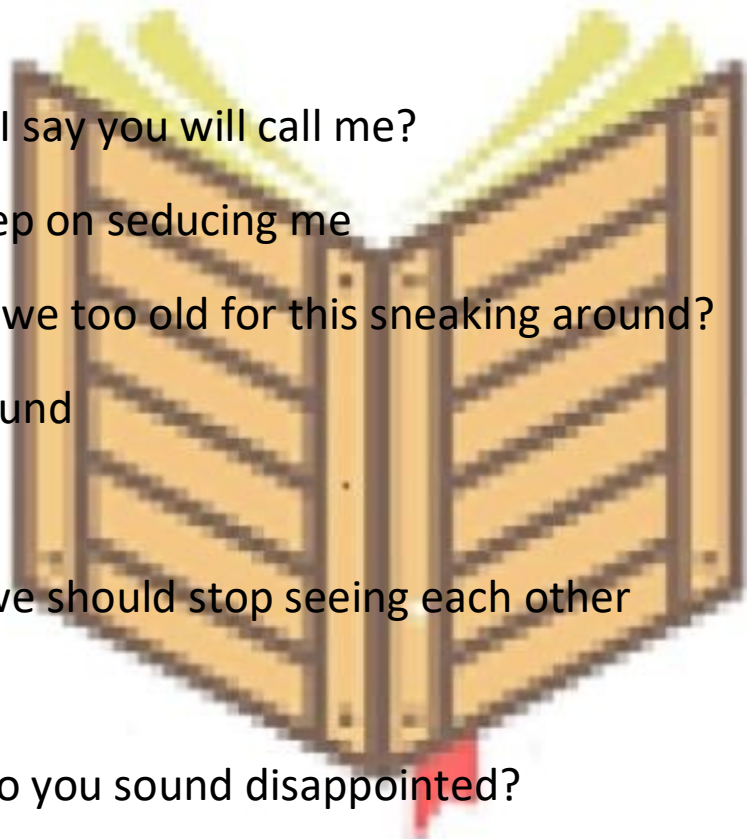
Him: Then we should stop seeing each other

Me: Oh

Him: Why do you sound disappointed?

Me: I just thought maybe we were going to enjoy each other for some time before we call it quits

Him: If we continue lot of people will be hurt Elisa and we don't want that. Yes, it is fun but it ends there. My wife is already suspicious of me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Once a side chick always a side chick. The only difference now is that I am old...

His phone rang

Him: It's my wife, stay still

He cleared his throat

Him: Ma Khumalo... I will be home for dinner... No, I am still sorting out some things; I should be done soon... I love you too

He hung up

Me: Let me not keep you

Him: Not so fast

Me: I don't want to sound like a jealous teenager but your wife is waiting for you Mzoxolo. Let go of my hand



AYDEN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I threw my jacket on the couch. I darted my eyes around the house

Me: I wonder where everyone is

I walked to the fridge. I poured myself some juice

Something caught my attention. Seems like I am not alone in the house... I walked out of the kitchen, I followed the noise and it led me to the guest room. I stood by the door and listened through

Voice 1: Aaaah! Oh.... Yes baby!

Voice 2: You like it? Huh

Voice 1: Yes daddy

The other voice is Amelia's. I opened the door; she was having sex with a guy who is old enough to be her father

Me: Amelia! Wtf?

Her: Brother...

She covered herself with sheet

Me: What are you doing Amelia? Under Mimsey's house?

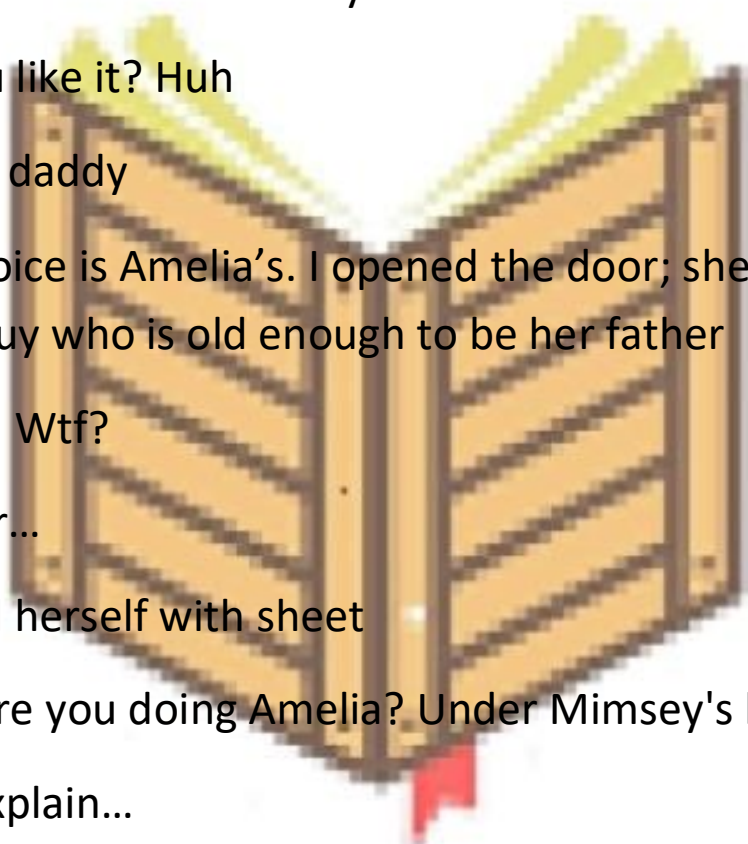
Her: I can explain...

Me: Explain my foot. And, you Mr Pot belly you still here? Do you want me to blow your brains?

He jumped off the bed and picked his clothes

Me: Get out before I shoot you between the arse

He took his clothes and covers his crotch and ass. He ran out



NOVELSGURU.COM

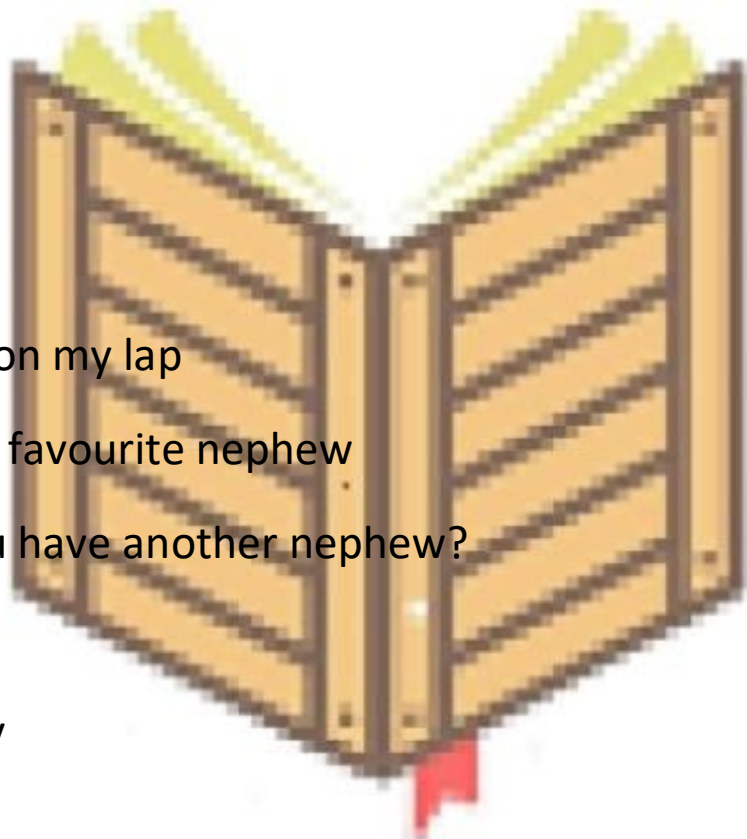


Me: As for you, I can't even look at you

Her: Please don't tell mom...

Me: Wow I am surprised she doesn't know. Get dressed and pick the condoms that are on the floor

PANTHER



Marcos sat on my lap

Me: Uncle's favourite nephew

Him: Do you have another nephew?

Me: No

Him: Exactly

I laughed

His mother called him... Viper sat across me

Him: What brings you here so late?

Me: We got a problem

Him: Talk

Me: Old man is cheating

Him: Our old man?

I nodded

Him: With whom?

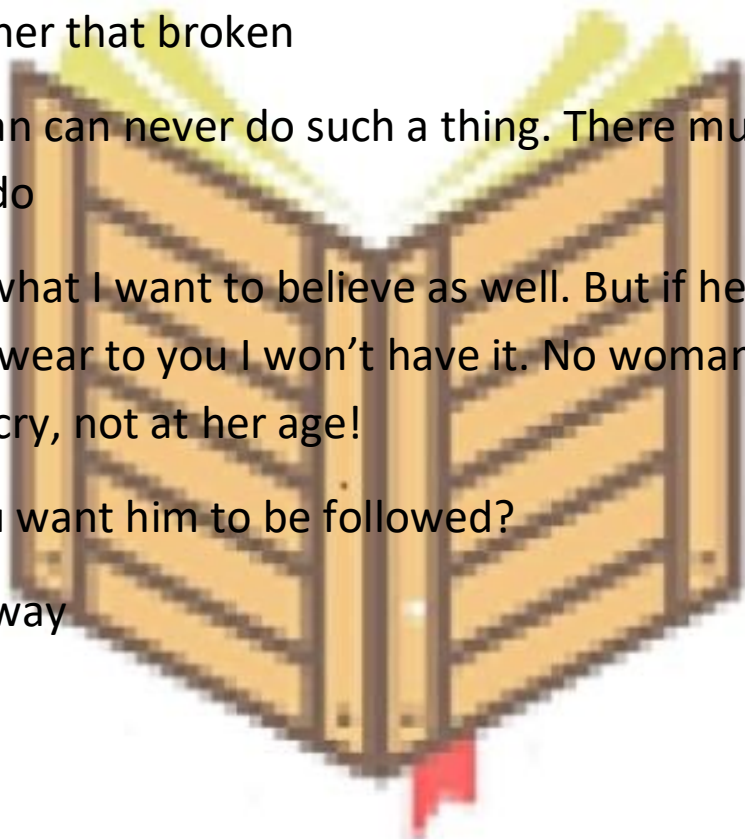
Me: Mom doesn't know yet. She cried out to me today bro, I've never seen her that broken

Him: Old man can never do such a thing. There must be a mistake Lindo

Me: That's what I want to believe as well. But if he is really cheating, I swear to you I won't have it. No woman will make my mother cry, not at her age!

Him: Do you want him to be followed?

Me: Right away



YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I've been trying to call my mother but she isn't taking my calls.  
So, I rang Mimi

Her: Butterfly

Me: Sisters, where is mom? I've been trying to reach her

She kept quiet

Me: Mimi?

Her: She's out

Me: Out with whom?

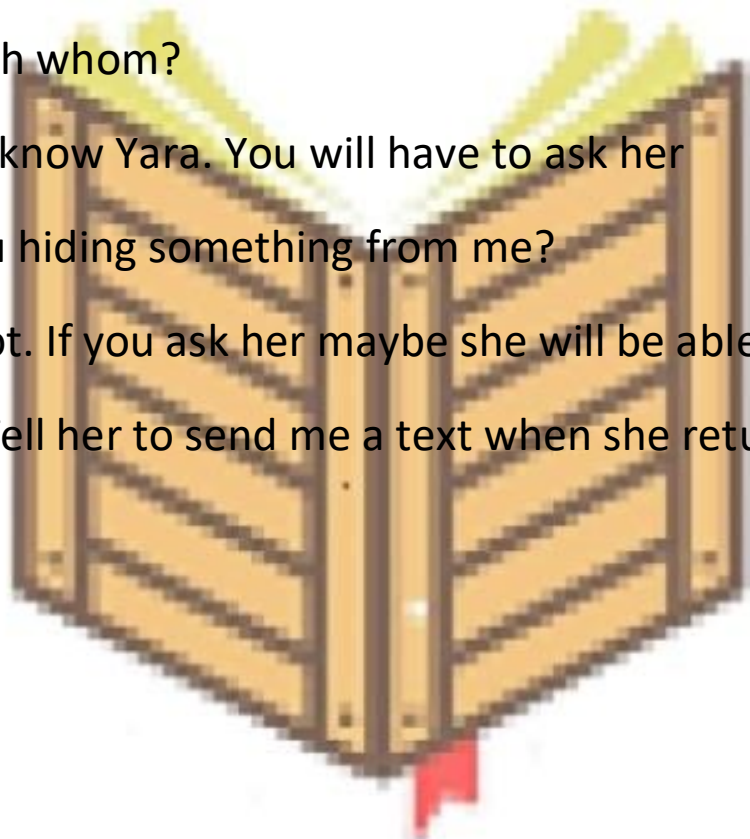
Her: I don't know Yara. You will have to ask her

Me: Are you hiding something from me?

Her: I am not. If you ask her maybe she will be able to tell you

Me: Okay. Tell her to send me a text when she returns

AYDEN



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at Amelia and then Mimsey

Me: You see the consequences of your actions?

Mimsey: Now it's my fault? What next, I will be blamed for climate change?

Me: She is learning all of this from you

Mimsey: And

Advertisement

you? Cat caught your tongue?

Amelia: I am sorry Ma

Mimsey: Sorry? That's all you gonna say? Your brother is blaming me and what you can say is sorry?

Me: She won't listen to you; you've failed as a mother Mimsey. This one needs tough love

Amelia: But I've already said sorry

Me: Sorry my left foot. You are grounded

Amelia: Mom he can't do that. Talk with him; I am old enough to be grounded

Me: I kinda figured that you are old enough but still you are grounded. Vincent will take you and bring you back from Varsity and that's the end of discussion Amelia

NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Zoe graced us with her presence. She found the twins and me playing Monopoly. Ethan is busy in his study so he told her to wait; her presence was starting to suffocate the living life out of me

Me: You sure you don't want to play with us?

She flashed her big eyes and faked a smile. I am saying fake because I could hardly see her teeth

Her: No, but I am not familiar with the game. And it's not really my style...

If you ever see me trying to befriend a rich white girl please cuff me and send me straight to Robben Island

Me: Not your style? I see

Her: For how long will Ethan be in his study? I had a long day and I really want to run something pass him

Before I could answer Lex answered her

Lex: Long enough for you to go home and rest

Me: Lex!

Lex: Hoyu ungari o to dela uri tongela aunt (This person is only here to act up, she's a snob)

Me: Kids, they are always ready to joke around. Right, Lex?

Lex gave me her back. Okay, that went well...

Her: That's why I'll never have kids. They are too much of work and so irritating

Tenda: And I am pretty sure God will not even think about giving you one. If I was God I'd probably shut your mouth with a slap

I put my hand on Rotenda's mouth

Me: Oh Kids!

She looked at them annoyed and shook her head

Her: Is this what you teach these kids? They are so disrespectful, I wonder if Ethan is aware about this. Oh God!

I looked at the twins

Me: Can you please give aunt and me some space? I'll be with you in a bit

They got up and left the room

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

If this Giraffe want to flirt with Ethan she must do so but the twins are off limits

Me: Miss Griffins...

Her: Zoe is just fine

Me: Okay Zoe, I'd really like it if you can respect the twins because if you step on their toes you step on mine. I will not allow you to give them attitude, so if you still want to come in this house I suggest you leave your stinky attitude outside

Her: You are calling me out just like that? Who do you think you are?

Me: I am exactly who you think I am. I am calling you into order; don't bring your bad aura into this house. We don't need it at all. Is this what they teach you at private schools?

Her: Ethan will hear about this, I won't be insulted like this!

Me: Come to think of it maybe Alexa was right, you are tired and you are acting out of emotions. Why don't you go home and rest a bit. I am pretty sure tomorrow you'll be feeling good. You will even forget about this conversation. What do you say Blondie?

A giraffe with blonde hair, Oh God! Ethan what are you doing with white girls?

She stood up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: I've never been disrespected like this

Me: You'll have a great night Miss G. And I'm sorry but Liremi's family can't host you tonight

She turned around as her heels make noise

Giraffe! Coming with 2 cents nonsense

I sat down; Ethan made his way to me

Him: Where is Zoe?

Me: Oh Zoe, I told her to go home. Poor thing was feeling  
sleepy

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**



PANTHER

[WEEKS LATER]

I was on the phone with Sthembiso; I assigned him to be the one following Old man. If there's anyone who know Khumalo then that person is him

Me: He is coming back today from his trip, Sthe I don't want you to lose sight of him

Him: I will not

Me: And please, make sure he is not aware. We both know Khumalo and he is very cautious

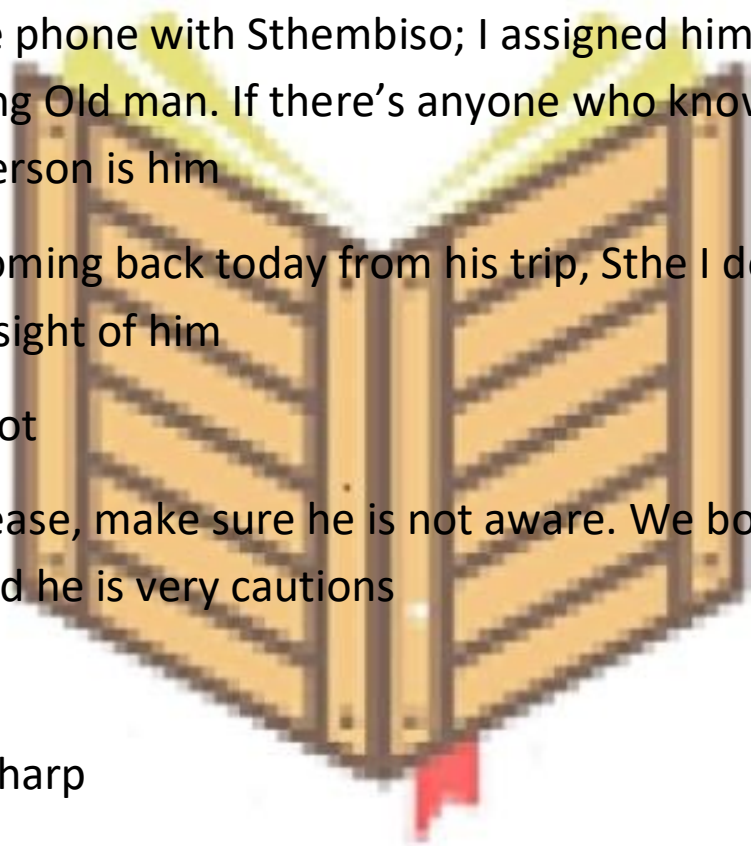
Him: Noted

Me: Okay, sharp

I hung up

Viper stared at me without any expression

Him: You sure about this?



Me: Dead sure. He was out of the province for weeks and if really he is cheating the first person he is going to see is his mistress

Him: For his sake I hope he is not cheating on mom

Me: You can say that again

Him: Love is shit sometimes

Me: Talking about love, what's going on with Tooth? Is it Aurora's shit?

He nearly choked on his drink

Me: You fine?

He nodded repeatedly

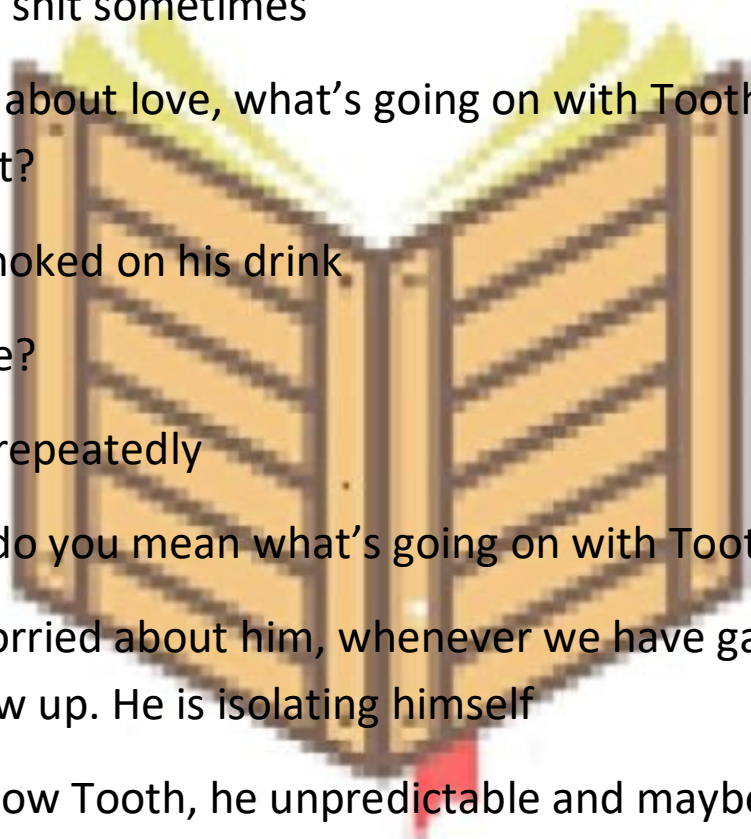
Him: What do you mean what's going on with Tooth?

Me: I am worried about him, whenever we have gatherings he doesn't show up. He is isolating himself

Him: You know Tooth, he unpredictable and maybe the Aurora fiasco is now having an effect on him

Me: I don't think that's the issue but whatever it is-it better not come between him and business

Him: I am sure it won't



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I rubbed my eyes and climbed off the bed

Me: I really need cup of coffee. Oh!

I was up last night studying, lost track of time and it was morning already. It is going to be a long exhausting day at the office. I opened the cupboard and took out a cup... I moved into my apartment last week and so far the girl is enjoying the freedom. As for the twins, well they might as well move in with me. Ethan came and picked them up yesterday, they've been staying with me since I moved in. I think they were used to have me by their side; luckily the apartment is big enough and friendly for children

My phone rang, it was Mimi

Me: Sisters

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Did I wake you?

Me: Question should be; did you get some sleep? I've been up since last night

Her: You will get your ass fired; Mr Tshivhase won't tolerate your sulking

Talking about Mr Tshivhase, I don't know if it's my imagination or not but he has been checking me out a lot. Surprisingly I've been doing the same thing, we've bonded in such a way that I still don't understand how it happened. The past few weeks have been nothing but exciting, I looked forward to go to work than I used to. I am no longer annoyed by his arrogance, if anything I know how to handle him and he doesn't complain

Me: He will be strong. Do you need something?

Her: Yes, will you be able to go and fetch dad?

Me: Oh flip! He is coming today? It slipped my mind

Her: You are so stupid Yara. So, will you go or not?

Me: I will. And, why can't you go?

Her: There's an event at work and I will be working until late

Me: And, I am the stupid one?

She laughed softly **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Whatever, and thank you

I hung up

I logged on WhatsApp; Mr A has posted a picture of himself. His hair was still messy; it looks like the picture was taken right after a shower. I found myself blushing like a teenager

ELISA

Buhle: Morning mama

Me: Morning B, where is Mimi?

Her: She's on the phone with Yara. She will be here soon

Me: So you girls are working till late today?

Her: Yes

Advertisement

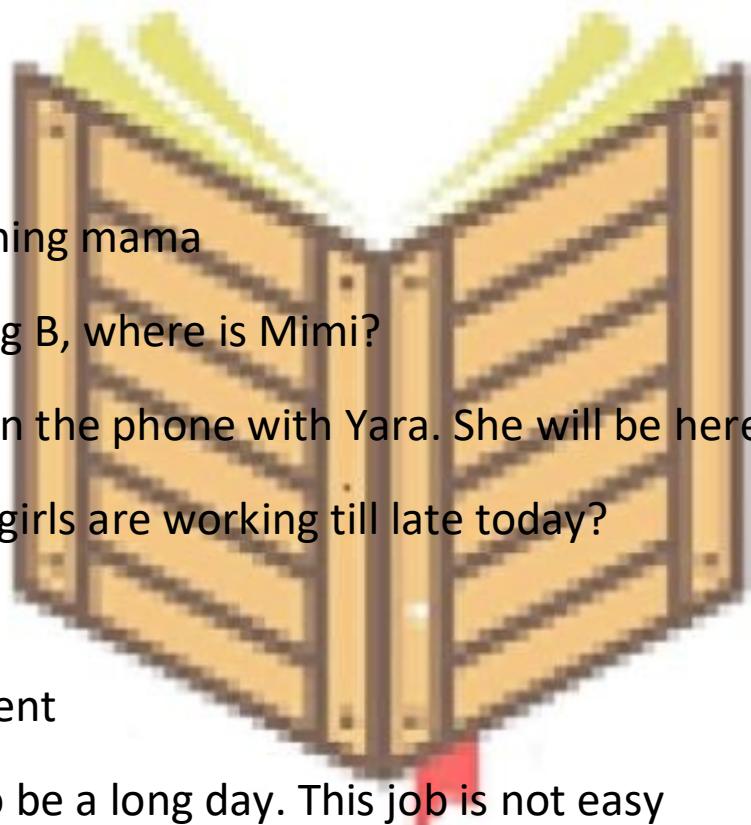
it is going to be a long day. This job is not easy

Me: As long as it pays the bill

Her: You are right. And, this coming Saturday I am going home.

I miss my family and I'd like to spend few days with them

Me: I am sure they will be happy to see you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You have no idea, my mother cried like a baby when she received a call from me. She never thought she'd hear from me

Me: What exactly did you girls used to do in Gauteng?

Her: Ma?

Me: You heard me

Her: It was just this and that

Me; This and that? And that's what separated you from your family, like Mimi?

Her: You can say that

Me: I don't trust you

Mimi made her way to us

Mimi: Stop interrogating her mama

Me: You two are hiding something from me, and don't even deny it

Mimi: I don't know what you are talking about. Buhle, can we go now?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Buhle: Yes. Mama, see you later

I gave them a slight nod

ETHAN

Me: Alexa! Rotenda! We are getting late. Come on!

It's a mission to work with these two when Yara is not here,  
they like playing games with me

They followed each other making their way to me

Me: Rotenda, why are you wearing a Jersey? Didn't you see the  
weather?

They exchanged looks

Me: I am talking with you!

Him: I did daddy, it's just that I felt like wearing one

Me: You will faint, do you want that?

I grabbed his arm and he flinched

Me: Rotenda, pull your Jersey up right now?

He stood still

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I won't ask you again Rotenda Liremi

He hesitated but ended pulling it

Me: Where did you get these bruises? Talk!

Him: I fell and hurt myself dad

I looked at Lex

Me: Where did your brother get these bruises?

Her: I don't know dad

Me: Go to the car, I'll catch up with you guys

They ran their legs out of the house

I took my phone and called Yara. Maybe she saw something when they were visiting her

Me: Yara

Her: Ethan hi

Me: Can we meet for lunch?

Her: Yes. Say 13:00pm?

Me: Fine by me

I hung up



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA



I set the phone on the table

The door swung open. Ayden stepped in

Him: Morning Miss M

Me: Morning. Today you are early

Him: Well, I woke up happy and my heart told me to come early

I laughed and stood up

Me: So how can I help you?

Him: I'd like the minutes from our last week meeting. The Friday one

Me: Oh, didn't I email them to you?

Him: I didn't receive the email

Me: Let me look for them

I walked up to the cabinet and took out the file

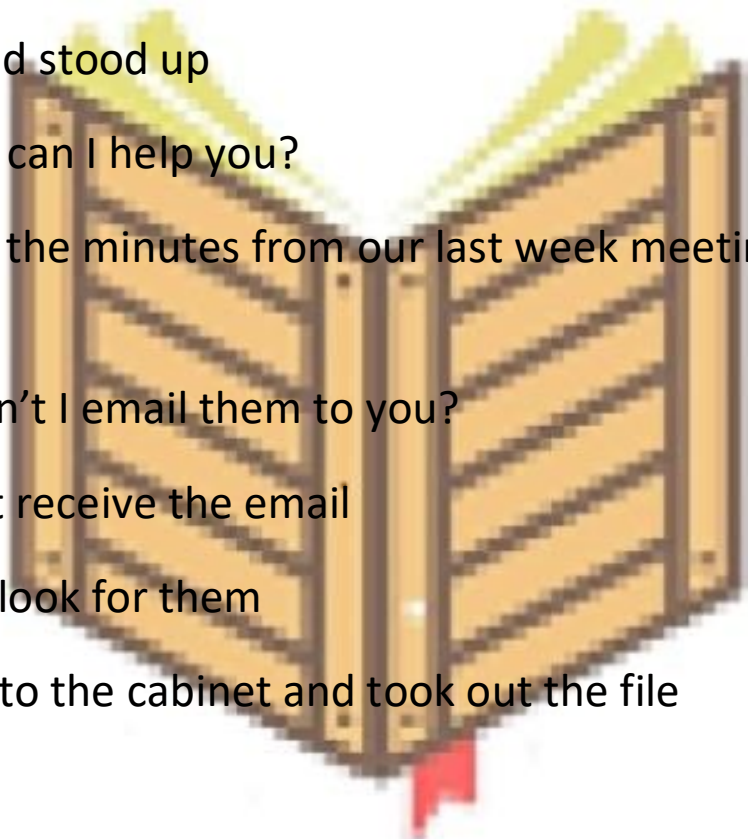
Me: Here...

Our hands touched when I gave him the file

Him: Thank you

Me: It's my job

Him: Yes, what am I saying? Let me leave you to whatever you were doing...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That would be nice of you

He turned around

I looked at him as he walked away. He stopped on his tracks and turned around

Him: If I die I die, will you please have lunch with me today?

Me: What?

Him: Did I say that loud?

Me: Yes, you did Mr A

He smiled and closed his eyes

He is so charming. I can watch him smile all day and still wish to see him smiling

Him: So, what do you say?

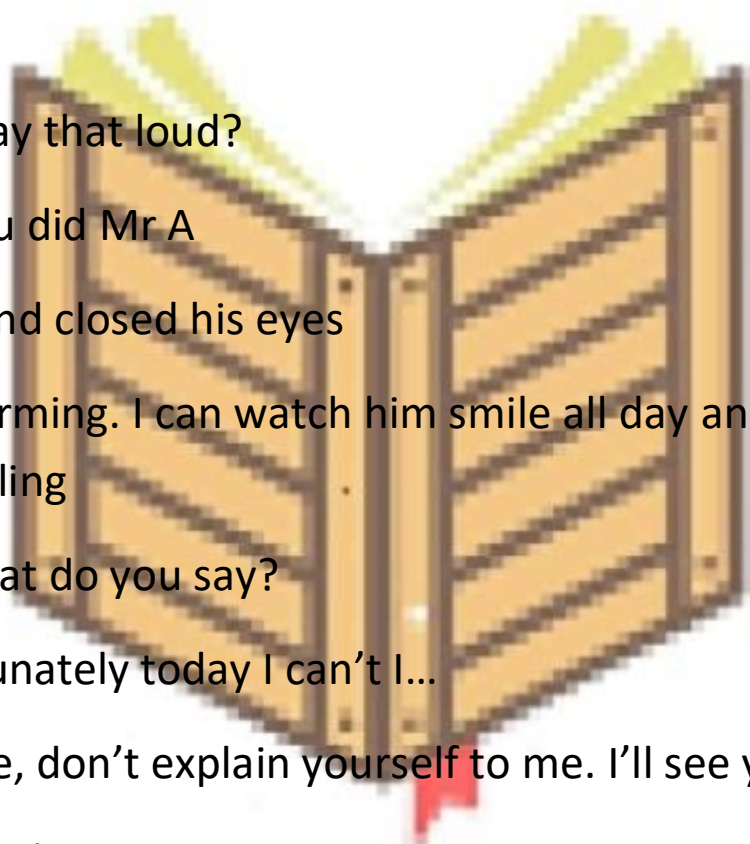
Me: Unfortunately today I can't I...

Him: It's fine, don't explain yourself to me. I'll see you Miss M

He walked out

What just happened? Oh Yara, did he just ask you out?

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

37

ETHAN

To say I was concentrating at work would be a lie; I bring myself stop thinking about Rotenda and his bruises. Why didn't I notice anything? What kind of patent am I?

(Knock in door)

Me: Come in

The door opened, Zoe walked in

Since Yara and the twins told me the pet name they gave Zoe I haven't looked at her the same, whenever I see her I feel like saying "Giraffe". Yara and the twins are what we call drama

Her: Morning

Me: Morning Miss G

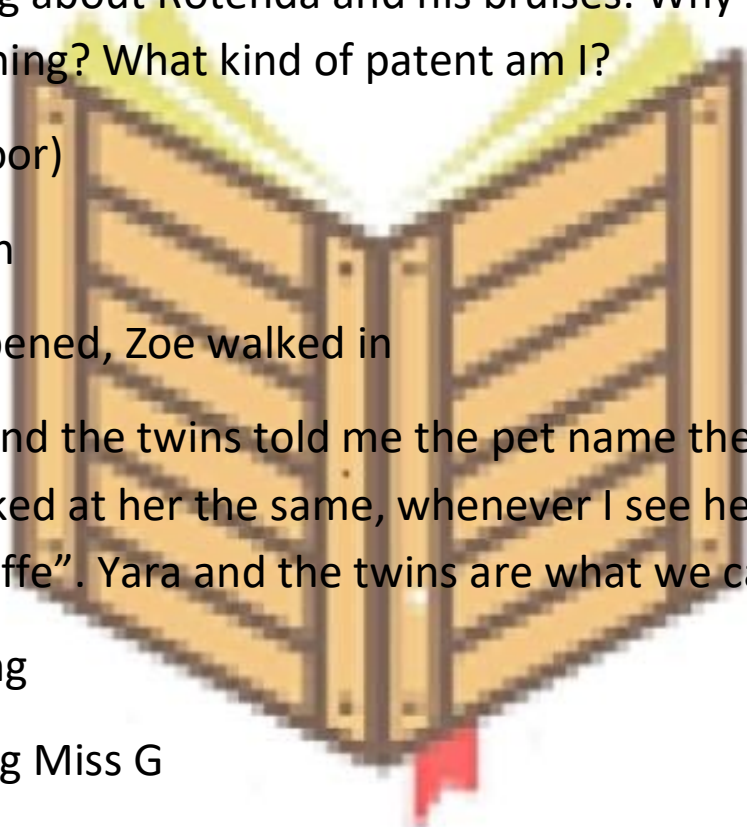
Well that G is for Giraffe, good thing her surname start with G

Her: You and calling me Miss G (Laughs)

Me: It has a nice ring to it. Don't you think?

Her: It does

She sat down



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What are you doing here so early in the morning?

Her: I came to invite you, there's a reunion party that is happening this coming Friday and you can't miss it. It will do you good to go out for a change

Me: I am too old for that Zoe. Like, what do people do in this reunion parties?

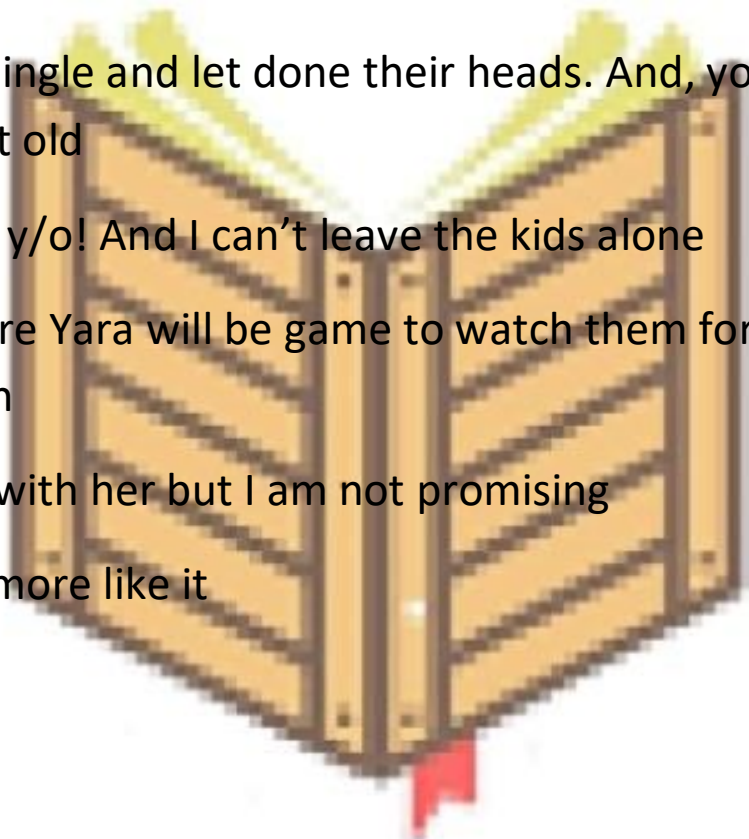
Her: They mingle and let done their heads. And, you are anything but old

Me: I am 30 y/o! And I can't leave the kids alone

Her: I am sure Yara will be game to watch them for a night. Please Ethan

Me: I'll talk with her but I am not promising

Her: That's more like it



AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

What I did earlier was foolish. What a great move to let Yara that I like her. I've been sending out hints and I think she's

catching them very well; I really need to make my move. I now have faith, and I can fully say she is charmed by my looks

I laughed and shook my head

Me: Oh Ayden, you sound like a teenager

I rang Viper

Me: Can you talk?

Him: Yes. What's up?

Me: I need your help in finalizing the last step. I attempted to ask Yara out for lunch but it backfired

Him: What happened?

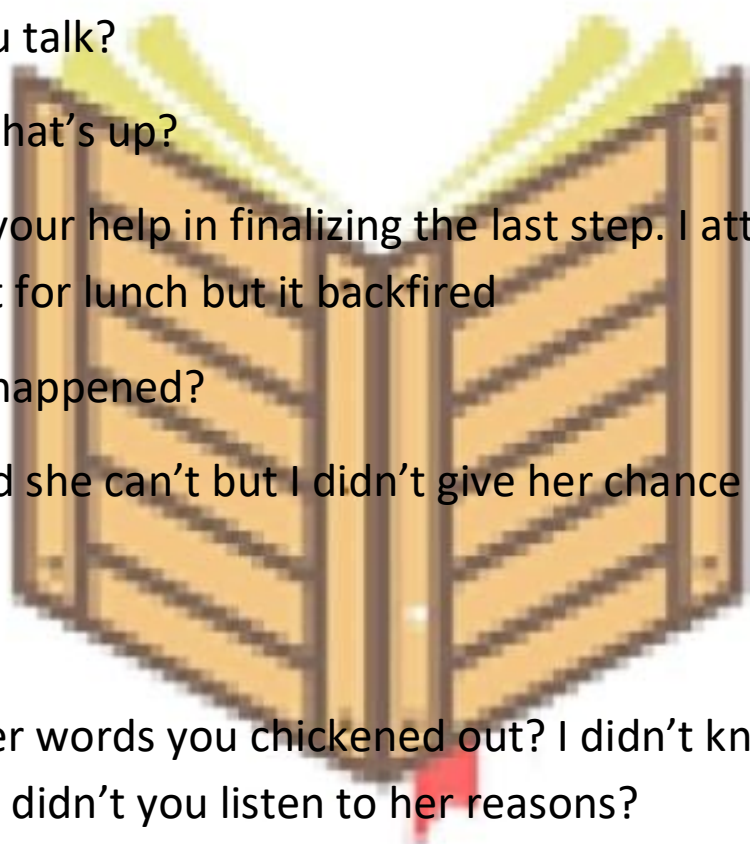
Me: She said she can't but I didn't give her chance to state her reasons

He laughed

Him: In other words you chickened out? I didn't know you were stupid. Why didn't you listen to her reasons?

Me: Not now Viper, please. These feelings are starting to drive me crazy

Him: You really have to. Panther is already suspicious of you I've been avoiding him for the past few weeks; we only meet for business purposes. Whenever they host gatherings Yara is



NOVELSGURU.COM

there and between Panther and Viper, Yara is more close to Panther. I guess their past relationship is contributing to that

Me: You didn't tell him anything, did you?

Him: I'd never betray you

Me: That's why I need you to help me so that we can let him know. If Yara and I are dating we will have something to stand on, he won't be able to stop us

Him: Let me call her

Me: Thanks

Him: You owe me asshole

Me: Of course I do



PANTHER

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sthembiso called me

Him: He hasn't made any suspicious movements

Me: You sure?

Him: Yes

Advertisement

I am

Me: Don't lose sight of him, at any cost

I hung up

I walked inside the restaurant. My crush made her way to my table. Did I just say crush?

Waiter: Good day sir

She gave me the menu

Me: Even today I will go back without knowing your name?

She smiled at me and blinked

Me: You always serve me but I don't know your name. You also don't have the name tag...

Her: You never asked Sir

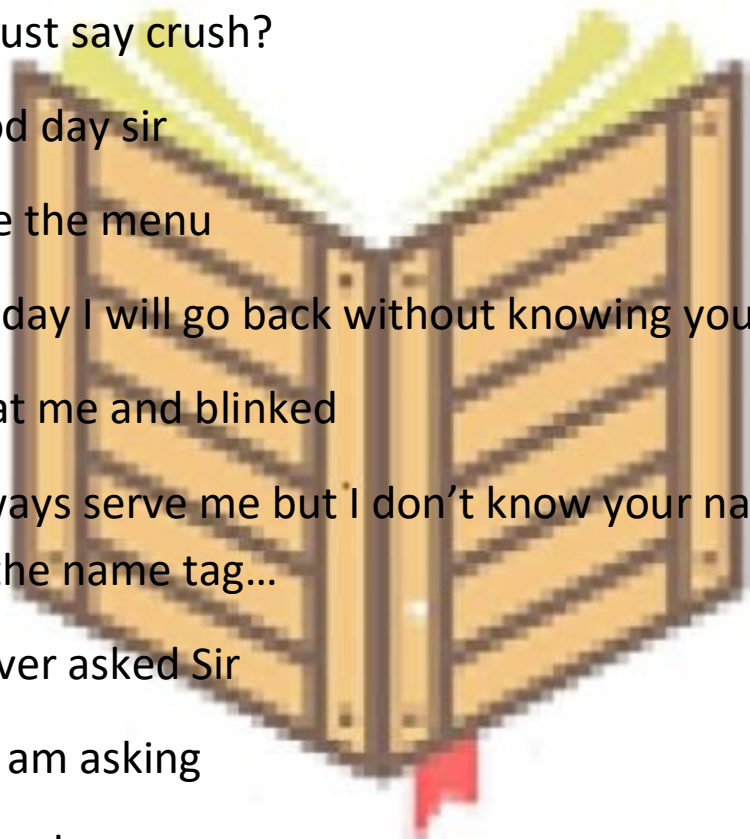
Me: Today I am asking

Her: Please order

Me: I'll have today's special

I gave her the menu

Her: Coming right now. And, my name is Buhle

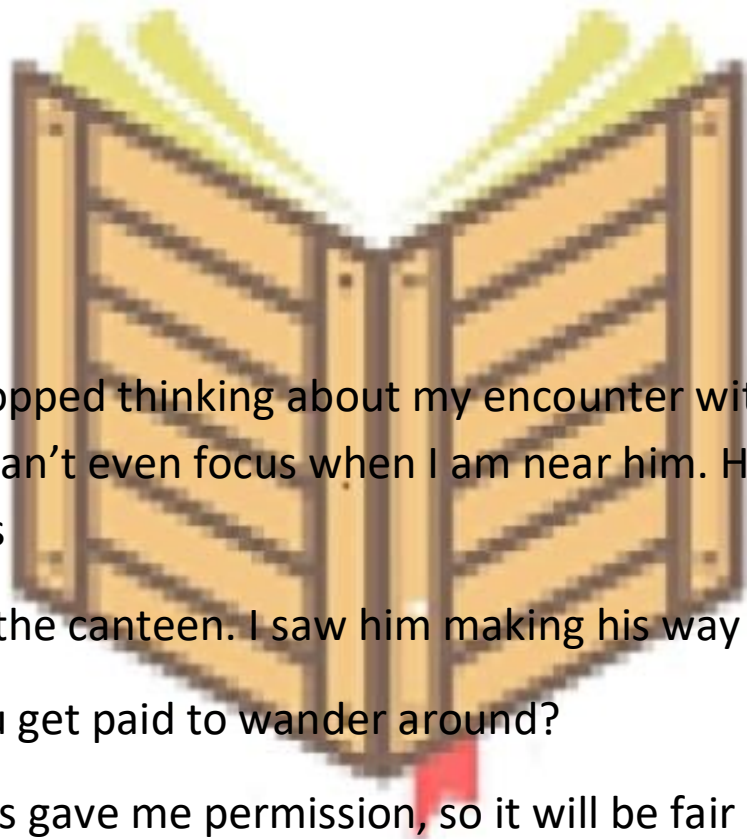


NOVELSGURU.COM

God if this one turns out to be my sister I am cancelling my gender

She walked away. I've been coming to this restaurant for some weeks now; in fact she is the reason. She's not easy to please but I will not crack before I crack her

YARA



I haven't stopped thinking about my encounter with Ayden. Poor thing can't even focus when I am near him. He is walking on eggshells

I walked to the canteen. I saw him making his way to me

Him: Do you get paid to wander around?

Me: My boss gave me permission, so it will be fair if you talk with him

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Before I came here I did, and he gave me a go ahead to punish you

I walked behind him

Me: Did he?



Him: Yes, so it is up to you now. You either accept the punishment or your bribe me. I am sure we can work something out

He turned around and faced me

Him: Which one will it be?

Me: I love punishments but this time I'll go with bribe

Him: What's your offer?

Me: Dinner?

Him: Time and place?

Me: I'll text you

Him: I'll be waiting

Me: You can now go back to work Mr A

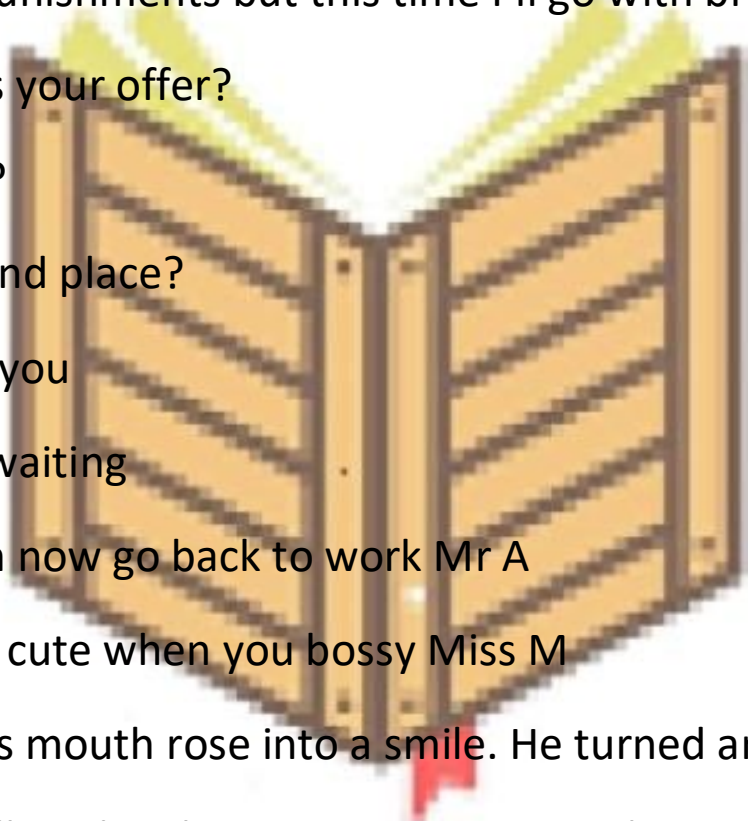
Him: You so cute when you bossy Miss M

Corner of his mouth rose into a smile. He turned around

Me: And, tell my brother to stop worrying. I know you asked him to call me

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He laughed and continued to walk



ELISA

I fixed my eyes on him

He sat down and crossed his legs

Me: I thought Yara was only going to fetch you later. What happened to that?

Him: A friend dropped me off

Me: Okay, so let's talk before the kids come back. What are you here?

Him: This is my house

Me: That is your house

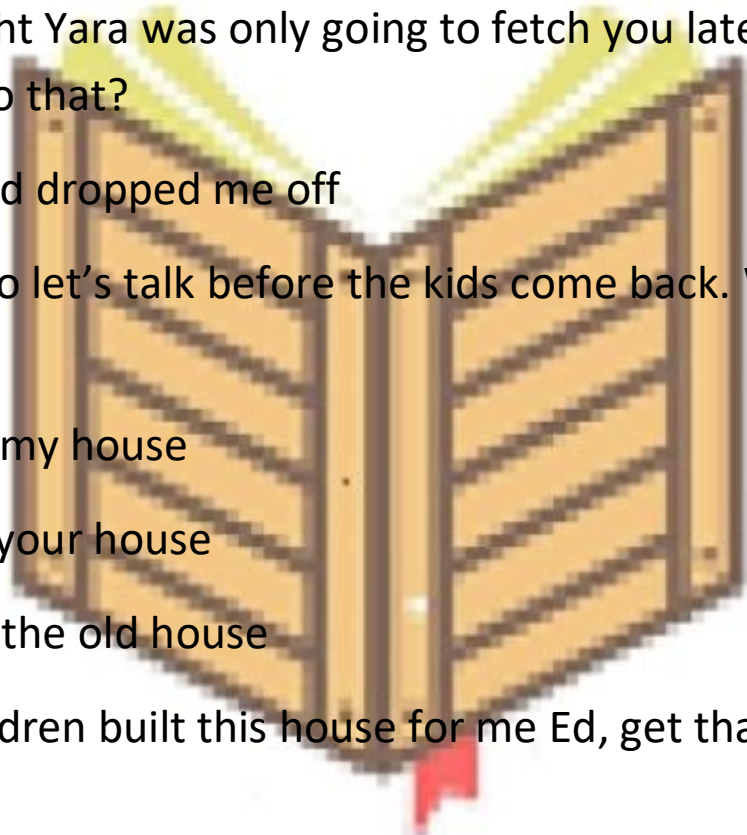
I pointed at the old house

Me: My children built this house for me Ed, get that through your skull

Him: It doesn't matter; your children are my children

Me: Why are you back? I thought you said you will never set your foot in this yard yet you are here today

Him: I came back for my children, and not you. Soon, I'll be out of your hair



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Your children? (Laughs) what children? The ones you left because you couldn't man up

Him: I left because of you Elisa

I kept quiet

Him: But I didn't come back to question your past decisions, you did what you felt was right and unfortunately I wasn't amongst those things

ETHAN

I set my glass on the table

Yara was just as shocked as I was. She also can't explain the bruises

Me: And the twins don't want to talk

Her: That's alarming

Me: It is

Her: I don't want to scare you but I feel like he is being bullied

Me: I thought about that as well



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Question I; why are they not telling us? If he is being bullied we need to act fast Ethan. I've read lot of cases about children who are bullied at school

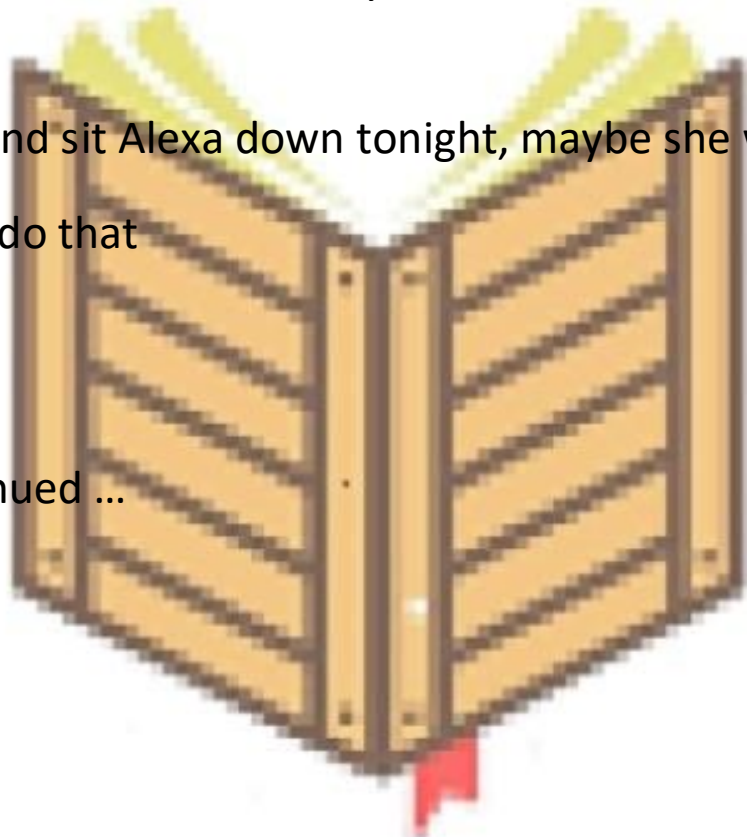
Me: Calm down, we will get to the bottom of this

Her: I don't get how some kids can be animals towards other children. And I can bet the bully is older than him. Oh my poor Tenda!

Me: I'll try and sit Alexa down tonight, maybe she will open up

Her: Please do that

To be continued ...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## PANTHER

My mother picked the plates and walked to the kitchen

Me: Thanks for dinner Ma Khumalo

Her: When are you getting yourself a wife Lindokuhle? I'll get tired of cooking for you

She teased me

Me: Finding a wife is not easy besides people can't be trusted. You think you know someone only to realise you never did. They cheat on you and proclaim their love to you later

My father choked on his drink

Me: You fine baba?

Him: I just don't understand why you talking about cheating when you not even in a relationship. You don't even have an insight of why people cheat. People have different reasons

Me: So their reasons justify their cheating? Is that what you are saying Khumalo?

Him: You talking nonsense

My mother walked back to us

Her: What are you two talking about?

Him: I was just telling your son how much I love you...

Me: Yeah, he was

Her: I am lucky to be his wife

Her voice said one thing but her face shouted the other

Me: I should probably leave

Her: You are not staying for dessert wine?

I stood up

Me: No, I had a long day. I must rest

Him: Let me walk you out

He followed me

Him: So, tell me...

Me: Mh

Him: Have you been talking with your mother?

Me: I talk with my mother always; get straight to the point Old man

Him: She has been nagging and hinting that I am cheating on her



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at him

Me: Are you cheating?

Him: I'd never think about doing that

Me: But you did years ago and Yara is our perfect evidence

Him: I love your mother

Me: Well, you'll be happy to know that mom hasn't said anything to me

Him: That's a relief

Me: Let me get going Khumalo

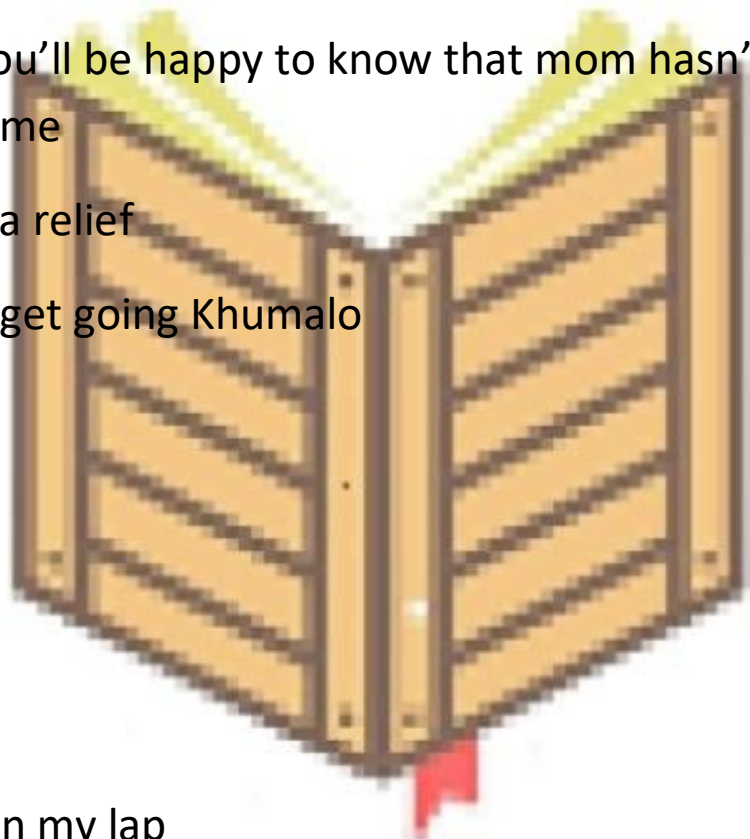
ETHAN

I sat Alexa on my lap

Me: Nana, daddy is going to have a talk with you about your brother. Okay?

She nodded in agreement

Me: Where did he get those bruises from?



NOVELSCURL.COM

Her: I don't know daddy

Me: What did mom say about lies?

She kept quiet

Me: You can tell me anything Lex. You can trust me

Her: I am sorry dad but I don't know anything

Me: Are you protecting someone? If you are, tell me so that I can help baby

Her: I swear daddy

I sighed

I am not winning. What am I gonna do?

YARA



(Knock on door) I went to open

Me: Baba...

I hugged him

Me: I miss you so much



Missing him is an understatement

Him: Oh my butterfly, I miss you too

The decisions that our parents make always affect the children the most. What I believe was supposed to be a small fling turned our family upside down

Me: Would you like something to drink dad?

Him: No, let's talk. Come sit next to dad

We sat on the couch

Him: How are you?

Me: Good dad

My father and I have lot to talk about. He didn't just leave us his actions also hurt us. When Mimi was still around things were fine because we had each other but then Mimi left. It was me and mom, dad was nowhere. Talking with him over the phone wasn't enough, I wanted a man figure in my life but I guess whatever issues he had with mom were more important than us

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: How are you finding your stay with mom? I am sure it is not easy after so many years

Him: She's already questioning my sudden return. Elisa will never change

Me: I am glad you are here. You are staying for how long?

Him: Unfortunately I am off for two days

Me: Oh... I thought you were going to stay for some time

Him: Sorry baby. After this two days I am driving to Zimbabwe and then Botswana

My father's job had a huge impact in his relationship with mom

Advertisement

when he was away she found comfort in the arms of another man. It was that simple for her to cheat on her husband

Me: It's a shame. I was really looking forward to spend more days with you, but I am happy that you are here. After so many years dad

He hugged me

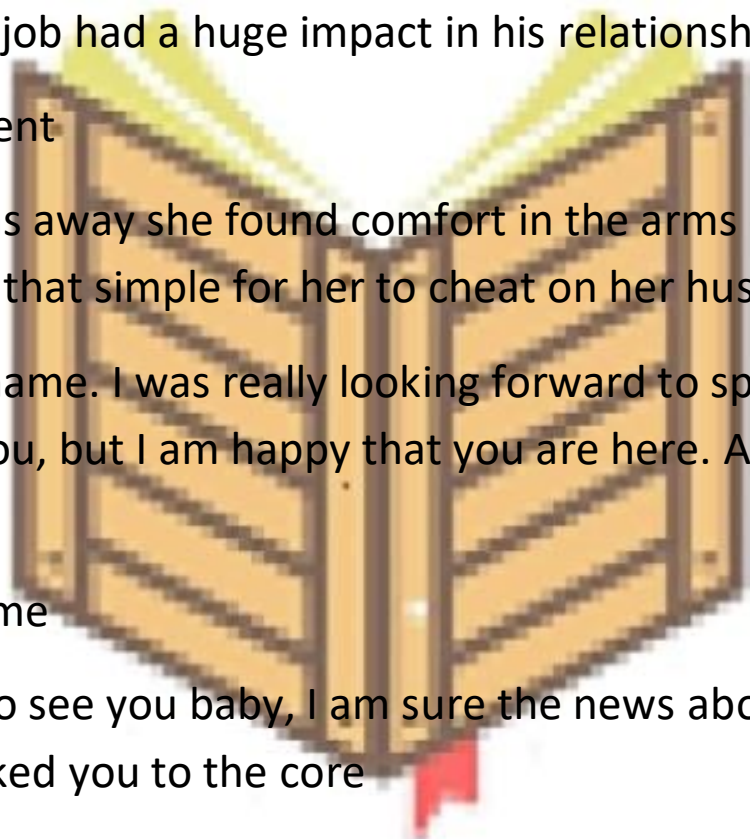
Him: I had to see you baby, I am sure the news about your new family shocked you to the core

Me: It did baba, it did (Sobs)

I held into the hug so tightly

This shows how much I missed him. Talking now and then over the phone isn't the same as having him next to me

Him: Don't cry



NOVELSGURU.COM

He broke the hug

MIMI

The function was about to end, we've been on our feet since  
Buhle shrugged her shoulders

Her: Can this night end already? I need a 24-hour nap

Me: I thought you were enjoying it since you've been blushing  
all night

Her: I wasn't blushing

Me: Yes, you are

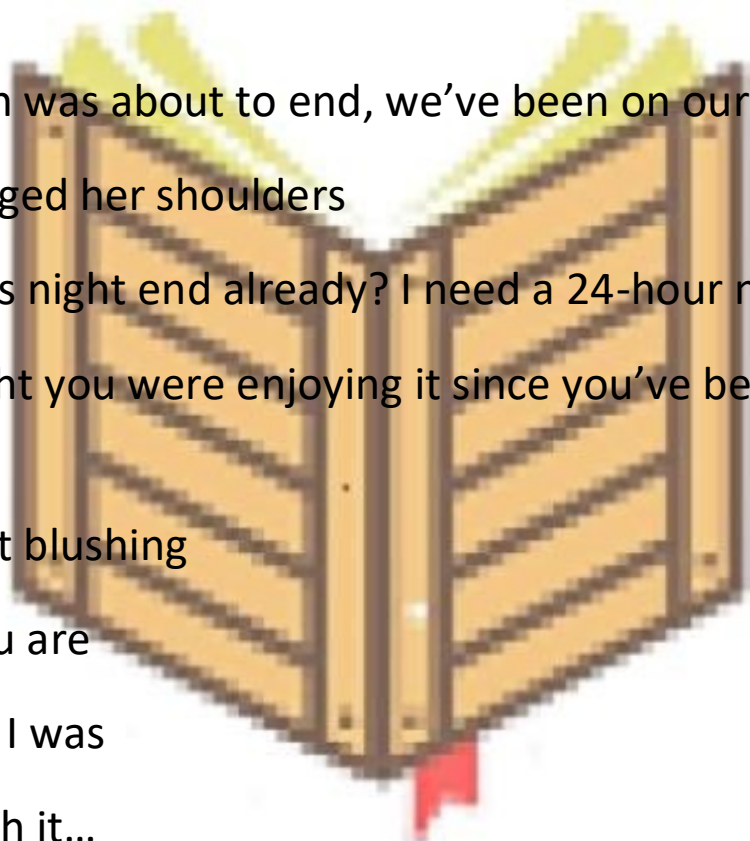
Her: Maybe I was

Me: Out with it...

Her: That guy came today...

Me: Which guy?

Her: The one who always come and compliment me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Oh the guy but didn't you say he terrifies you because he look like a gangster?

Her: I know I said that but I can't help myself. This guy is not backing down; he doesn't spend two days without coming here

Me: Do you like him?

Her: I do actually. After the whole Chieka fiasco he is the first guy I kinda like

Me: Then, what's stopping you?

Her: Uh-uh

"Girls, you are needed over there" another waiter called us

Me: Let's finish this conversation later. Okay?



ETHAN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I was sitting in Rotenda's room, he was struggling to sleep. How did I miss the signs? Rotenda is a bubbly kid I should have noticed the minute he started isolating himself

I rang Noah

Me: Bro

Him: Grootman, you good?

Me: I am battling bro

Him: They are not talking?

Me: I am not winning with your nephew. Do you think maybe Mason can watch over him until I get to the bottom of this?

Him: I am sure he can. If really he is being bullied we need to bring this bully in the open. I can't believe we still have children who enjoy bullying other kids

Me: I thought we were over that stage also

Rotenda: Please, don't hurt me. I promise to not tell anyone. Don't hurt my sister

He was talking in his sleep. That's a first!

Me: Rotenda is talking in his sleep

Noah: Don't wake him up, maybe he will give us something

He changed sleeping position and snored softly

To be continued...

39

MIMI

I was woken by Ethan calling me

I rubbed my eyes and sat up straight

Me: Morning

Him: Good morning, did I wake you?

Me: You did. Why you calling so early, is everything fine?

Him: Yes. Quick question, what are you doing this coming Friday?

Me: Working Ethan

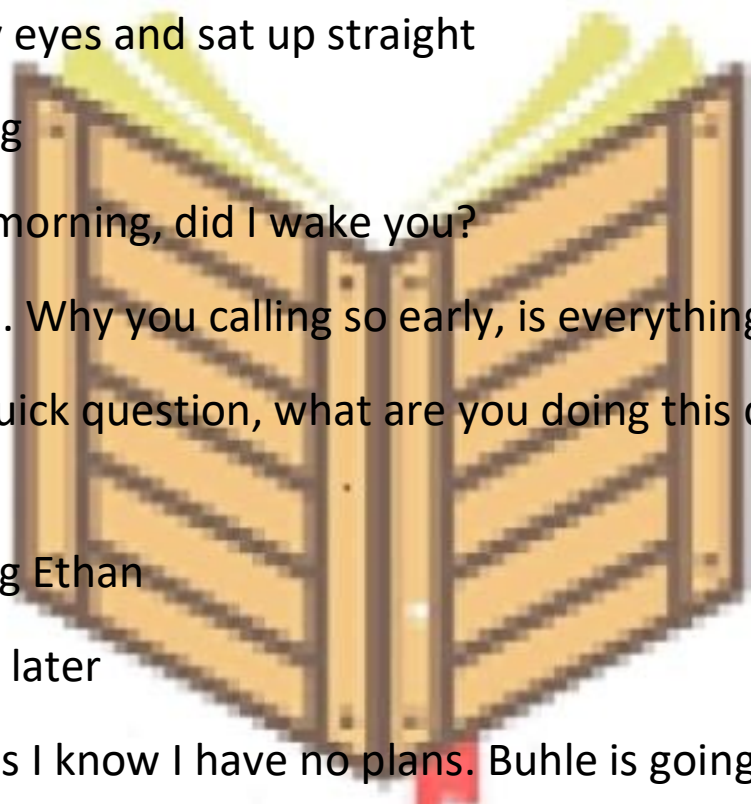
Him: Meant later

Me: As far as I know I have no plans. Buhle is going home and I'll probably be in bed if I am not with Yara

Him: Can you be my date?

Me: Date?

Him: There's reunion taking place and I don't want to show up alone. I'll be like a lost puppy all night



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't think I am up for that, no. I can't stand your spoiled brats friends

Him: It will be fun I promise you

Me: They are your friends, not mine!

Him: Some of them are mutual friends. And, we both went to the same high school Mimi. Please!

Yeah but your world is different from mine. I am just a retired prostitute and a waitress. They will be exchanging looks and having fun about me

Me: All of them hold degrees and I have none of that. Some are married, ah Ethan

Him: Nonsense. Do you want me take Zoe with?

Me: She's going? And, you wouldn't dare

Him: Yes, it's a high school and Varsity reunion... So what do you say?

Me: Okay, fine. I guess I can put up with their nonsense for at least one night

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Thank you. Let me not keep you, will talk later

Me: Have a great day

Him: Have a great day too Cuddles

He hung up

A long night it's going to be. I don't even know why I agreed but of course how can I not? Zoe!

The door swung open, Buhle stepped in

Her: You are not ready? Ha Mimi

Me: About to...

She sat on the bed

Me: So, Ethan asked me to be his date

Her: Oh, a step I wasn't ready for

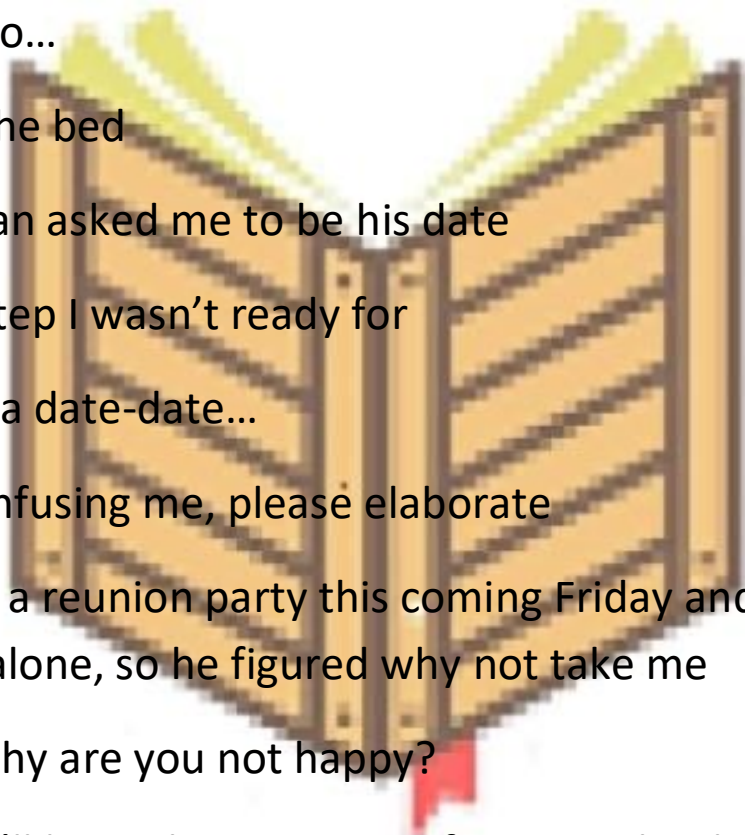
Me: It's not a date-date...

Her: You confusing me, please elaborate

Me: There's a reunion party this coming Friday and he doesn't want to go alone, so he figured why not take me

Her: Then why are you not happy?

Me: Buhle, I'll be in the presence of my ex-school mates, I don't think I am ready for that. I can bet 90% of them have done so much for themselves and they will be gloating. And, what do I have? Nothing!





Her: That's why I hate reunions but maybe this time it will be different. You might find yourself enjoying, who knows? Give it a try

Me: I know I won't!

I buried my face on the pillow

Her: Relax! It will be fine, Ethan will be with you. He is going to protect you against them if needed

Me: Let's hope. You know, I was thinking of telling Ethan about... You know, what we used to do

Her: That part of our lives, we will never escape from it... (Sighs) it will be bad if someone tell him before you

Me: Exactly why I need to tell him. But, I am scared, what if he start resenting me?

Her: He will never. Ethan is not that type of a guy

Advertisement

I don't know him that well but I've witnessed his love for you. He's very protective and understanding

Me: Yoh! He has to know and I am going to tell him

YARA

I rang the doorbell

After a minute the door swung open

Me: Hello (Smiles)

Rotenda ran to my arms and held me for dear life

Me: Oh my baby

I went down on my knee and wiped his tears

Me: Why are you crying?

Him: Maybe I wanted to see you. You are here to take us?

Me: No baby, I am here to see you

Lex: Aunty!

She yelled and ran to us

Lex: You are here

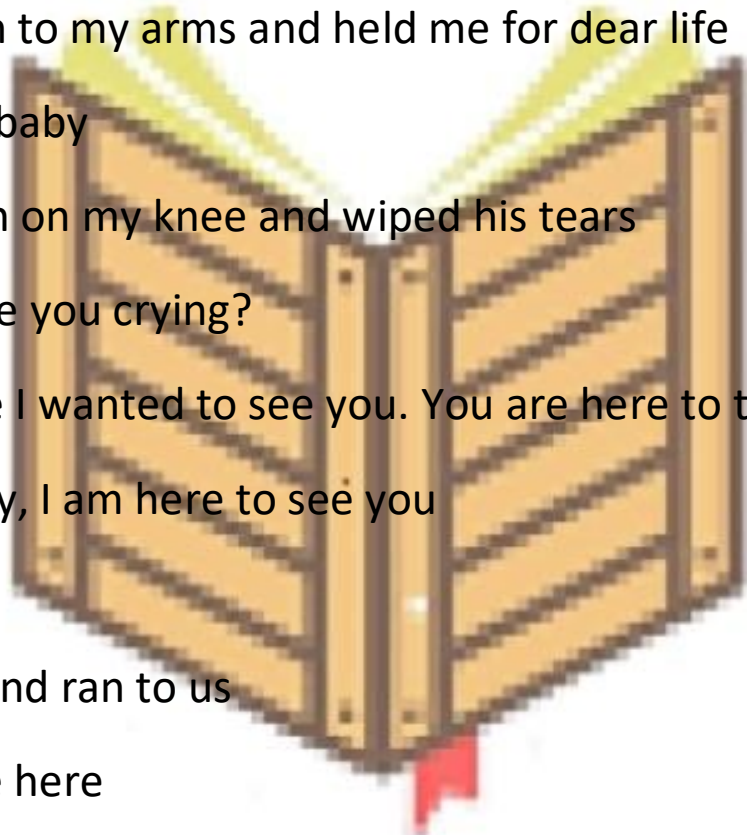
Me: Yes. What's going on with you two?

Lex: Nothing, we missed you. That's all

Me: Let's go and sit down

We walked inside

Me: Where is daddy?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ethan: Daddy is here

He made his way to us

Ethan: We were not expecting you

Me: I wanted to see them

We sat down

Ethan: It's like you heard their cries. They've been saying your name since they woke up

Alexa laid her head on my lap

Rotenda: You will take us to school?

Ethan: You know aunt has to go to work and she doesn't have a car. We don't want her to be late, okay?

Rotenda: Okay (Low voice)

Ethan: Tell you what, since you can drive. You can take my car and I'll drive Goldie's car today. What do you think?

Lex: Say yes, please!

Me: I will take you **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lex: Dad?

Ethan: Mh

Lex: Can we spend the night with aunt Yara?

Ethan shrugged his shoulders exhaled

Before he could answer her I jumped in

Me: You can, dad won't mind. Now, go and fetch your school bags. We are leaving in 10

They ran to fetch them

Ethan: Day and day they are becoming impossible Yara. I don't know what to do with them. It's like I am fighting a losing battle

Me: Give them time; we can't afford to push them any further. Especially when we don't know what's going on

He gave me a slight nod

Me: I know exactly what to do. Trust me

Him: I trust you

I will have to talk with their Principal and ask her if I could have a talk with one of their friends. Maybe I'll find something, they must be something. Something must give



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

I knocked on Ayden's office door

Ayden: Come in

I opened the door and walked in

Me: So this is your hiding spot?

He stood up

Him: Come on, I am not hiding myself. I am just busy

We shoulder bumped

Me: Could've fooled me

Him: I can never win with you

Me: Where is my sister, I noticed she's not on her station

Him: She will be coming late. And here I am thinking you came to see me...

I chuckled softly

Me: You sound gay bro

We sat down

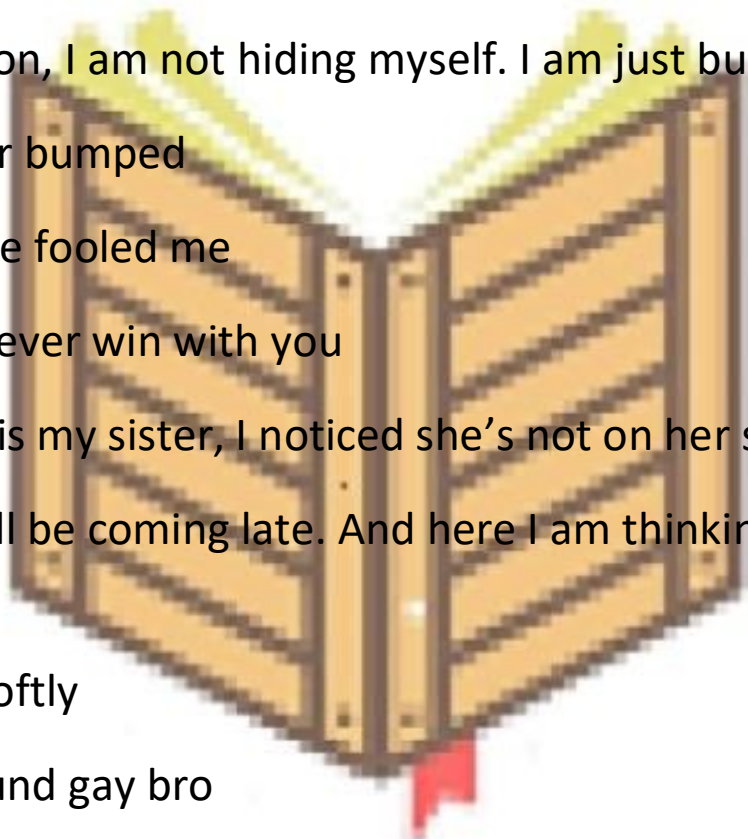
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I need something strong...

Him: Did you see the time? Isn't too early?

Me: There's no exact time to drink

He stood up and walked to his mini cabinet



Me: Does Mimsey know you store alcohol in there?

Him: I wouldn't be alive

Me: Exactly... Now that we are here, are you going to tell me why you've been distant?

Him: I am not

Me: You see why I punch your face? You are denying the truth and I will get pissed. And when I do, it's game over!

Him: And I thought I was the one with anger issues (Chuckles softly)

Me: I know you Tooth, there's something going on and Viper is aware of it. Whenever I start asking about you, he either defends your actions or avoid engaging in the conversation. I suggest you tell me before I find out myself because if I do and I don't like whatever shit you are hiding I am gonna fuck you both

He set the bottle on the table

Him: Okay, fine. I will tell you

He sat on his desk and crossed his arms over his chest

Him: It's about Yara

Me: Our Yara?

Him: Yes, our Yara...

I stood up

Me: Khulum' Tooth

Him: I... I am in love with your sister and it's not a fling but a real thing

I chuckled softly

Me: My sister? WTF Tooth!

Him: Come on dude, matters of the heart. Yara is a nice girl and I wanna be with her

Me: Matters of the heart? So you are embarking on the journey of breaking my sister's heart?

Him: I can never!

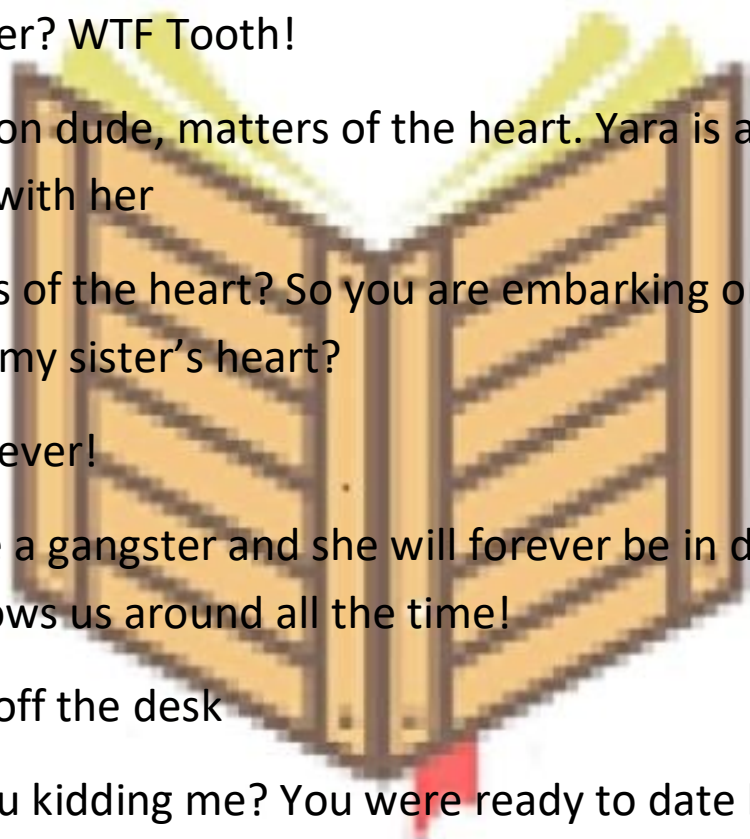
Me: You are a gangster and she will forever be in danger. Danger follows us around all the time!

He jumped off the desk

Him: Are you kidding me? You were ready to date her a while ago, and if my memory serves me right YOU ARE A GANGSTER too!

Me: You are my friend Tooth, if you hurt her I am going to fuck you up and I don't want to lose you for that shit

Him: Who said anything about hurting Yara, I love her Panther. Didn't you hear me; I've fallen in love with her



NOVELSGURU.COM

I closed my eyes and clenched my jaw

Me: Fuck Tooth!

I massaged my forehead and looked at him

Me: Is she aware?

Him: I haven't told her yet

Me: Cunt! Why haven't you? You scared of her?

He chuckled softly

Him: Your sister breathes fire bro

Me: Khumalo genes

ELISA



Ed's presence is really starting to suffocate me; I think guilty is starting to eat me up

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ed: Can you please pass me the butter?

Me: Okay... here

Him: Thank you



(Silence)

Me: I am sorry

He looked at me and said nothing

Me: I am sorry about everything, the pain I've caused and the hurt that came with it. I was never a good wife to you and our children became victims of my actions. I drove you away Ed and ruined the beautiful thing we had

Him: I don't like talking about the past but since you are apologizing for the first time maybe we should talk about it. The question I always had is, why? I gave you everything you needed; I went as far as forgiving you. But, that didn't mean anything to you

Me: It did, I swear

Him: Then, why do it again? It's not like I wasn't coming back home

Me: I was lonely Ed and Mzo was there when I needed him. Yes I admit I had wandering eyes and let lust get the best of me. I should have known how to control myself

Him: But you didn't

Mimi and Buhle walked in the kitchen

They greeted us

Ed: Are you not having breakfast?

Mimi: We will grab something at work papa

Ed: At least tell me tonight I'll have time with you. I am leaving tomorrow

He's leaving tomorrow?

Mimi: You will. We are working half day. I'll come straight home

Ed: That's more like it

My phone beeped, it was a message from Mzo

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

40

YARA

I set my glass on the table

Me: No, no! Rotenda is cheating

He laughed

Him: I am not cheating aunty

Me: Okay another one, never have I ever lied to my parents!

They exchanged looks

Lex: I have (Laughs)

Me: Come on, drink up

She giggled and gulped down the drink

Me: Tenda we are waiting...

Tenda: I have

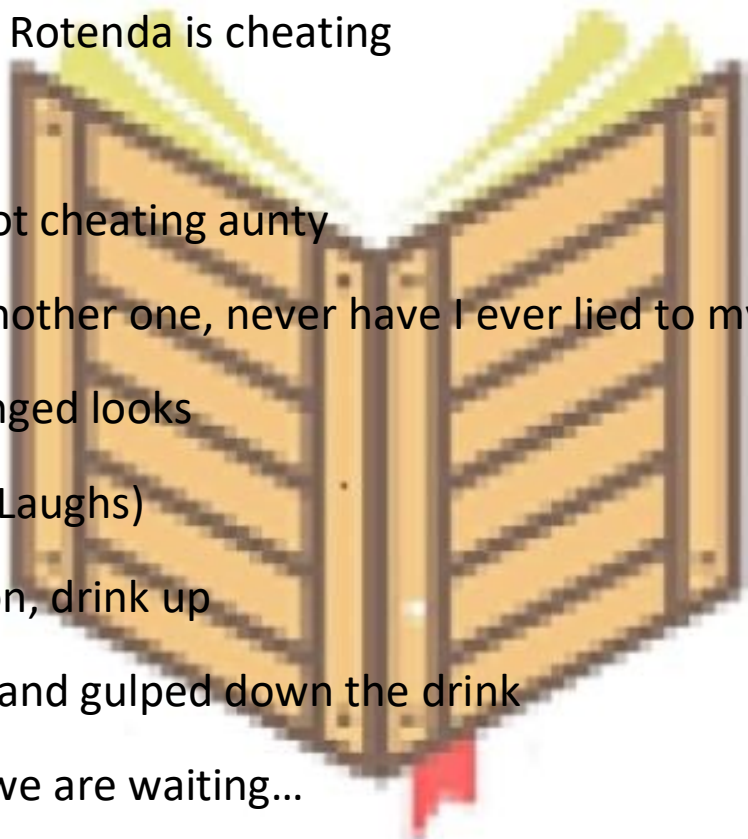
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

We making progress

Me: Drink up young man

Lex: How many questions are left?

Me: Come here. Both of you



They stood up and sat next to me

Me: Now, we going to talk and I don't expect lies from either of you

I managed to talk with their Principal earlier and she gave me permission to talk with Rotenda's friend. Well, he didn't give me much expect that he has also noticed changes and his sudden behaviour. I also talked with their cousin Mason; he said he has noticed a young boy who sometimes hangs with twins. When he asked the twins what they are doing with him they avoid the question and defend themselves. This young boy is the root of this problem. And, the never have I ever game confirmed it. They got lost in the game and I broke the ice

Me: What are you keeping from us?

They kept quiet

Me: Let me tell you a story, when I was your age I had a friend and that friend had 9 lives as a cat. She used to treat me well until one day she locked me in the toilet at school

They widened their eyes

Me: Do you know what happened? She left me there to spend the whole day; no one knew where I was. She even went as far as helping people to look for me but made sure no one reaches the toilets. After what seemed like forever she came and unlocked it for me. And she was seen as a hero for finding me,

she threatened me and made me swear to never breath a word. I told everyone that I mistakenly locked myself and they believed me after all I was a kid. That didn't stop there she continued to make me do things I didn't like nor want and I kept quiet, she would beat me up and take my lunch. I kept quiet but I was dying inside. Until one day my sister Mimi came to my rescue but that was after I woke up in hospital. I overdosed on pills and Mimi forced me to tell her the truth. And I then realised how my lies could've killed me, if I had told anyone I would have never thought about committing suicide. Someone could have come to my aid and rescued me. Do you get the moral of this story?

Lex: We do aunty

Tenda: Lies are not good

Me: Now, tell me why are you lying to us?

Tenda: Because he threatened to hurt Alexa

Me: Who is that baby? Who is hurting you?

Lex: Shane

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: He is the one who is bullying you?

Lex: He is bullying Tenda

Me: He hasn't tried anything with you?

She looked down

Me: Baby, talk with me

Tenda: When I refuse to do what he wants he force Alexa to kiss him or touch him...

I closed my eyes. Tears were threatening to fall

What has become of this world?

Me: Is that all?

They nodded

Me: Okay, thank you for telling me

Tenda: What are you going to do about this information? If he finds out that we told someone he is going to hurt Alexa, he can't hurt Lex aunty

Me: Don't worry; he will do nothing of that nature. Come here

I pulled them into my arms

Me: I love you so much

Them: We love you too

NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

(Door slamming)

I set my glass on the table

Lethabo made his way to me

Me: Lethabo Okwashi

Him: In the flesh

I extended my hand for a handshake

Me: Am I not surprised to see you?

Him: I did say we will meet again, didn't I?

Viper made his way to us

Viper: Am I dreaming? (Chuckles softly)

Lethabo: No, you not

They shoulder bumped

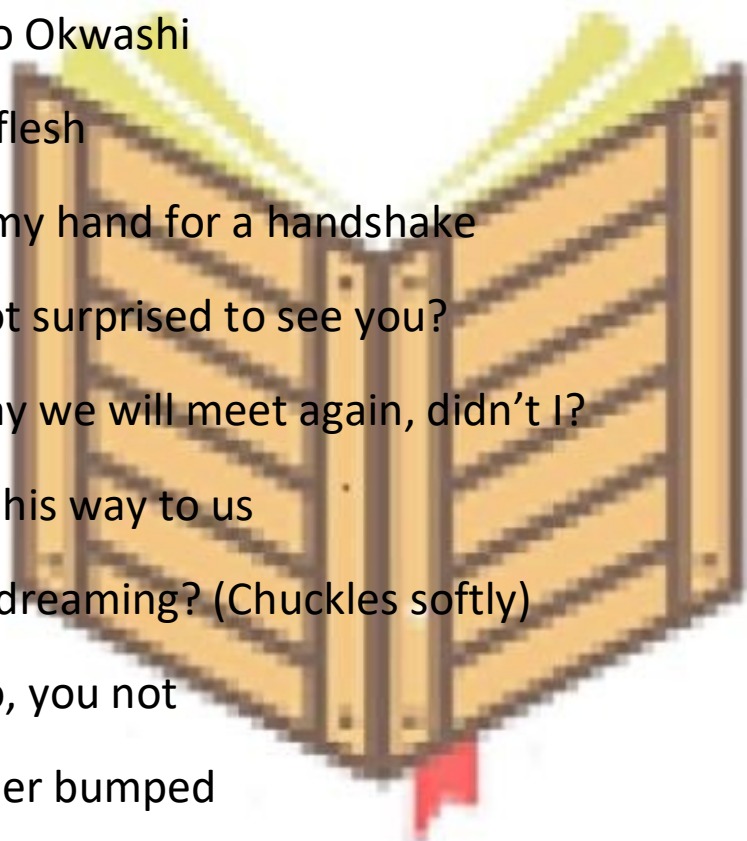
Lethabo: I need your help gents

Me: What have you done now?

Lethabo: Remember El Diablo?

Viper: Yeah, he died few years back

He scratched his head



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lethabo: I eliminated him

Me: It was you?

Lethabo: Yes and now his son is out of my blood. I don't know who told him but he knows. He has put a price on my head

Viper: You don't know how to stay out of trouble

Advertisement

do you?

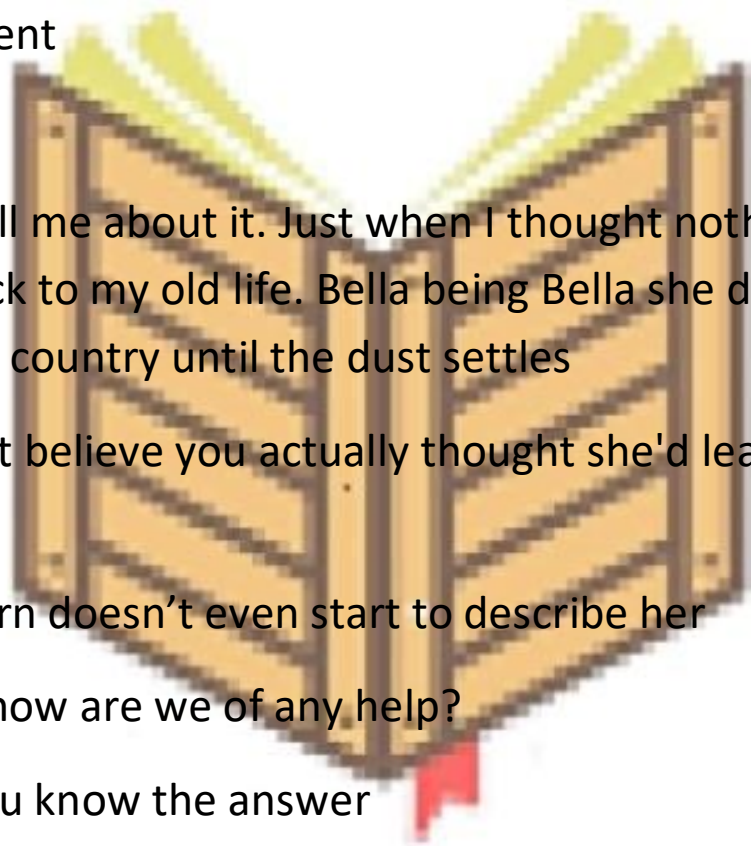
Lethabo: Tell me about it. Just when I thought nothing will ever take me back to my old life. Bella being Bella she doesn't want to leave the country until the dust settles

Viper: I can't believe you actually thought she'd leave. Your wife is stubborn

Me: Stubborn doesn't even start to describe her

Viper: And how are we of any help?

Lethabo: You know the answer



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA



I stood by the door

What is Ayden doing here?

Me: Mr A?

He turned around

Him: Evening. You surprised to see me?

Me: Yes, I am. How did you know where I stay?

Him: Miss M, I have my ways

Me: Wow

Him: Are we going to talk here or you will let me in?

I moved a bit and pointed at the twins

Me: I have company

Him: I didn't know you have kids, no one ever told me that

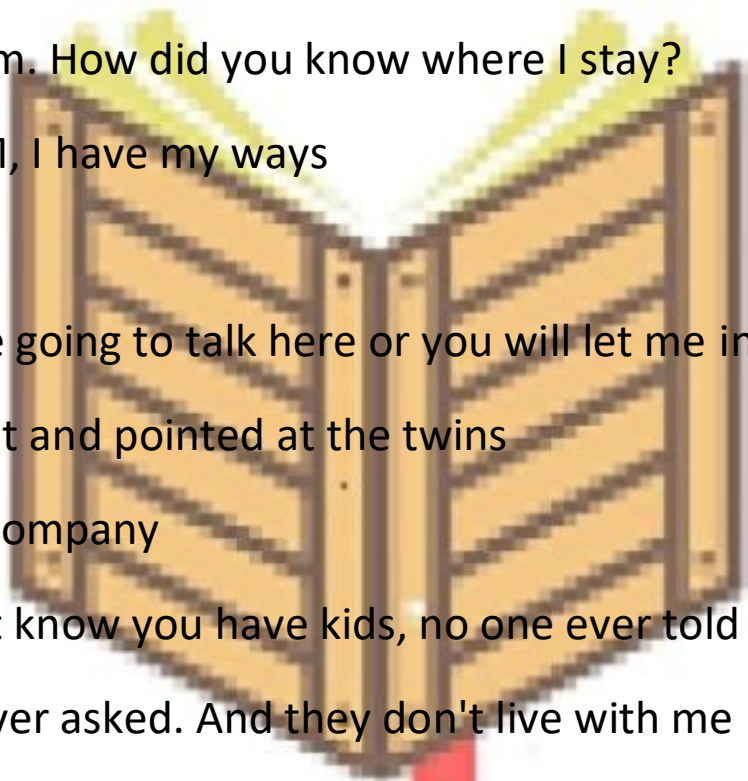
Me: You never asked. And they don't live with me

I wanted to laugh so badly but I couldn't spoil the fun. It's going to be a long interesting night. You have no idea Mr A

Me: I'll be back just now

I ran to the twins

Me: Quick question, do you still need me to convince your father on a vacation?



They looked at me and smiled

“We do” they said in unison

Me: You'll have that vacation but you will have to help me with something

Both: What?

Me: We are going to prank someone. We gonna make him believe you are my children, you game?

They gave me sneaky smile

I winked at them... I walked back to Ayden

Me: You can come in

Him: That took long

We walked back to the sitting room

Ayden stood there and looked at the twins

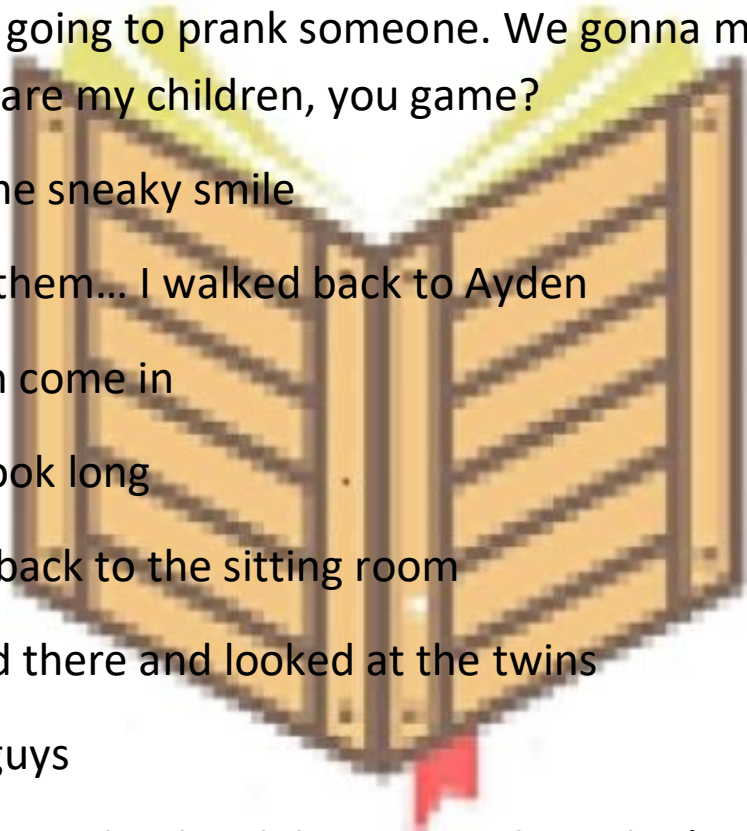
Him: Hello guys

The twins wanted to laugh but I gave them don't you dare stare

Tenda: Are you mommy's boyfriend?

Lex: But why are only seeing you now? Where have you been?

Tenda: Why are you just staring at us? Mommy, are we having another Giraffe dilemma



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That would be a shame. Mr A, the kids are talking with you  
Ayden didn't know what to say. He threw himself on the couch

Him: It's gonna be a long night

Tenda: Don't sit down, we are about to do something. Karaoke

Him: I can't sing. I don't know how to sing

Lex: Oh, do you have a sister by the name of Zoe?

Ayden looked at me

ELISA

I closed the door and took out my phone

I rang Mzoxolo

Me: Why are you calling me? Didn't I tell you not to?

Him: I mustn't call you because your ex-husband is around?

Me: You shouldn't call me because of that. I respect my space  
as much as you do with your wife Mzo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You led me on and when I need you, you are going to behave like a child? You better think twice Elisa

Me: Mzoxolo, I am not having this conversation with you. We will talk tomorrow

Him: Don't you dare hang up on me

Me: I will, and you won't do a thing about it

MIMI

I sat across my father

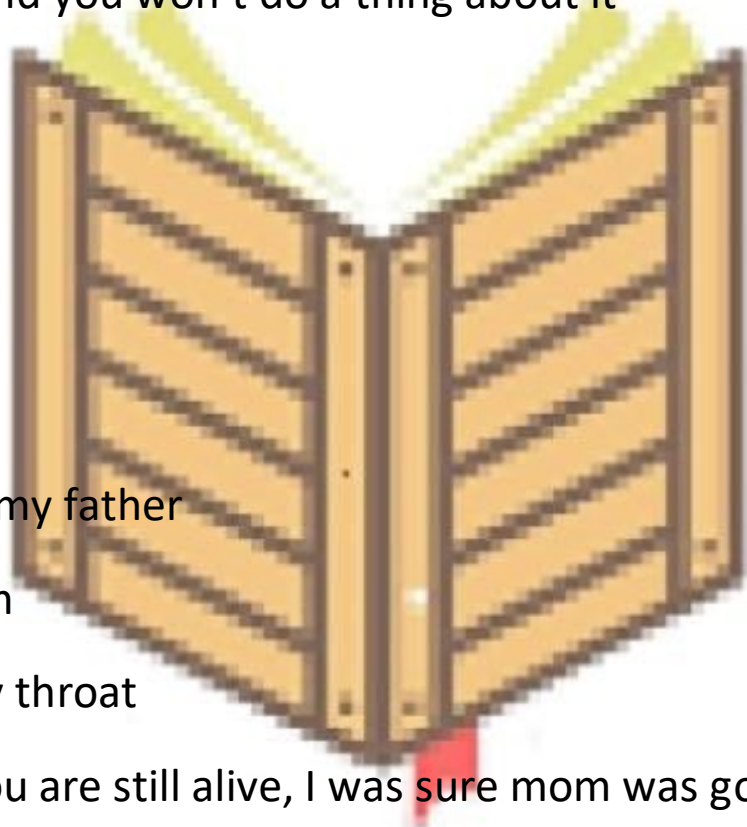
Me: So, uhm

I cleared my throat

Me: I see you are still alive, I was sure mom was going to murder you in cold blood

He laughed softly

Him: She was furious, she didn't want me anywhere close to her but out of the blue she was all friendly



NOVELSGURU.COM

That's my mother for you. Honestly speaking I don't know what my mother want in life and I am sure she doesn't know also. If dad asks her to resolve things with him she might agree; she is one confused woman. If the world was full of women like her men were really going to enjoy making us their doormat

Me: That's how she is

He laughed again

Me: It's really nice having you, it's a shame you are leaving soon

Him: When I get back you should come and visit

Me: We will

Him: Tell me-when are you getting married? Your sister already tried that before you

I laughed

Me: Married? Oh papa, not now



AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

I made a right choice to come by; Yara and the twins are life. I was exposed to another side of Yara I didn't know and that just made me fall in love with her more

Me: Thank you for tonight. I enjoyed it

Her: We did too

She looked at the twins

Them: Bye Uncle T

Me: Bye. If you ever need anything you know where to find me

Her: Did you really have to tell them that name?

Me: They loved the name

Her: Whatever. Let me walk you out

She closed the door

Me: I'll see you tomorrow

Her: Tomorrow it is Mr A

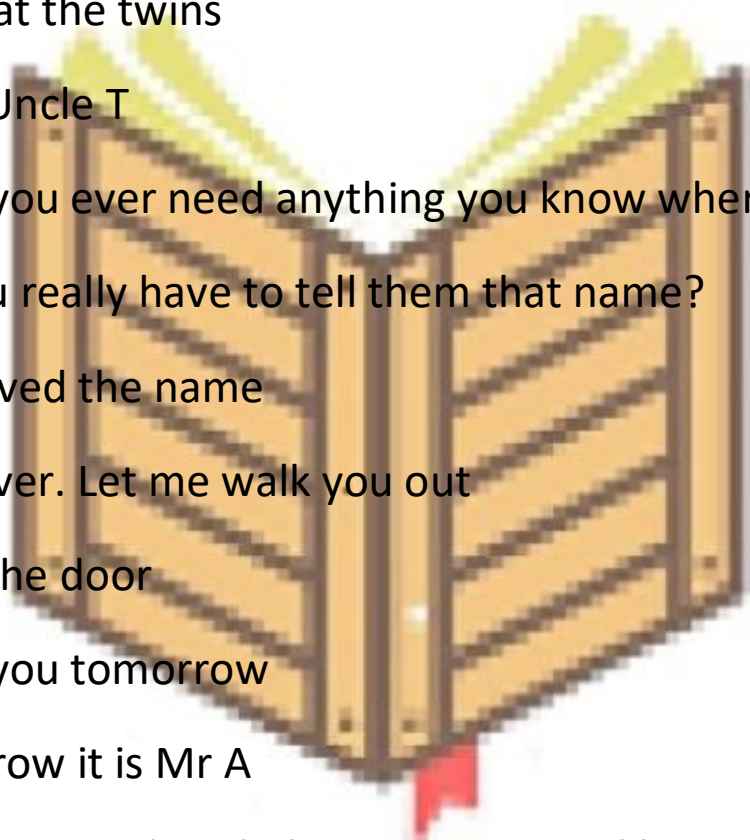
I stepped closer and circled my arms around her waist

Me: Is it fear I am sensing?

Her: Fear? Dream on

I leaned and kissed her

Me: Good night



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Good night. See you tomorrow

I nodded and smiled at her

She stood at the door and looked at me

Her: The twins aren't mine. I am just their guardian (Smiles) I wanted to test your parenting

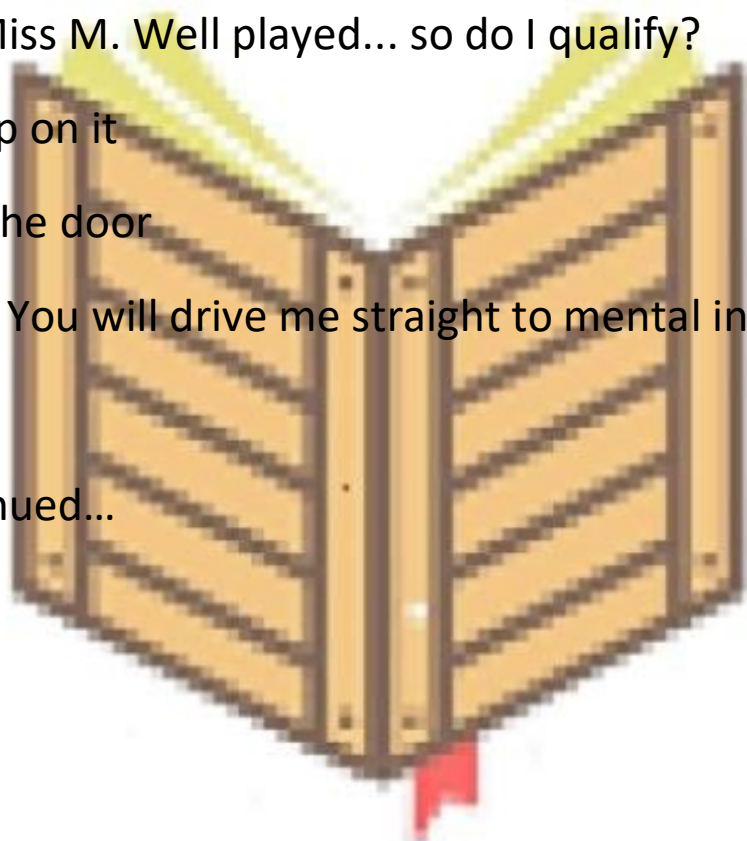
Me: Wow Miss M. Well played... so do I qualify?

Her: I'll sleep on it

She closed the door

Yara Masia! You will drive me straight to mental institution

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

After dropping the twins at school I decided to come and have a talk with Ethan. I didn't want to tell him over the phone was the twins have said to me. Hopefully this will give him peace

I sat across him

Me: I am glad I caught you before you leave for work

Him: Why didn't you call?

Me: You know me and chances

He laughed softly

Him: Nail and tooth. How was last night, didn't the twins give you hard time?

Me: Never, if anything we had great fun. And, I managed to break the ice

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He leaned forward and fixed his eyes on me

Me: They are being bullied. He has threatened Tenda several times using Lex

He massaged his forehead and exhaled



Him: Did he...

His voice cracked

Him: Did he manage to hurt Lex?

Me: I checked her last night; I didn't see anything but I think we must take her to the doctor. Just to be sure

Him: No, Yara! What if he has...?

Me: Ethan, No! Don't think about it. She would have told me

Him: I don't know anymore. So much has happened; I don't know what to believe. I saw Tenda's bruises, my poor kids

He stood up

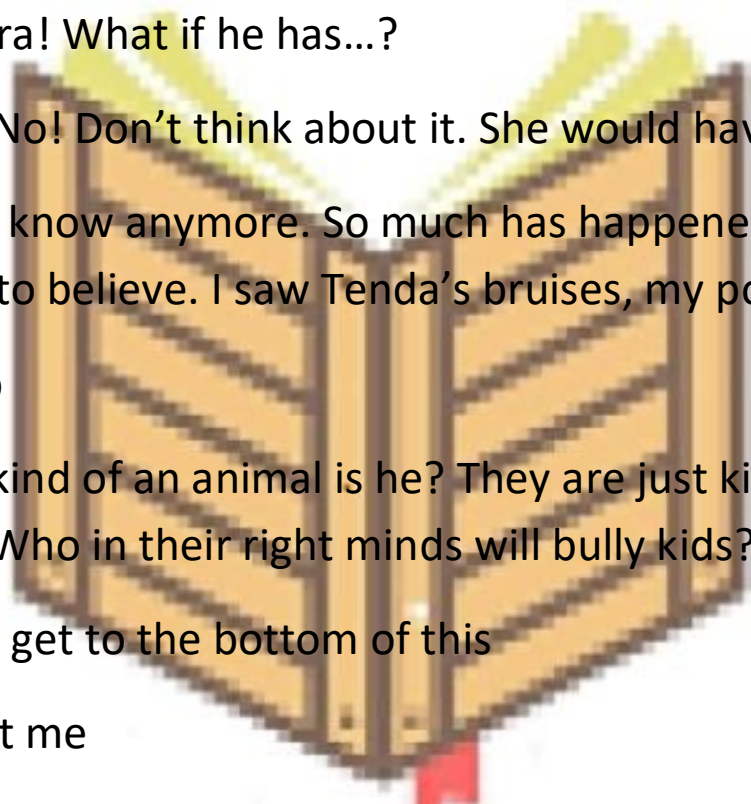
Him: What kind of an animal is he? They are just kids Yara, they are fragile. Who in their right minds will bully kids?

Me: We will get to the bottom of this

He looked at me

Him: Thank you Yara, you are really a blessing to us. Goldie didn't make a mistake when she chose you to watch over our twins. Thank you so much

I stood up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I do it with love; the twins are like my own children. I will die before anything happens to them. I promised Goldie and I will stand by my word

I hugged him

Me: You have to be strong for me. They can't see you like this, okay?

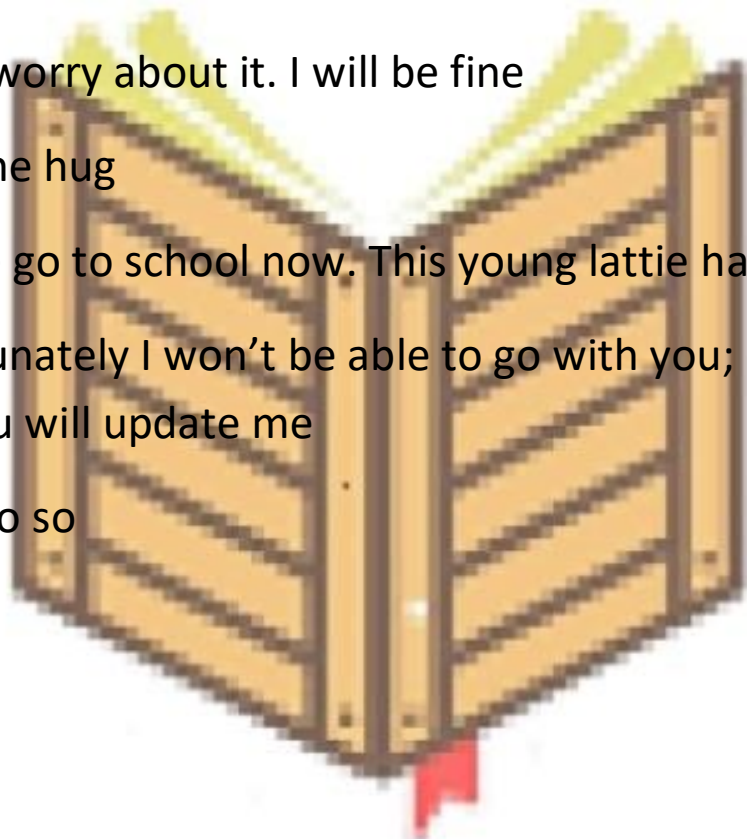
Him: Don't worry about it. I will be fine

We broke the hug

Him: Let me go to school now. This young lattie has to pay

Me: Unfortunately I won't be able to go with you; I have to go to work. You will update me

Him: I will do so



MIMI

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Buhle made her way to me

Her: The manager is calling you

Me: What for?

Her: I don't know. Go and find out

Me: Okay, fine

I turned around

My phone rang, it was Yara

Me: Butterfly

Her: Sisters, am I interrupting you?

Me: No, we can talk. What's up?

Her: I want you to call Ethan, he is not doing well. Your call could cheer him up

Me: What's wrong, I talked with yesterday

Her: The twins are being bullied and I told him this morning

Me: That's hectic. I will do so, thank you for telling me

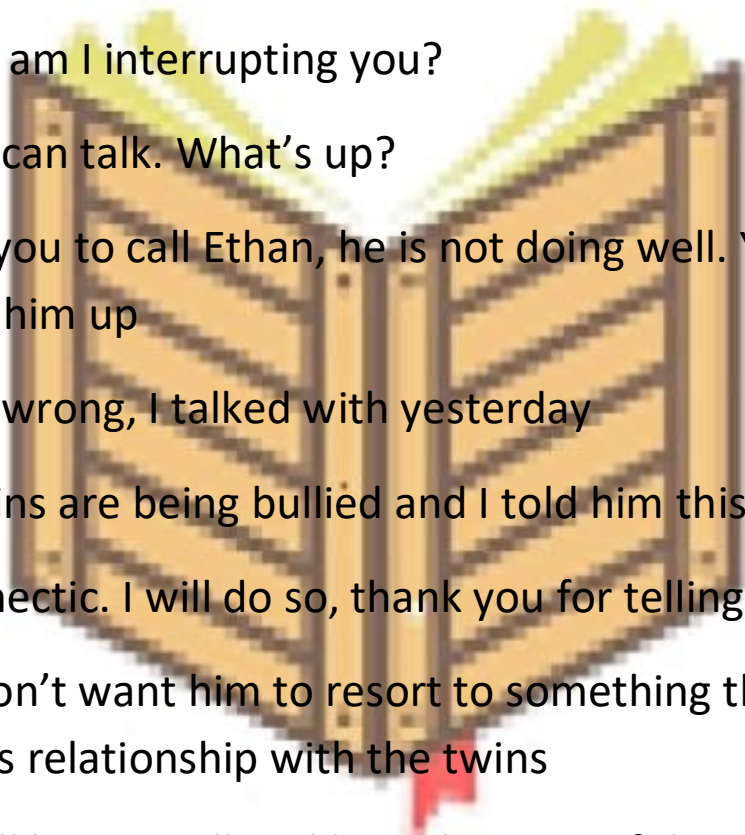
Her: I just don't want him to resort to something that can endanger his relationship with the twins

Me: I will call him. It will real hurt the twins if they see their father hurt and hopeless

Her: Exactly and we don't want that

Me: We certainly don't

Her: You will call him. I have to go now



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bye

She hung up

YARA

I shoved my phone in my pocket. I walked out of the elevator and made my way to Sphehile

She smiled when she saw me

Me: And that smug face?

Her: I have been waiting for you

Me: Why is that?

She gave me bouquet of red roses

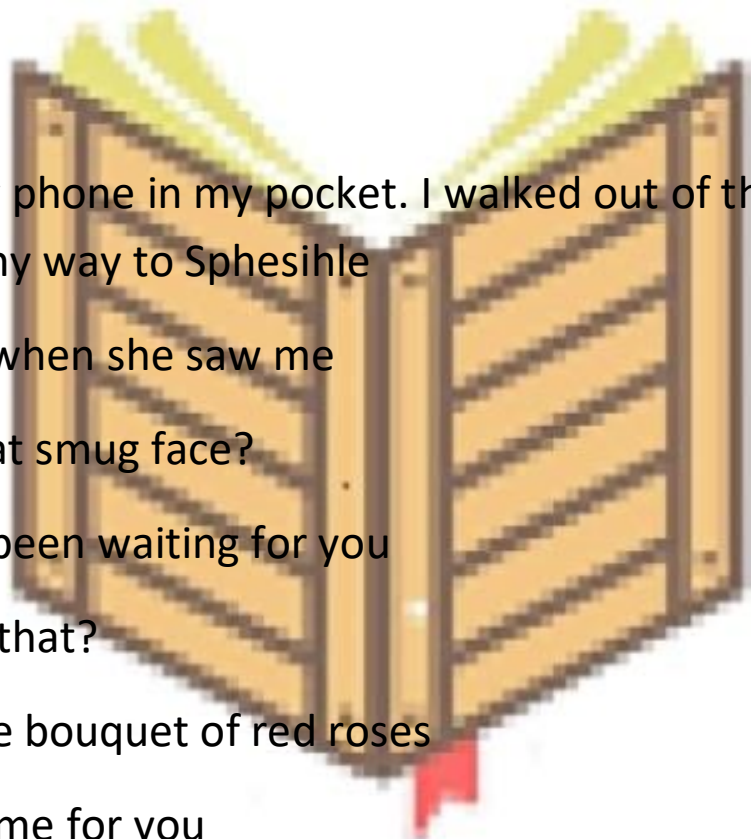
Her: This came for you

Me: Who delivers flowers so early in the morning?

Her: Definitely Mr Tshivhase

Me: You read the card? You so stupid Sphe

Her: I didn't. The delivery man told me, I only asked



NOVELSCURL.COM

I smiled

Flowers came with two cards. The first one read as follows:

|Thank you for last night. I wished it never end but all good things comes to an end|

I bit me lower lip and took the second one

|I am waiting for you in my office|

Her: And that smile?

Me: Shut up wena! I will see you

Her: Not even a tiny detail?

Me: Forget it!

Her: You will tell me (Smiles)

I smelled the roses and turned around

PANTHER

Me: Sthe, are you sure about what you are saying?

Him: Dead serious. I saw them making their way inside

Me: Thank you man

I rang Viper

Viper: Bro

Me: I got my eyes on the hotel that Old man is in



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: He is with the lady?

Me: Seems so...

Him: Wait for me

Me: No

Advertisement

don't come...

Him: I said, wait for me Lindokuhle! Don't go in there before I arrive

Me: Hurry up because I am about to kill someone

Him: Send me the address

AYDEN

Yara stood in front of my desk and fixed her gaze on me

Me: You not gonna say anything?

Her: I thought I already said, thank you

I stood up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: No, I was expecting...

Her: Mr A and expectations, not a good combo. Really!

Me: Whatever

I turned her around and made her look at me

Me: You beautiful

She smiled at the expense of revealing her dimple

Me: And she smiled at me

Her: Thank you Mr A but, you are making me nervous

Me: You, nervous? Now, that's a first

I ran the back of my finger on her face

Me: I have a confession...

Her: Confess all your sins, I am your Priest

Her sense of humour is out of this world

I took a deep breath and cupped her face

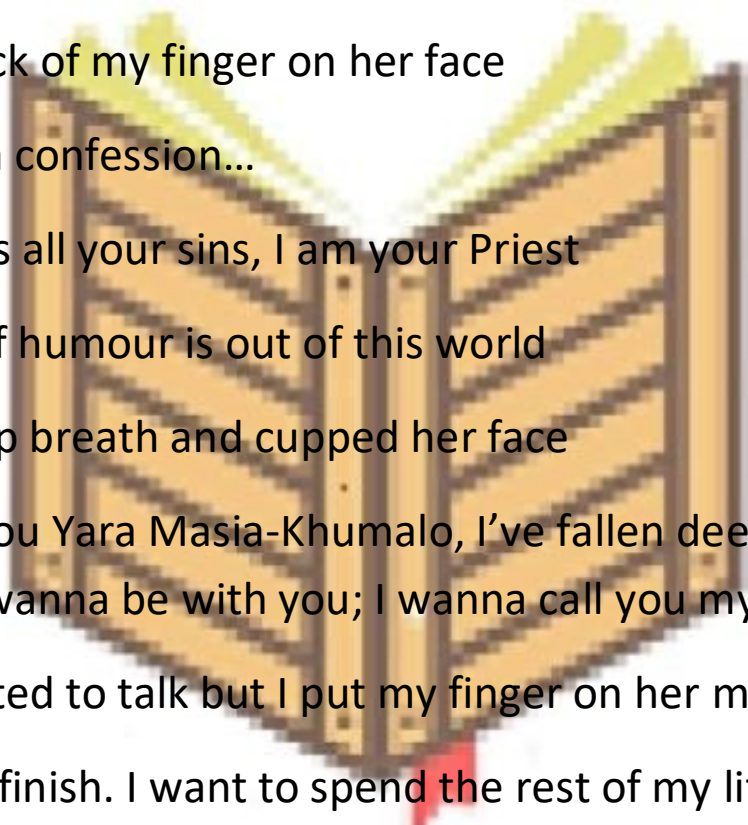
Me: I love you Yara Masia-Khumalo, I've fallen deeply in love with you. I wanna be with you; I wanna call you my girl

She attempted to talk but I put my finger on her mouth

Me: Let me finish. I want to spend the rest of my life with if possible; i really want to give us a chance. With that being said, will you be my girlfriend?

Her: No, I am sorry Mr A but I don't feel the same about you. Sorry if I led you on

I nodded slowly and took a step back



Me: Okay, well...

She took a step closer and pressed her lips against mine. So passionate

Her: I thought you will never ask Mr A. I love you too, and it's a big yes. I will be your girlfriend

Me: You need to stop doing this to me Miss M, you nearly sent me to an early grave

Her: You could have seen your face silly man (Laughs)

I picked her up and sat her on the table

Me: You are the silly one here

Her: That was my only chance to play you and I had to make it useful

Me: Thank you for allowing this silly man to take a ride with you on this love journey. I am going to love you so much

Her: You better; I mean I have two brothers who will break your neck if you try something...

Me: I will never

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: But, there's something I'd like us to talk about. I don't know if it's early but I'd like to start with it

I parted her legs and stood in between



Me: Go ahead

Her: The twins, I just want you to know that if we are doing this they will also be part of your life. They mean a lot to me and I will never compromise my relationship with them...

Me: That goes without saying

Her: Just like that?

Me: I did my homework and Panther has already filled me in. And I saw you guys last night, you share unconditionally love

Last night I went to Panther after spending the night with Yara, he told me everything concerning Yara and the twins. Their father also, so I know what I am getting myself into

Her: I expected a little bit of drama

Me: Have you ever seen me making drama?

To be continued...

NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

Viper was really taking his time to arrive. I don't think I have a minute to wait for him

Me: Sthe, you will tell my little brother to get inside when he arrive. I have no time to wait

Viper: I am here. Chill!

I turned around

Me: It was about time

He made his way to me

Viper: Where is your gun?

Me: Why are you asking?

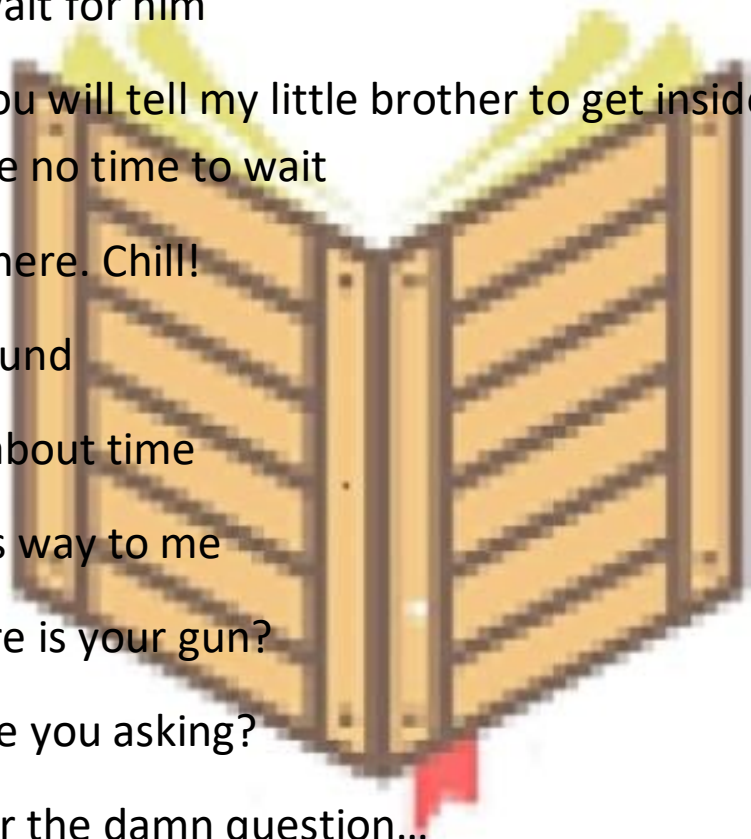
Him: Answer the damn question...

Me: I gave it to Sthe

Viper: Did he?

He looked at Sthe

Sthe: He did...



Viper: We are not going to kill anyone, okay?

Me: Not, promising anything. Now, let's go

He shrugged his shoulders

We made our way inside the hotel

Viper: Let me do the talking, please. I don't want us to get arrested or alerting Old man that we are here before we get to see who is in the room with him

I gave him a nod

We walked up to the reception

I let Viper talk with the receptionist, it's better I don't interfere. My eyes were running around the room

Viper: Let's go. Got the room number

Me: That was easy

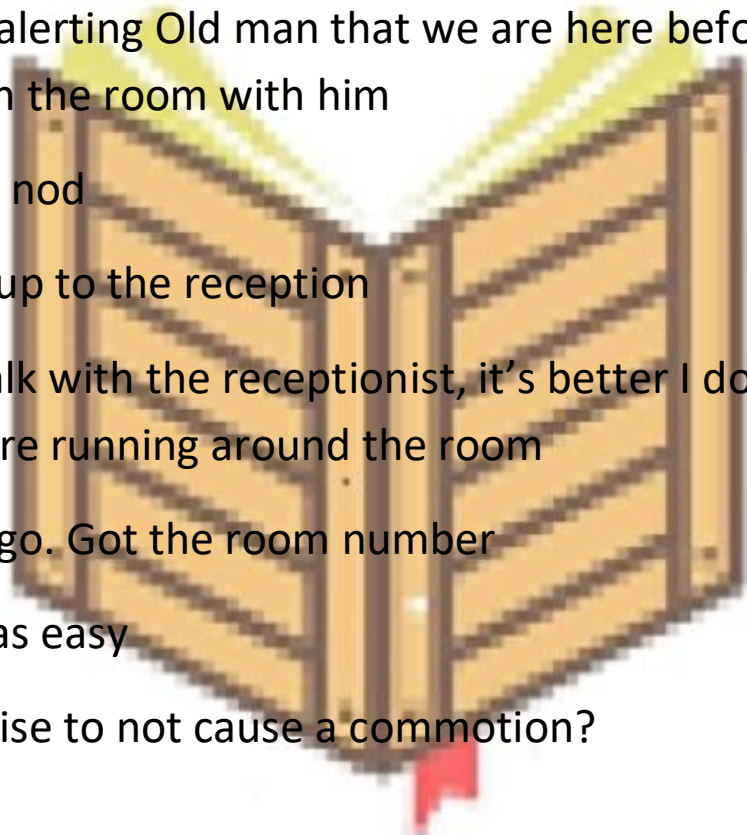
Viper: Promise to not cause a commotion?

Me: Okay...

Viper: Promise not okay

Me: Promise

We reached the door. I knocked softly on the door



After some seconds the door slowly opened... It was none other than Yara's mother

Me: Tell me I am dreaming

I pushed her out of the way

Me: Old man! (Yelling)

Elisa: We can explain!

Me: Old man, come here now! Viper call Yara

Viper: We are not involving her here

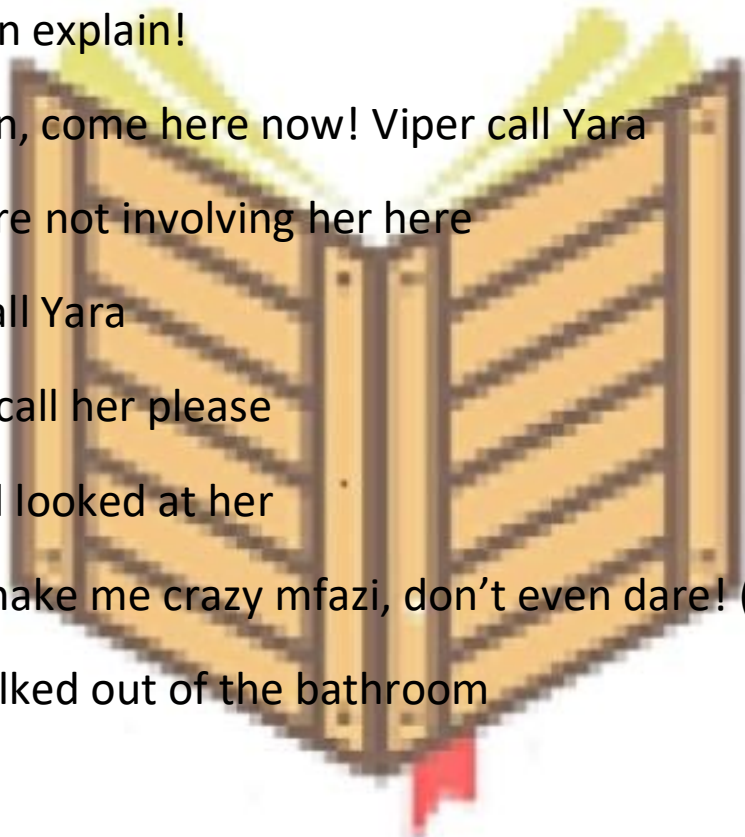
Me: I said call Yara

Elisa: Don't call her please

I turned and looked at her

Me: Don't make me crazy mfazi, don't even dare! (Shouts)

Old man walked out of the bathroom



YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got into Ayden's office

Me: The file you asked for

Him: Thank you. Did you manage to get hold of Mr K from MM motors?

Me: I did, I talked with his Assistant and she said you can come through today

Him: Okay, thank you

Me: I'll be in my office. Ring me if you want something

He winked at me

My cell phone rang, it was Viper

Me: Bro

Viper: I am sending an address, please get here

Me: Is everything okay?

Viper: Just get here sister

Me: Okay, fine

I hung up

Ayden stood up

Him: What's wrong?

I pointed at my phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That was Viper, he urgently need me to come where he is.  
Should I be worried?

Him: No, I don't think so

Me: He sounded somehow though

Him: Your brother is like that

(Message alert)

Me; Let me get going. He sent me the address

He kissed my forehead

Him: I'll see you later

Me: Bye

I ran my legs out of the office



MIMI

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

The door opened

The manager stood by the door

Him: You can come in

I stood up and walked inside

Him: Sorry for keeping you wait. The meeting took longer than I expected

Me: It's okay

Him: Please take a seat

I took a deep breath

Him: Okay Miss Masia, let me get straight to the point. I've been observing you for a while now and I have to say I am impressed by your work

Me: Thank you

Him: Out of all the waiters in this hotel you and Buhle are the best. You haven't been working here for long but you've showed your skills. In just short period of time you showed your value in this hotel. Not only are you a team-player but a hard worker as well. And I like that about you both. With that being said, I'd like to call Buhle in. I've already briefed her but I think both of you will need to hear the news together

Me: Okay Mr Peterson

He called someone to call Buhle

I am so scared, I don't know what the speech is about and I hope we are not getting fired

Minute later Buhle walked in

Buhle: Morning Sir

Him: Please take a seat Miss Bhengu

Buhle glanced at me

Him: Okay, let me not waste time. I've talked with both of you as individual and I've said what I wanted to, now let me break the suspense. Miss Masia and Miss Bhengu you are both promoted

We looked at each other

Me: Thank you for the promotion Mr Peterson

Buhle: Thank you so much

Him: You earned it; you've shown me how dedicated you are. Not even my staff has showed me the passion you have showed me, you love your job and you deserve the credit

Me: Would it not cause conflict with other waiters? I mean we just started working at the hotel a month ago

Him: No one question my decisions, you will be fine

Buhle: We understand

Him: As you've heard our Head waiter and Housekeeping manager are being transferred to the hotel that is in Polokwane. Miss Masia you are now Head waiter and Miss



Bhengu you are now Housekeeping manager. Training will be provided to you

Advertisement

you will be notified about that

He opened his cabinet and took out two envelopes

Him: Read this through and sign

Me: We thank you

He gave us a slight nod

Him: Don't disappoint me. I trust you both

PANTHER



Me: Old man, what are you doing with her?

Old man: Let's go home and talk about this

Me: No, we are talking about this now

I looked at Elisa

Me: And you, you are the woman behind my mother's tears. How do you sleep knowing that another woman is crying because of you? Tell me!

Viper: Old man, I am disappointed in you

(Knock on door)

Viper: Must be Yara

Elisa: Oh my God. What have I gotten myself into?

Yara walked in

Yara: What is going on her? Mama, I didn't know you were here

Viper: Baby sis, we've invaded Old man and your mother's space

Yara: What are you saying?

Me: He is saying; your mother is sleeping with my father! She is breaking my mother's marriage with the help of this punk

Yara chuckled softly

Yara: There's no way mom can do that. She knows better than to come between two people who are in a marriage. Right, mom?

Elisa looked down

Yara: Mom! You really are?

Old man: Baby, listen to me...

He tried to touch Yara

Yara: Don't touch me. Dad, why? Ma Khumalo loves you, what are you doing with my mother?

Old man: It just happens, old feelings came back

Me: You said what?

Viper stood in front of me

Me: Move aside Craig

AYDEN

My mother sat across me

Me: I didn't know you were coming

Her: What are you hiding?

Me: Nothing. You came all the way to ask what I am hiding

Her: No, I came to see if my company is still standing

Me: I am not capable of doing harm to your company Mimsey



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Where is your Assistant? She should be bringing us drinks.  
I am thirsty

Me: She is out

Her: Out? Do we pay her to gallivant during work hours?  
Unbelievable!

Me: She is my assistant not yours. What she does is none of  
your business

Her: I am the one paying her not the other way around

Me: I can still pay her from my pocket Mimsey

Her: I must have a word with her. Anyway, have you talked with  
Aurora since she left?

Me: What for?

Her: Just to check on her

Me: I think you've overstayed your visit

Her: You haven't

Me: Mimsey, I have a girlfriend. Read my lips G-I-R-L-F-R-I-E-N-  
D I don't care about you Jewel daughter-in-law

YARA

I looked at my mother

Me: Mama, how can you embarrass me like this? Why? I just found my brothers and already you are on a mission to ruin our relationship

Ma: We can talk about this at home Yara. Not here, please!

Me: I have nothing to say to you. I can't even look at you, I am disgusted

Old man: Yara! She is still your mother

Panther tried to move to him but Viper stopped him

Panther: I am going to kill you Mzo

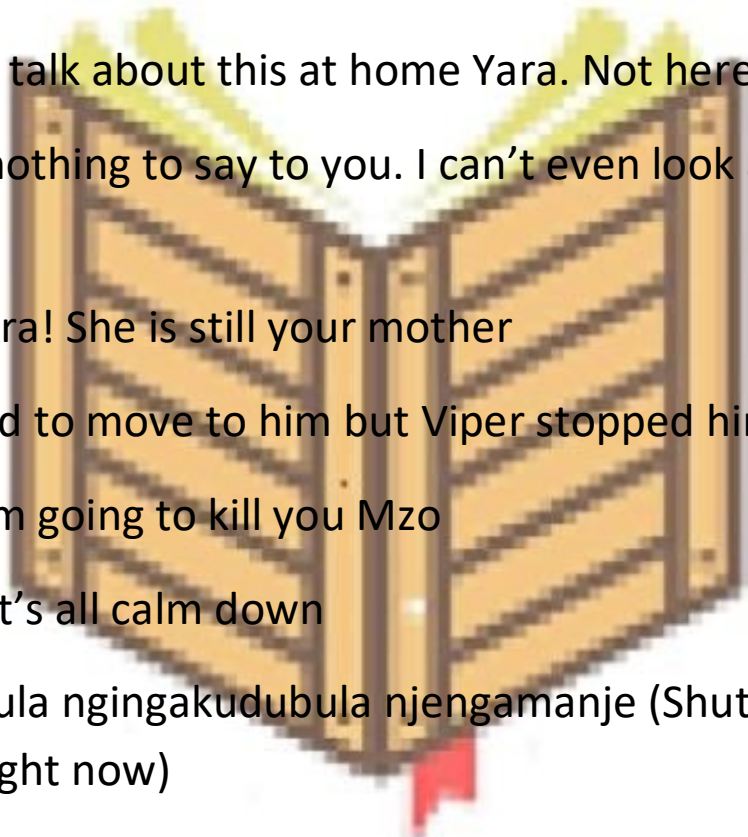
Old man: Let's all calm down

Panther: Thula ngingakudubula njengamanje (Shut up, I can shoot you right now)

Old man: Let's go! My daughter we will talk about this but right now, take your mother home with you

Panther jumped on the bed and rolled to the other side. He took the gun that was on the bedside

Viper: Lindokuhle, hold up. We talked about this



Panther: You talked and, I listened! Your father is cheating on my mother and I am not going to sit and enjoy his shit

Me: But you can't shoot him. He is still our father

Panther: Do I look like I care?

Panther was breathing fire; right now I can see why he got the name Panther. He is unstoppable and he is about to attack

Panther: My mother is crying because of them

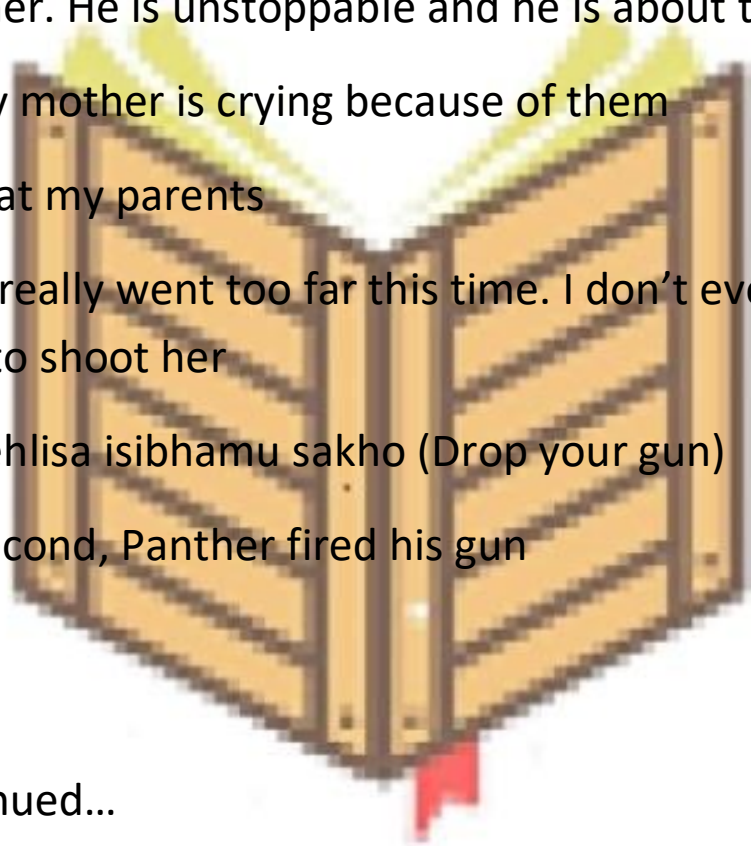
He pointed at my parents

My mother really went too far this time. I don't even if Panther is planning to shoot her

Old man: Yehlisha isibhamu sakho (Drop your gun)

In split of second, Panther fired his gun

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

43

YARA

I opened my eyes and everyone was still fine

He shot into space. I took a deep breath

Panther: Next time I won't miss. I will blow your brains

He threw the gun on the bed and walked out

Viper: I will call you. I have to check on him

Me: It's okay. Please, don't lose sight of him

Viper: I will not

He looked at Old man and clicked his tongue

Me: You two, talk now! What is the meaning of this nonsense?

Mama!

Her: Things were not supposed to get out of control Yara; it was just an innocent get together. We were going to stop with the affair; in fact that's why we are here

Old man: She is right. I called her here to end things

Me: And, this was the best place to meet? The hotel? You can't fool me

My mother sat on the edge of the bed

Her: It's the truth, you have to believe me

Me: Believing you is the last thing on my mind right now.  
You've disappointed me and I don't know even know how I am  
going to face my brothers after this

Old man: Don't worry about those two, they love you too  
much. Nothing will come between you and them

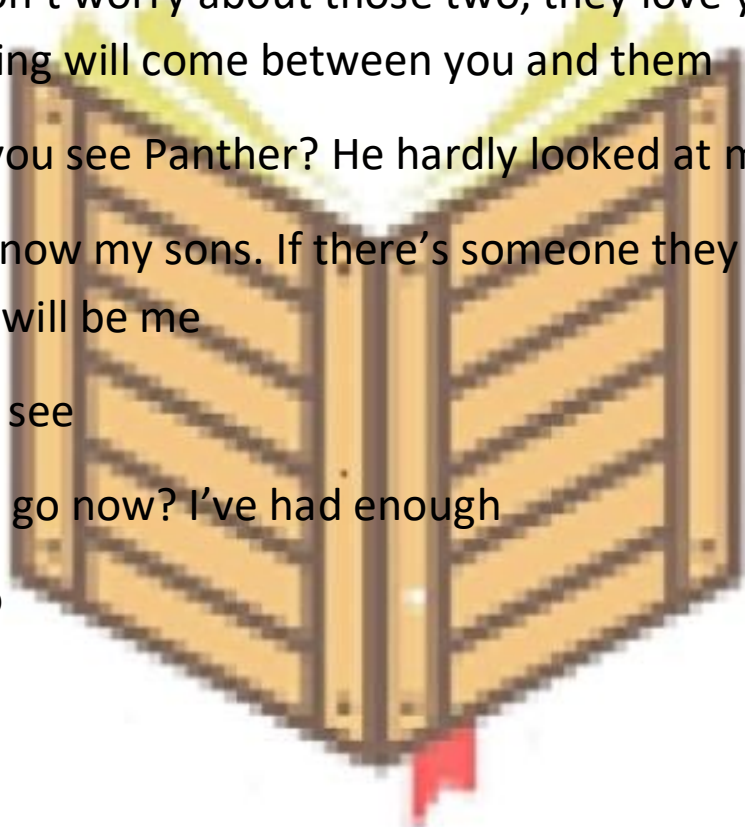
Me: Didn't you see Panther? He hardly looked at me

Old man: I know my sons. If there's someone they are angry at  
that person will be me

Me: We will see

Her: Can we go now? I've had enough

Me: Let's go



MIMI

NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at the contract and smiled

Me: I still can't believe we are promoted. It feels unreal



Buhle sat down

Her: It does. Talking about second chance in life

Me: Repeat that out loud. God came through for us once again

Her: He did. Let me go and call my mother, she will be so happy

She stood up

Me: If I was your mother, I'd be happy also

She laughed

I closed my eyes and said a little prayer. I will never mess this up

(Cell phone rings) it was Yara

Me: You read my mind I was about to call you...

Her: Still at work?

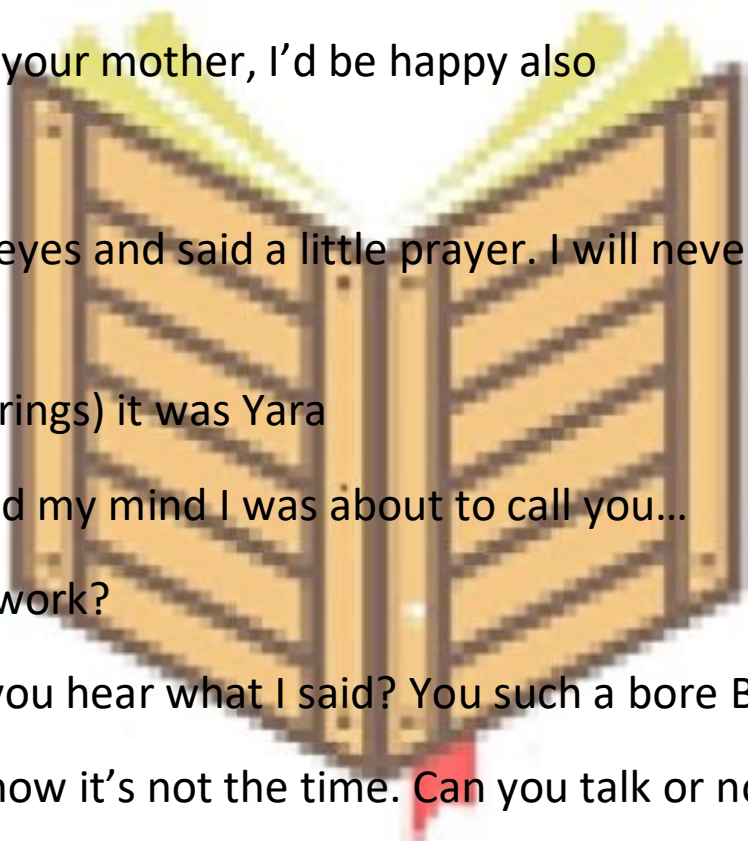
Me: Didn't you hear what I said? You such a bore Butterfly

Her: Mimi, now it's not the time. Can you talk or not?

Me: I am at work. Are you fine?

Her: Your mother happened...

Me: What did she do now? Elisa and drama are slowly becoming friends



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: One word, Mzoxolo. Can you believe she was seeing him behind our backs?

I warned her, did she listen? NO! Now, Yara is caught in cross fire

Me: How did you find out?

Her: Mimi, you knew about this?

Me: Butterfly, I didn't want to cause unnecessary fights. I talked with mom and she agreed to call it quits with him. I couldn't burden you with the news when you've recently make up with mom

Her: She clearly didn't listen to you because the Khumalo brothers found them in the hotel room. Together! I've never been this embarrassed in my whole life Mimi

Me: Your brothers did?

Her: Didn't you hear what I've said? Panther almost killed us  
I laughed softly

Me: Stop exaggerating, how can he do such a thing?

Her: Hee mfazi, your mother will tell you all about it. I almost shit on myself

Me: Yoh!

Her: Enough about that, I have news for you

Me: I do too

Her: My place, later?

Me: Yes. I'd bring wine

Her: Sharp. I love you

Me: I love you too

I hung up

Me: Elisa is a drama and half

I clapped my hands and laughed

At her age, I would be ashamed if I was her

VIPER



My mother held her cup between both hands and sobbed

Her: What have I done wrong to deserve this Craig?

Me: You did nothing mama

Her: Then why did he do this to me? I forgave him once but I don't think I'd be able to forgive him again. This time I can't

Me: Dad really went too far and I don't care what his reasons are. What he did was selfish and inconsiderate

Her: It's clear he doesn't want me anymore and I will not force my stay where I am not welcomed

Me: What are you saying?

She set her cup on the table

Her: This marriage

Advertisement

is it worth fighting for? Your father is failing to respect this marriage let alone me. The fact that he went back to the woman he cheated with years back proves that he doesn't care

Voice: I do care

I turned my head slightly

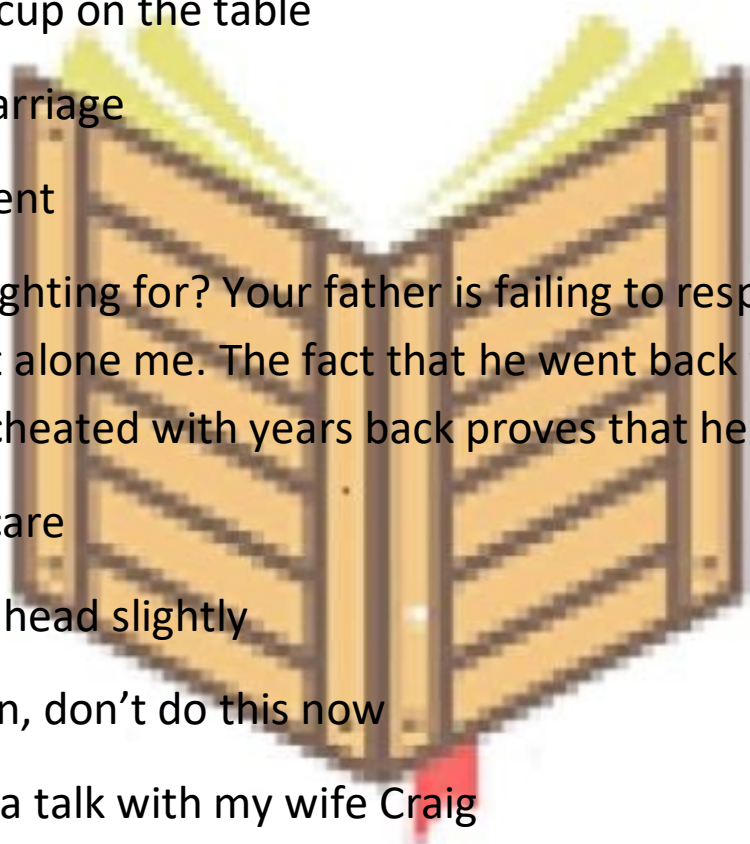
Me: Old man, don't do this now

Him: I wanna talk with my wife Craig

Her: Craig is right, not now. I have no energy to talk about this

He knelt before her

Him: Forgive me Ma Khumalo. I made a mistake but I apologize for it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You are apologizing again? You apologized years back and see how that turns out

I looked at them

I really don't know what I will do if I find out Arabella is cheating on me. Cheating is not a mistake but a choice that is well planned. When you decide to engage into another relationship whilst you have a partner surely point out the kind of person you are and what you stand for in a relationship. Old man can sweeten his words in every angle but it's quite obvious he doesn't respect his vows

YARA

I stood at the door and looked at the lady who is touring in my space

Her face looks familiar, I wonder if she is one of Ayden's clients. But, I would know after all I am the one who organise his diary

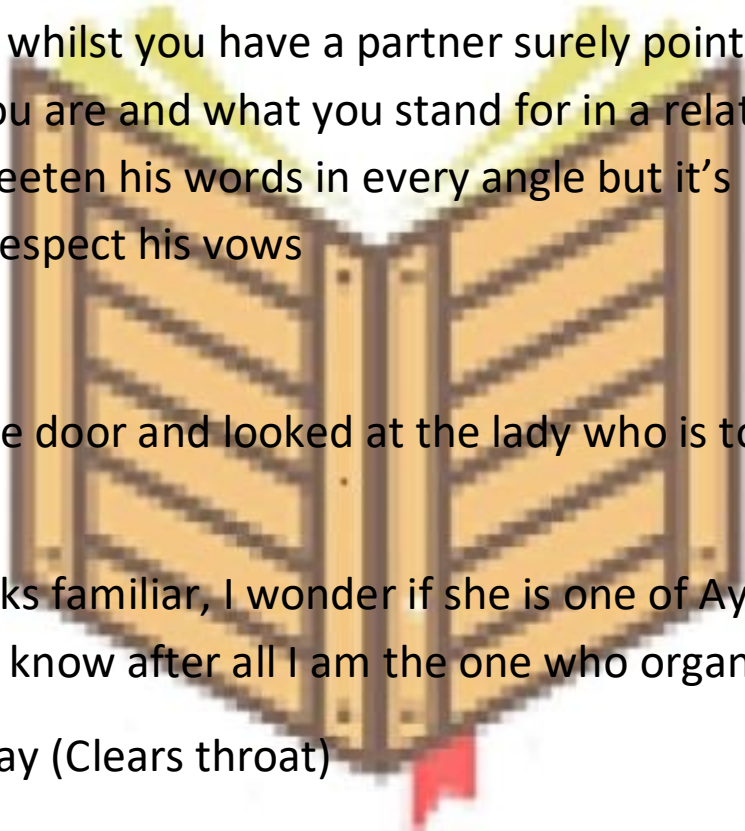
Me: Good day (Clears throat)

She turned around and looked at me

Her: You are back; I thought I'd leave without seeing you

She smelled money! She made sure I noticed each and every thing about her

I walked inside



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How can I help you?

Her: "How can I help you?"

She mimicked my voice

Me: Sorry ma'am but I just wanted to know if I can assist you with something. You are in my office and I assumed you needed help

Her: Mrs Tshivhase

She extended her hand towards me

Me: Mrs Tshivhase? As in the owner of the company?

She smiled faintly

Her: And, you must be my son's assistant?

Me: You got that right ma'am

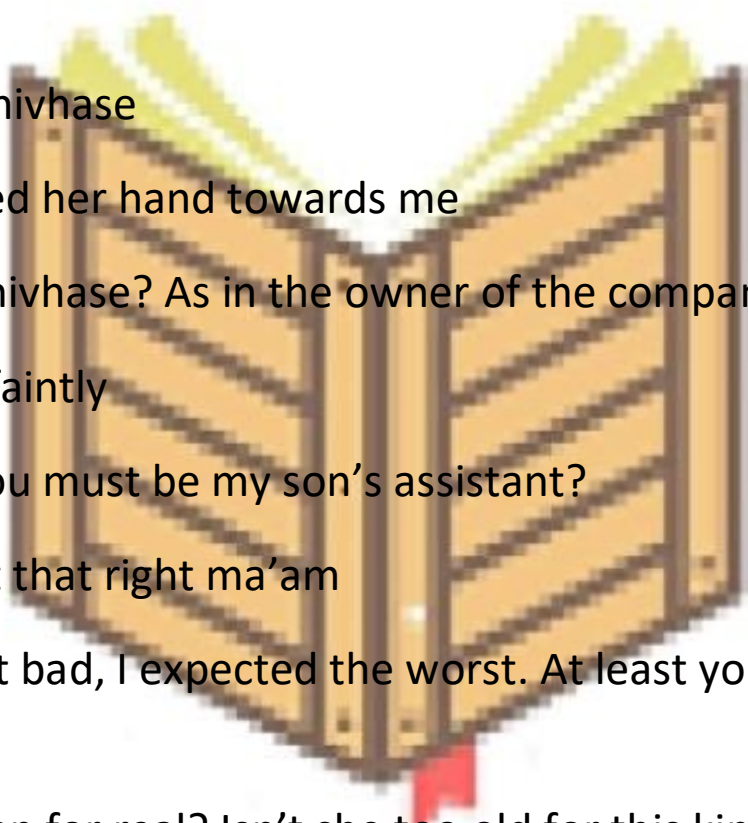
Her: You not bad, I expected the worst. At least you lighten up the office

Is this woman for real? Isn't she too old for this kind of games?

Her: Is that a compliment Mrs Tshivhase? Because if it is, then thank you Mrs Tshivhase

The telephone rang... I walked to my desk

Me: Miss Masia speaking, how can I help?



Ayden laughed softly

Him: I was taking a chance. When did you return?

Me: I just got back. And I can't talk Mr A, I have a visitor. Mrs Tshivhase is here

Him: My mother? Oh, please tell me she hasn't said anything offensive

Me: I don't know about that

I faked a smile and looked at her

Him: I am coming

Me: No, don't. I am sure Mrs Tshivhase will be gone soon

Him: Okay, if she doesn't. Call me

Me: I will. Bye

I hung up

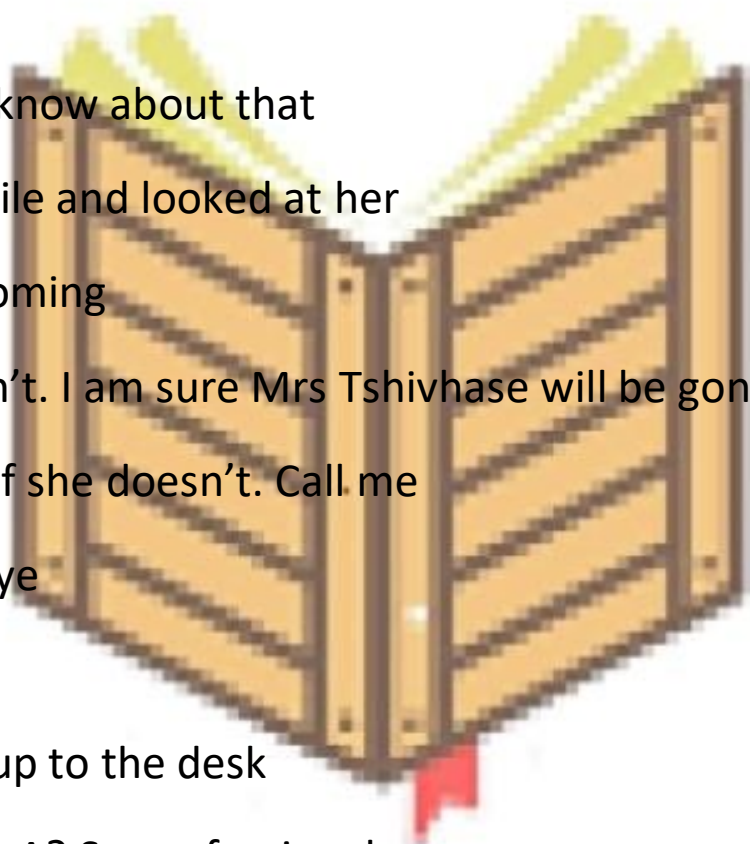
She waked up to the desk

Her: Mh, Mr A? So professional

I kept quiet. I honestly don't know what to say

ELISA

I threw myself on the couch and put my face on a cushion



NOVELSGURU.COM

Elisa! Why can't you close your legs and act like a woman?  
Today was the last straw, if I need prayers I will seek them

Ed: What did you do this time?

I raised my head

Me: What made you think I did something?

Him: Because I know that reaction, I've seen it before

I sat up straight

Me: Can you please be honest with me?

He leaned against the wall

Me: Do you think I am a bad and selfish mother?

Him: Yes, you are

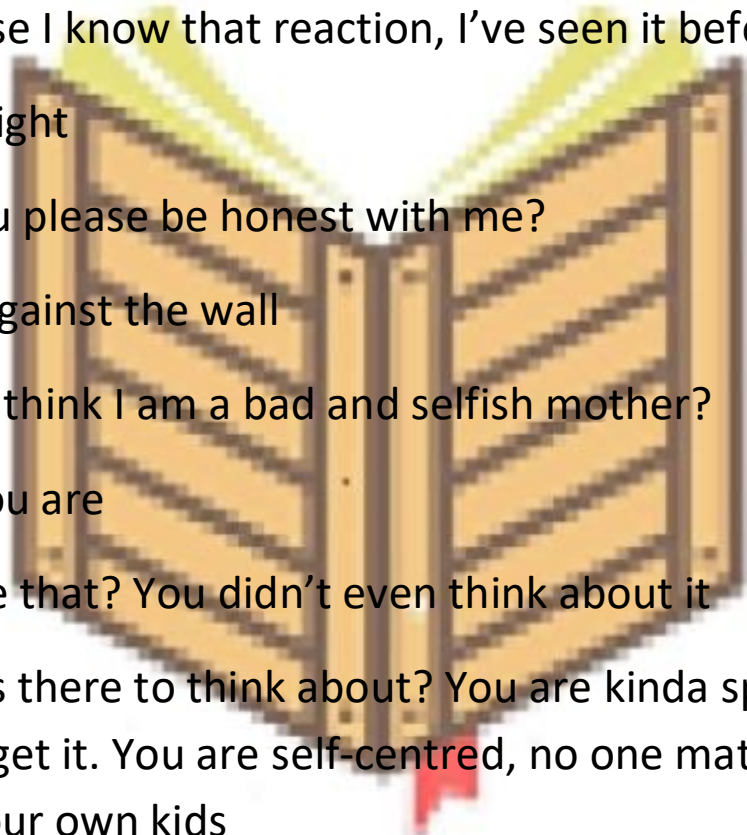
Me: Just like that? You didn't even think about it

Him: What's there to think about? You are kinda spoiled Elisa  
and I don't get it. You are self-centred, no one matters to you.  
Not even your own kids

Me: I didn't say be harsh with words

Him: You do the things you do because people shy away from  
telling you the truth. It is sour to swallow but you need to hear  
it. Maybe it will help you change

Me: Maybe I am possessed





He laughed

Him: You are not possessed. You don't want to agree that you are old. Your children should be pampering you whilst you prepare yourself to be a grandmother not the things you are doing

I kept quiet

Him: What happened?

Me: I recently started seeing Mzoxolo and the kids found out today

Him: Yara too?

Me: Yes

Him: Oh Elisa, why do you keep on exposing my daughter to your mess?

He yelled at me



To be continued... **NOVELSGURU.COM**

44

YARA

Ayden pulled a chair and sat down

Him: Come sit

Me: Sit where?

Him: On my lap

Me: Anyone can walk on us Ayden

Him: It's after hours and I need my girl next to me. Is that a sin?

I rolled my eyes

I sat on his lap

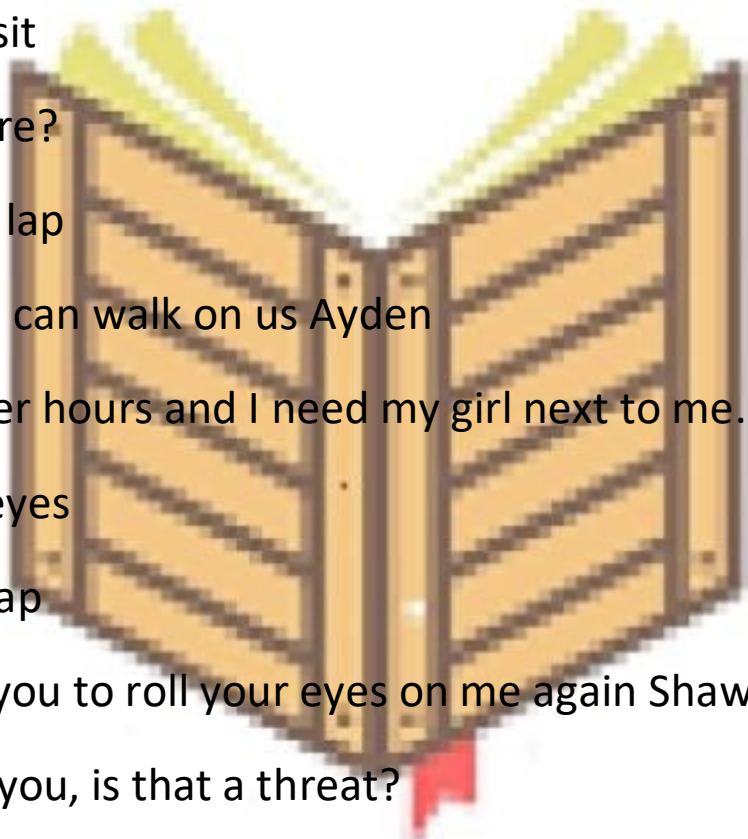
Him: I dare you to roll your eyes on me again Shawty

Me: Excuse you, is that a threat?

Him: I don't do threats

He kissed my hand

Him: How did it go with your brothers? Did you sort whatever issues he has called you for?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I can't tell Ayden about what happened, it's still early to pour out such matters

Me: We did

Him: I am glad

Me: Now, can we talk about your mother?

Him: What about her?

Me: I have a feeling she doesn't like me and she doesn't even know that I am your girlfriend. I am even scared to think what is going to happen when she comes to know

Him: Look at me Shawty

I looked at him

Him: Mimsey won't do anything to you, I give you my word. She will never come between what we have because I will not allow it. No one will ever disrespect you

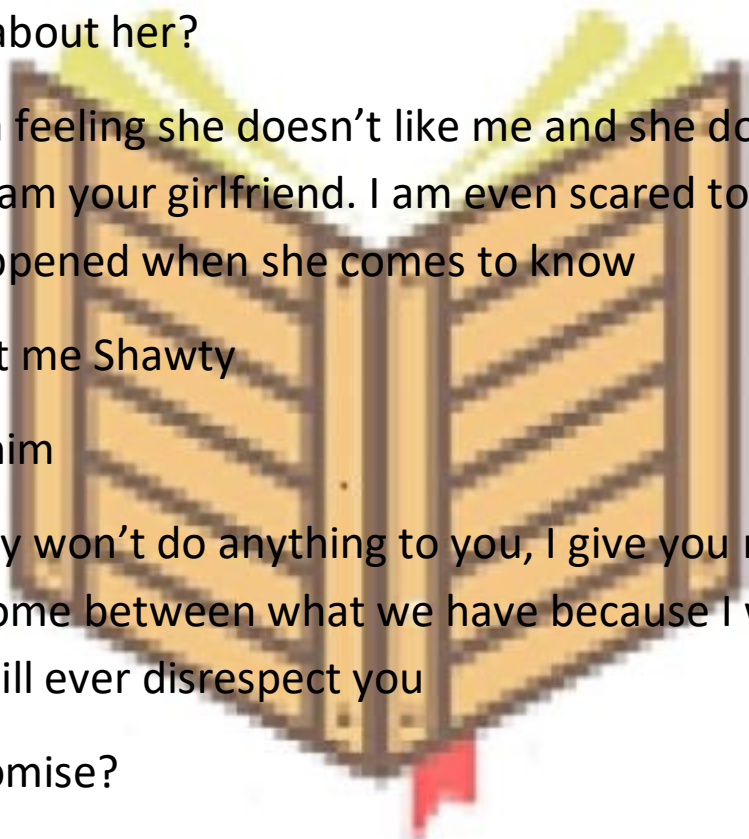
Me: You promise?

Him: I do. My mother will soon know about us and when she does I will make sure you are protected. Okay?

Me: Okay babe

Him: I love you

Me: I lost my heart on you



NOVELSGURU.COM

MIMI

I laid my back on the bed

I took my phone and video call Ethan. Alexa answered

Me: Hello baby

Her: Hello Aunt Mimi

Me: How are you?

Her: I am good and you?

Me: I am fine. Where is daddy?

Her: He is preparing food for us

Me: Can you please go and give him the phone?

Her: Yes Aunt Mimi

I sometimes wonder if I will ever live to Yara's care and love for the twins. The love they share is out of this world and I will never compete with that kind of love. But, what's important is being loved and accepted by them

Ethan came to the phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Cuddles

Me: Hey, sorry to disturb you. I should have texted

Him: It's okay

He sat on the couch

Me: How did the meeting go? Yara told me what happened

Him: I talked with the Principal. She told me the name of the kid and they have written a letter to his parents

Me: I am sorry this is happening to the twins

Him: We will get through this. At least now we know what is going on, this Shane kid will be punished for his actions

Me: He must

Him: Are you ready for tomorrow?

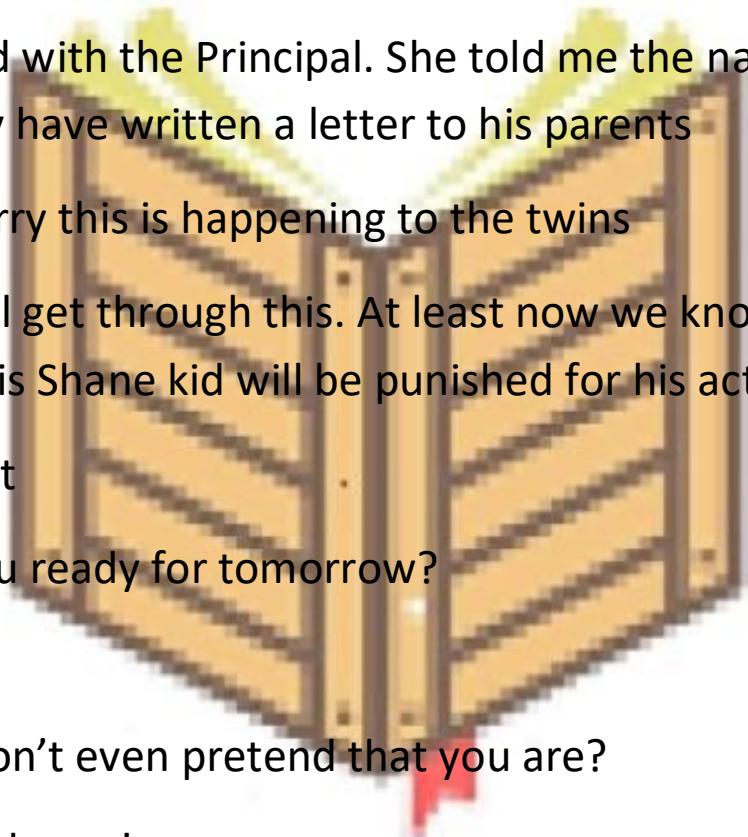
Me: No

Him: You won't even pretend that you are?

Me: Hell to the no!

He chuckled softly

I wanted to tell him the news about my promotion but I didn't wanna risk it. He might let it slip and tell Yara, I wanna be the first one to tell her



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I walked out of the bathroom. My body needed that shower... I stretched my arms and yawned

Me: I could sleep for hours!

My phone rang on the nightstand. It's my mother

Me: Mama

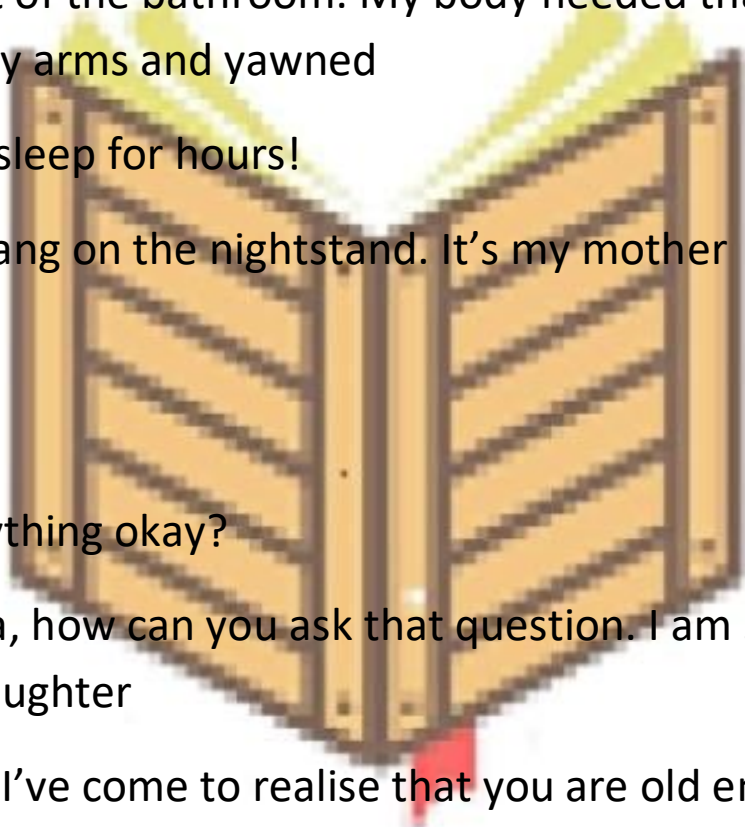
Her: Yara

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: Ha Yara, how can you ask that question. I am still feeling guilty my daughter

Me: Mama, I've come to realise that you are old enough to make your own decisions. I just wish you don't embarrass us while you make them

Her: I know because of me, you might have lost your brothers but I want to assure you that I will never do anything to compromise your life and Mimi's. From now onwards I will think before I act, I promise you

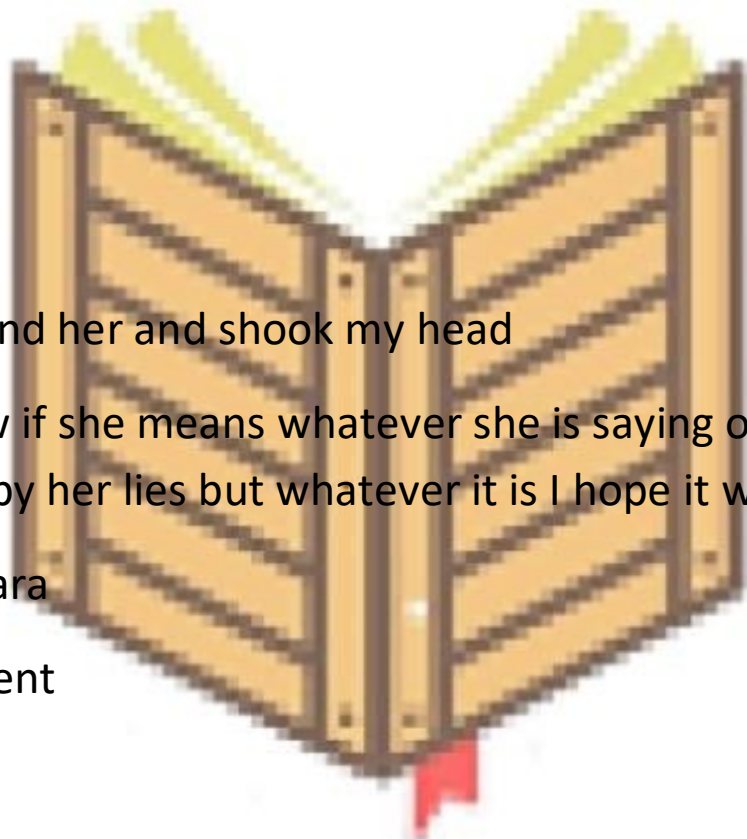


NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Like I said Mama, you are old enough and I won't be holding your hand. That I won't do

Her: I know and I also know it will take time before you trust me but I am willing to wait. I will never embarrass you

MIMI



I stood behind her and shook my head

I don't know if she means whatever she is saying or she is just blinding us by her lies but whatever it is I hope it works for her

Ma: Okay Yara

Advertisement

we will talk

She hung up

I cleared my throat

Me: You are acting fresh

She turned her head slightly

Ma: I am not

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Where is dad?

Ma: He went out. He said something about visiting his friends since he is leaving tomorrow

Me: Oh, I see. Anyway I have news to share with you

Ma: Tell me


Me: I've been promoted at work

She stood up and hugged me

Ma: Oh my daughter, that's nice. Glory to God and may He bless you as you embark on this new level

Me: Thank you Mama

ETHAN



I was reading some articles about children that are being bullied at schools. The number is scary, it sadden me that some kids don't know peace because of this bullies. I can't stand the injustice that these schools are giving to these poor kids. The cases always go cold and I fail to understand how it is possible... The Principal gave me the name and surname of the boy that is



abusing my twins. It wasn't hard finding who he is; his father is a well-known man. Cowen Bopape, an entrepreneur

Me: What kind of father are you to raise an animal?

VIPER

I circled my arms around Arabella's waist

Me: How was your day?

Her: It was fine and yours?

Me: Drama only. We found the woman that was/is seeing Old man

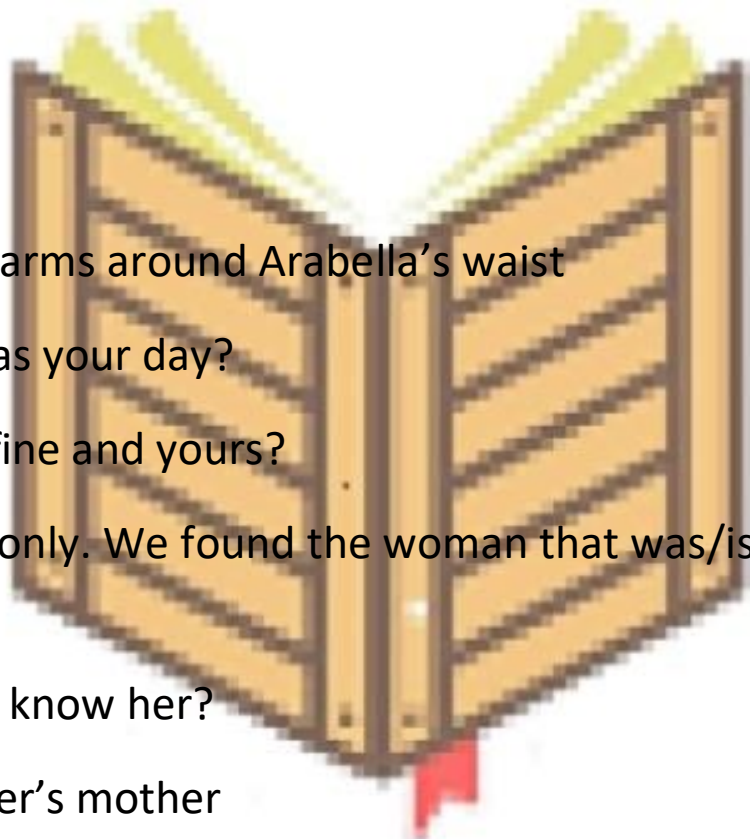
Her: Do you know her?

Me: My sister's mother

Her: Your sister as in Yara?

Me: Yes. I've never seen my mother so broken; I seriously don't think she will bounce from this betrayal

Her: She has no shame, how can she do this to another woman? Haa she's shameless



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We can't blame her alone honey, my father is to blame too

Her: I know he is but as a woman she could have put herself in your mother's shoes and imagined the pain she's going to feel when she finds out

Me: I truly hope they stop with this affair

Her: Where is Lindokuhle in all of this?

Me: We don't know where he is. I last seen him when we left the hotel, I tried calling him but he's rejecting my calls

Her: You know him

I kissed her

Me: Ngiyakuthanda (I love you)

Her: I'm head over heels for you baba ka Marcos

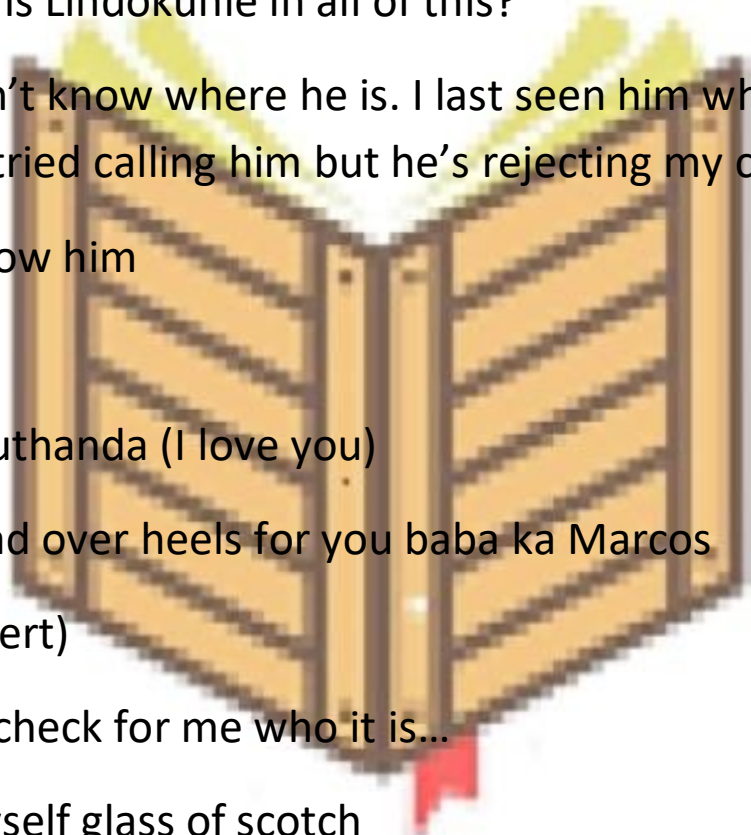
(Message alert)

Me: Please check for me who it is...

I poured myself glass of scotch

Her: It's Lindokuhle, he saying he is fine you mustn't stress about him. He will see you tomorrow

Me: I am glad



YARA

I curled up under the blanket on the couch

Mimi: Seems like wine won't do. Coffee is needed here

Me: You are right. The weather just decided to change on us

She held the cup between her hands

Me: What news do you have for me?

She smiled at me

Her: So, Buhle and I got promoted

Me: What? Oh my word. I am so happy for you sister

I hugged her

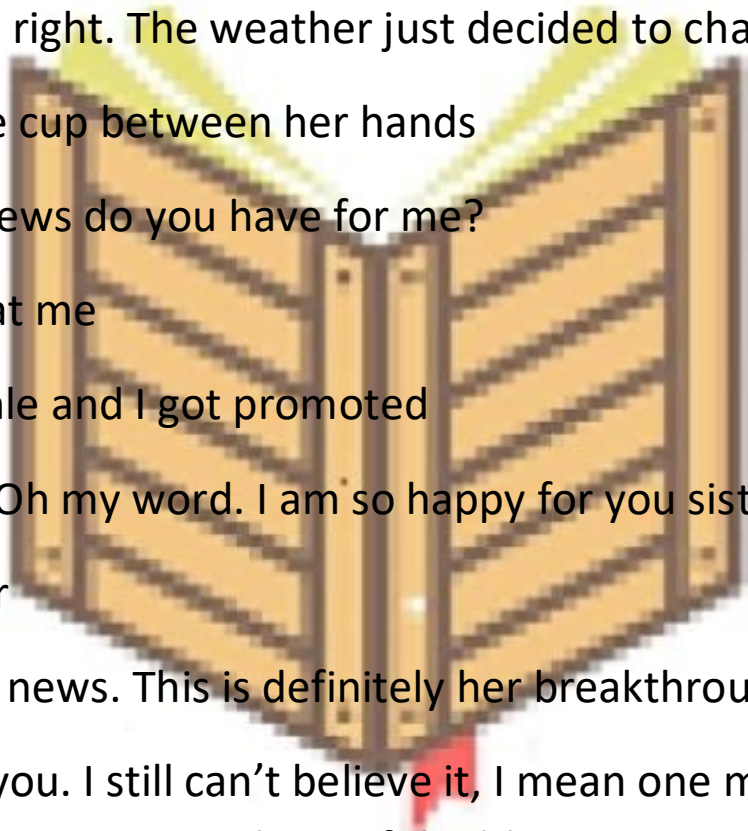
This is great news. This is definitely her breakthrough

Her: Thank you. I still can't believe it, I mean one moment we worked as waitresses and out of the blue we are promoted.

Isn't God amazing? Just when you think all is lost He shows you the bright side

Me: He does. This is your chance to great things sisters. Don't sleep on it

Her: I will never. I can finally make a name for myself



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: And you will. You've been through a lot and your story will birth hope to someone one day

Her: I know

She squeezed my thigh

Her: And you? What do you have for me?

I looked at her and smiled

Me: I have a boyfriend

She opened her mouth and widened her eyes

Her: You lie! Who is the lucky guy?

Me: Ayden Tshivhase

Her: Thee Tshivhase?

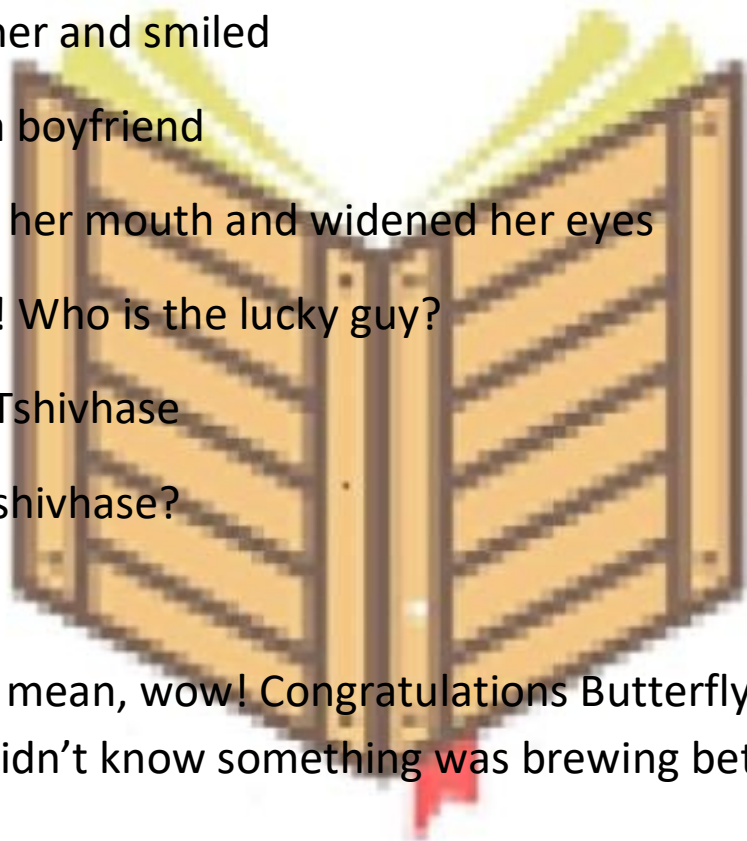
I nodded

Her: How? I mean, wow! Congratulations Butterfly, this is amazing. I didn't know something was brewing between you two

Me: I didn't want to jinx things because there wasn't concrete evidence that he is into me

She smiled at me

Me: Until today, he proposed. He actually stood in front of me and asked if I could be his girlfriend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: How romantic

Me: But it looks like I have Monster-in-law in making

Her: What? His mother is a witch?

Me: Ha Mimi, not a witch. She's a snob

Her: Do we still have those? Besides isn't she too old to be doing that

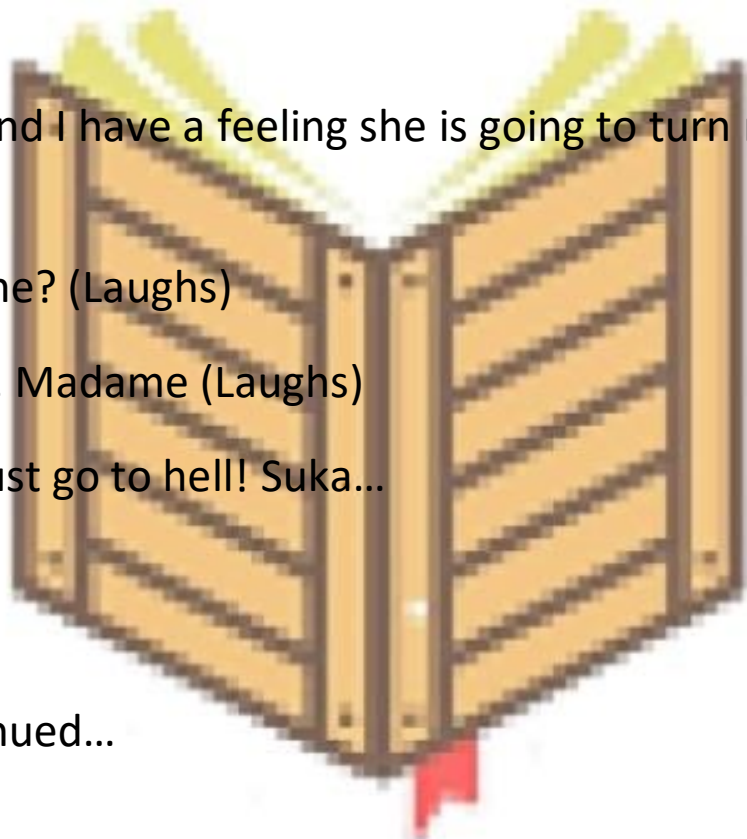
Me: Nope and I have a feeling she is going to turn my life into a living hell

Her: Madame? (Laughs)

Me: Exactly. Madame (Laughs)

Her: She must go to hell! Suka...

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

45

ETHAN

Since the twins opened up to us they have been in better mood, I am sure it's the assurance of knowing that kid will never hurt them. But, there's hope. The dark cloud will soon clear

(Message alert) it was Zoe

|I hope you didn't forget about tonight because it will really hurt my feelings|

I rang her

Her: That was fast

Me: Why are you so sure that I will cancel on you?

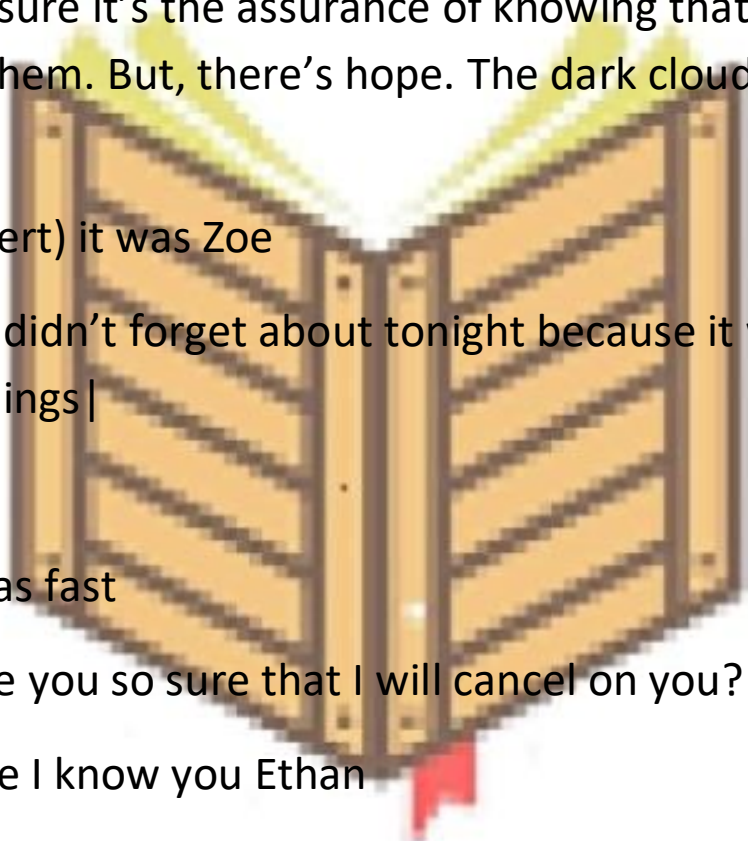
Her: Because I know you Ethan

Me: I will not besides my date is excited, I would hate to disappoint her

Her: You got a date?

Me: Are you disappointed by that?

Her: Not at all. Do I know her?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You do, you met her the other day when you came by the house

Her: Oh, her...

Me: Yes, her! I will talk with you later

Her: Okay, bye

I hung up

Me: Rotenda (Shouts) Tenda!

He came running

Him: Daddy...

Me: Come, sit next to me. We need to talk

Him: I thought we've had enough of that daddy

Me: No, we haven't. But I don't want to talk about that

Him: What then?

Me: I wanna talk about your sister

Him: What about her?

Me: Did Shane try something with her?

Him: Not that I know of

Me: You are sure about that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yes daddy. The only time he did something to her was when I refused to give in my pocket money. He forced Alexa to kiss him; Lex did so to protect me

Me: You protected one another and I love that about you

Him: What's going to happened to Shane?

Me: He will be punished for his actions. Next week Monday I am meeting with his parents

Him: Okay

YARA

Ayden stepped closer to me, he was blushing

Me: You so cute when you blush, I could eat you up

Him: I kinda figured that out

He kissed me

Him: I wanted to see you before work

We've agreed to act professional at work; we are keeping our relationship out of the workplace. I don't want people to think



NOVELSGURU.COM



that I got the job because I slept with him. Ayden have history of sleeping with his Assistants and people won't turn a blind eye to our relationship

Me: Is it an everyday thing?

Him: No (Laughs) we gonna take turns

Me: You are crazy

Him: Tell me-what are you doing this weekend?

Me: Tomorrow morning I am attending, late afternoon I have study session

Him: Afterwards?

Me: I am free

Him: Good. You are invited for dinner at my place

Me: No

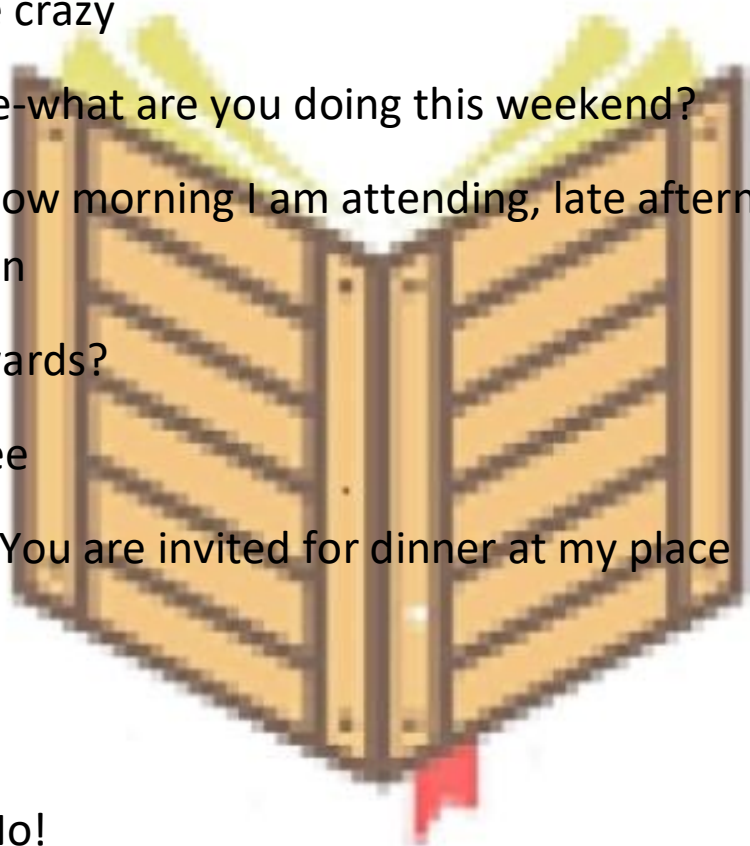
Him: Yes

Me: Babe, No!

Him: Come on, it will be fun. I'll make sure of that

Me: With your mother, I doubt

Him: She won't be around. She will be in Polokwane attending one of her charity events



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You sure? I don't want her to think I am already gunning for the luxury life. I mean our relationship is still new and raw

Him: Because of that I am expected to hide you from her?

Me: Not really

He sat down

Him: That's what you are saying Shawty. Do you even want me to introduce you to her?

Me: I just want to enjoy the first phase of our relationship in peace without any drama Munchie

Him: Are you sure that's the only reason?

I sat next to him

Me: It is, trust me

Him: I don't have any reason to not trust you

Me: Thank you

Him: Now, come here. Give Dada some sugar

Me: Euw (Laughs) **NOVELSGURU.COM**

BUHLE

I opened the suitcase and start folding my clothes

After so many years my feet are finally going to touch down KZN. The exciting part about all of this is the fact that I am going home as a different person. I am no longer that girl who went to Gauteng and become a prostitute. My mother would be proud of me

I took my phone and rang her

Me: Mama

Her: Indodakazi yami (My daughter)

Me: Unjani? (How are you?)

Her: Ngiyaphila wena? (I am fine and you)

Me: Ngikahle (I am good)

Her: Usendleleni? (You are on your way)

Me: Ayi mama, ngizobe ngihamba ntambama (No, I will be leaving late afternoon)

Her: Ngeke kube sekwephuze ukuhamba? (Won't it be late to travel)

Me: Ngisebenzisa itekisi elizongilahla esangweni (I am using the taxi that will drop me at the gate)



Her: Kulungile ndodakazi yami

Advertisement

uphephe (Okay my daughter. Be safe)

Me: Ngiyabonga (Thank you mama)

I hung up

Mimi stood at the door

Her: I am going to miss you

Me: Ha drama queen, I am only going for 3 days

Her: Still. Everyone is leaving today

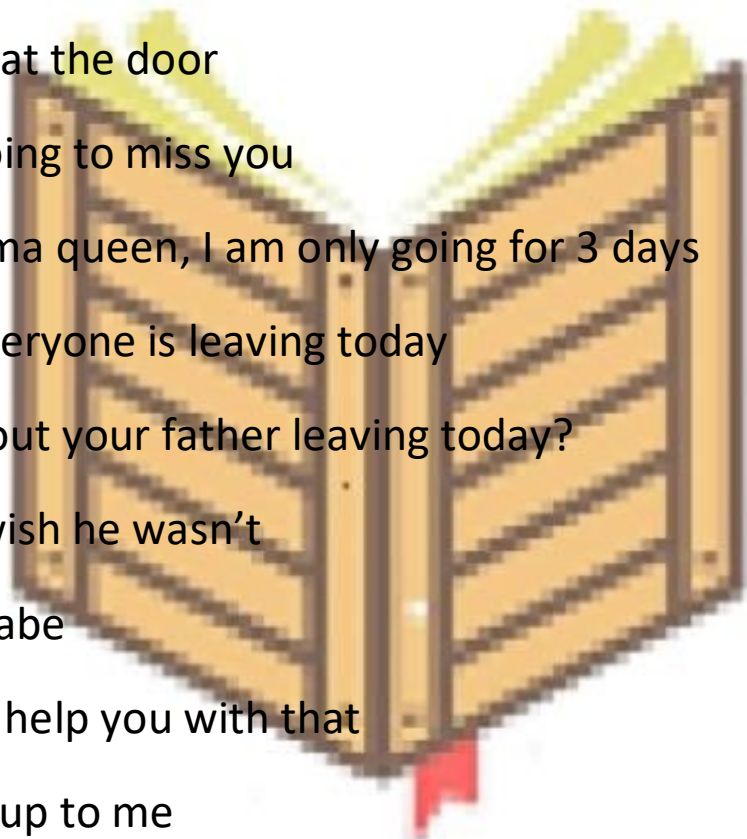
Me: Sad about your father leaving today?

Her: Yes, I wish he wasn't

Me: Sorry babe

Her: Let me help you with that

She walked up to me



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

AYDEN

I gave Miss Mkhize the file that had a report

Her: What's the meaning of this?

I leaned back in the chair and exhaled softly

Me: In there is the proof of what has happened Miss Mkhize and you knew about it. I don't know why you let me do the investigations when you could have told us the truth

Her: I don't agree to this

Me: Your son was under the influence of alcohol Miss Mkhize, the doctors ran the tests. That's what led to the house burning down and you are aware of the consequences. The insurance won't make a pay-out

She stood up

Her: I don't care about the report that you are holding, I am going to lodge my claim and it will pay-out

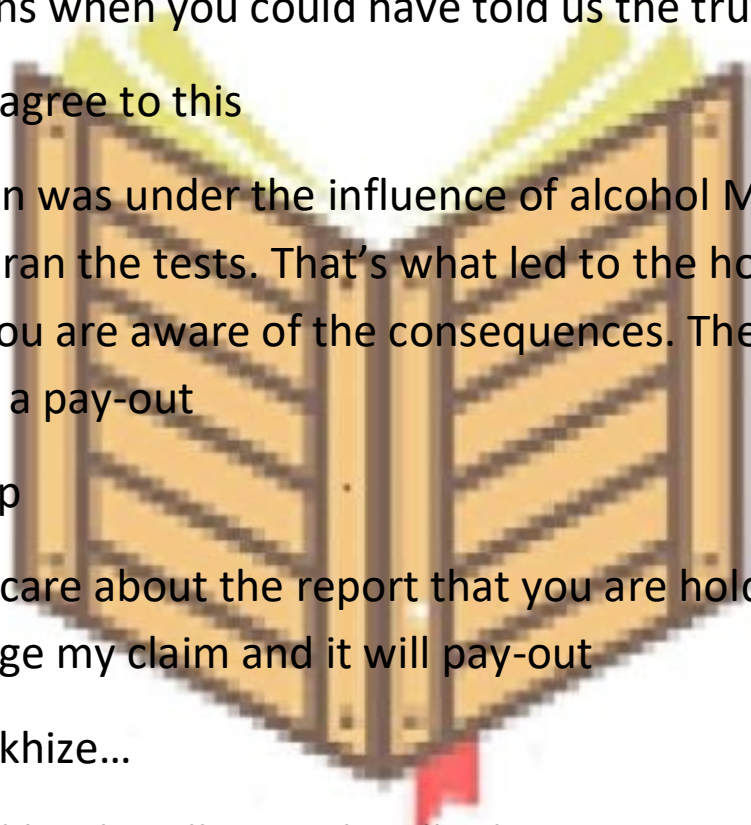
Me: Miss Mkhize...

She grabbed her handbag and walked out

Yara: That didn't go well

Me: It certainly did not. This people always think they can milk us out because they feel the need to

Her: Then, what's the way forward? You saw she was breathing fire



Me: Our lawyers will look into it, my job is to investigate and that's what I did

She stood up and fixed her skirt

Her: Good luck Mr A. I don't wish to be you

I chuckled softly

Me: Your work is done here; go to your office Miss M

Her: I was definitely not planning to

Me: And, I'll be out of the office the whole day. I'll see you later

Her: No problem. Have a great day

She walked to the door

Just when she attempted to walk out, she bumped into Amelia

Yara: Sorry, I wasn't looking

Amelia: It's fine. I wasn't too

Amelia closed the door behind her

Her: Brother...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: What are you doing here?

She threw herself on the couch and crossed her legs

Her: Nothing. I am just unwind

Me: Aren't you supposed to be at Varsity?

Her: I don't have class today. What's with the questions?  
Rather tell me about the beauty that I just met

Me: Who?

Her: The girl I bumped into. I saw the way you were eyeing her  
I stood up

Me: You are seeing things now

Her: You know I am good at this, I've seen you with your  
Assistants and how you act around them

Me: Amelia just shut up. I am not doing any of that with you  
She looked at me

Me: Oh Heavens! I am not your peer wena; I am your big  
brother

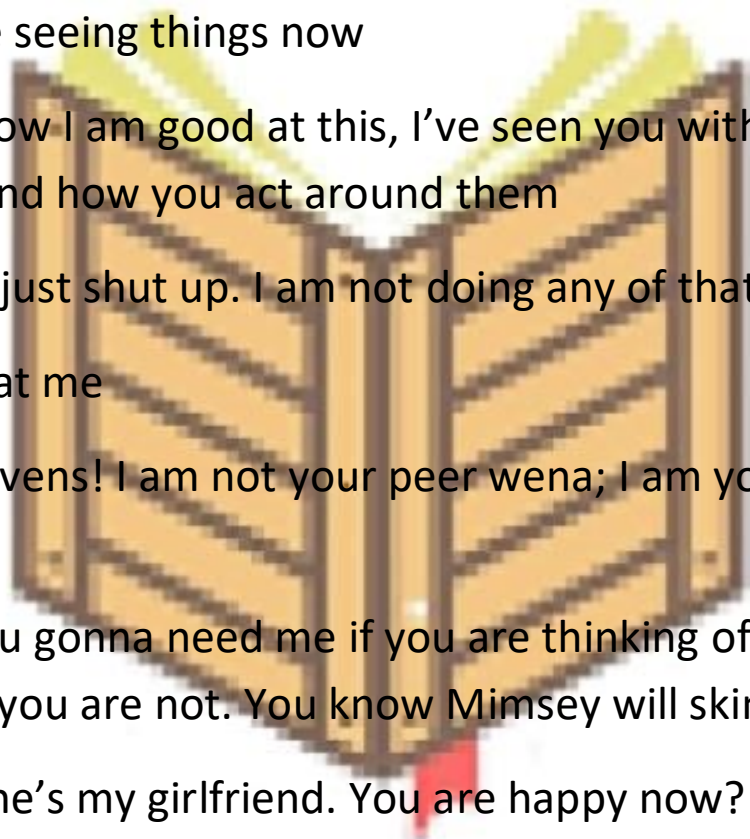
Her: But, you gonna need me if you are thinking of dating that  
girl that's if you are not. You know Mimsey will skin you alive

Me: Fine! She's my girlfriend. You are happy now?

She jumped off the couch and screamed

Her: I knew it. This time you chose well and I am happy you  
finally dating someone u can relate to

Me: Didn't you say that with Aurora?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Yeah but a rich kid and rich kid is not really good and pleasing combo. I also want to feel normal and just befriend someone whose status is different from us

Me: So that you can mock them?

Her: No, I am not like that and you know it. Urg!

Me: I am sorry, it just that I am worried about Mimsey. I don't think she will accept her

Her: Has she ever accepted anyone? Mimsey is like that and she will never change

MBALENHLE (MA KHUMALO)

I know I shouldn't be doing what I am about to do but I feel the need to. I am not here to accuse her of cheating with my husband because she didn't force Khumalo to do this. They agreed and went ahead with it. I just want us to talk woman-to-woman

Elisa: Please take a seat

I put my handbag on the floor and sat down



Me: Thank you for welcoming me in your home

Her: It's no problem

I took a deep breath

Her: Before you say anything, can you please allow me to say I am sorry? I know what I did was inhuman, please forgive me

Me: Why did you do it? Make me understand

Her: I... I don't know, maybe it was excitement of having someone

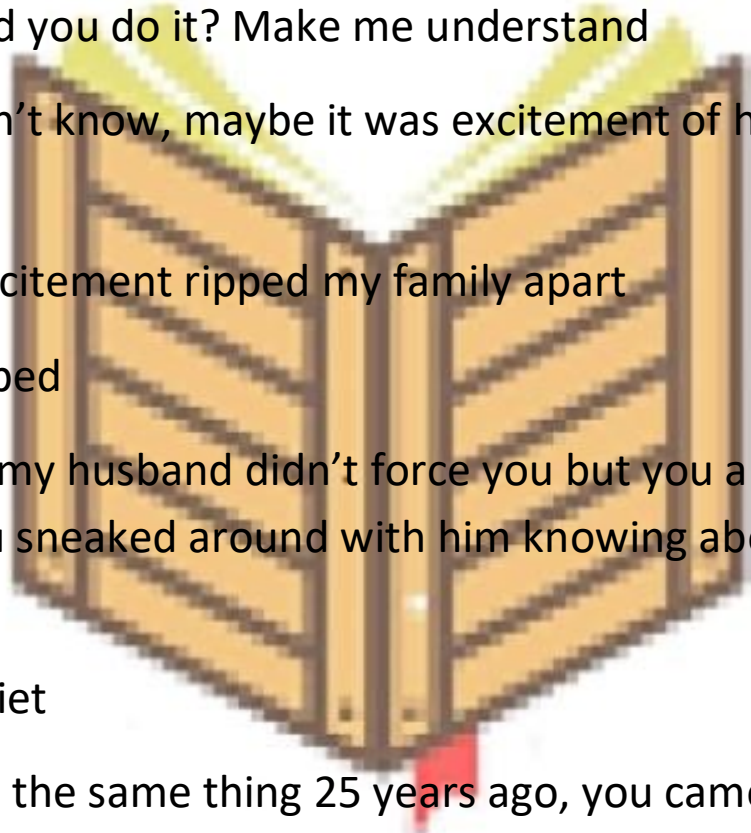
Me: That excitement ripped my family apart

A tear dropped

Me: I know my husband didn't force you but you also didn't protest. You sneaked around with him knowing about my existence

She kept quiet

Me: You did the same thing 25 years ago, you came into our lives and worm your way into my marriage. I forgave you and turn blind eye. Years later I found out about your daughter, because I am a parent I accepted her into my home. My sons accepted her as their sister but in all of that you still see me as a fool. I don't understand. Do you love Mzo?



NOVELSGURU.COM

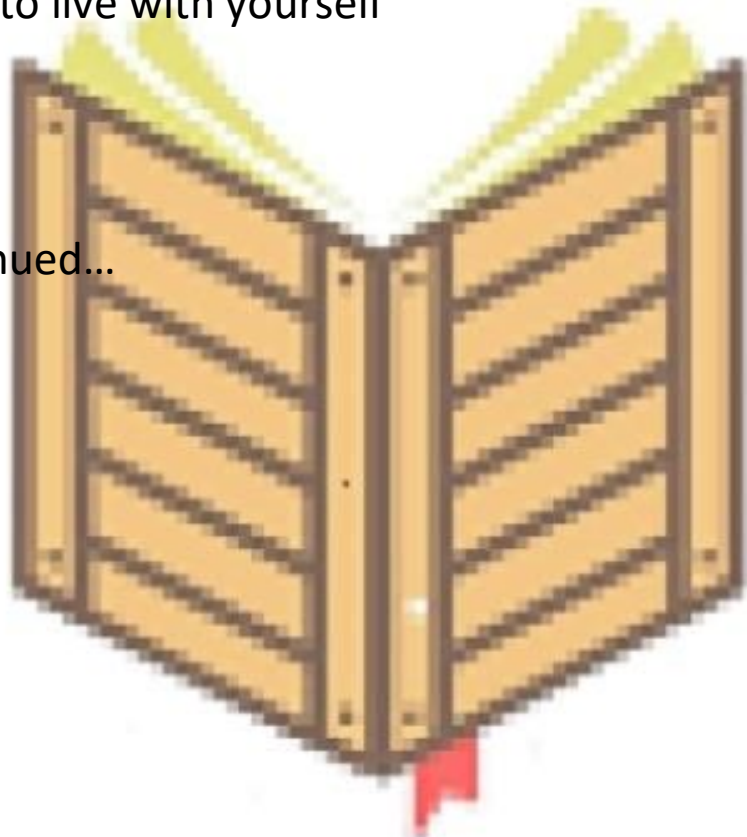
Her: No... I don't. I am only realising now the consequences of my actions

Me: The signs are there Ma Masia

I stood up

Me: I just want you to know that I forgive you, and I hope you will be able to live with yourself

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

46

ZOE

I laid my back on the bed and stared at the ceiling

My come back to South Africa was planned; I didn't come back because I got a job offer. I made few contacts and scored a job, the real reason I am back is to pursue a relationship with Ethan. When I heard about Goldie's death I was amused. I am sorry she died but we all gonna die someday. I've heard about Mimi and Ethan's relationship, Goldie always spoke about her. She felt threatened by her, that's how strong Ethan and Mimi's love is/was. I've always been attracted to Ethan even when he was with Goldie, I made few attempts to separate them but something kept their love glued. Ethan only sees me as a friend and I want more than that. Goldie couldn't take her out but I will take her out. Ethan is just hard to crack

Voice: Zoe?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I raised my head. It was my mother

Me: Mom...

Mrs G: Why are you not at work?

Me: I took a day off; I wanna prepare myself for the party

Mrs G: Oh nice. So, who is your date?

I got out of the bed

Me: Ethan...

Mrs G: You are rekindling your friendship

Me: Not a friendship but a relationship

Mrs G: You and him?

Me: Why are you surprised? It was bound to happen

I walked to the window

Mrs G: Should I be worried Zoe?

Me: Worried? No, that's not a nice word

Mrs G: Is this a mutual love or one sided love?

Me: What's with the questions?

Mrs G: I know you and what you are capable of

Me: Stop it! Can't you just be happy for me, for once?

I scoffed

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mrs G: You should have never come back Zoe. I knew your sudden return will have an impact on everyone

Me: You think too much. Now if you can, allow me to make myself a doll

I kissed her cheek

ELISA

Ed was leaning against the door with his bags

Me: So, you are really leaving?

Him: You should be happy, you didn't want me here...

Me: That's not true. I was getting use to have you around

Him: Unfortunately I am leaving

The door opened, it was Yara

Him: I thought you weren't coming

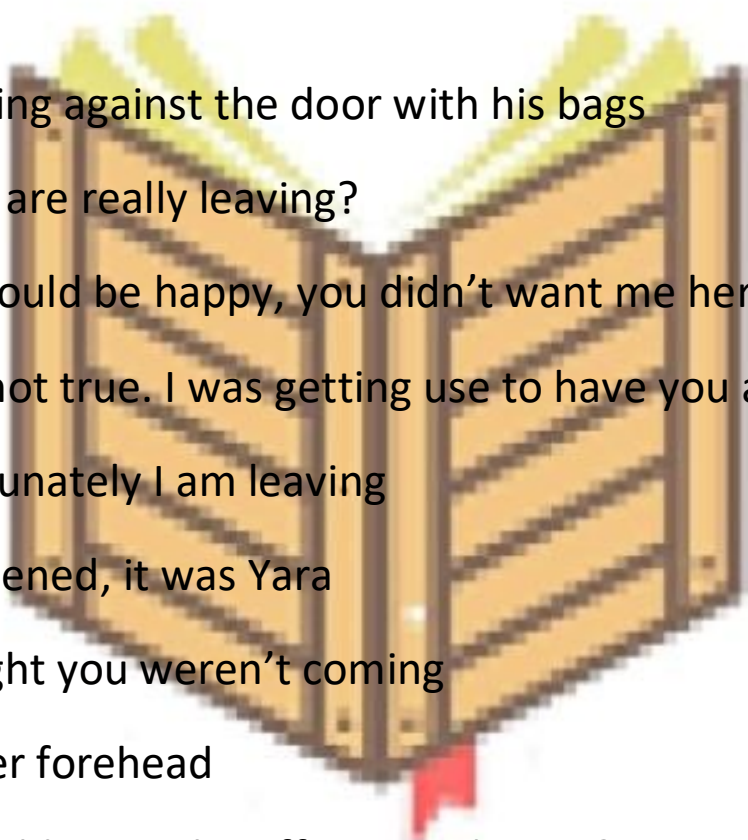
He kissed her forehead

Her: I was held up at the office. Read to go?

Him: Yes

I looked at me

Me: This is it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yes Elisa, I will see you. I don't know when but it was nice seeing you

Me: Be safe

I hugged him

Him: I will. And promise me to stay far from problems

Me: I done with that

I am feeling sad about his departure. I really lost a diamond whilst collecting stones

Yara: I will see you mom. Let's go dad

I watched them stepping out of the house

I've lost it all

ETHAN



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

My assistant gave me the file

Me: Thank you

Assistant: And the meeting your afternoon meeting is cancelled, they rescheduled it

Me: Why?

Assistant: Mr Mulimo's was involved in a car accident

Me: Thank you Portia. Please get me espresso

Assistant: Okay Sir

She walked out

My phone rang, it was unsaved number

Me: Mr Liremi

(Silence)

Me: Hello...

Voice: Good day Mr Liremi, sorry to call you but I couldn't wait until Monday. It's Shane's mother

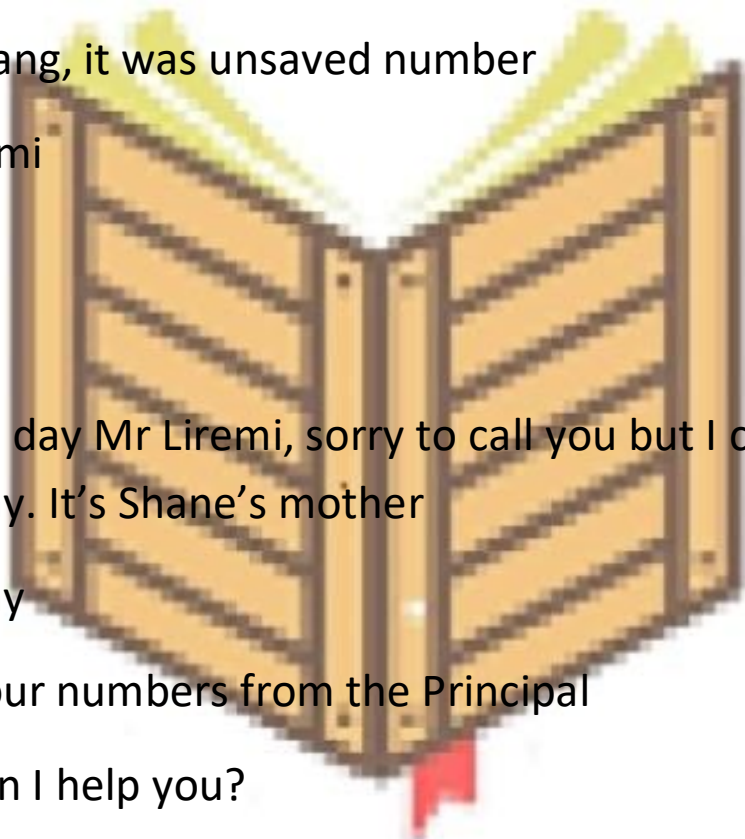
Me: Oh, okay

Her: I got your numbers from the Principal

Me: How can I help you?

Her: I just want to apologize to you and your wife; I am ashamed of my son's behaviour. I wish words could make up for the pain he has caused you and your family

Me: Apology accepted Mrs Bopape. I just want your son to pay for the harm he has caused. It's only fair, don't you think?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: It is; it is. Is there something we can do maybe? I don't therapy for the kids?

Me: No, I will handle it. If there's one person who needs therapy

Advertisement

I think that person would be your son. I don't know him but he has issues, so face whatever demons he has before he kills him

Her: That's so kind of you Mr Liremi

Me: It's a parent in me talking. Help your son Mrs Bopape

YARA

I passed by Nosizwe's workplace. We haven't seen each other in a while and I am sure she's feeling neglected

I hugged her

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Ukhumbule ukuba unomhlobo (You remembered you have a friend)

Me: Uxolo (Sorry)



I sat down

Me: I feel guilty about neglecting you

Her: It's okay. There's absolutely nothing interesting right now, it's just work-work-work

Me: We do all that to survive

Her: How's school coming along?

Me: Pretty good, everything is trending smooth

She sipped on her juice

Her: You glowing, are you pregnant?

Me: Preg? No! Nos, your mind is running wild

Her: Then, what's with the glow?

Me: So, me and Ayden are...

Her: Dating? Oh my word!

Me: But, I didn't say that...

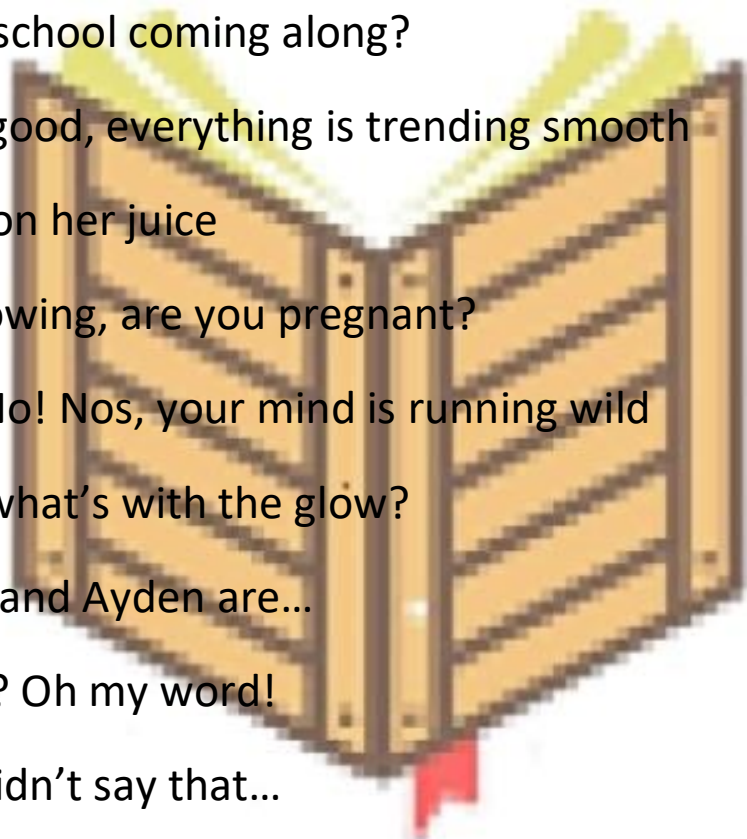
Her: I knew what you were going to say, I mean look at you.

That's definitely not Ethan's doings; you are getting a real thing

Me: I give up on you

She laughed softly

Me: You must be happy that I stopped drooling over Ethan



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Damn right I am, you were never supposed to in the first place

Me: I was letting my emotions take control of me, I am glad I didn't act on them. I would have messed things between me and Ethan

(Cell phone rings) a corner of my mouth rose

Me: Munchie

Ayden: Shawty, are you at the office?

Me: No, I am with my friend

Him: I wanted to invite you for lunch, you game?

Me: Yes, send me the location

Him: I will

Me: I love you

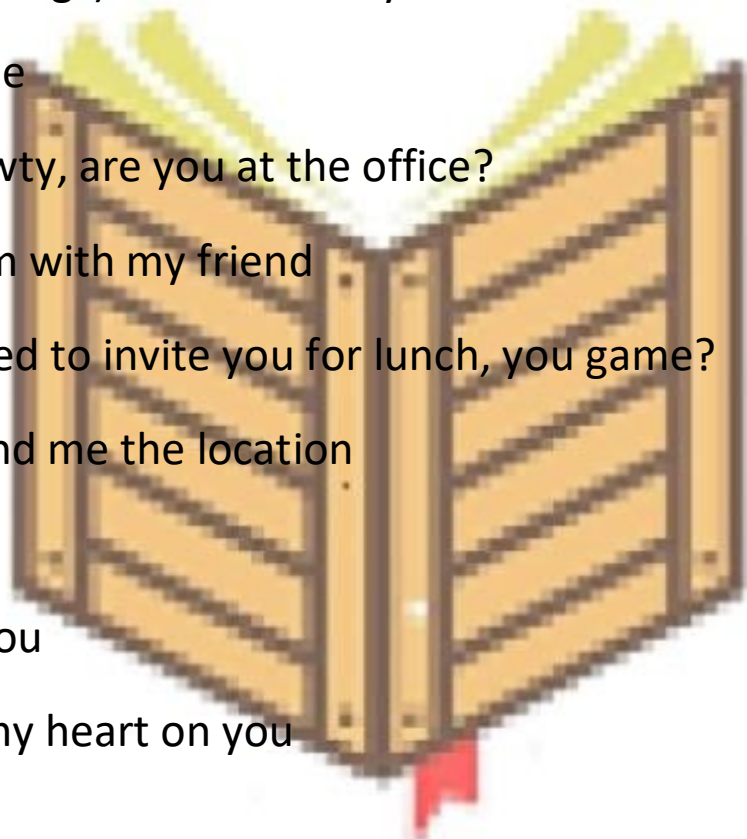
Him: I lost my heart on you

I hung up

Nosizwe smiled at me and clapped her hands

Her: Usemathandweni (You are in love)

Me: And it feels good



NOVELSCURU.COM

Her: Does he have a brother? Ityiwa iyandibulala (Salt is killing me)

Me: I don't think he does, but I will ask

We laughed

AYDEN

I puffed on my cigar and set it down

Me: When did you see Lethabo?

Viper: Few days ago

Me: So, he wants us to kill El Diablo junior?

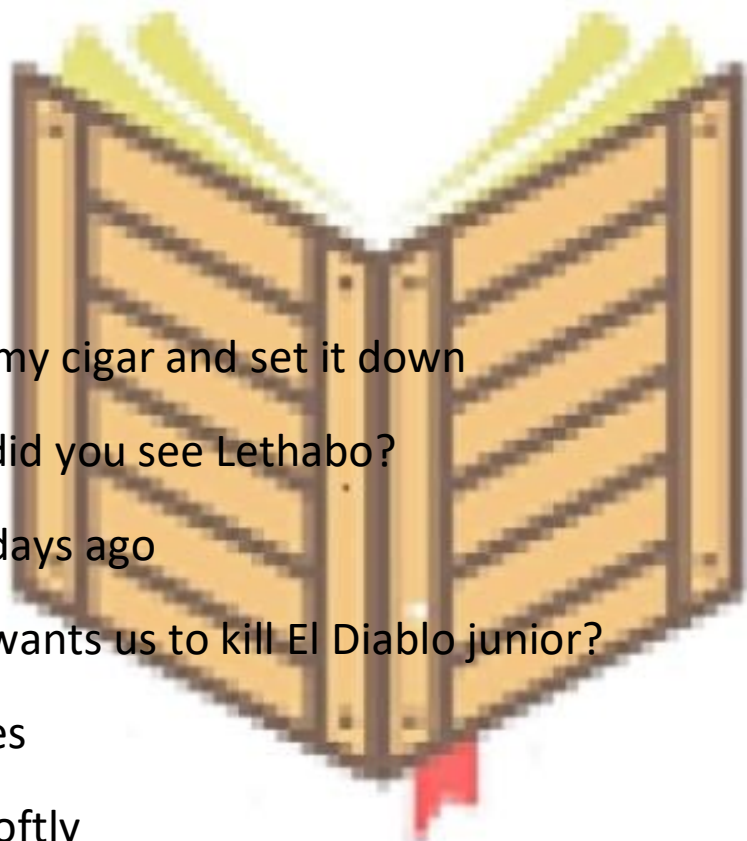
Him: He does

I chuckled softly

Me: I am not too sure about that

Him: You not?

Me: Lethabo is our boy but getting into a war with the Mexicans is another story. We don't want them as our enemies



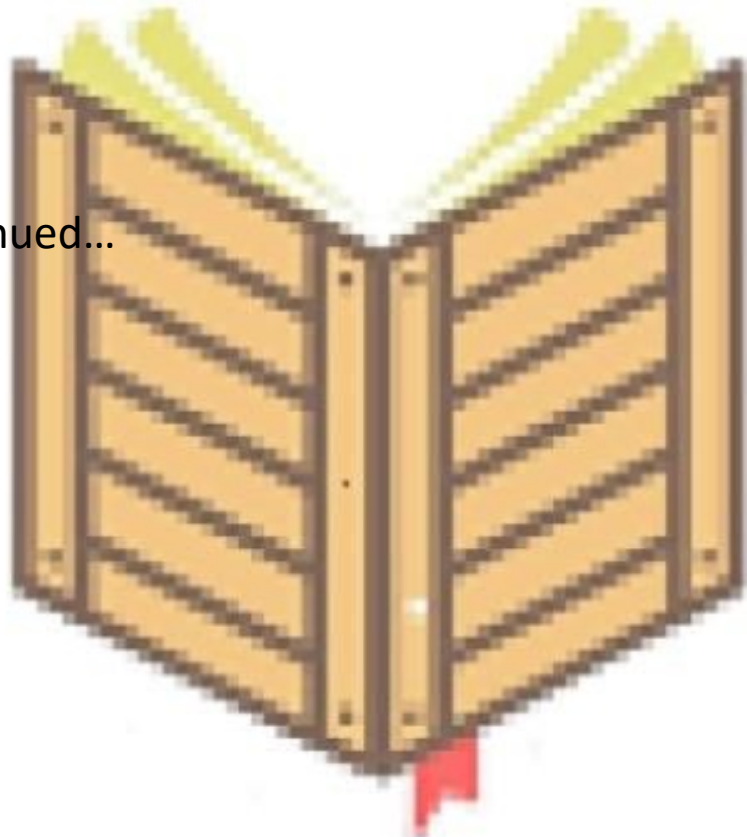
NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: We don't but are we going to cast him out? That's not how we do things, especially you and Panther. He trusts you to help him out

I scratched my head

Him: You come a long way with him. He once helped you guys, you owe him

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

47

PANTHER

Yara made her way to me

Me: Baby sis

Her: Brother

Me: Come here, show your brother some love

I opened my arms for her

Her: You are not angry at me?

Me: I was never. And, let's not talk about that please

Her: Where were you?

We sat down

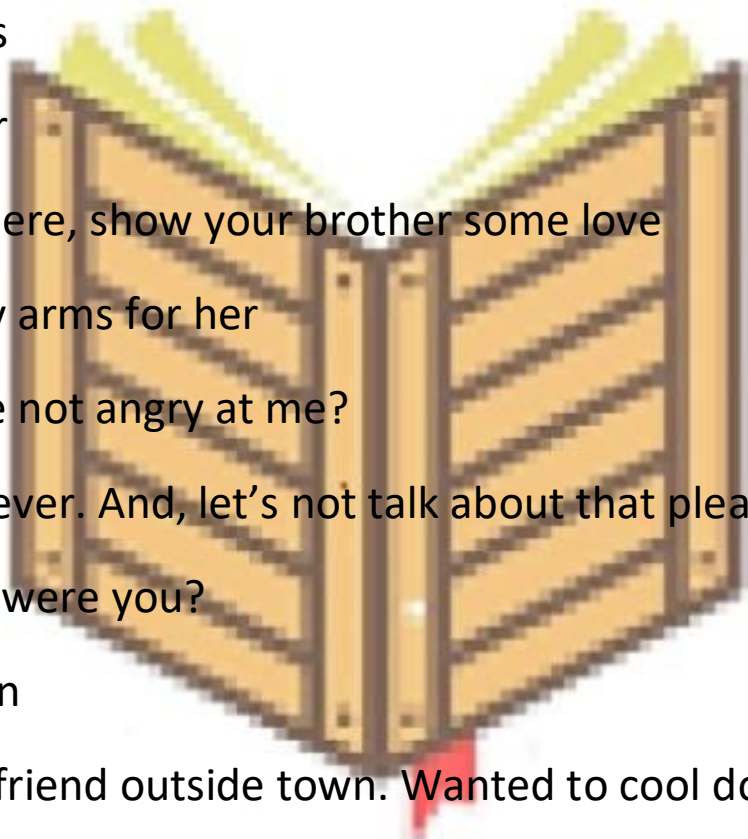
Me: With a friend outside town. Wanted to cool down

Her: Can I ask?

I nodded

Her: Are you always that aggressive?

I chuckled softly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't know how to answer you on that question but I tend to be, sometimes. But, I've learnt to control my anger

Her: Have you always been like this?

Me: I can say yes. It's not a behaviour that I adapted now, from what I've heard from mom-I've always been like this. They don't understand it too

Her: That makes me question your friendship with Ayden. Both of you seem to have "anger issues"

Me: We've tried to kill each other more than once but Viper always manages to cool us down. Maybe it's the love we have for one another. That's why it is hard to gun each other down

Her: Should I be worried with Ayden?

Me: Never. Ayden will never lay his hand on you; like me-he also have a technique to cool his anger down

Her: Yoh! I've heard it all

Me: Don't let that scare you

She looked at me **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Let's talk about you and my friend. Why Tooth?

Her: Why not him? (Laughs)

ZOE

I looked at my pills and threw them inside the drawer

Me: I don't need you! I am okay

I maintained my calm posture and listened to the silence in my room

I wish everyone could stop forcing me to down this damn pills, I mean I am sane. What I need is someone to understand and see things the same way as I do. Is that too much to ask? No, it's not

Me: I need to stop giving them reasons. If I do that maybe they will stop seeing me as insane person

I stood in front of the mirror

Me: You will be Mrs Ethan. You waited long to be his and soon you will wear that crown



NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

I helped Mimi get out of the car

Her: Thank you

Me: Seems like we are early

She ran her eyes around

Her: It does. Where's everyone?

Me: Let's get inside

The party is held in Nontsikelelo Mendez's house, she has really outdone herself. We attended the same High school and Varsity

Her: Is she still the same Nontsikelelo?

I laughed softly

Me: What do you mean?

Her: You know, the brat, nerd and boring Nontsikelelo

Voice: No, I have grown up

We turned around, it was Nontsikelelo

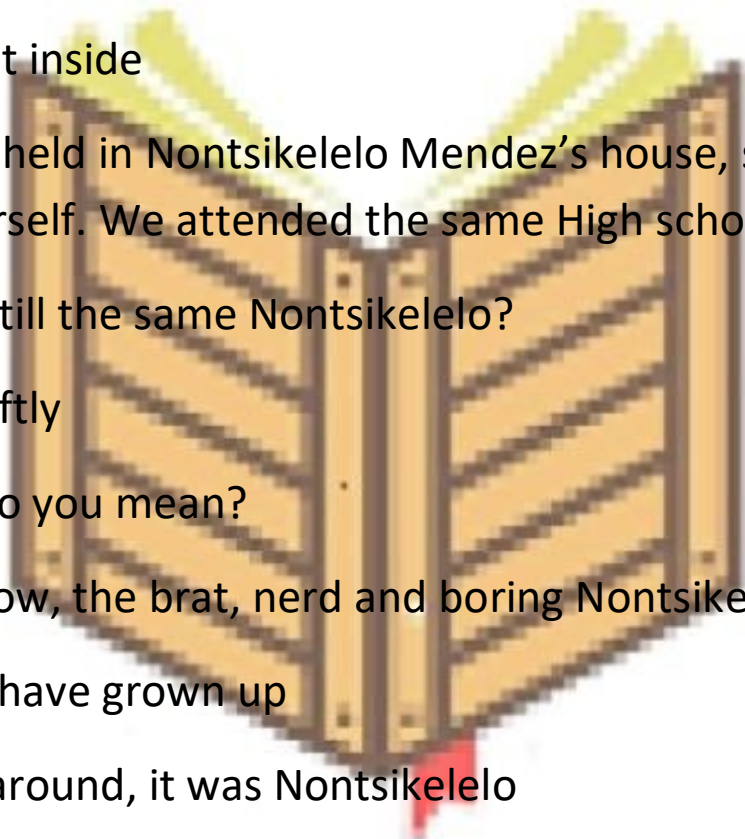
Me: Lelo, we didn't see you (Chuckles softly)

She made her way to us

Lelo: I kinda figured that out. Mimi, I wasn't expecting you here.

It's a nice surprise

Mimi: I couldn't miss it



NOVELSGURU.COM



Lelo: Please, follow me. The party has started already

Me: But, there's no one here?

Lelo: Everyone is at the back

Mimi: Okay, let's go

Me: Lelo, can you please just give us a min?

She nodded and walked away

Mimi: What's wrong?

I cupped her face

Me: I want you to know that whatever they gonna say to you, doesn't amount to anything. We all can't have what we want and that doesn't make us failures. They might have achieved whatever that they have but that doesn't shout you are a failure. Don't let them break your spirit, okay? Tonight is about us having great time

Her: Yes

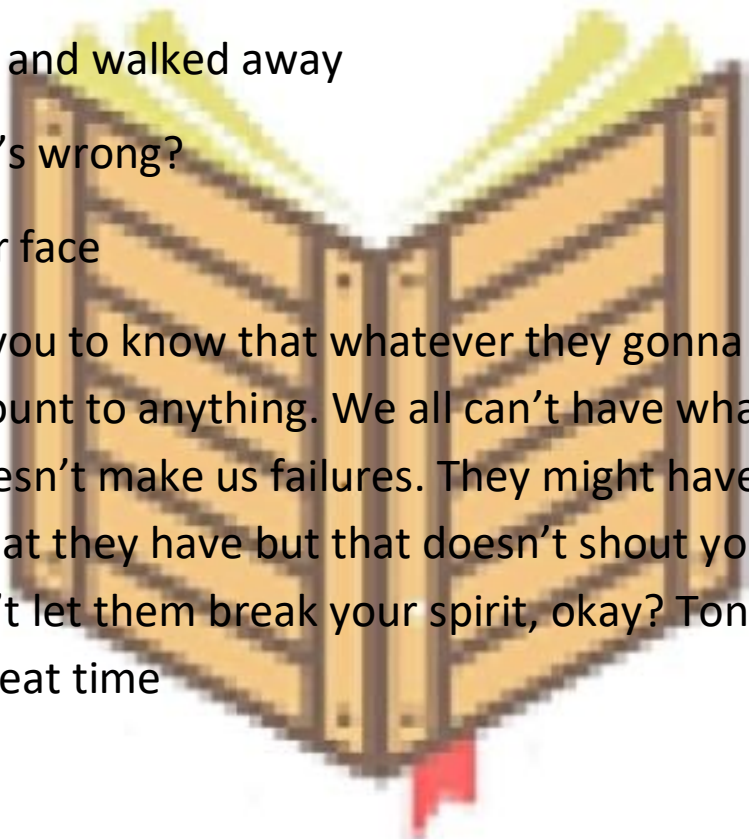
I promise. But, if they dare I will snatch their weaves

I kissed the back of her hands

Me: That's my girl

I looked at her

Me: Did I tell you how beautiful you look?



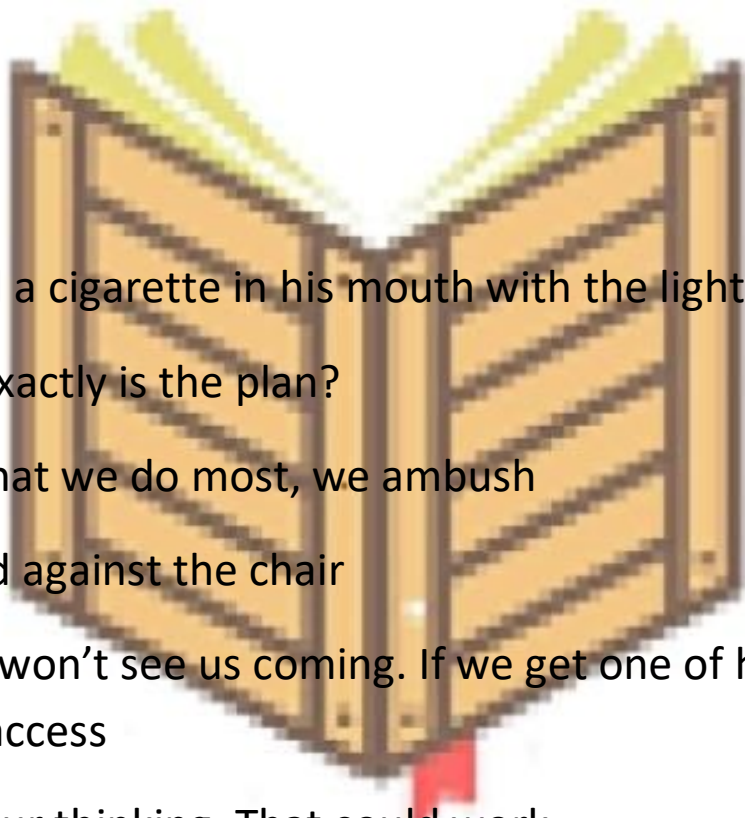
NOVELSGURU.COM

She blushed

Her: I don't mind, you can tell me the whole night

We laughed

AYDEN



Panther had a cigarette in his mouth with the lighter in his hand

Me: What exactly is the plan?

Panther: What we do most, we ambush

Viper leaned against the chair

Viper: They won't see us coming. If we get one of his men it will be an easy access

Me: I like your thinking. That could work

Lethabo whistled... we looked at him making his way to us

Me: The kid who will get all of us killed

Lethabo: My brother

We bumped shoulders

Me: You can never stay away from danger, can you?

Lethabo: I have heard that line countless time; I am starting to think it is cursed

Panther: You are cursed

We laughed

Me: You arrived in time of the plan

Viper: As I was saying, if we get someone in his crew and give him money. He is gonna betray Junior

Panther: After all this kid is a small fish

Lethabo: Small fish that is making my life impossible to enjoy

Me: Who betrayed you?

Lethabo: I suspect my father-in-law; before he died he must have told someone who now see this as an opportunity to destroy me and disturb my peace

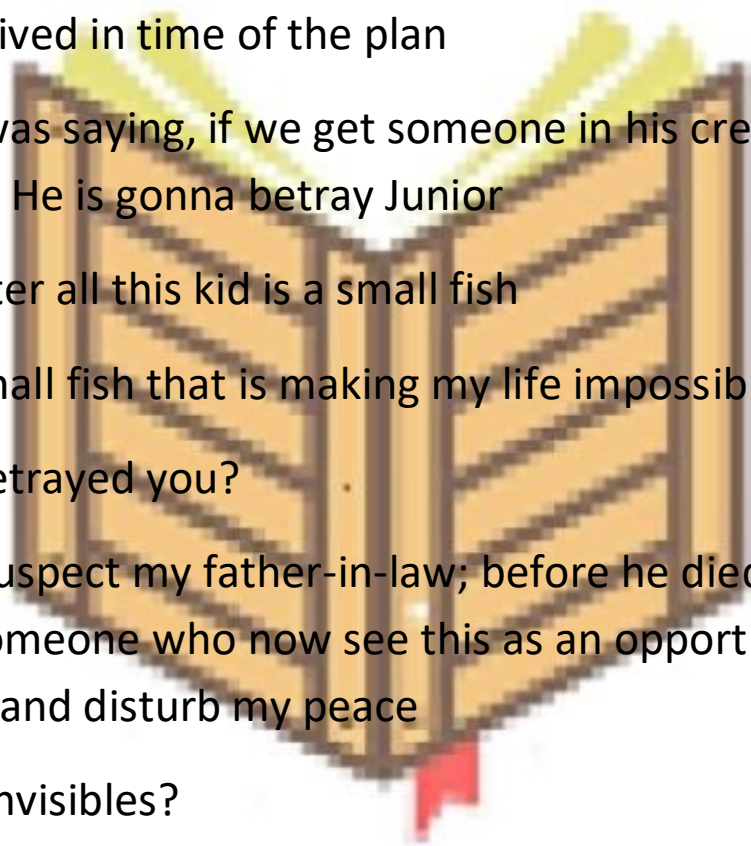
Viper: The Invisibles?

Lethabo: Yeah. He must have found out, he was a motherfucker

We laughed

Me: The plan of his warehouse, the one outside the city

Panther: How many guys does he have?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lethabo: About 20. He got four bodyguards

Viper: We can work with that...

(Message alert)

Panther: Tooth?

Me: Sorry, let me just check who it is. Maybe it is important

I moved a bit far from them. It was a message from Yara

I rang her

Me: Shawty

Her: Where are you? We waiting for you

I checked my wrist watch. Fuck!

Me: Give me one hour, I will be there

Her: Wow, you forgot about our date?

Me: Not really, I lost track of time

Panther: Tooth?

Panther yelled my name, I looked at him

Her: Are you with my brothers?

Me: Yes, we are at the warehouse

Her: Let me not ask. The twins were really looking forward to see you but I guess it won't happened



NOVELSURI.COM

Me: Come on Shawty

Her: It's fine

Me: I love you

Her: Bye

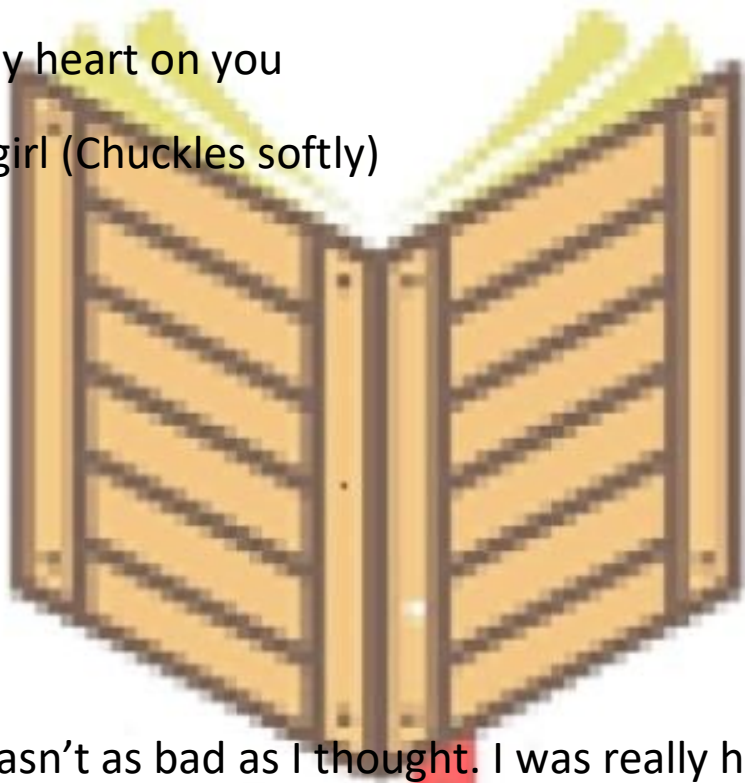
(Silence)

Her: I lost my heart on you

Me: Stupid girl (Chuckles softly)

I hung up

MIMI



The party wasn't as bad as I thought. I was really having a great time. Yes, my old class mates have already threw their stinky opinions but I don't care less about it

I darted my eyes to where Ethan was, he was having getting us drinks. I was standing next to the pool

Voice: And, why are you sitting here alone?

I turned my head slightly

I rolled my eyes. It was Giraffe

Me: Zoe

I faked a smile

Her: You still haven't answered my question

She stood in front of me

Me: I am enjoying the view, waiting for Ethan

Her: I thought you are not having a great time

Me: Not at all

Her: How do you do it?

I looked at her confused

Me: Do what?

Her: Have him...

She pointed at Ethan

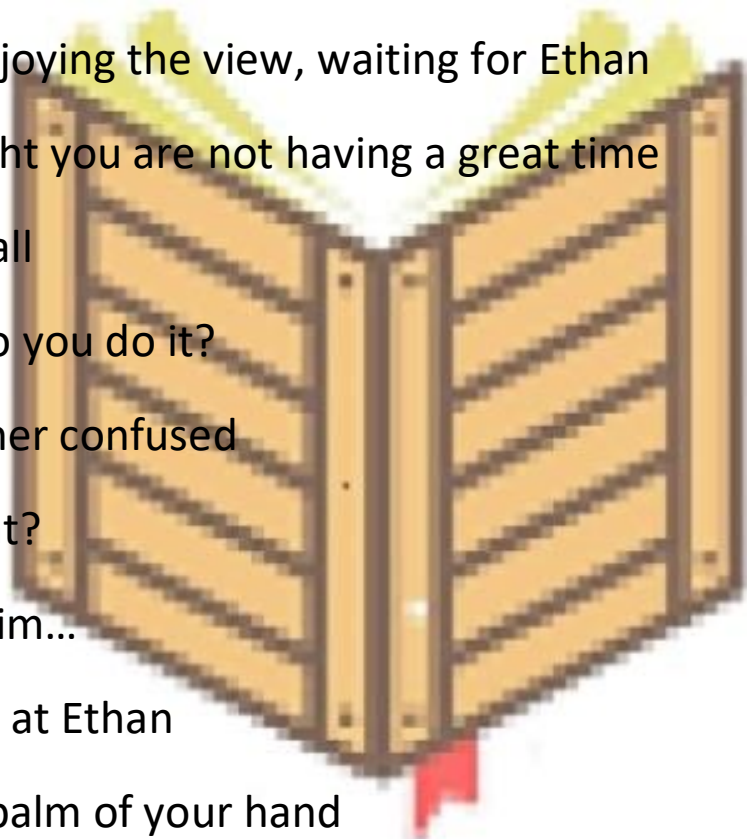
Her: In the palm of your hand

Me: I am not doing that

Her: Yes you are. I don't remember when last I saw him twirling behind a woman. Only Goldie managed to

Me: Sorry but are you comparing me to Goldie?

She chuckled softly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Not at all

Me: That's how I see it. And for your own information I am not doing any of that

Her: If you say so darling

She turned her heels and walked away

YARA

I stood at the door and looked at him

He had cupcakes in his hands

Ayden: Peace offering?

I folded my arms and rolled my eyes at him

Him: What did I say about rolling your eyes at me?

Me: Come in

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He followed me and put the cupcakes on the table

Me: The twins are asleep already

Him: Sorry Shawty



He hugged me from behind

Me: Apology accepted. I miss you

Him: I miss you too

Me: Are you hungry?

Him: Yes but, food can wait

He turned me around

Me: Then you are not hungry

Him: I am but I need few minutes with the beauty that is standing in front of me

He leaned and pressed his lips against mine. He moved his hand to my arse and squeezed it

Someone behind us cleared his/her throat

Him: I thought you said they are sleeping

Me: I thought so too

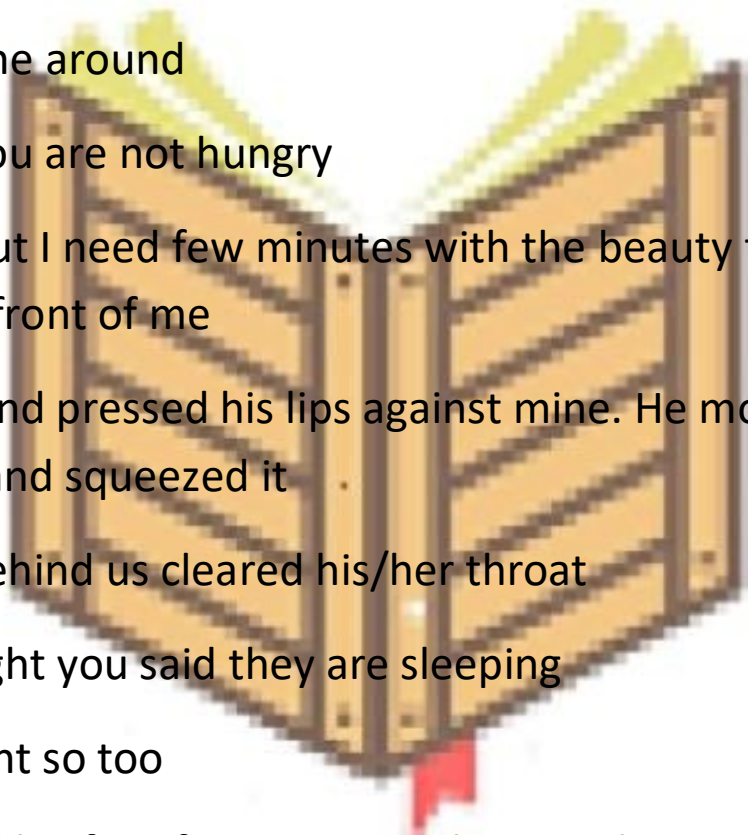
He removed his face from mine and I turned around

Me: Lex! You are awake

She smiled at us

Her: Yes. I want milk!

Him: Monkey



NOVELSGURU.COM



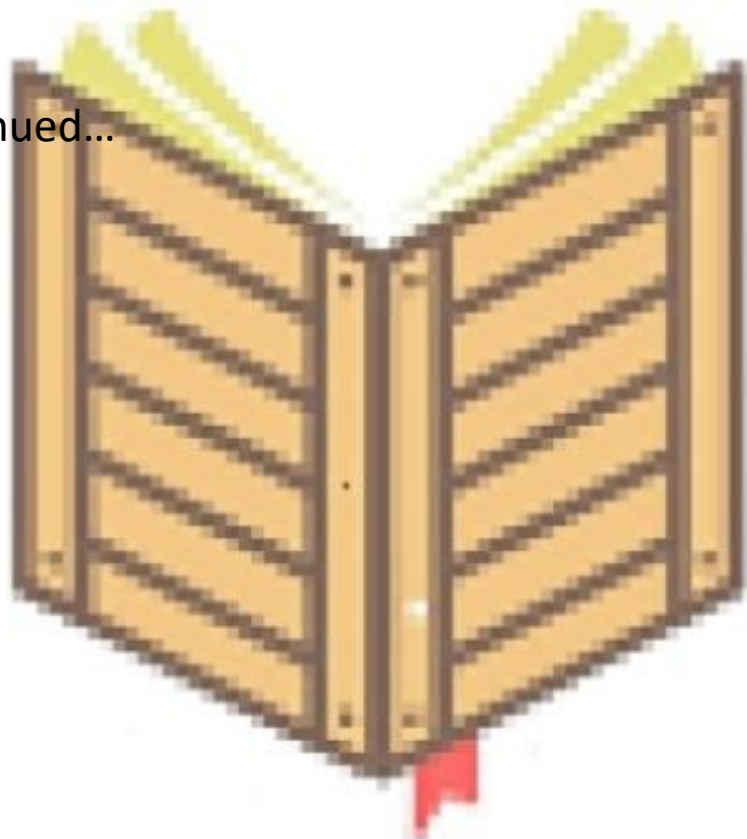
Ayden went down on his one knee, Lex ran to him

Her: Uncle T

He kissed her cheek

Me: Tea, anyone?

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

48

YARA

I rubbed my eyes making my way to the kitchen

Ayden left an hour ago; I don't know how we managed to stay up all night. The twins are the children of the Devil; they stayed up until Ayden left. At one point I thought they were going to keep him the whole day

My phone rang, it was Ayden

Him: Good Morning

Me: What's good about it?

Him: You are still sulking? (Chuckles softly)

Me: You call it sulking, I call it torture. Next time please count me out of your plans with the twins. I am going to sleep in class today because of you

Him: You are such a bore. Anyway, I just called to hear your voice

Me: Flattery will get you nowhere Munchie

Him: I love you Shawty

Me: I lost my heart on you

Him: Have a great day

Me: You too

Him: Don't ever forget that I love you and stay beautiful

Me: I will not dare to

I hung up

I can't believe I fell in love with this hot-headed guy; I am  
insanely in love with him

I poured water in the kettle and switched it on

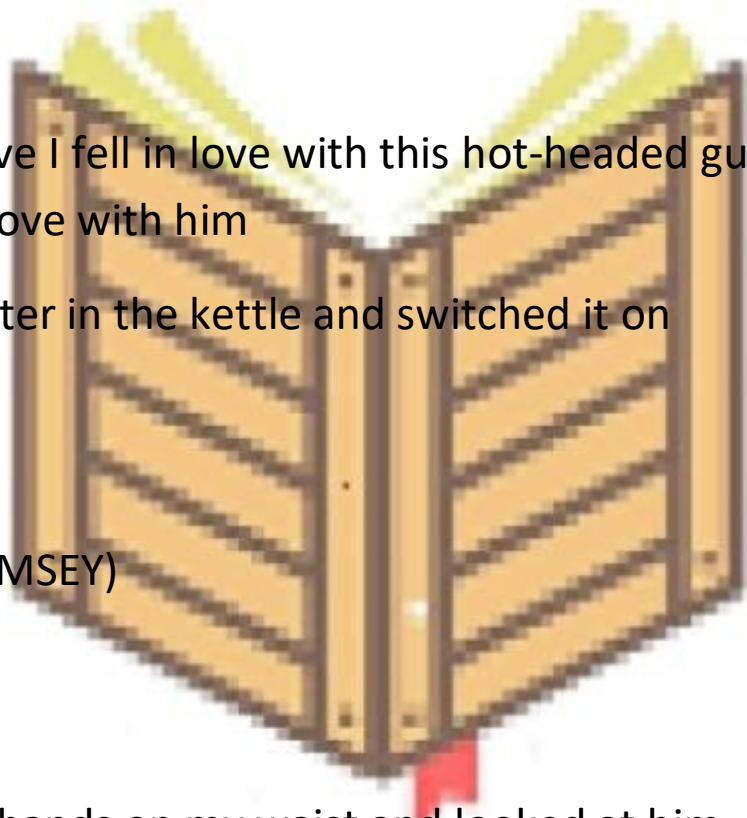
SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I rested my hands on my waist and looked at him

Me: Why are you giggling like a teenager?

Him: Damn Mimsey! Why are you sneaking on me like that?

Me: I am not but you won't see it because you are glued on  
that phone of yours



NOVELSGURU.COM

He stood up

Me: Are you talking with her?

Him: Who is her?

Me: Your new girlfriend...

Him: Is that your way of asking if I have one already?

Me: At least tell me her name

Him: So that you can threaten her, forget it

(Door closes) It was Zack

Ayden: My dear Lord in Heaven. And here comes your ex-husband

Me: Shut up!

Ayden: If he is here, where is his wife?

Zack: How is that your business again?

Ayden: I feel for you Mimsey. I mean you don't deserve this life

Ayden walked away

Zack circled his arms around my waist

Zack: How are you?

Me: Good, and you?

Him: Good



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Today you remembered that I exist?

Zack and I have weird relationship, our divorce was finalised but we never cut ties. At first it was only the children that connected us but I always loved him. In fact I never stopped, he left me for another woman but my love for him never died. And I think he still does, his wife doesn't know about us, I don't know and care how he manages to blind her. He is my husband and he will always be

Me: You didn't forget about tonight?

Him: How can I?

He kissed me

MIMI

I felt a hand on my arm, I opened my eyes

Me: Ethan...

Him: Good morning. I made you breakfast

Me: Thank you but you didn't have to

I sat up straight



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: It's my way to say thank you for last night

Oh last night? I nearly killed someone. The night was going well until a former class mate started making comments about me and what I do. I wiped the floor with her weave and threw her straight into the pool. Ethan couldn't believe his eyes but I was pushed. I had to do something to show those brats who I am

Me: You owe me more than breakfast

He chuckled softly

Him: Maybe you should see this...

He gave me his phone

It was a video of me on top of Phumudzo. Did I really do this?

Me: No, don't tell me this video is uploaded in the social?

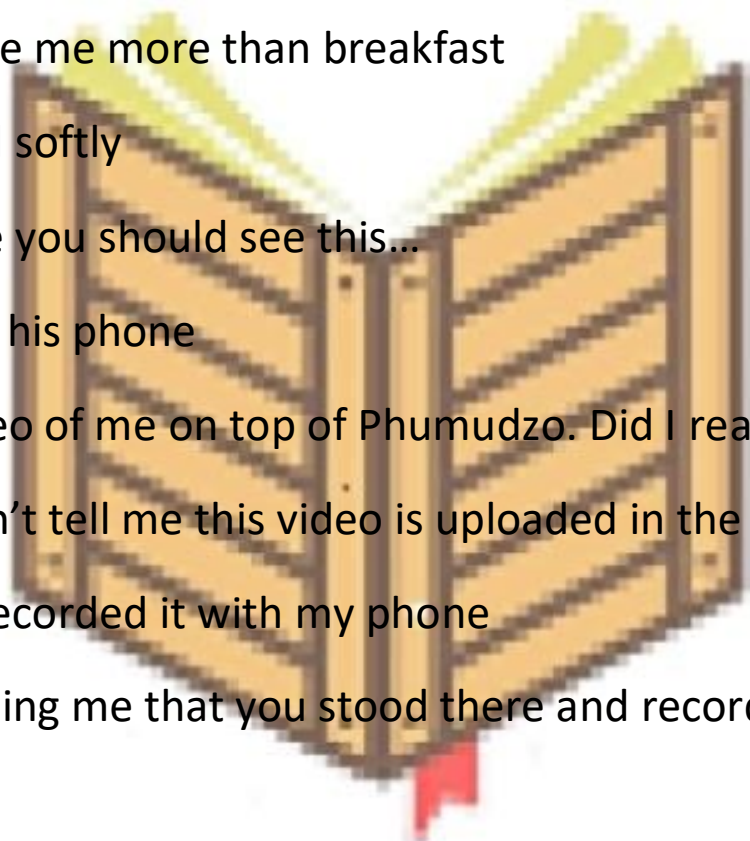
Him: No, I recorded it with my phone

Me: You telling me that you stood there and recorded me? You are evil

Him: I did, I want to show our children one day-the kind of mother they have. Phumudzo will never play next to you

Our children? Oh God, can we have them already? I really love this man

Me: Should have kicked Zoe's arse instead



Him: Why her?

I took a bite of toast

Me: She deserve it

Him: I kinda notice last night that you two were not having each other's presence. What happened?

Me: She compared me to Goldie, can you imagine that? She had the nerve to tell me that I got you by the nose

Him: I don't mind that at all

I playfully hit him

Me: It's not funny

Him: Do you see me joking? I am serious

Me: Honestly Ethan, I think Zoe is a nutcase

Him: Huh?

Me: She's mental unstable

Him: There's no such

Advertisement

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I've known Zoe for so long and I have never seen her taking any pill to show she is mental unstable

Me: Do you seriously think she can show them to you even if she were taking them? That's impossible

Him: But, I have told her that I don't want her. We are just friends and I think she's very much aware of that. I have never given her any reason to believe that there's something between us

Me: I still say, she is mental unstable

YARA

I opened the twins' bedroom door. I stepped farther into the bedroom

It took them a minute to realise I was there

Lex: Aunt...

Me: I thought you will be sleeping

Lex: We couldn't sleep

Tenda: Is breakfast ready? I am famished

Me: Almost. You need to bath first and then breakfast will be served



NOVELSGURU.COM



Them: Okay

Me: Lex, can we talk?

Tenda: Let me go and take a bath

He walked out

I sat on the bed

Me: Lex, remember what we talked about the other day about you going to the doctor for a check-up?

Her: Yes

Me: Today is the day; daddy is going to take you

Her: It won't hurt?

Me: You will not feel a thing. We need to do this so that we can be in the clear, you understand?

Her: Yes, I do

Me: That's my girl

I stood up and picked her up

Me: Now, let's get you cleaned

Her: Yeah!

Me: You sure you are not sleepy?

Her: Nope



NOVELSGURU.COM

I kissed her forehead

ETHAN

I held Goldie's picture and laid my head on the headboard

Me: Oh my girl, everything happened so fast. I almost lost our children but I know you were watching them

It's ironic how her death reunited me with the one love I've lost

Me: It's been months since you've left us my love, each day passing I am reminded of your absence. I know you would want me to move on, I've grieved for you and I will always keep you in my heart. No matter what happens, your memory will never be erased from my mind

My phone rang, it was Noah

Me: Bro

Him: Chief, you good?

Me: Yes, and you?

Him: I am good. Mother was asking about you

Me: She wanted something?

Him: She wanted to ask you about Zoe, her mother told her that she's back. So she wanted to know if you are aware about it or not



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I've seen her already

Him: I see

Me: I was about to ring you

Him: Okay...

Me: I think I am ready to let go of Goldie

Him: Mh? You are sure?

Me: I am sure. It's been months since she has passed on, the can never be enough time to mourn for the one you love. Even I take one year if I am not ready to move on I am not ready to

Him: I am happy for you; you are following your heart. I am sure Goldie will be happy for you too

Me: I hope so too

PANTHER

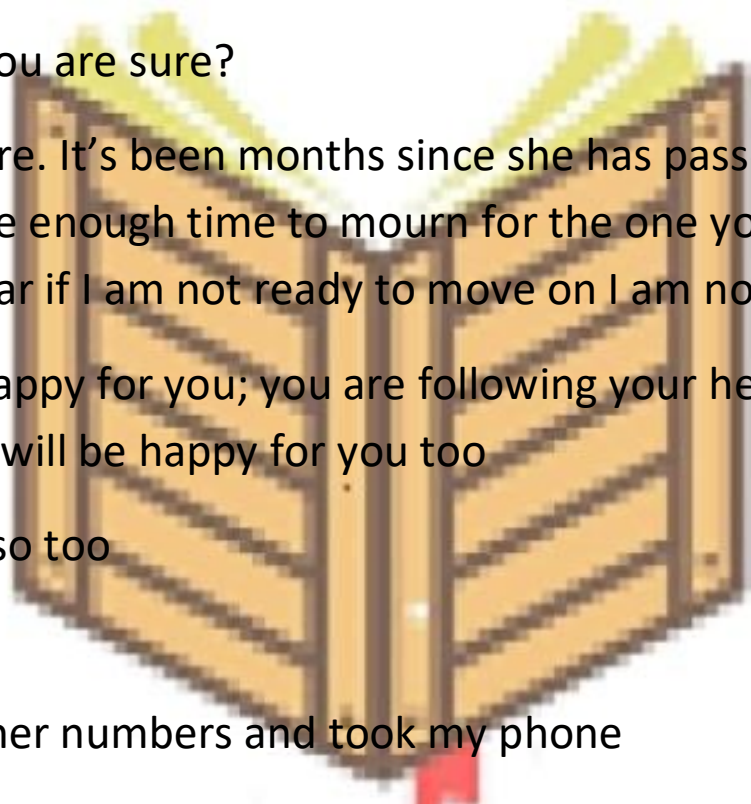
I looked at her numbers and took my phone

I don't know if I should call her or not. I don't know what to do; I might turn out to look like a stalker

Me: Let me just try, who knows?

I dialled her numbers. It rang four times before she answered

Her: Hello



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hey

Her: Who is this?

I haven't thought about this!

Her: Hello? Can you hear me?

Me: Yes, well it is your crush

She laughed

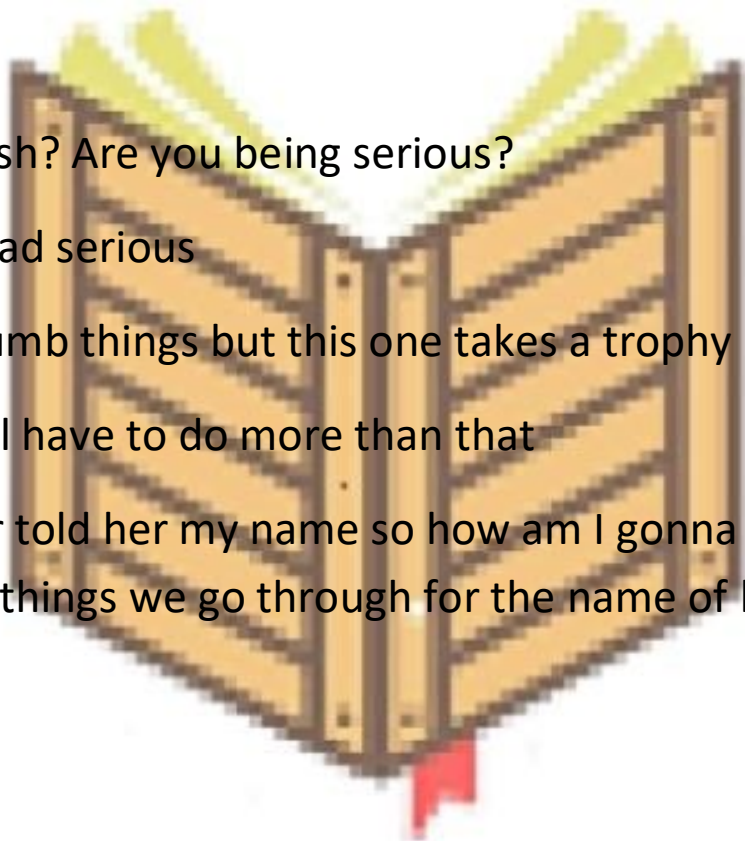
Her: My crush? Are you being serious?

Me: I am dead serious

I've done dumb things but this one takes a trophy

Her: You will have to do more than that

I have never told her my name so how am I gonna describe myself. The things we go through for the name of love! This is torture



To be continued... **NOVELSGURU.COM**

49

YARA

After my class Old man called me to have brunch with him

The waiter placed our plates on the table

Me: Thank you

He nodded and walked away

Him: Your brothers were supposed to join us

Me: What happened?

Him: I am not really Lindokuhle's favourite person at the moment and Craig's loyalty lies with his brother

Me: Things are still that bad?

Him: Kind of. Your big brother is hard-headed

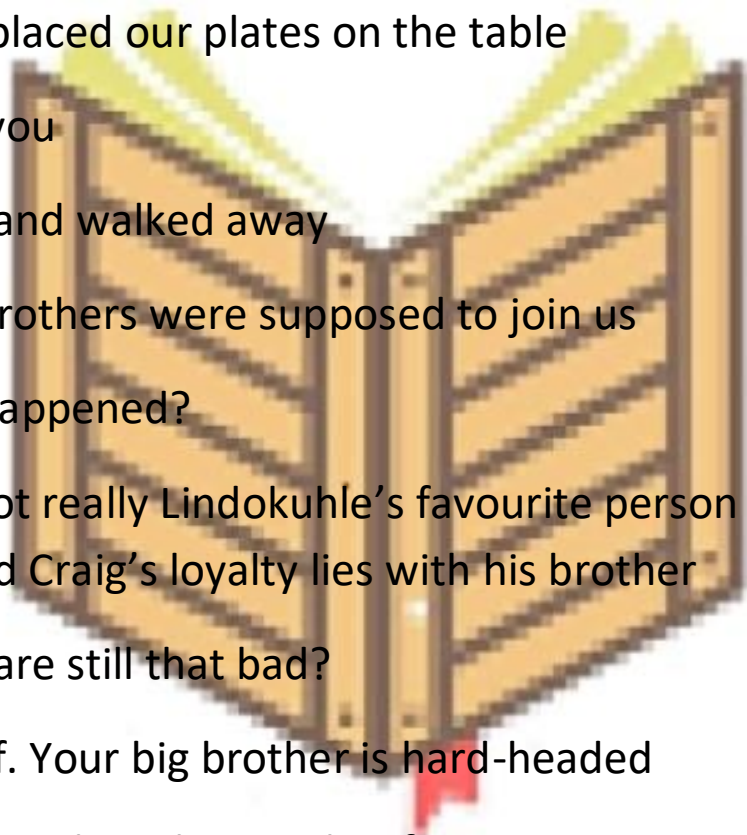
Me: I wonder where he got that from

He took a sip on his coffee

Him: Obviously not from me (Chuckles)

Me: Yeah right

He set his cup on the table



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Your aunt has filed for a divorce

That was expected

Him: I've tried to talk her out of it but she is not giving in

Me: I am sorry

Him: Don't be, I brought this upon myself

Me: There's no way you can solve things? Surely there must be something that you can do

Him: If Mbalenhle set her mind on something is hard to change her mind

Me: Lindo and Craig, are they aware of it?

He shook his head no

Me: Maybe you should tell them

Him: What difference will it make? We still going to divorce

This is bad, real bad! My mother actually had a hand in the divorce. Breaking another woman's marriage is a NO!

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ZOE

My mother stood in front of me

Her: What is this Zoe?

I kept my focus on the TV that was playing

Her: I am talking with you

I raised my head slightly

Me: Are you going through my stuff? Privacy!

Mrs G: You didn't answer my question Zoe Griffins

Me; I don't need those pills, I am fine

Mrs G: You are anything but fine! You have a disorder and your disorder is deadly

Me: Yeah, go ahead and tell the whole world that I have a disorder. Let them hear you, go ahead mommy dearest

Mrs G: You are a danger if you stop taking these pills

I stood up

Me: Mom, get your nose out of my business. Go play wifey to my father

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I grabbed the pills and threw them away

Mrs G: You see; this is what I am talking about. Your condition is serious Zoe

I was diagnosed with a disorder when I was doing my 8th grade, Obsessive love disorder. It is linked to mental health disabilities, Borderline personality disorder and Delusional jealousy. I am the first one in the family to be diagnosed with these mental disabilities. I take antidepressants but I am not frequent about them, well as for therapy-I stopped attending couple of years back. It's waste of time

Mrs G: You know the danger of stopping it can worsen the symptoms or make them return

Me: Stop lecturing me!

Mrs G: Your father is right; maybe we should take you to see a doctor

Me: Okay, fine. I will take them

I hate hospitals and I will make them believe that I am taking them. If it will make them stop then I'd do anything

AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

I glanced down on my glass



Viper: Tomorrow night we are moving on Diablo Junior

Me: Everything is sorted?

Panther: Yes. We got our guy and we paid him good money

Viper: Our men are also ready

Me: Okay...

Viper: Is my sister messing with your mind already?

I stood up

Panther: Or the opposite?

Me: Come on, there's no such a thing

Panther: Then what's wrong?

Me: Mimsey

Viper: What about Mimsey?

I looked at them

Me: I don't think she will approve our relationship, I've heard the way she talks about her. And all of this is happening before she know who is she

Viper: Is my sister going to be in some kind of battle?

Panther looked at me

Me: Stop giving me that look



NOVELSGURU.COM

Panther: What look?

Me: That look man. It freaks me out

Panther: You still haven't answered my brother's question  
Tooth

Me: All of us know Mimsey and how she is...

Viper: Tooth, you right we all know Mimsey and the Mimsey we  
know is going to...

Panther: To make my baby sis's life HELL. That's who Mimsey is

Me: I will make sure it doesn't get to that. I promised Yara to  
take care and protect her

Panther: And please stick to your promise

Panther is the last person I'd want to get into war with; loyalty  
exists between us but the Khumalo brother's stick together.  
And if you dare fuck them over they come for your life

Viper: We trust you with her Tooth

NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

I gently put Lex to bed

She fell asleep in the car. The doctor's visit went well, she wasn't sexually violated. I don't know what I could have done if it was the case, but I am glad we are almost close to shut the chapter. I closed the door and made my way to the sitting room. I found Zoe with Rotenda, laughter filled the sitting room

Me: This is a surprise; I didn't know you were coming

Zoe: I was in the neighbourhood

Now it's the right time to reprimand her for what has happened the previous night

Me: Tenda, can you please excuse us. I need a moment with Zoe

Tenda: Okay, daddy

He walked away

Me: I was actually going to call you

I sat opposite her

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: Actually no. There's a matter that I need us to settle

Her: I am listening

Me: Mimi told me what you said to her the other day



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: And that is?

Me: Why did you compare her to Goldie? That was really uncalled for if you ask me

Her: I did no such thing Ethan, I can never

Me: Mimi can never lie to me

Her: And I can? Ethan I feel insulted right now

Advertisement

we've been friends for too long and I have never given you any reason to doubt me. I only talked with Mimi for few seconds and then left

I don't understand but one thing for sure, Mimi would never lie to me

Me: Zoe, I won't allow any insults towards Mimi. You are my friend and you will always be but Mimi is more important than you

Her: I respect you and her, I also respect our friendship

Me: You sure?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Yes, I am. If you want I can apologize to her. I really don't mind

Me: Please do that. Because Mimi is off limits

AYDEN

I was still alarmed by what the Khumalo brothers have said to me, if anything I should never take their warnings lightly

Yara hugged me from behind

Her: Penny for your thoughts

Me: You are nosey

She laughed

Her: Is that your way of saying I won't tell you?

Me: Maybe

I turned around

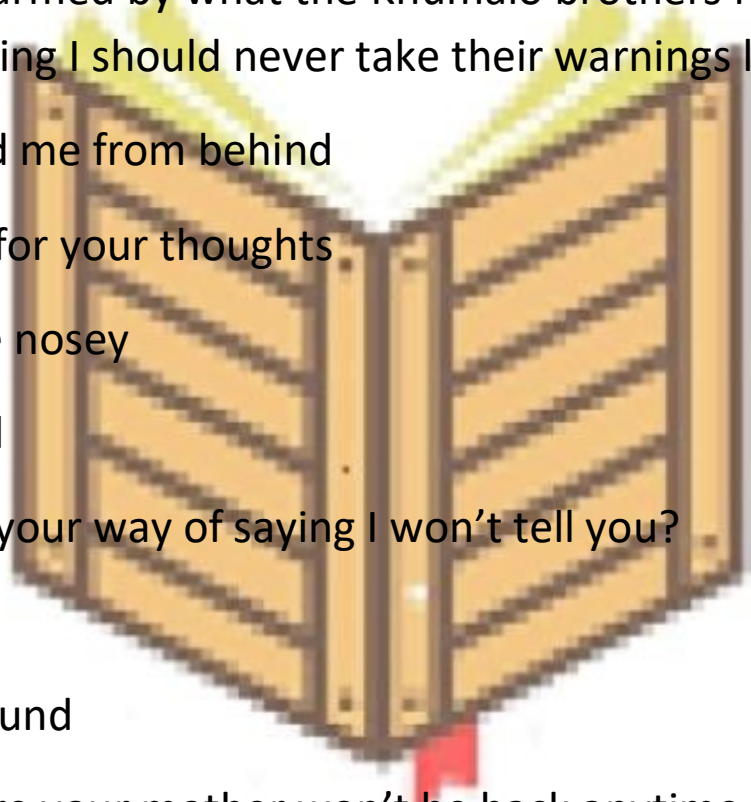
Her: You sure your mother won't be back anytime soon?

Me: No, I've already told you

I picked her and sat her on the table

Her: Where is your sister?

Me: She's upstairs



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I am really feeling uncomfortable. If your mother finds us here, it will be chaos. I am sneaking into her house

I pressed my lips against hers

Me: You talk a lot. Can we focus on us? Tonight is our night; we will worry about that tomorrow

Her: I am not one to run away from my problems

Me: And I am not Yara but now it's not the time

Her: The time will be when? Tell me Ayden, I need to know

I moved from her

Me: Are we really doing this now?

Her: I think so

Me: What do you want from me?

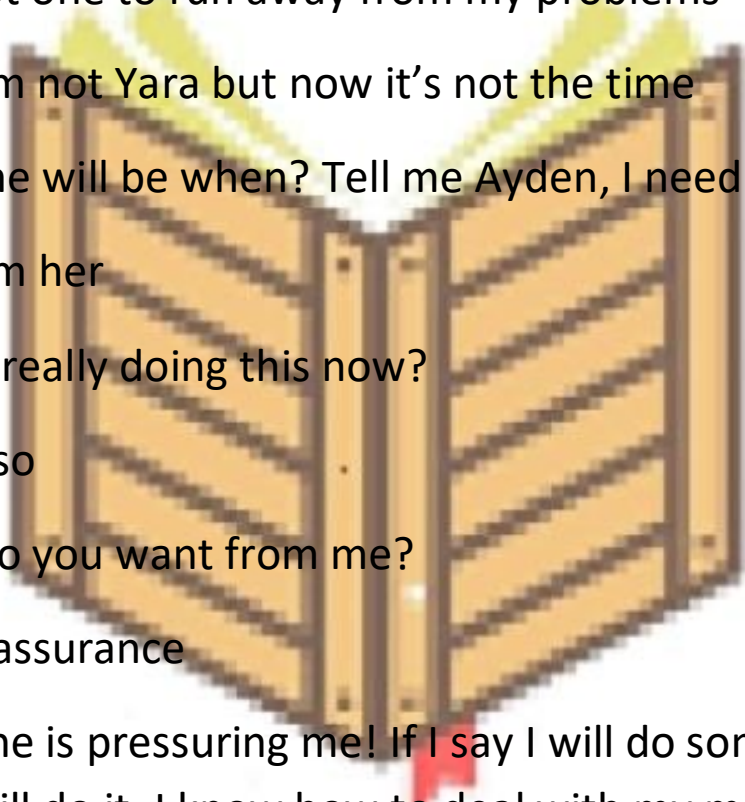
Her: I want assurance

Me: Everyone is pressuring me! If I say I will do something then trust me I will do it. I know how to deal with my mother, I will tell her about us tomorrow and I promise you

Her: I don't even know if I want you to tell her, for all I know you telling her might be the beginning of our problems

Me: Woman, what do you? Get your things in order!

Her: Don't shout at me



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at her defeated

Amelia leaned against the wall

Amelia: Hats off you sister-in-law. Now that was great, I think I am going to love you more. I waited for long to find someone who can stand for my brother and I found you

Me: I will decorate your faces altogether

Yara: As if you will

Me: Get off my table

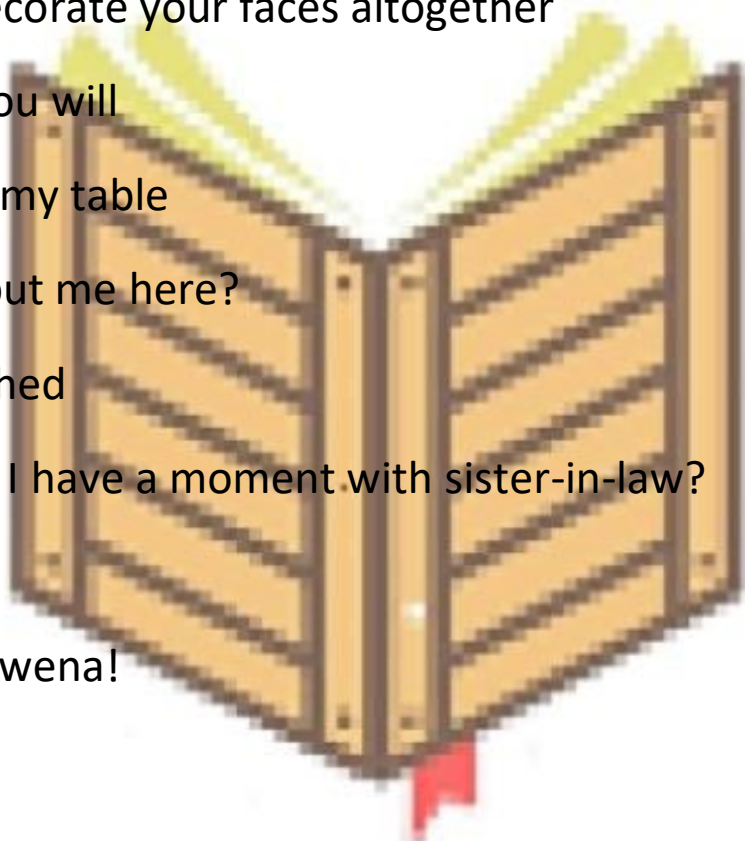
Yara: Who put me here?

Amelia laughed

Amelia: Can I have a moment with sister-in-law?

Me: No

Amelia: Ha, wena!



TYSON

NOVELSGURU.COM

I couldn't believe my eyes when I saw Yara earlier today at the University, but she didn't see me. I made sure she doesn't, I

never thought I'd see her again. It's been 5 years but it still feels like yesterday when I walked out of her life. What I did to her was heartless and I hurt her. I don't even know if she will ever find it in her heart to forgive me, she loved me and what did I do? I left her high and dry but I wish I left because I no longer loved her. I left because I got scholarship, it was a once time opportunity. Our love ended just like that, did it really?

My sister stood beside me

Her: How was your first day Mr Lecturer? (Smiles)

Me: Okay...

Her: Just okay?

Me: Ha Mulalo, what do you want me to say?

Her: Anything but okay. You were so excited when you left in the morning and now you are just... looking awful

Me: Because I didn't know what was ahead of me

Her: Care to share?

Me: I saw Yara... **NOVELSGURU.COM**

She looked at me shocked

Me: Yeah that was my face when I saw her

Her: Hectic, did you talk?



I shook my head no

Me: She didn't see me; I didn't want her to see me. I couldn't let her see me

Her: I don't wish to be you right now. Like God!

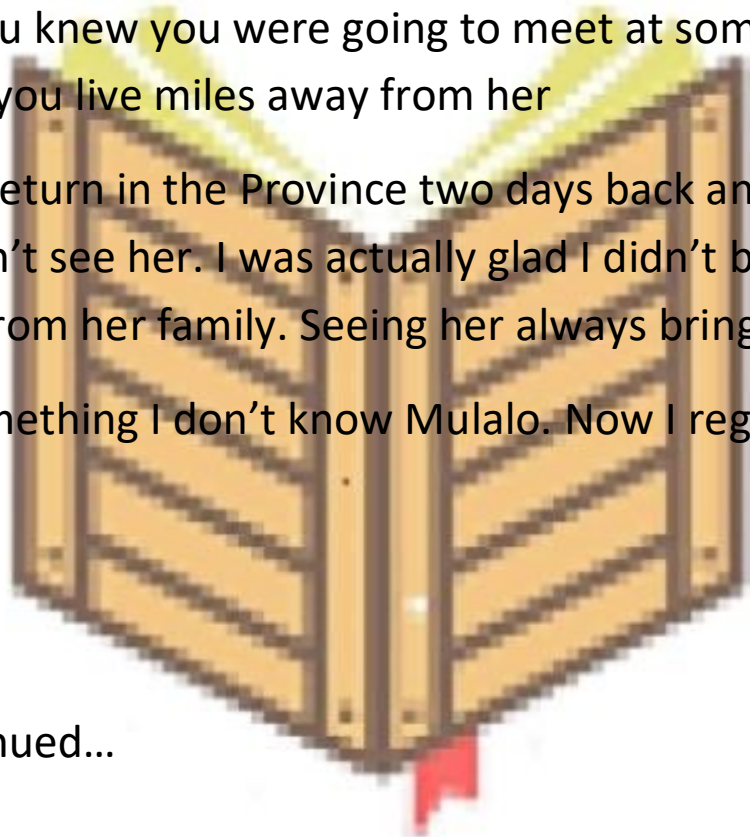
I sat down

Her: But, you knew you were going to meet at some point Ty. It's not like you live miles away from her

I made my return in the Province two days back and since my return I didn't see her. I was actually glad I didn't bump into her or anyone from her family. Seeing her always bring memories

Me: Say something I don't know Mulalo. Now I regret choosing this branch

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

50

MIMI

I am now regretting why I told my mom that I will pass by the shops because she sent me list of things that she want me to buy and the queue is not showing me any mercy

I rang her

Me: Mama

Ma: Hello

Me: Can I please buy all of these things tomorrow? The queue is too long and I have massive hangover

Ma: There's no problem. You can still get them for me tomorrow

I felt a hand on my shoulder and slowly turned around

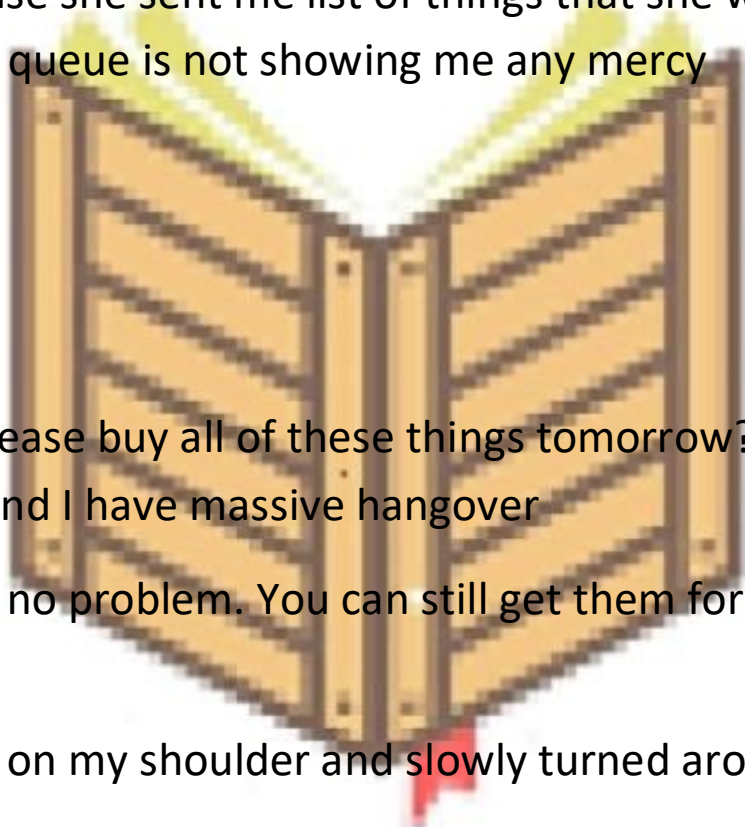
Me: Okay

I hung up

Me: Mulalo?

Her: In the flesh

I hugged her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Wow, it's been long. I didn't know you were around

Her: I come and go. How are you?

Me: I am good, and you?

Her: Fine

Me: Wow, I am surprised to see you

Her: Can we grab some something to eat or you don't have time?

I looked at the queue

Me: As you can see

Her: Let's go to Spur, I passed by it and it's not full

I pushed the trolley aside

I am tempted to ask about Tyson. You see, Yara and Tyson were inseparable. Everyone was convinced that they will get married but life happened. He got an opportunity of a lifetime and Yara was at the end of the queue. Yara cried for him for months, after him Yara struggled to find be in a relationship. She waited and hoped that one day he will come back but a year turned to years. And if he is back then I foresee danger because he came back at a time where Yara is already with someone. I can't say I know about her feelings right now towards him but I pray she no longer feels anything because if she does! God!

Her: Tyson is also back

You read my mind girl

Me: Is it?

Her: Yes, he's working as a lecturer at UNISA

I looked at her

Me: What did you say?

Her: And he has already saw her if that's what you thinking

Me: Couldn't your brother find another Varsity? He is going to disrupt Yara's life

Her: Ha Mimi, my brother never said anything about approaching your sister. Hauw!

Me: Are you being serious right now? We are talking about Yara and Tyson here. Think Mulalo, think! This won't end well; your brother can never see her

Her: Hectic



NOVELSGURU.COM

ZOE

I stood before the mirror

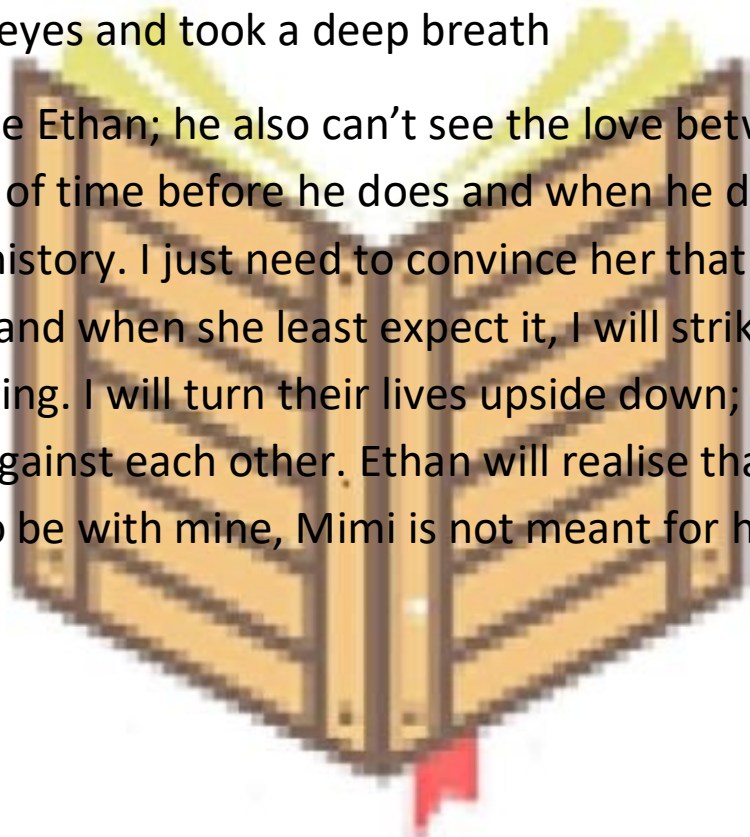
Me: Mimi is off limits, I won't allow insults towards her. Mimi can never lie to me

I mimicked Ethan's voice

Me: What the actual Hell?

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath

I don't blame Ethan; he also can't see the love between us. It's only matter of time before he does and when he does Mimi will be ancient history. I just need to convince her that I am not against her and when she least expect it, I will strike. She won't see me coming. I will turn their lives upside down; I will make them turn against each other. Ethan will realise that his heart is supposed to be with mine, Mimi is not meant for him



AYDEN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Yara circled her legs around my waist

Me: I love you, you know that?

She blushed

Her: And, I love you too

Me: How do you do it?

Her: Do what?

Me: Stand my anger and face me in any situation given

She laughed

Her: Is it something you are not used to?

Me: It's just that people fear me, my word is my law. No one has ever dared to stand up for me

Her: I've figured that out. I saw how Amelia was taken by it

Me: Don't get used to it, I will show you a lesson next time

Her: You will hit me?

Me: No Shawty

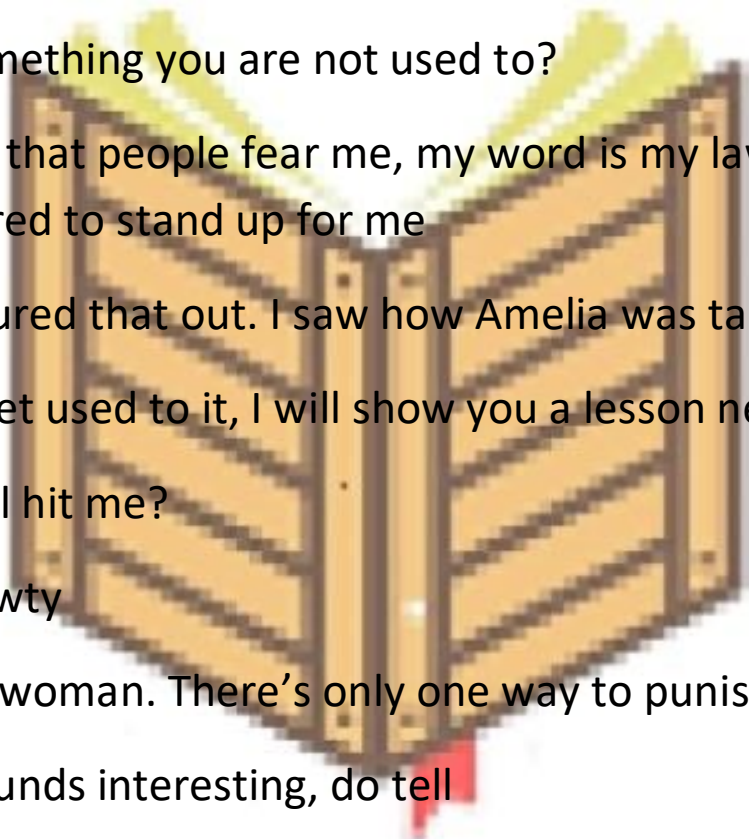
I don't hit a woman. There's only one way to punish a woman...

Her: This sounds interesting, do tell

Me: Something like this

I slid my hand in her top and massaged her nipple

Her: I should misbehave more often



NOVELSGURU.COM

We haven't had sex; I respect her enough to not just jump into bed with her. Our first time will be something she will never forget

Her: To answer your question, is not that I don't fear you. I really do but I think my love for you blind what you are and capable of. Same apply to you; your heart is soften because of what you feel for me. Not even your arrogant arse can fight that, love is powerful and it over stand everything

Me: Did I just fall in love with the most intelligent girl in the universe?

Her: You did Mr A and don't ever forget that

Me: Do you know the effect of this name?

She bit her lower lip

Me: You are seducing me

Her: You should be Mr A

Me: Fuck!

I cussed softly

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I leaned and pressed my lips against her

MIMI

I am hesitating to tell Yara about Tyson, I just don't know if it's the right thing to do

My mother shook me

Me: Mama, you said something?

Her: You are not hearing me, where's your mind?

I will not dare and tell her. She can run her mouth if she wants to

Me: I am just thinking about some things that are not important

She pulled the chair and sat down

Her: When is Buhle coming back? The house is so quiet, I miss that Zulu girl

Me: She's coming back late afternoon tomorrow. The house is so quiet right?

We laughed

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: It is. I am getting used to have you girls around, I don't know what will happened when you decided to leave me

Me: We are not leaving you anytime soon



Her: You are soon going to find partners and you will forget about this old lady

Me: Ha Mama, drama and you same WhatsApp group

She laughed again

Me: Yara told me something...

Her: What?

Me: Mbalenhle is leaving Mzo...

She swallowed

Her: Yoh!

Me: Is that all you can say? "Yoh!"

Her: I don't even know what to say, I mean I am responsible

Me: You are...

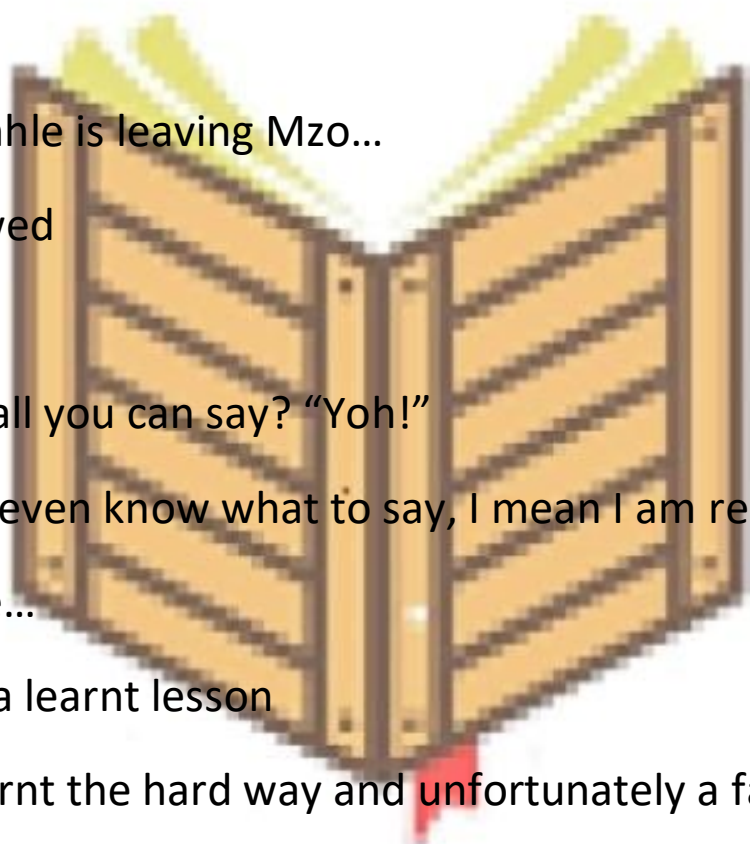
Her: This is a learnt lesson

Me: You learnt the hard way and unfortunately a family was broken

I stood up

Me: Don't worry Mama; you are not to blame alone, Mzo is to blame

I put my hand on her shoulder



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: That doesn't make any difference

I laughed and walked away

I took my phone and rang Yara

Me: You took your time to answer

Her: I am busy

Me: With what Yara? (Laughs)

Her: Do you really wanna know?

Me: Actually no, I don't

Her: What do you want, we've already talked? What do you want?

Me: Can I see you?

Her: Now?

Me: Yes, if possible

Her: Let me send you the address to Ayden's house

Me: I'll be waiting

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Bye

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

Zack jumped off the bed

Me: Where are you going?



Him: I need to make a phone call

Me: Is it her?

He looked at me

Me: It's her; I saw how your face changed when you received that message few minutes ago

Him: Yes, it's her. Our youngest son got injured; we will have to cut short our day. I will have to take you home

I laid my head on the pillow

Me: Just like that? I already told the children that I won't be home today now I am forced to change my plans

Him: You can spend the day here and go home later. Everything is paid for

He said that wearing his clothes

Me: Yeah, I will do that. Ayden and Amelia must be enjoying themselves at my absence

Him: Then let them enjoy for a bit

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

51

YARA

I was sitting in the garden with Mimi

She couldn't stop admiring the house that's how dramatic Mimi is

Her: So this is where your prince charming stays?

Me: Oh yeah

Her: If his house is like this I don't want to think about the house he will buy for you when you get married

I laughed

Me: Planning out wedding already?

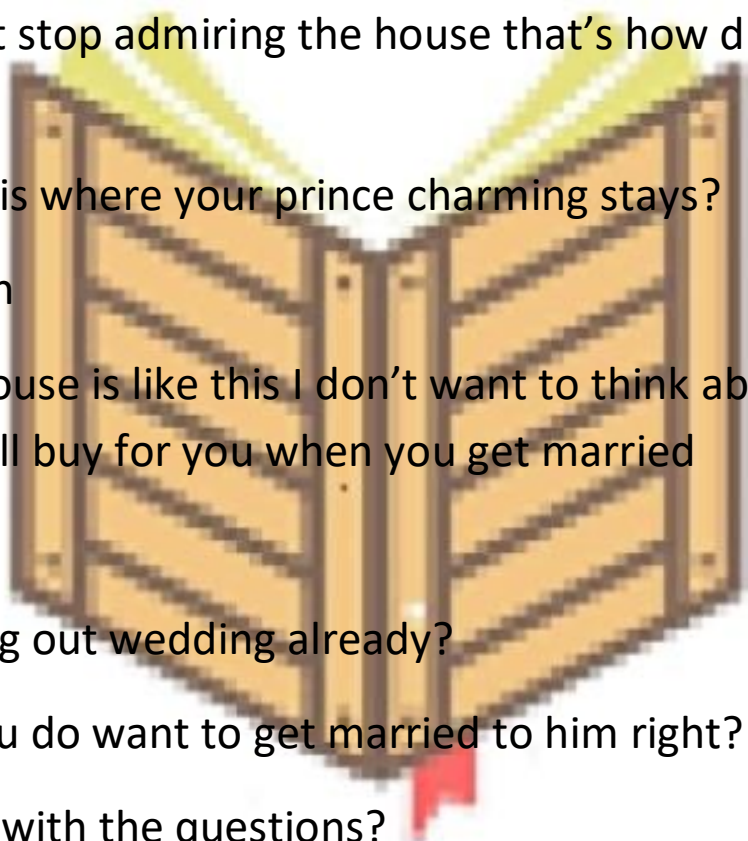
Her: Yes, you do want to get married to him right?

Me: What's with the questions?

Her: I need to know Butterfly

Me: Of course I love him but I don't think he is think Ayden is thinking about marriage already

Her: You will never know



NOVELSGURU.COM

I love Ayden and if it happens and he proposes I will definitely agree

Me: You know I love Ayden and I haven't been this excited in ages. Since...

I stood up

Her: Mh?

I took a deep breath

Me: Since Tyson

I stood up

Me: I genuinely thought I will never love any man the way I did

I chuckled softly

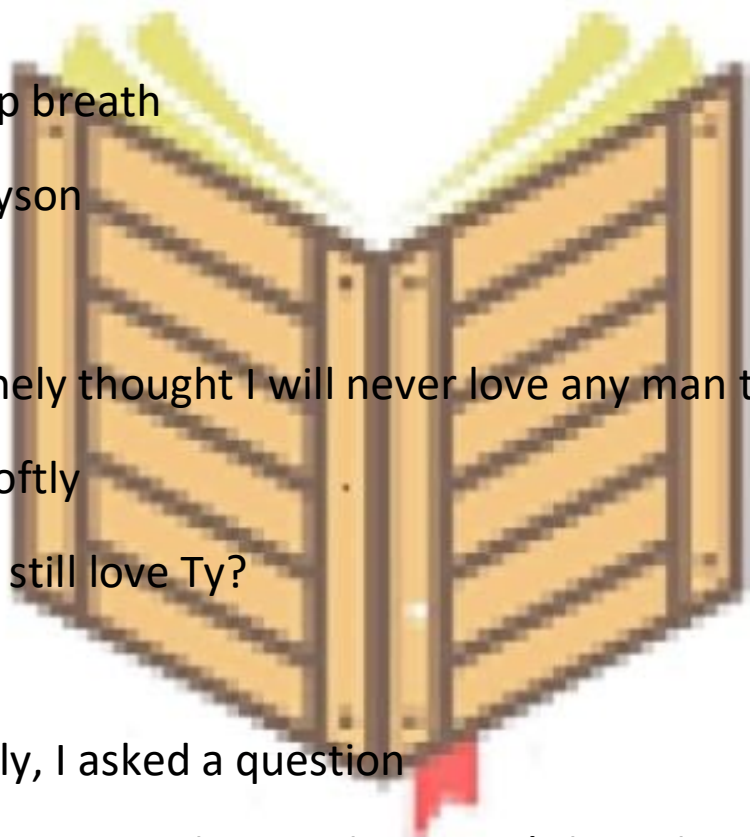
Her: Do you still love Ty?

I kept quiet

Her: Butterfly, I asked a question

Me: I don't know maybe, maybe not. It's been long Mimi and I don't know how I would feel if he stands in front of me

I tried so hard to forget about Tyson and his existence. He broke my heart but I always had hope that he will return and we will rekindle our love but he never did. Maybe he didn't love me as much as I thought he did



Her: Do you love Ayden?

I looked at her

Me: What kind of question is that? I wouldn't be with him if I didn't love him. I love Ayden Mimi. Why are you asking me these questions?

Her: Ty is back, I saw Mulalo

I staggered back

Me: What? He is back?

My heart was beating out of my chest

Her: Yes and I thought I should tell you now before you see him because you are going to see him soon

Me: Why would I see him?

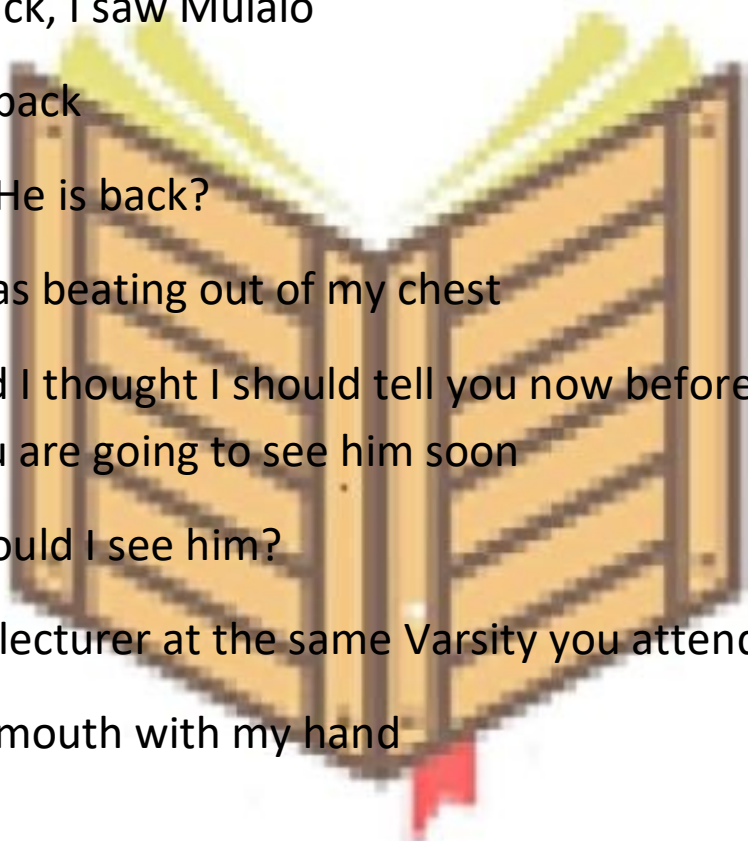
Her: He is a lecturer at the same Varsity you attend

I closed my mouth with my hand

Why God?

Her: Are you fine? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I am fine, I just need a moment



ELISA

This place is becoming overwhelming now, a lot has happened and I am sinking deep. Maybe I need a time out and just recuperate. My emotions are getting the best of me

I rang my sister

Her: This is a nice surprise

Me: It is indeed. How are you feeling?

Her: Can't complain, we are still leaving. And you?

Me: That's why I called; things are not so good on my side

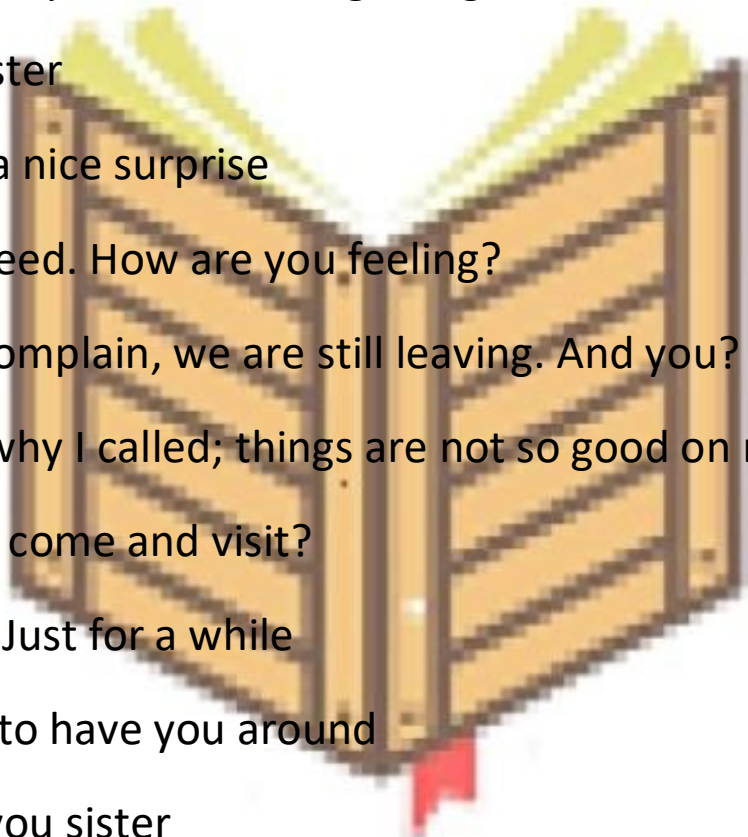
Her: Wanna come and visit?

Me: Please. Just for a while

Her: I'd like to have you around

Me: Thank you sister

Her: You will let me know when you decide to come



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

I rested my legs on the table

I was on the phone video call with Panther, Viper and Lethabo

Me: Panther, you requested this call. What's up?

Viper: Don't tell me it's about tomorrow...

Panther: Actually it is

Me: Talk

Panther: I know we do everything together, we are brothers and we vowed to work together in whatever shit that come before us

We nodded

Panther: All of you got people who care about you unlike me, Ayden you got my sister, she cares deeply for you. Viper you got Arabella and my nephew and Lethabo you got Bella and your children. They still need you and I couldn't let any danger near you

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lethabo: You are scaring us Panther

Panther: I got Diablo Junior killed

"What?" we said in unison



Panther: Yes, I did. I just received a call few minutes ago. He was involved in car accident nothing suspicious

Me: Wow, I don't know what to day

Viper: Bro, you gambled with your life. What if Junior knew about your plan?

Panther: That was the risk I was willing to take. Better me than you

Lethabo: No, that was never the deal. I would have never forgive myself if something had happened to you

Panther: Nothing was going to. There's only one Panther and that's me, I don't get killed I kill

Me: And you let us planned everything when you knew about your plans?

Viper: Tell me about it

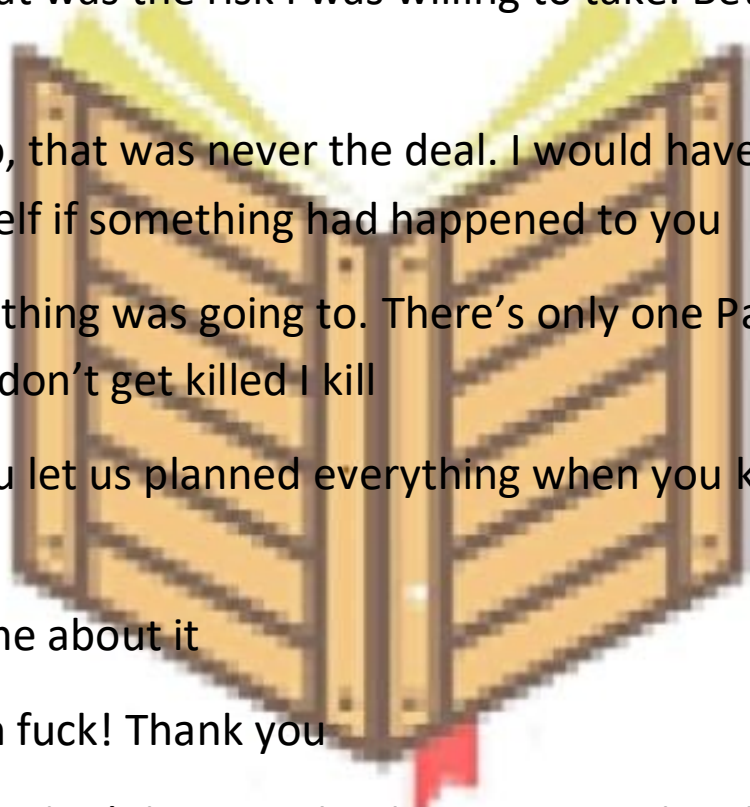
Lethabo: Oh fuck! Thank you

Panther: You don't have to thank me. We are brothers

What Panther did was indeed selfless. He could have got himself killed, the risks of getting killed were high but he didn't care about that. He thought about us

Me: Motherfucker! Don't ever do that again

Panther: Maybe I won't



NOVELSGURU.COM

We laughed

We raised our glasses and toast in his name

Us: To Panther

Panther: To me

Me: I feel like strangling you right now

Panther: Time will come for that

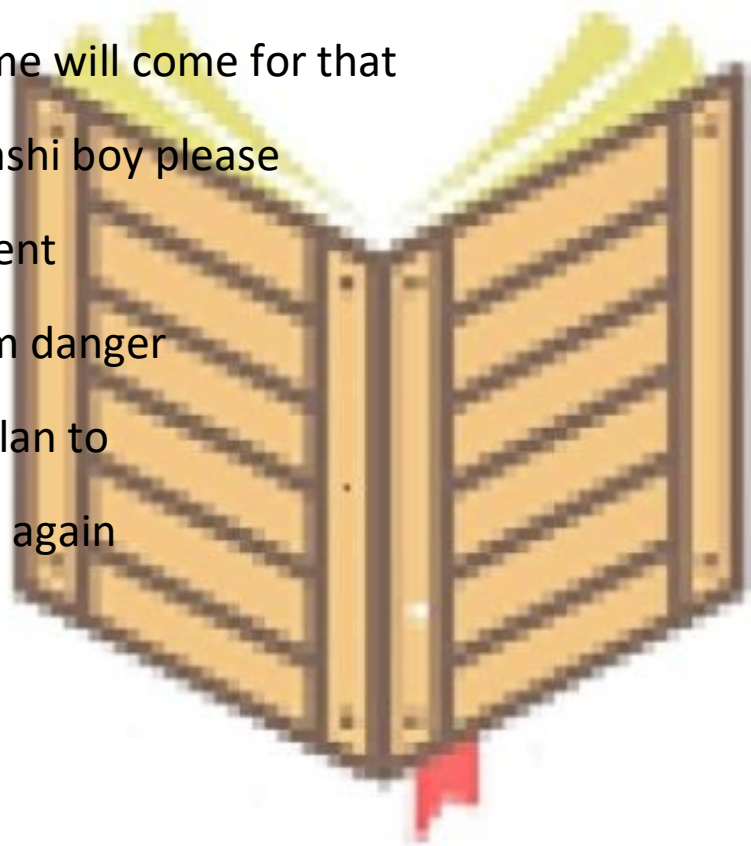
Viper: Okwashi boy please

Advertisement

play far from danger

Lethabo: I plan to

We laughed again



MIMI

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I rinsed the glass and put it on the table

My phone rang, I couldn't recognize the number

Me: Mimi speaking

Voice: Hello Mimi, it's Zoe

Me: Hello Zoe, how can I help?

Her: First of all I want to apologize for the way I talked with you, I shouldn't have compared you to Goldie. I was out of line and I'd like it if you can forgive me

Me: You are forgiven

Her: Just like that?

Me: Yeah, there's nothing to think about it

Her: You are really a good person

Me: Don't get use to it

Her: No, I won't. Thank you again

Me: Fine

Her: Maybe we can have lunch some other time

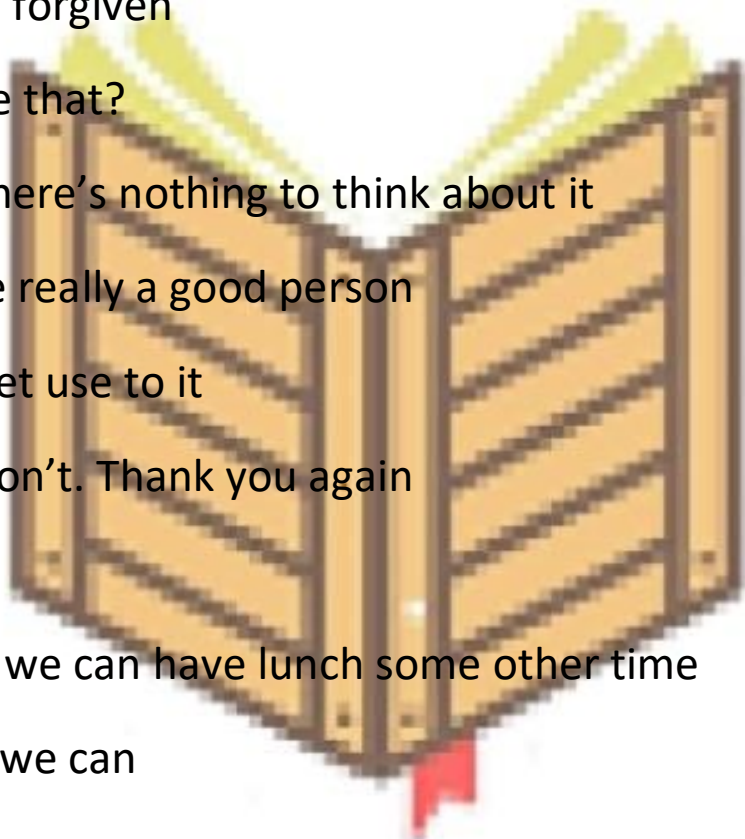
Me: Maybe we can

Her: Okay bye

I hung up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

The nerve! When she made that comment she said I am not comparing you to Goldie but now she is apologizing for it. We will see where this goes



I switched on the kettle

ZOE

I looked at the file that was in my hands and smiled

Me: Oh Miss Mimi is not so innocent

The information that I have on her will definitely come in handy when she least expect

Me: This is amazing

(Knock on door)

I slid the file under the pillow

Me: Come in

My father walked in

Me: Daddy

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mr G: Zoe, can I?

Me: Yes

He sat down

Mr G: Miss Peterson is back in the country and she will like to see you

I kept quiet

Mr G: Did you hear what I said?

Me: I did

Mr G: And?

Me: You know I don't like hospitals and I am getting better now

Mr G: You know that's not the truth, your condition is deadly. You are not well

I can never shout at my father like I do with my mother, I can easily manipulate my mother but my father is hard

Mr G: Tell me; are you in a relationship now?

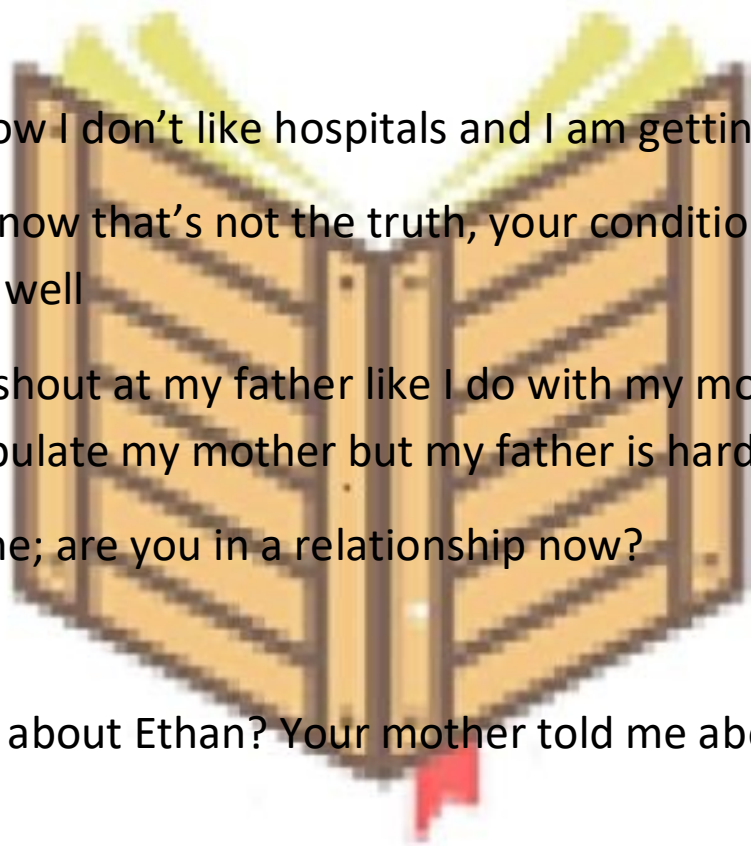
Me: No

Mr G: What about Ethan? Your mother told me about him and you

Me; She misunderstood me

Mr G: Did she?

Me: Yes, dad



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr G: I don't want what happened to your fiancé and the others to repeat itself. This time they will lock you up and throw away the key

Me: Nothing of that sort will happen

Mr G: I am glad

I faked a smile

YARA

I hugged Ayden from behind

Him: Where were you? I've been looking for you

Me: After Mimi left I decided to take a nap

He turned around

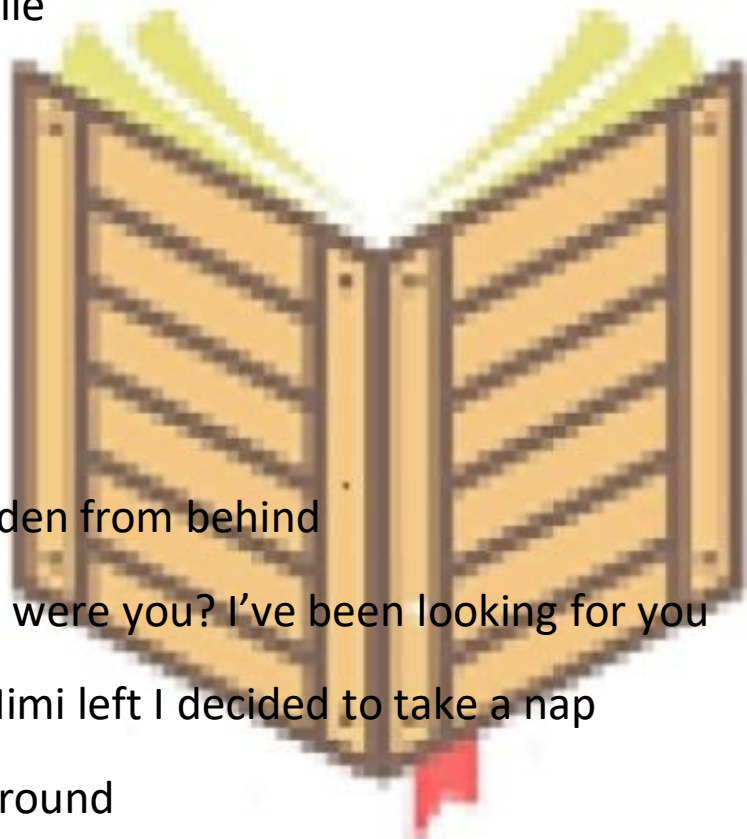
Him: Okay

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Please hold me

He did so and caressed my back

Him: What's going on?



Me: I just want to be in your arms

Him: Shawty, if there's something you will tell me right?

Me: Yes

I can't tell Ayden about Tyson now, I just can't tell him now. I am still trying figure out what's going on, I will let him know when I do

Me: I love you so much Munchie

Him: And I love you to Shawty

Voice: This is nice (Clears throat)

Ayden let go

Him: Mimsey?

Her: Yes

Shit! What now?

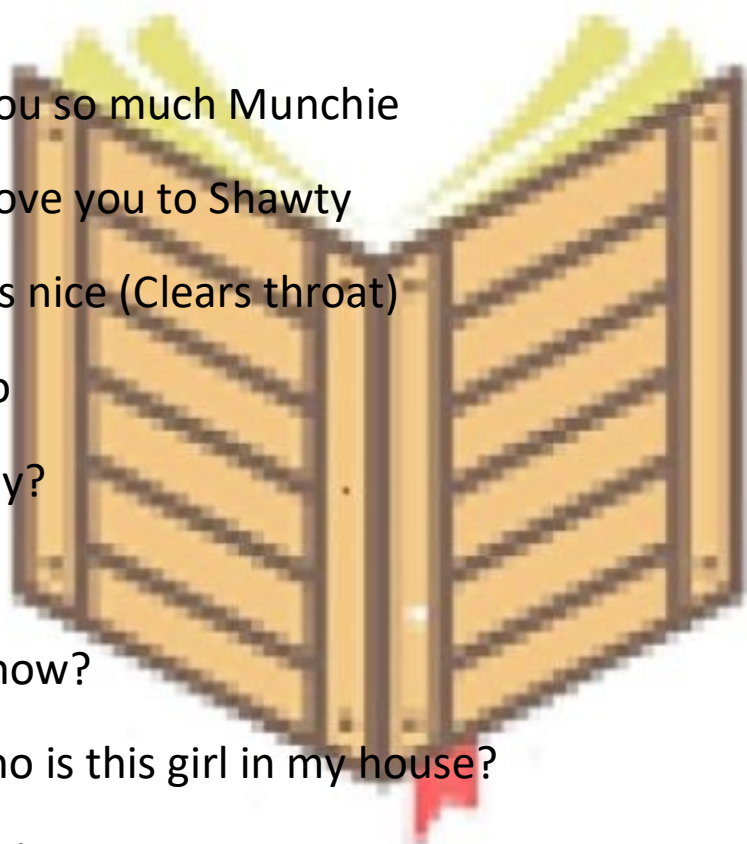
Her: And who is this girl in my house?

She looked at me

Her: No Ayden. Your Assistant? What is she doing in my house?  
Tell me

Him: She is my girlfriend

She laughed and walked up to us



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Your girlfriend? This thing is your girlfriend? You gotta be kidding me

Him: Mimsey, watch your words. Yara is my girlfriend and I love her

Her: No, you don't. This is a trap, they all do that. She's after your money and you can't even see it

She looked at me

Her: This is a dream young lady. You are below our standards, Tshivhase family is above you

Him: Mimsey, stop it!

Ayden yelled at her

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**



YARA

I lay in bed fighting with my thoughts to get up

I am still very much hurt by Sophia's words, I knew she would not accept me right away but what she said was too cruel. How can she think that I fell in love with Ayden because of his money? I didn't plan to fall in love with him, it happened. Sophia sees me as a gold digger and I don't know where she got that from... I stared at my phone hesitating to call Ayden

Me: I will see him at the office

I finally gathered my strength and jumped off the bed

I made my way to kitchen, I switched on the kettle

Me: You didn't even buy grocery Yara

I closed the fridge

Today Ethan is going to meet with the family of Shane, I prayed for a breakthrough. God will come for him; unfortunately I can't go with him. There's lot of work at the office and it needs my full attention. I will see them later

AYDEN

I made my way to the table

Mimsey was eating by herself. What she did Saturday night was really uncalled for, she hurt Yara's feelings. Her worst nightmare came true when she called her names and insults her. I knew Mimsey will give me hard time but what she did was pure evil. She showed me the side I thought she had buried

Her: You are going to avoid and ignore me until when?

Me: You disrespected my girlfriend Mimsey and until you apologize I will not

Her: You don't expect me to apologize to that cheap steak?

Me: That cheap steak as you say is my girlfriend and I will not take in your insults towards her. I refuse any bullying coming from you

She gave me serious look

Her: I will never accept that girl into my family Ayden and I will make it clear to you

Me: Okay fine, don't accept her I don't care at all

Her: Tell her that as well

I took my wallet and car keys

Me: I have no time for this nonsense

MIMI

Buhle is coming back today, I terribly missed her... I took my phone and sent her text

|Me- When you reach Polokwane, call me or send me a text|

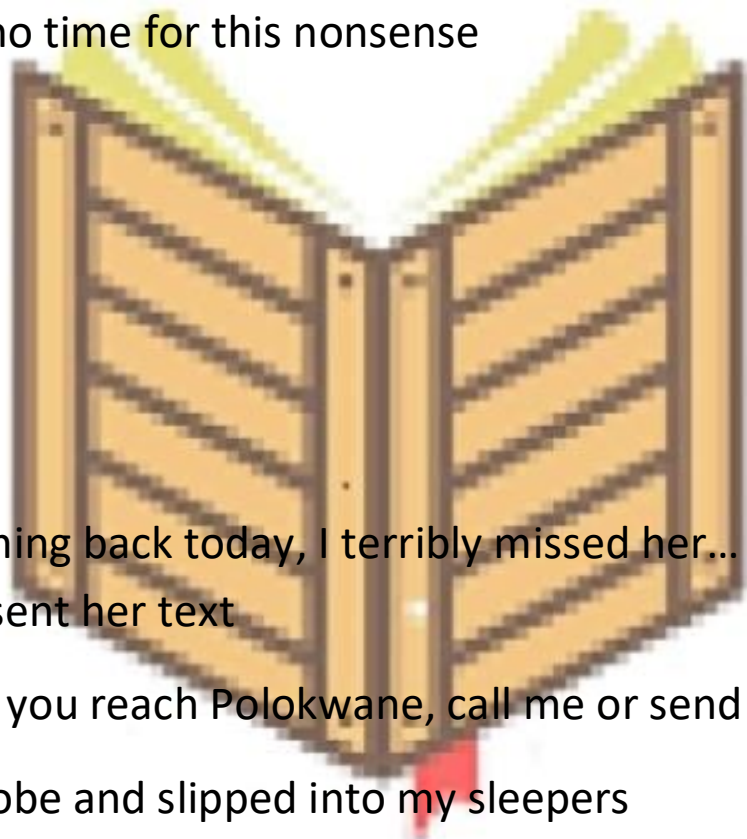
I wore my robe and slipped into my sleepers

The door opened, my mother walked in

Me: Mama

Ma: I thought you were finished

Me: No, I was on the phone with Ethan. The call took long



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: You've been spending lot of time with him, are you guys together?

Me: Not yet, we are still taking things slow. We will see where they lead us

Me: Okay... There's something I need to tell you

Me: Okay....

Ma: I am going to your aunt Rosetta

Me: Is she fine?

Ma: Your aunt is fine. I just need to go away Mimi just for a short while. A lot has happened; I just need to relax a bit

Me: Until when?

Ma: I don't know but what I know is that you girls will be fine and watch over the house

I hugged her

Me: I am sure the visit will do you good

Ma: That's what I am hoping

Me: Is Yara aware?

Ma: Haven't told her but I will

Me: You must tell her



PANTHER

Buhle said today she is coming back, I am very anxious about her return. I think I am falling for her and very hard

Viper nudged me

Me: What the hell?

Him: I am talking alone whilst you daydream

Me: Correction, I am not daydreaming

Him: Who are you thinking about?

The waitress brought us a bottle of scotch

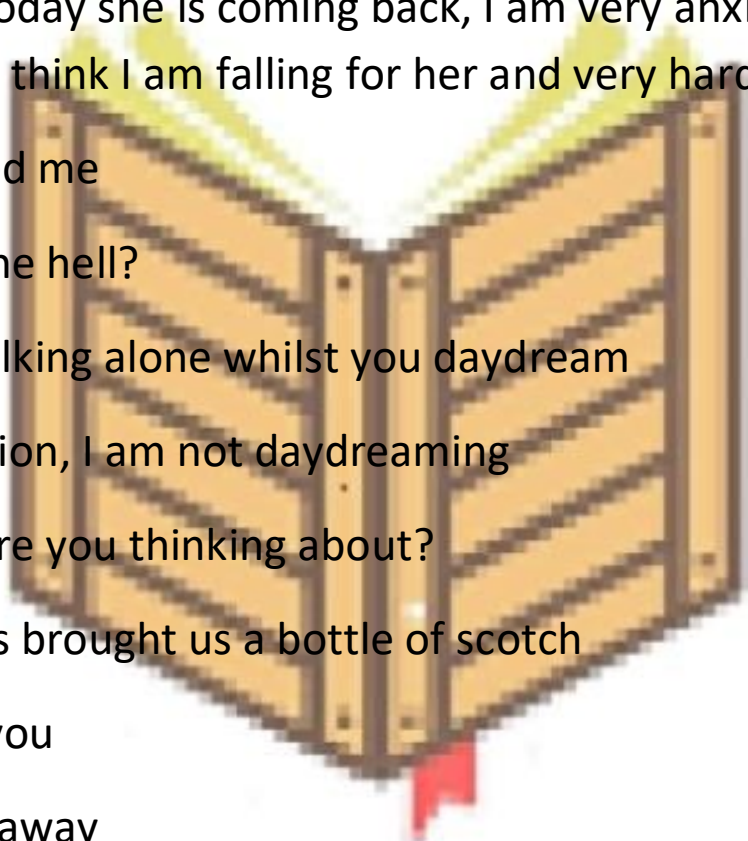
Me: Thank you

She walked away

Me: I am not thinking about anyone and I don't know where you are getting that from

Him: Who is she? And don't say it's no one because you've been staring at that phone since we came here

I took a sip



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Buhle. She's Mimi's friend

Him: Mimi as in Yara's sister?

Me: Yeah that one. I can't stop thinking about her and it's driving me crazy

Him: I've heard that before

Me: Okay go ahead and be a cunt about it. Didn't that girl turned out to be our sister?

He laughed

Him: She did

Me: I am glad you find it amusing

Him: Tell me about this Buhle...

Me: There's nothing to tell except that I am in love with her or so I think

Him: Then tell her brother

Me: I freeze whenever I see her

He laughed again **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: You do what? I should have this in recording. Why the hell do you freeze?

Me: I don't know, there's something about her that make me blank out brother



Him: I need to see this girl

Me: And, you will

ETHAN

I stood at the door and looked at them bickering

Me: Hello

Advertisement

did you see the time?

They looked at me

Lex: Daddy

Tenda: We didn't see you

Me: Clearly you didn't. Hurry up we have to go

Lex: Coming

I closed the door and took out my phone

I called my mother

Me: Mom



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Ethan, how are you?

Me: Good mom, and you?

Her: Fine. Why are you calling me so earlier in the morning?

Me: I just wanted to talk with you

I sat on the couch

Her: I've been having dreams about you son, are you sure you are fine?

Me: I am mom. What kind of dreams?

Her: Intense dreams. In my dreams you look like someone who is trapped and caged, you keep of shouting for help but there's no one coming to your aid

Me: You are scaring me. And, why didn't you call me?

Her: I was thinking of coming down there but since you called...

Me: Your dreams always send chills down my spine mom

Her: You should be careful

Me: I will

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: I'll pray about it as will



YARA

I arrived at the office 30 minutes late. Sphesihle was not in her working station, I wonder where she is

I made my way to the office; I ran my eyes to Ayden's office. He was standing at the door

Him: Miss M

Me: Mr A

Him: Can we talk?

I nodded

I walked into his office

Him: Thank you

He closed the door and locked it

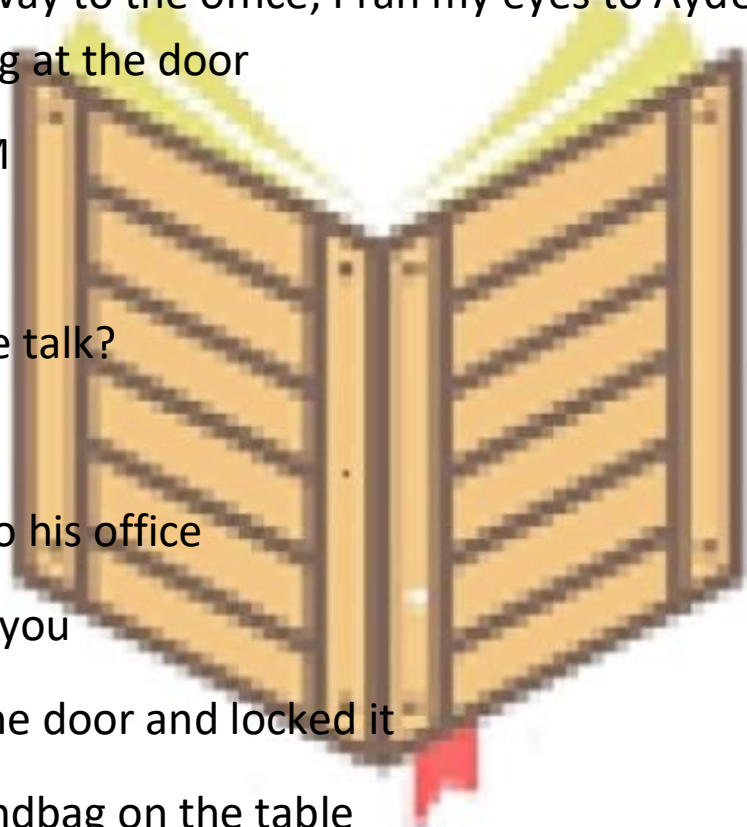
I put my handbag on the table

Him: You are avoiding me

Me: I am not

Him: Yes, you are

He walked up to me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I called you and you didn't pick up

Me: I didn't see it

Him: I talked with my mother, and she knows I will never leave you

Me: Does she?

Him: Yes Miss M, she does. My mother know better than to get into a fight with me

Me: This is not a fight Mr A, it's disapproval. Who am I to you? Your mother is more important than me

Him: You are as important as my mother is

Me: She doesn't like me and she will never like me. I saw it in her eyes, she made sure I did

Him: But I love you, isn't that enough? We don't need Mimsey to love each other, we met without her and our love doesn't need her approval. I only told her because I thought she deserved to know but I was wrong

Me: I don't want our relationship to be about someone else, I love you and you love your mother as well. The conflict!

Him: And I love you

Me: I don't want to steal you from her

Him: You are not stealing me Miss M

He put his hands on my cheeks

Him: I will deal with Mimsey, I know how to. Trust me Miss M,  
can you do that?

Me: Yes

The corner of his mouth rose into a smile

Him: Thank you

He kissed me

Me: What did we say about office romance?

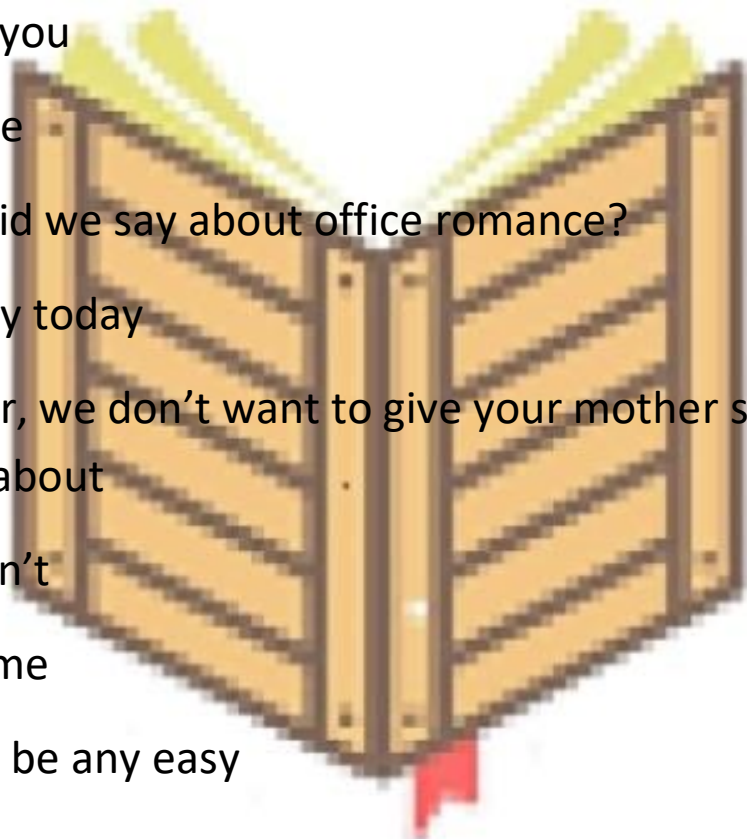
Him: It's only today

Me: It better, we don't want to give your mother something  
else to talk about

Him: We don't

He hugged me

This will not be any easy



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

## ETHAN

We sat in the Principal's office; we were waiting for Shane's parents. The twins teacher and Shane's teacher was also present

The Principal checked time and looked at me

Principal: Please forgive me; they are probably on their way

Me: It's fine

I looked at the twins

Me: You still good?

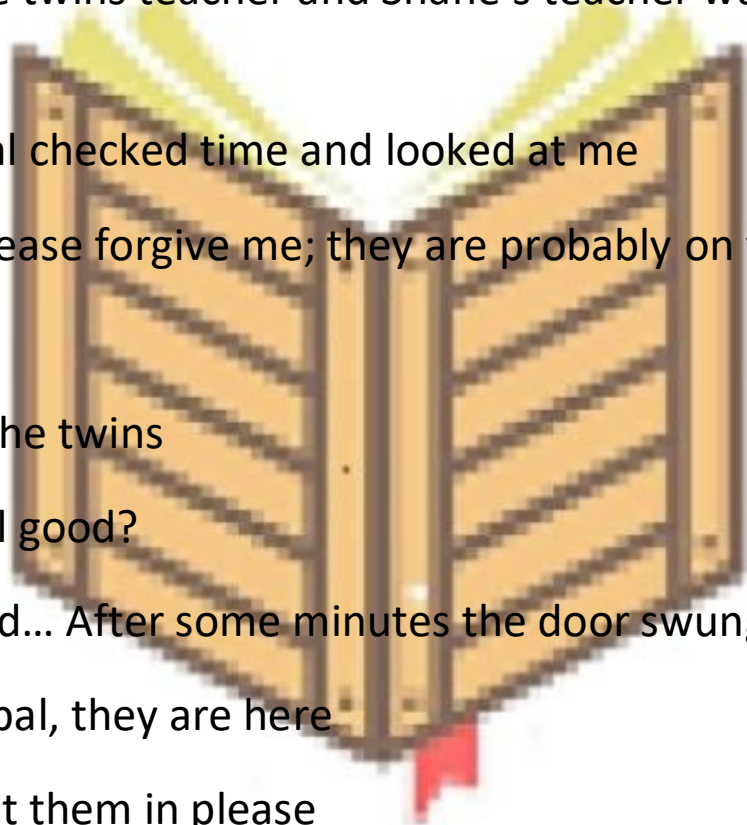
They nodded... After some minutes the door swung open

Lady: Principal, they are here

Principal: Let them in please

They walked in and sat down

Principal: Thank you, I think now we can start. First of all, I'd like to apologize to you Mr Liremi. Bullying has never been tolerated in this school and it won't start now. What Shane did



was disrespecting the rules of the school and for that he will be punished

Shane's father cleared his throat

Mr B: If I may ask, what prove do you have that these children was bullied by my son? For all we know they are protecting the real bully

Principal: The twins told their father Sir Bopape, and I honestly don't see any reason why they can lie

Mr B: You will be surprised

Mrs B: Shane also confirmed it, so I don't see why we are going in circles about this issue

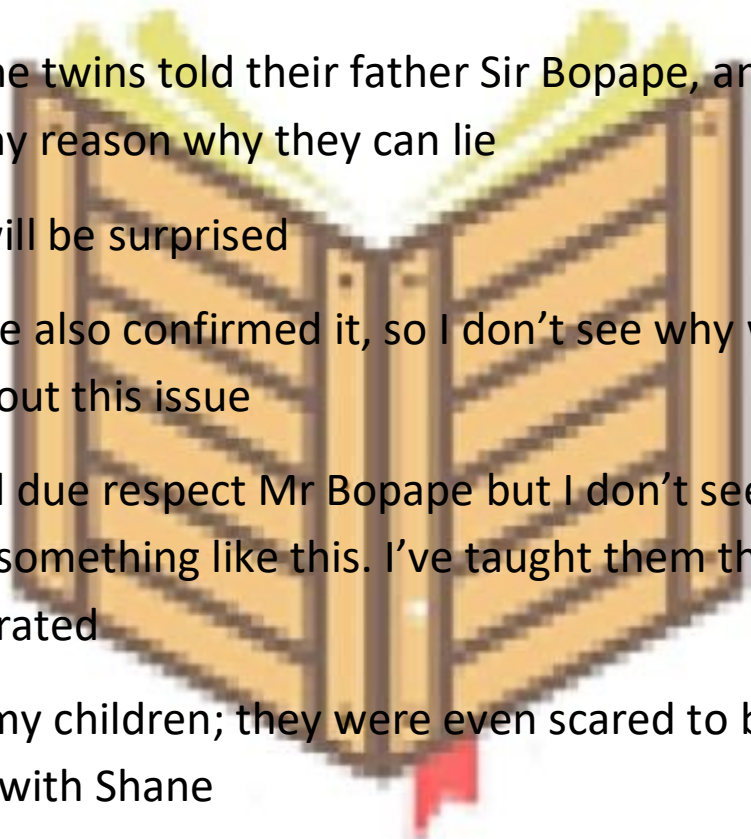
Me: With all due respect Mr Bopape but I don't see my children lying about something like this. I've taught them that lies that are not tolerated

I looked at my children; they were even scared to be in the same room with Shane

Me: With that, I have no doubts that Shane actually bullied my twins

Mr Bopape chuckled

Principal: When it came to my attention about what is going on I investigated and it was confirmed, this is really unsettling and



sensitive matter. Seeing that the twins are so young, and Shane is old enough to know what is wrong and right. We stand against bullying and we will not leave this matter before making an example out of him. We will send strict message through Shane that will show others who are thinking of bullying other kids

I looked at Shane, he was crying

His mother pulled him into her arms, as for his father well I don't want to start with him. I see where this kid is getting this behaviour from

Twins' teacher: I've seen the twins sobbing and isolating themselves, I tried to talk with them but they refused to talk

Shane's teacher: I have to agree with that, Shane is very violent and he has shown his side couple of times. We thought it was just a phase but he proven to be dangerous

Mr B: All of you are ganging up on my son. This is bullshit!

Principal: Mr Bopape, language. I see where Shane is getting the temper from

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mrs B: I apologize Mr Liremi, I certainly didn't send my child to this school to be a bully, if I knew what was going on I'd stopped it. Please, find it in your heart to forgive him

Mr B: What exactly are we here? You've already decided on my son's fate, then why don't you say it already

Principal: Mr Bopape...

Mr B: I don't have whole day

Principal: The Department of Education is already aware about this; we've come to an agreement. Campbell school will no longer have Shane Bopape; he is expelled from the school

Mrs B: No, please don't do that. We are already halfway the year, he will not get admission at this stage

Mr B: Let them be, my son will go to the school that will not discriminate him. This is nonsense!

Mr Bopape stood up and walked out

Mrs B: I am sorry about that

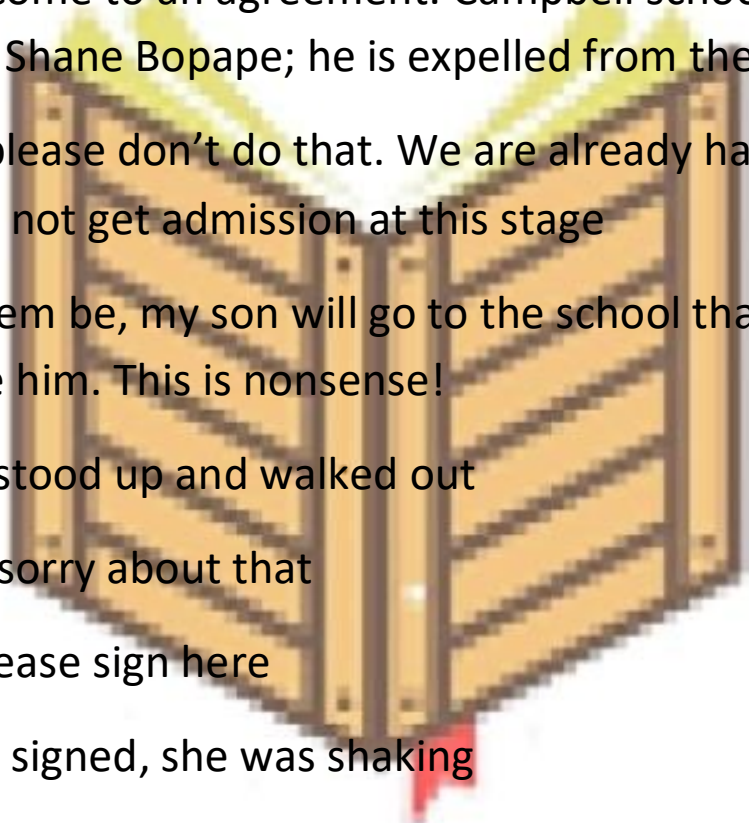
Principal: Please sign here

Mrs Bopape signed, she was shaking

Principal: Shane needs professional help, and I suggest you get him that help before it's too late

I signed and gave the Principal

Mrs Bopape knelt before the twins



Mrs B: Hey, I just want to apologize for what my son has done to you okay? I deeply apologize for his behaviour, it was uncalled for

Tenda: We forgive you

Lex: Yes, we forgave you long time. Shane as well

She kissed their cheeks

Mrs B: Mr Liremi, I deeply apologize for any damage that was caused by my son

Me: You are forgiven Mrs Bopape

Shane stood up

Shane: I am sorry Alexa and Tenda

Principal: Thank you for coming

Advertisement

I think the matter is now settled. Mrs Bopape, I wish you and your son the best



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA



I was having lunch with Sphehleh

Her: Tell me again why we are not doing more of this often?

Me: You are asking me that? (Laughs)

Her: We should do more of this

She sipped on her juice

Her: Kill me now, don't look now but Dragon is here

Sphe is aware of my relationship with Ayden; it's hard keeping a something from her

Me: What? (Low voice)

Her: Try and act cool or else she will breathe fire on us

What is Sophia doing here? I have no energy to fight with her

Sophia: Good day ladies

We greeted her back

Sophia: Sphe darling, can I steal your friend?

Sphe: You can

NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood up

Me: Let's go to my office

We walked to my office in silence

Ayden is not in the office today, no one will save me

Me: Please sit down

Her: Thank you

She cleared her throat

Her: Let me not waste time, we need to talk about your fling with my son

Me: I am listening

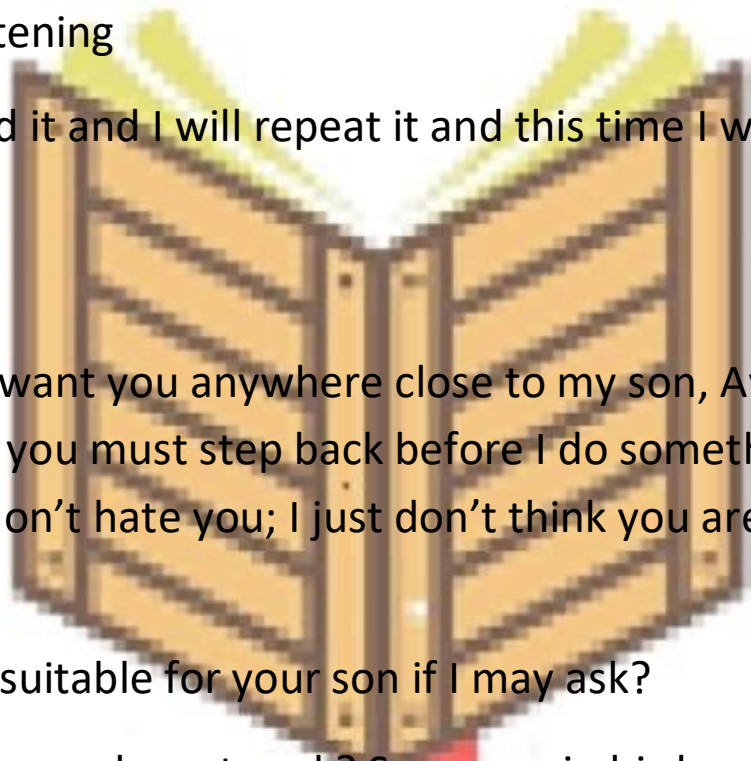
Her: I've said it and I will repeat it and this time I want you to listen to me

I kept quiet

Her: I don't want you anywhere close to my son, Ayden is a no go area and you must step back before I do something that will hurt you. I don't hate you; I just don't think you are suitable for my son

Me: Who is suitable for your son if I may ask?

Her: Do you even have to ask? Someone in his level, someone who will match up with Ayden. By just looking at you I can tell you are one of those girls who need a ladder to make it in life and Ayden is your ladder but doll I won't let that happened. Ayden is just pushing time with you, it's his style. He toys with his Assistant and then throws them out



Me; Then why are you so worried about me if your son's plan is to play me? You should be happy

Her: Yara, I don't want to hurt you because if I decide to I can. Don't mess with me, please

Me: Why do you hate me this much? You don't even know me

Her: I know your type. You are cheap and sad about your own life. You target guys like Ayden and my son is a fool he can't even see what is happening in front of him

Is this how our relationship is going to be like? This woman will never accept me, even if I try she will never. Ayden will try and fight for me but until when? We are talking about his mother here not just anyone, in this case things get more complicated because Sophia stays with Ayden. He told me that the house they are living in is his, he recently bought it and I don't see him buying another house anytime soon

Her: Stay away from my son Yara before I become your worst nightmare

She stood up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Check internet and see the events Ayden attend and stand before the mirror and see if your wardrobe fit. Have a great day

I sat on my chair not sure on what to do

When she closed the door a tear escaped my eye. I am not emotionally ready for this, no!

MIMI

I opened my arms for her

Me: I miss you so much

Buhle: I miss you too

Me: What did you bring for me?

Her: Lot of things (Laughs) you love presents Mimi, suka!

Me: Let me help you with that

I took her suitcase

Her: I thought you were working today

Me: No, we are starting with our training tomorrow. So, the manager gave us the day off

Her: You mean he gave you? I am already on my day off

I laughed

Me: Whatever. How was home?

Her: Best visit ever, next time I am taking you with me

Me: Make it next week

The car stopped in front of us



NOVELSGURU.COM

When I checked it was Yara's brother Lindokuhle

Me: You didn't say he was coming?

She smiled at me

Her: And spoil the fun? Forget it

He got out of the car

Lindokuhle is a sight to sore eyes. In fact both of them, him and Craig are so handsome. Yara got their noses, Zulu guys are beautiful no wonder my mother couldn't leave Mzoxolo. I mean he's a whole snack and a half, if I didn't have my Ethan I was going to score myself one

Him: Ladies

Me: Lindo...

Him: I don't get my hug?

Buhle is smitten

They hugged. I stood there like a lost puppy

YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I cried in Nosizwe's arms

I still don't want to believe what happened in the office, Sophia was harsh with words. I don't know where she got the idea of me being a gold digger. I love her son for Pete's sake

Her: Stop crying Secrets, it's not worth it

Me: How can I not? That woman looked straight into my eyes and threatened me, she called me names. A whole gold digger  
Nos

Her: I hate her already, who the hell does she think she is? Was it really necessary to call you names?

Me: To her it was. I am hurt I am not gonna lie, it won't be easy to forget about this

She cupped my face

Her: Don't mind her, long as Ayden doesn't see you as one. It doesn't matter

What was I doing with rich kids in the first place? I should have concentrated on my job in peace and not start any relationship with Ayden. Look at me now, I am crying and hurt

To be continued...

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)



SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I was sitting in the lounge thinking of ways to separate Ayden and Yara

Honestly speaking, I don't like that girl for my son. Ayden can have any girl but not Mzoxlo's daughter. I've always wanted my children to have partners of their circle and so far it has been like that. When Ayden separated from Aurora I was hurt and angry because I thought they were going to be together. And now my stupid son decided to go and date Yara...

Me: There must be someone from Ayden's past that I can contact, someone who loved Ayden

There's one person who can actually be my pawn in this situation...

I took my phone and rang Munei. Munei and Ayden dated but I can't really say it was official, Ayden wasn't fully committed but Munei loved him

Me: Hello

Munei: Mrs Tshivhase

Me: How are you?

Her: Fine, and you?

Me: I am fine. Are you in the province?

Her: Not in the moment but I will be back in a day or two

Me: I need a favour from you it concern Ayden

Her: Okay...

Me: I want you to help me move someone out of the way

Her: Sounds interesting but in all of that am I going to get my time with Ayden? Because it will be torture to be around him and not snack

Me: You can, that will make it solid to move this fly out of the way

Her: Why do you have against this girl?

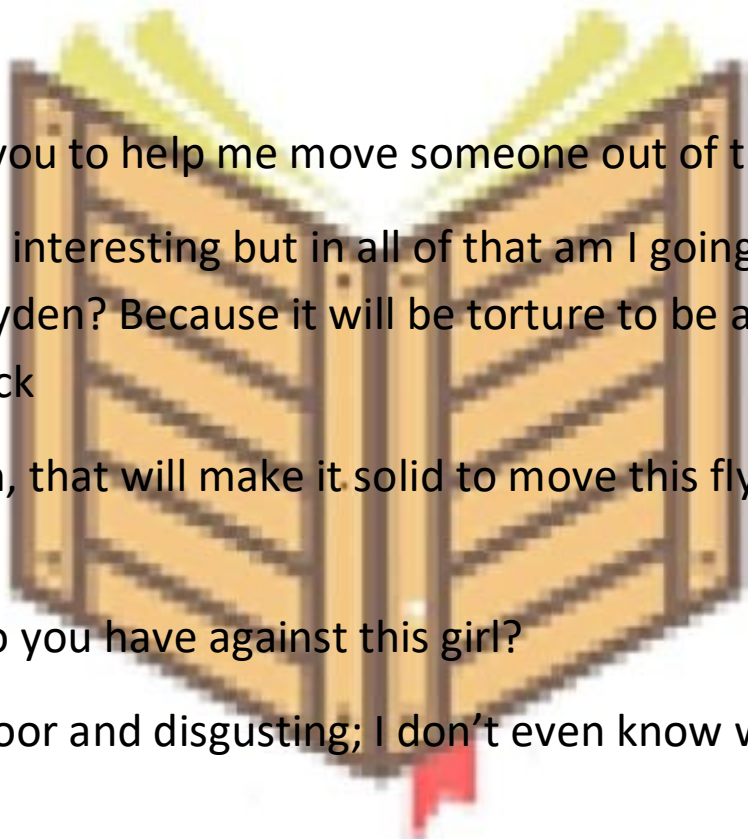
Me: She's poor and disgusting; I don't even know what my son saw in her

Her: Ayden has never went for girls like her

Me: That's what I am asking myself right now

Her: She must be so special for him to love her

Me: Nonsense, she must have used potion for my son



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: You and drama, but we will see when I get there partner

I laughed softly

Me: I love the sound of that and please don't disappoint me

Her: I have never

YARA

My mother's eyes switched back to me

Ma: You sure you are okay?

Me: I am Mama, I am just tired. It was long day

I stretched my neck

Ma: Tomorrow I am leaving

Me: Leaving to where?

Ma: To your aunt Rosetta

Me: That's unexpected. You'll be gone for how long?

Ma: I don't know

Me: What a time for you to go...



NOVELSGURU.COM

She fixed her eyes on me

Ma: What's the meaning of that?

I can't tell my mother what is happening in my relationship-I mean I haven't even told her that I am dating

Me: No, I just mean I wasn't expecting you to leave

Ma: I don't believe you one bit

(Door closes)

Ma: Must be your sister and Buhle

Me: Oh, she's back?

Ma: Yeah, Mimi went to fetch her

Mimi walked in the sitting room

Mimi: Family

Ma: Where is Buhle? I thought you were coming back with her

Mimi looked at me

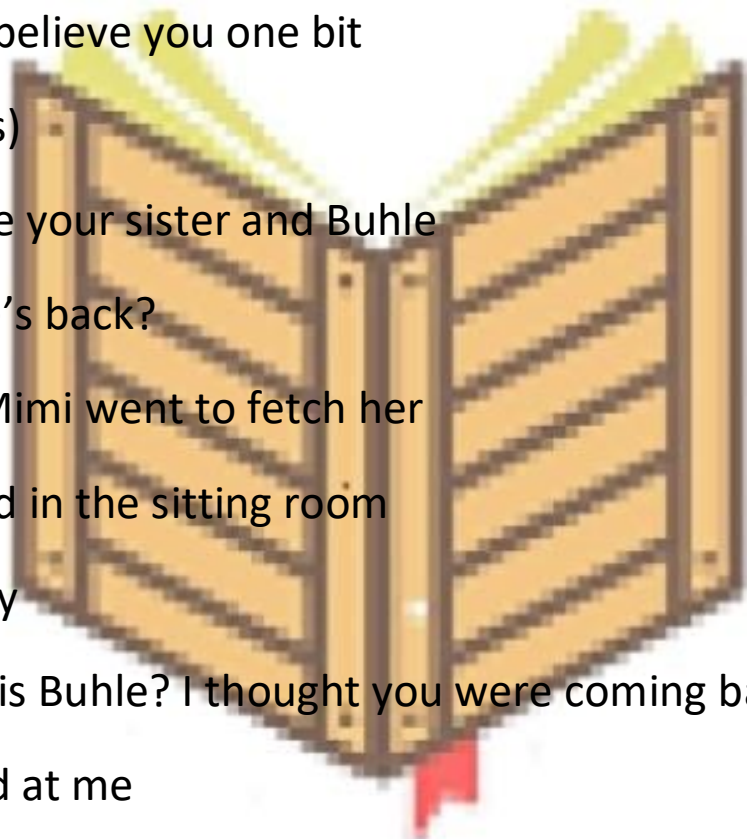
Her: Her brother happened...

Me: Which brother?

Her: Lindo

Me: Buhle and Lindo? I didn't know

Her: Now you know



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Wow (Laughs)

My mother stood up

Ma: I am coming

She took Buhle's suitcases and walked away

Mimi sat next to

Her: Have you been crying?

Me: No

Her: Yes, your eyes are puffy

Me: No, they are not

Her: Talk before I make you

Tears welled up

Me: My relationship is not going to work, Ayden's mother hate me. She can't stand me Mimi

Her: Did she say something to you?

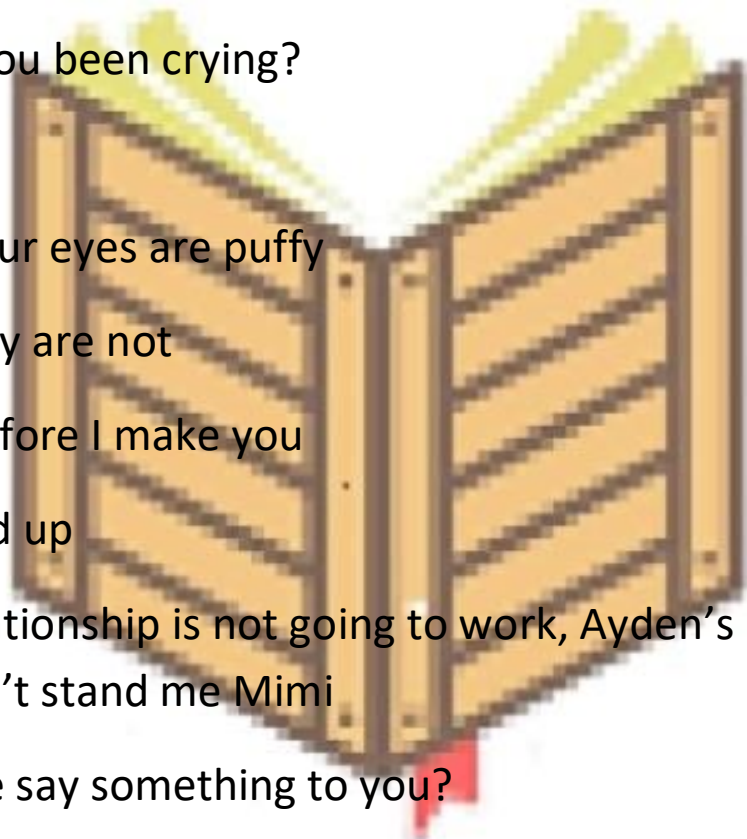
I nodded repeatedly

Her: Who the hell does she think she is? What did she say?

Me: I can't tell you, I know how unstable you are Mimi

Her: I said tell me!

I narrated the story to her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I don't know what to do or say to Ayden. It's clear that woman hate me, she hate me Mimi

Her: The nerve of her! Just because she lives in the suburbs she thinks she can spit on you and do as she pleases. Well she hasn't meet me

Me: No, don't do something irrational Mimi

Her: So, you want me to sit and allow her to do whatever shit she want? No Butterfly, I am going to give her piece of my mind

Oh, there we go!

I laid my head on the couch

BUHLE



Lindo drove us to the nearby restaurant; we shared few words on the drive. He is really a nice guy and I don't even know why I was scared of him. But, you can't blame me I mean this guy shout Mafia

He glanced down on his drink

Him: This is nice

Me: Yes, it is

I laughed softly

Him: Care to share the joke?

Me: I am just thinking about the other day when you called me

Him: What did you expect me to say? I didn't know what to say to break the ice

Me: It was fun though; I'll surely keep that as a memory

Him: You mean holding it against me? Oh right

Me: Whatever!

Him: Give me your hand...

I extended my hand, he held it

Him: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, but you are making me blush

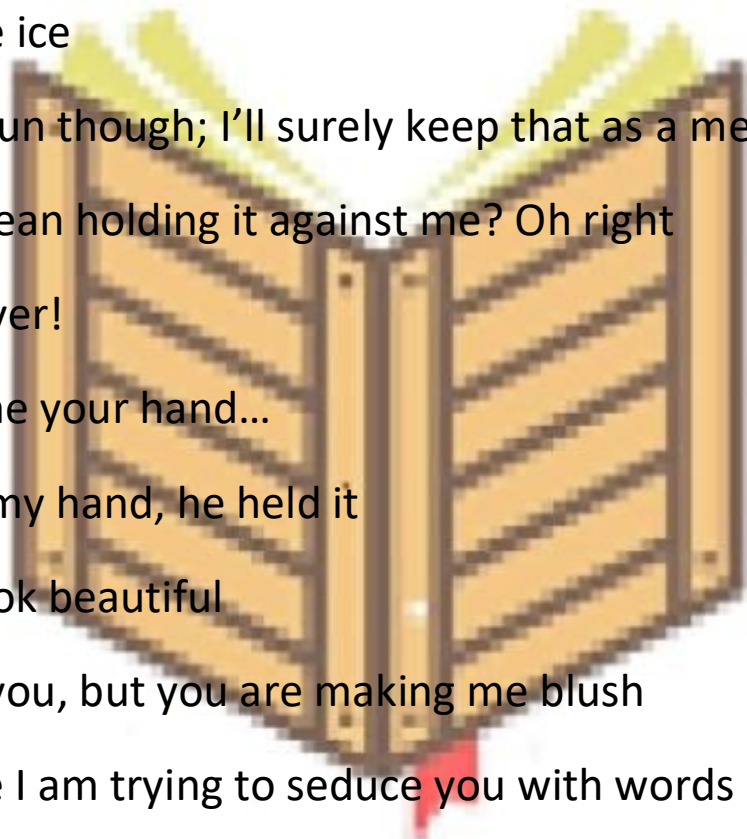
Him: Maybe I am trying to seduce you with words

Me: You are doing a very nice job

He cleared his throat

Him: I think both of us can agree that we know what is happening between us

Me: Yes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You know I've been checking you out for some time now;  
it's pretty much obvious that I like you

I looked down and smiled

Him: Look at me, don't be shy

I looked at him

Him: What do you say we give this a try?

Me: A try?

Him: Yes, or let me ask. Buhle, can you please be my girlfriend?

If really I want to give this a try as he is putting it then I need to  
be honest about my past. Lindo doesn't look like guys who take  
shit and I don't want to find myself six feet under

I loosen his grip

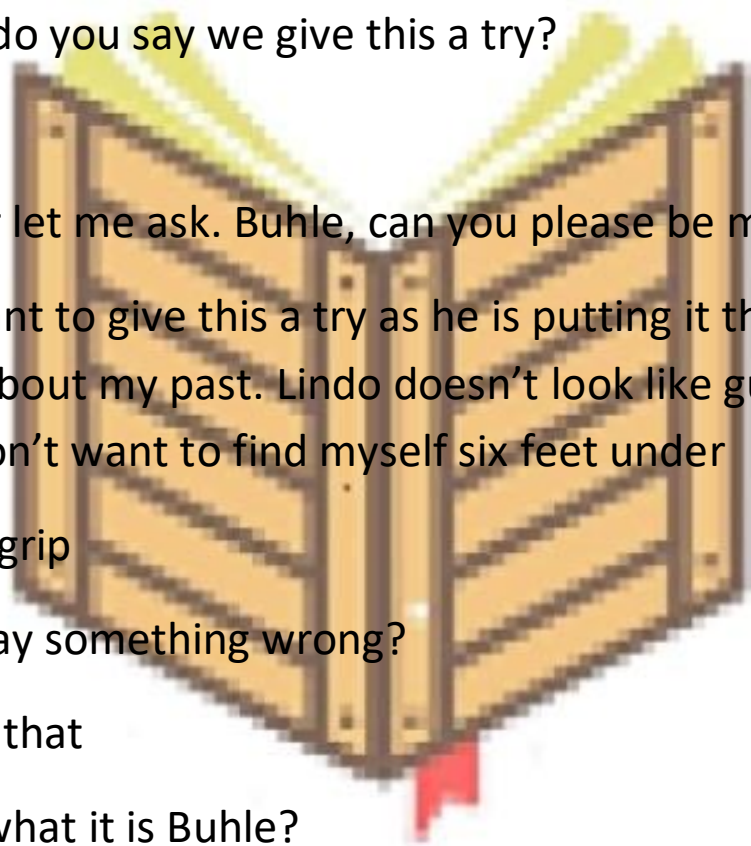
Him: Did I say something wrong?

Me: It's not that

Him: Then what it is Buhle?

Me: There's something that you need to know about me before  
anything

He looked at me



AYDEN

I put my phone on the table

I don't know why Yara is not picking my calls; I've been trying to call her with no luck. I even went to the office but I was told she left during lunch but never return. I don't have a good feeling about this

Me: Mimsey, did you pass by the office today?

I stood behind the couch

Her: Yes, I did

Me: Did you see Yara by any chance?

Her: Just tell me what you have on your chest and stop bushing around

Me: What did you say to her Mimsey?

Her: The truth

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: What truth are you talking about? I don't really like what you are doing Mimsey; don't make me choose between you and Yara

She turned her head slightly

Her: You will not dare

Me: Just try Mimsey. I really don't know why you are pocking your nose in my business, I don't know

Her: Ayden, I know her kind

Me: Yara is not after my money; her father got plenty of that. Her brothers got money also; if money is what she wants the Khumalo's will give her that money

Her: Do you see Mzoxolo flashing money her way? Do you?

Me: He is not because Yara is not looking for money or anything related to be rich. She is not that type of girl

Her: I don't care. The fact remain Yara will never be part of this family

Me: Just try and hurt her, the Khumalo brothers will be on your neck. Since I can't hurt you-they will definitely hurt you

To be continued... [NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)



55

AYDEN

I stood at the door and waited for Yara to open

I rang her again

Me: Shawty, I am getting impatient. Open this door before I break it

Her: You will not dare

Me: I am counting to 5

She kept quiet

Me: Okay, you wanna play then let's play. 5... 4... 3... 2... 1

I kicked the door but this little Devil opened the door. I flew right in the room

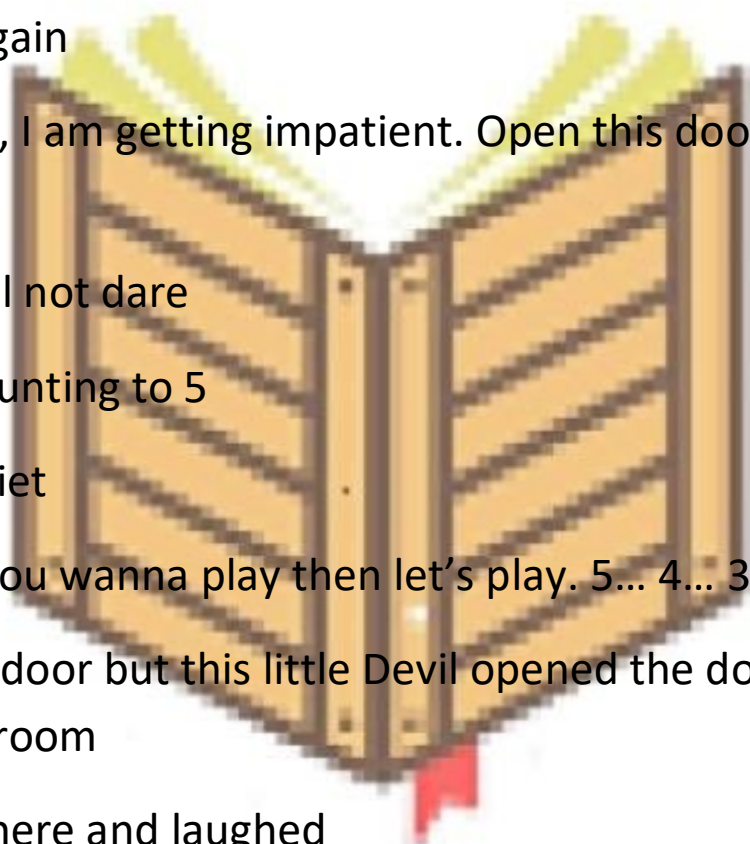
She stood there and laughed

Me: Shit! Do you want to kill me?

Her: Maybe I want to

Me: It's not funny

I leaned against the couch and catch my breathe



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: So I have to act crazy for you to listen to me?

Her: I didn't tell you to act crazy; you decided that on your own

Me: I am starting to get angry...

She stepped closer to me

Her: Angry? You are full of yourself

Me: Why are you ignoring me?

Her: I didn't want to see you because if I did I was going to say things that I will regret later

Me: You are now acting like a child...

Her: I am not acting like child; your mother is acting like a child

I laughed and looked at her

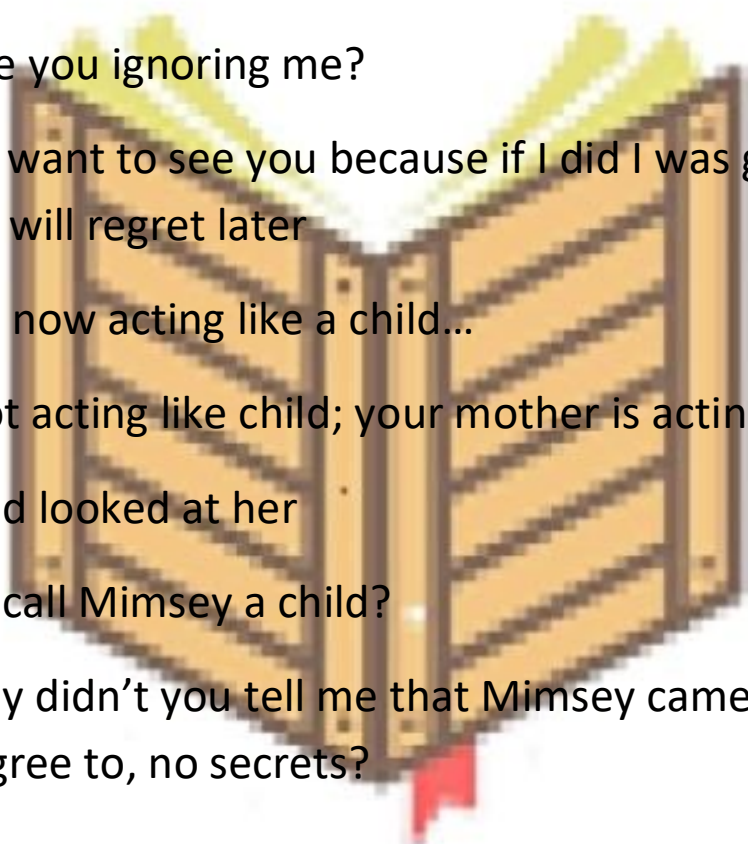
Did she just call Mimsey a child?

Me: But, why didn't you tell me that Mimsey came to you?

Didn't we agree to, no secrets?

Her: We did

Me: Then why didn't you come to me? I had to confront her to tell me what happened between the two of you. You were supposed to tell me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Your mother is stubborn Ayden, and she is old enough to be doing all of this. Who hurt her this much to hate me? She doesn't even know me

My mother was ill treated by her in-laws because they wanted our father marry another girl but Pops loved mom, he fought for her. I think my mother is trying to heal her wound by making Yara go through the same pain she went through. Which I don't get, I expected her to show Yara the love she yearned. Mimsey knows the pain of being rejected by in-laws. Maybe she hasn't healed because the girl his family wanted for Pops is the wife of Pops now

Me: She is like that

Her: Then, me and you won't work. We will never have peace if she still sees me as threat

Me: I don't care about Mimsey and her stupid opinions. We love each other

Her: So, we are going to spend the rest of our lives fighting Mimsey? She is going to make my life a living Hell

Me: And, you think I will sit and allow her to do that?

Her: No

Me: I will not, soon as we get married I am going to buy you a house and you won't have to deal with Mimsey

Her: If I didn't love you, I was going to leave you. I wasn't going to stay and take your mother's insults

Me: You love me I know

I pulled her close

Me: I am so in love with you Shawty and it hurts me to see Mimsey hurting you like this

I kissed her

Me: Nothing will come between us

Her: I love you

I hugged her

What am I gonna do with Mimsey?



BUHLE

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I laid my back on the bed

Mimi: What's wrong? You don't look happy

Me: I told Lindo about my past

Her: Mh?

Me: I did and as expected...

I sat up straight

Her: He rejected you?

I shook my head no

Her: Then what happened?

Me: He received a call and he couldn't wait to get out of that restaurant. He said the call was important, he can't stay

Her: You are probably reading too much to this

Me: Maybe I am, maybe I am not. I mean I can't blame me, maybe he found me disgusted

Her: Now you are being crazy. Are you the first girl to have done what you did?

Me: I am not but a guy like him can never go for a girl like me. Damaged goods like me, what was I thinking

Her: Lindo is not like that, I am sure he will call and explain everything

Me: I am good Mimi; I am not looking for drama. If Lindo wasn't for me I will definitely find someone who is for me

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

Between Mzoxolo and me there's bad blood. I've known him before Ayden met him, we have messy history. But, no one is aware about all of that. We've kept it under carpets and we promised each other that nothing will ever connect us again. It was a shame when Ayden met with him and partnered with his sons

Advertisement

I tried breaking their alliances but Ayden is stubborn

I called him...

Him: Sophia, what a terrible surprise

Me: You can say that

Him: Then, why are you calling me?

Me: Didn't we agree on staying far from one another

Him: That's what I've been doing all this years

Me: Then what is your daughter doing with my son?

Him: I don't understand

Me: Why am I not surprised? They haven't told you, Yara is dating Ayden

Him: No, you are lying. My daughter can never date your son

Me: You think I can call you to pull your leg? Talk with your daughter; she has to stay far from me

Him: If Yara love Ayden there's nothing I can do

Me: We made promise Mzo, don't start acting dumb

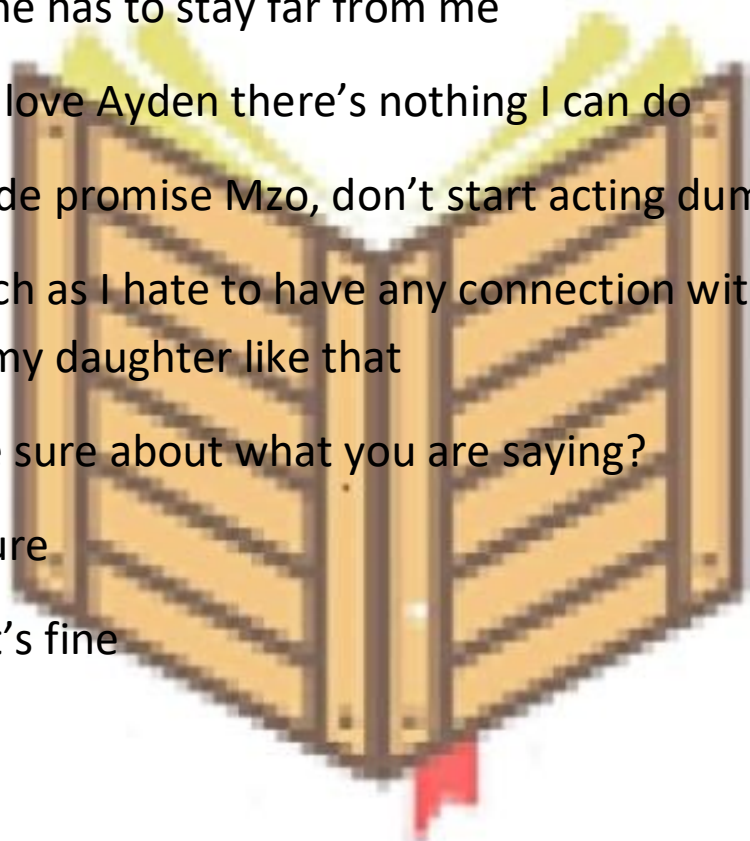
Him: As much as I hate to have any connection with you but I won't hurt my daughter like that

Me: You are sure about what you are saying?

Him: I am sure

Me: Okay, it's fine

I hung up



NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

I placed our plates on the table

Mimi: Thank you

She looked at me

Her: What have I done to deserve this?

I sat beside her

Me: I don't need reason to spoil you

I've decided to give Mimi and me a chance; I want to ask her if we can give us a try again. I hope it goes well

Her: You forgot I know you

I held both her hands

Me: I've decided on something

Her: And that is?

Me: I've decided on us. I am ready to give my heart to you again

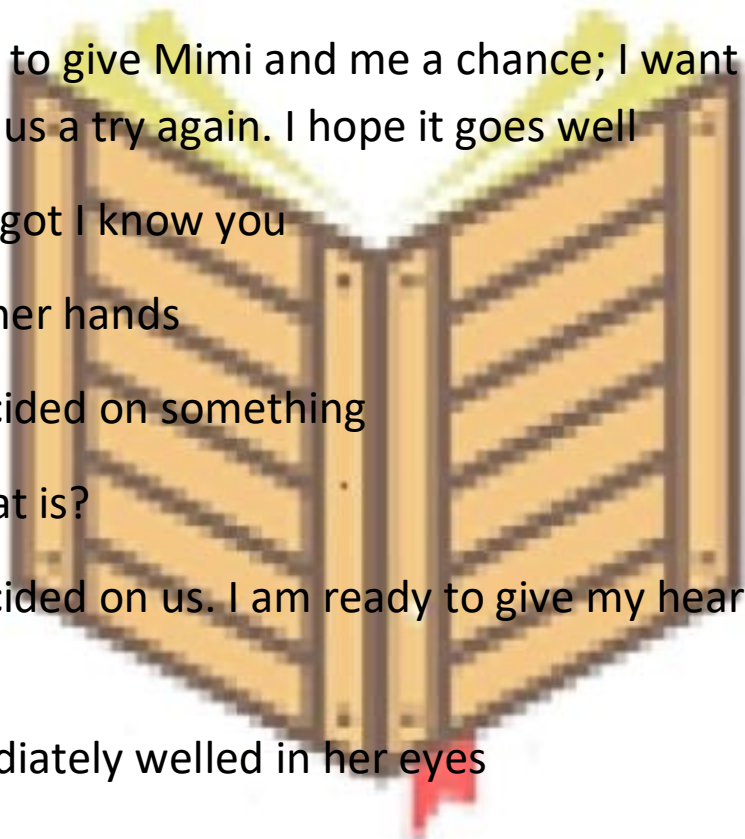
Tears immediately welled in her eyes

Her: Really?

Me: Yes, I've let go of Goldie. Now I want you to be part of my life and the twins

Her: You have no idea how long I've waited for this

Me: So, what do you say?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: Do you think you will be able to love me with all my flaws and scars?

Me: I will, I am ready to make them part of me

She sniffed and cupped my face

Her: I love you so much Cuddly and I've never stopped loving you but there's something that you need to know

Me: What is that?

Her: When I left here I went to Gauteng and everything spiralled out of control, I found myself in the wrong crowd. I did things that even today I still regret them

Me: What is that?

Her: I was... I worked as a hooker

Her voice cracked

I looked at her

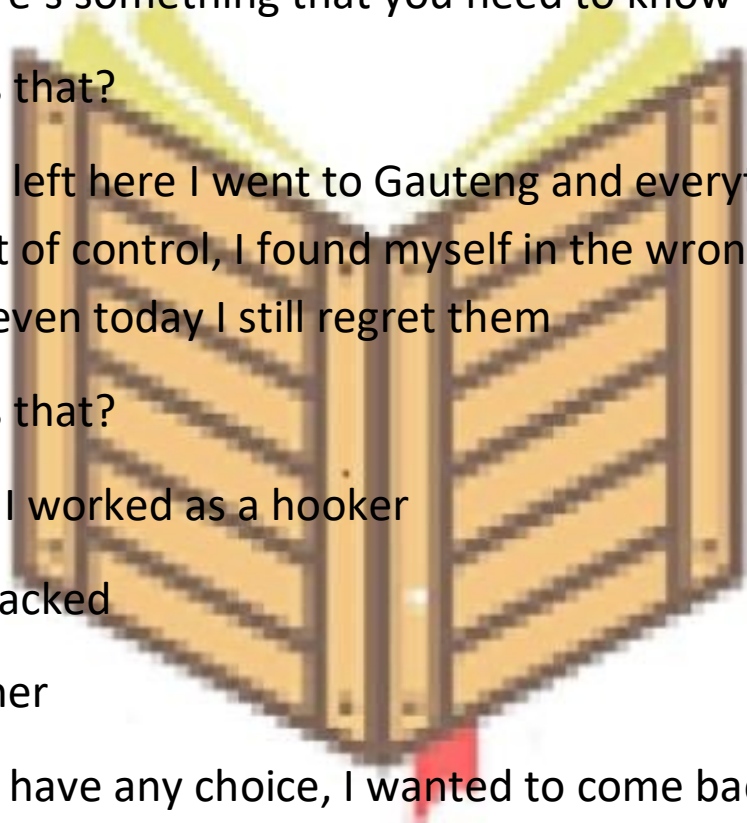
Her: I didn't have any choice, I wanted to come back home but I was ashamed. I decided to stay there

I put my finger on her mouth

Me: Don't say anything, I know

Her: You do? How?

Me: Promise me that you won't get angry



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I promise

Me: Yara told me, that time when you wanted to commit suicide the following day she came and told me the real reason

Her: All this time, you knew?

Me: I did but I waited for you to tell me. I wanted you to tell me

Her: I am so ashamed of myself, I am not proud of the things that I've done in the past

Me: We all don't but who am I to judge you? My heart was broken when Yara told me, I wanted to come and hug you, and just tell you everything will be fine. But, I couldn't

Her: Wait, so you want to give us a chance when you are fully aware about my past?

Me: Yes

Her: I don't deserve you

Me: You forget that I broke your heart first? I am the one who don't deserve you



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

YARA

Ayden decided we spend the day in and not go to the office. He didn't want to let me go which I found very cute. All the insecurities I'd felt washed away when he assured me that no one will ever come between us. Maybe I should let Mimi teach Mimsey a lesson; it won't hurt to give her taste of her medicine

Ayden: Pass me the remote

Me: You want to change the channel?

Him: Just give me

I passed him the remote... He changed to music channel and set the remote on the table

Me: Are you just not crazy?

Him: You are going to make noise so I need something to distract the neighbours

Me: What are you planning to do with me?

He leaned and kissed me

He took off my top and massaged my tits. He sucked my nipples and breathe on my neck. He caressed my face with the back of

his hand. This man right here has my heart and definitely my body

Him: You feeling hot already? (Laughs)

Me: Definitely not part of the plan

He lowered his face to mine and kissed me, a slow kiss that was gentle and arousing my desire to be his. He moved his hand between my legs and slid it inside my skirt. His touch is enough to make me wet, we exchanged hot breaths and gentle moans. My hands moved up in his chest, my fingertips dug into his skin

Me: Ooh...

In few moments I was left with my underwear only, my tits were pointing straight to his face

I closed my eyes and moaned quietly as he inserted his finger in my already wet coochie. He took his finger out and used his hand to lift my leg up. He gently massaged my clit; he continued to massage it as he gently pushed his index finger in. His other hand was on my tits; I closed my eyes and moaned his name

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Ayden...

Him: I love you Shawty (Whispering)

His finger continued to play around my clit, he pressed his finger again. He ran his tongue on my thigh

Me: Oh... Munchie!!!!

He was left with his briefs only; I ran my hands in his chest

He leaned for a kiss... I moved my hand down to his crotch and started playing with it, it erected to the touch of my hand. His breathing was now unstable; we kissed in between of his moans. His manhood harden on my coochie; it turned me more and more. He went down on me and his tongue warmed my clit. It went on for few minutes; I lifted my legs and curled my toes. I got more wet and started dripping juices. I felt myself coming as he leaned for a kiss. I finally came

Me: I love you

I went down on my knees and curled his shaft with my hand. I swirled my hand around it, the warmth of my hand harden his crotch. I licked the tip of his cock... He closed his eyes and moaned softly, I opened my mouth and took all of his cock inside my mouth

Him: Fuck!

He slid his hand into my hair. I licked his cock slowly, his moan increased

Him: Oh baby!!! I am about to come

I let my tongue linger around the tip; I gently used my lips to take the head inside my mouth

Him: Oh shit baby!!!

I continued doing so until his semen filled my mouth, this was intense moment. I can't even put it into words. We didn't even make love but he managed to make me reach the climax, oh Mr A...

He pulled my face closer to his and kissed me passionately

PANTHER

Me: Viper, are you done or not?

Him: Where are you rushing to? I can see your mind is not here

Me: You don't get to ask me that. In fact why did you call me instead of Tooth? You interrupted my date

Him: I tried calling him but he didn't dare to answer me

Me: And you couldn't do the job alone? It's not like you couldn't handle the client alone

Him: You were with Buhle?

Me: Yes stupid boy. And now she's probably thinking the worst about me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper called right after Buhle told me about her past, I didn't even get time to have a talk with her. I took off right away I have no doubt she is thinking that I despise her

Me: Next time call me when it's a matter of life and death

Him: Is this the torture we are going to face when you get a girlfriend?

Me: You such a child

I grabbed my car keys and walked away

I need to go and see Buhle

MIMI

I wasn't expecting Ethan to take the news well; I was expecting a lecture from him. I don't know how he managed to keep quiet about this for long time. But in all of this, he is still the man I fell in love with, he never changed

He kissed my cheek

Him: What are you thinking about?

Me: I am thinking about us



Him: Good things I am sure...

Me: Of course

(Message alert)

Me: Pass me the phone please

He gave it to me

I read the message

Me: Oh, it's a message from your friend

Him: Zoe?

Me: Yes, she's inviting me for lunch

Him: Are you now friends?

Me: I will never be her friend; I am just trying to be civil with her. And now I have more reasons to be her friend, she is your friend and I am your woman

Him: Why don't you just say, I need to watch her like an owl

Me: That too... I still don't trust her but I think I will handle her

Him: Don't get too comfortable with her

Me: I will never

He leaned and kissed me

Him: The twins will be home anytime now



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Do you want me to go?

Him: No

it's not like they don't know you

Me: They know me as Yara's sister not as their father's girlfriend

Him: Oh I feel for you, you don't know them. There's nothing you can hide from them, for all we know they are aware about us

Me: Yara told me how clever they are but I think you guys are lying. They can never detect that something is going on between us

Him: Do you wanna bet on that?

Me: How much?

Him: Not money, something else

Me: And that is?

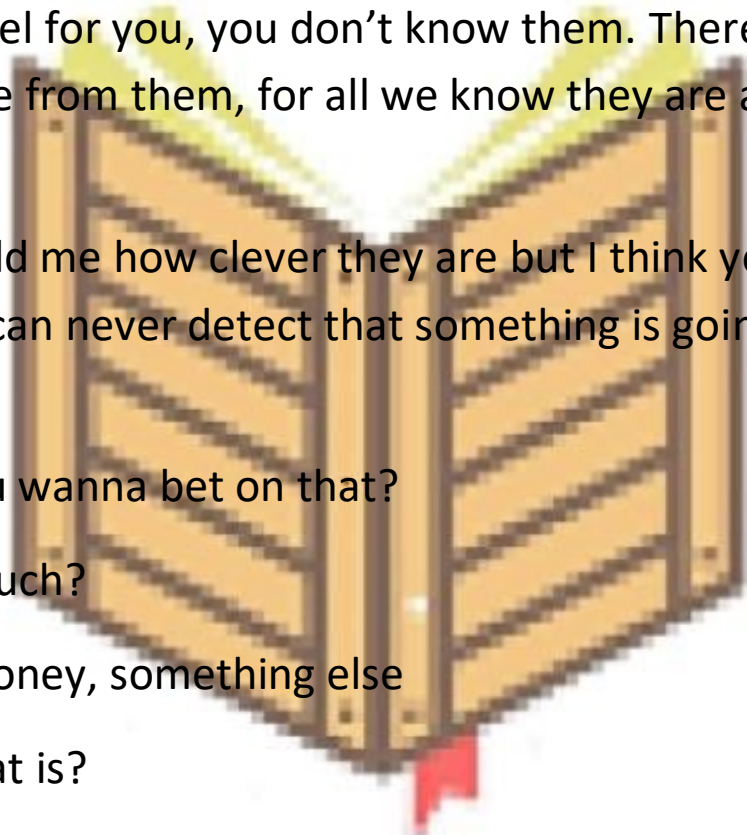
He whispered in my ear

Me: Ethan! (Giggles) you are so naughty

Him: We are placing a bet?

Me: You are going to lose

Him: We will see

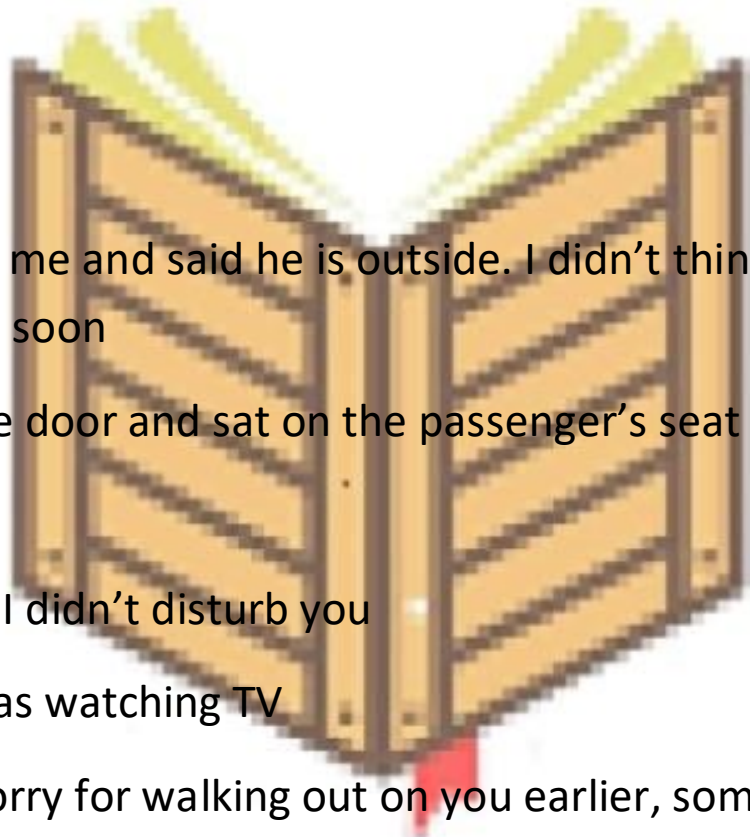


NOVELSGURU.COM

We laughed

There's no way the twins can know that Ethan and I are dating,  
they are too young

BUHLE



Lindo called me and said he is outside. I didn't think I will hear  
from him so soon

I opened the door and sat on the passenger's seat

Me: Hey

Him: I hope I didn't disturb you

Me: No, I was watching TV

Him: I am sorry for walking out on you earlier, something  
important needed my attention

Me: You don't have to explain yourself to me

Him: I want to

He took my hand into his

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I don't care about your past because I wasn't there even if I was there I was going to turn a blind eye and put myself in your shoes, we all have nasty past. I am not a saint; I've done bad things which I am not proud of. And I will never hold your past against you

I also learnt Lindo and his brothers killed Chieka, now I am aware of another part of his life

Him: I still want you to be my girlfriend, I don't know about you

I smiled at him

Me: I'd like to be your girlfriend

Him: That wasn't hard...

I laughed

Me: Are you for real?

Him: Do you know rejection?

Me: I do... Few hours ago I thought you had rejected me, I was hurt

Him: I am sorry about that, I didn't mean to make you feel like that

Me: You are forgiven

He kissed my hand



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Just so you know, I am not an easy person

Me: I've seen that, I will melt your heart

Him: I am one fucked up bastard but when I love I love, I don't leave space for any shit

AYDEN

This woman before my eyes is the one I am going to walk down the aisle with. I never thought I could love someone as much as I do after Aurora, I believed she was the one for me but was I not wrong? I love how my heart beat to the mention of her name, how my fingers trace her body with so much love. For Yara I will kill...

I laid Yara's head on my chest

Her: I wish we can stay like this forever

Me: We can

Her: There's life besides this silly man

I tickled her

Her: Stop (Laughs) **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Call me silly again

Her: Munchie...

Me: Huh?

Her: Do you have any ex that might resurface in the face of the earth, and ruin things between us?

Me: Mh?

I sat up straight

Her: You heard me Munchie

Me: No, I don't. I was never one to commit in a relationship, the last one I committed in ended in tears she left me. There's no way she will come back to me

Her: I see...

Me: Do you?

She fixed her eyes on me

Her: I do Munchie

I kept quiet

Her: And he is in the City, he is close to me. It's a matter of time before we see each other

Me: What happened between you two?

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

## AYDEN

I've always heard about honesty is the best policy but I never thought I could ever find myself in a situation where honesty would become part of me. The quality of being honest erases chances of heart breaks and betrayals, it saves everyone's time. What Yara did last night was the last thing I expected seeing that our relationship is not that old. Not overlooking the fact that Mimsey doesn't like her, if it was someone else she could have kept quiet and kept her options open. I applaud Yara. She told me about Tyson and how their relationship ended. Things didn't end well between them, with that being said the love between them is not guaranteed dead. She said it herself that she hasn't seen him in ages and she is not sure of how she will react when she sees him. I don't want to see Tyson as my competition but I also can't turn a blind eye to the fact that he is a threat. Especially now that Mimsey is against our relationship, if Mimsey pushes Yara away there's only one person who is going to console her and that is Tyson. It's up to me to make sure that doesn't happen.

I leaned and kissed her... She slowly opened her eyes

Me: Good morning

Her: Morning Munchie

Me: Here's your breakfast

She yawned whilst rubbing her eyes

Her: You made breakfast?

Me: I did, now get up and eat

She sat up straight

I placed the breakfast tray across her lap

Her: This looks yummy, thank you

Me: Eat up Shawty

Her: Didn't know you can cook (Smiles)

Me: You never asked silly

I stood up

Her: Aren't we eating together?

Me: I made this for you, I need to go home and change. I have to be in the office, I have early meeting

Her: At least grab something...

Me: Shawty...

She looked at me



NOVELSBURU.COM

I grabbed sliced apple

Me: Happy?

She smiled at me

Me: Bye, I love you

Her: I lost my heart on you

I kissed her forehead

PANTHER

I was surprised to receive a call from Old man so early in the morning asking to see me. Where this man is involved there's nothing but trouble

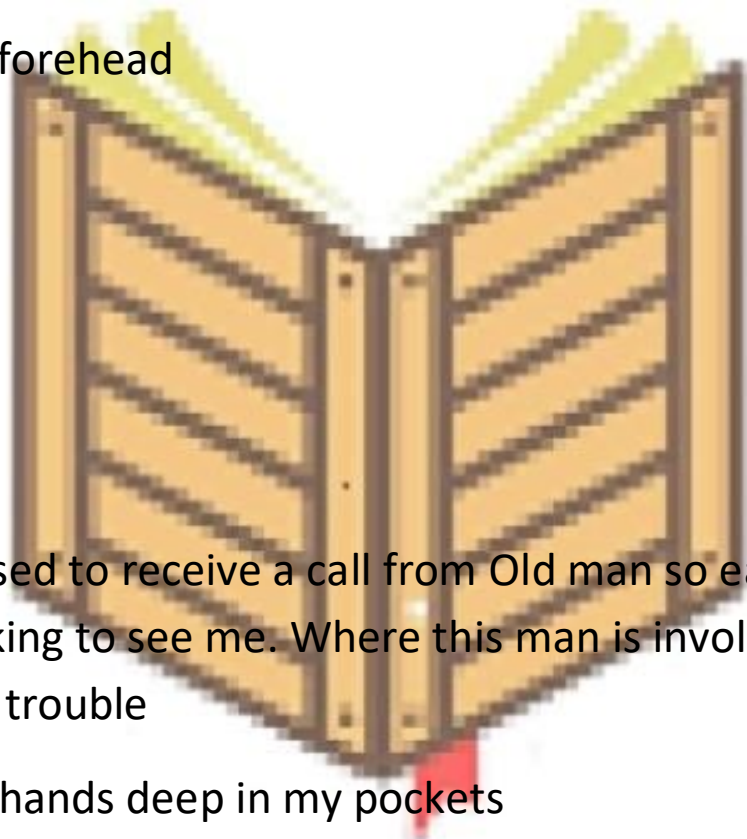
I buried my hands deep in my pockets

Old Man: Where is your brother?

Me: Unfortunately he couldn't make it

Him: I'd like it if he was available

Me: I will fill him in, talk Old man



NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: Why didn't you tell me about your sister and Ayden?

Me: Didn't think it was necessary

Him: Well it is, it is my job to protect my children

Me: Old man, I didn't know Yara and Ayden's relationship need protection

Him: It does, yesterday I received a call from Sophia and she is not pleased with their relationship

Me: There's no surprise in that, Sophia only care about herself, status and money. The Tshivhase name...

Him: Lindo, if Sophia doesn't like something she makes sure it moves from her way. So, you can do the math...

Me: She will never dare and hurt Yara

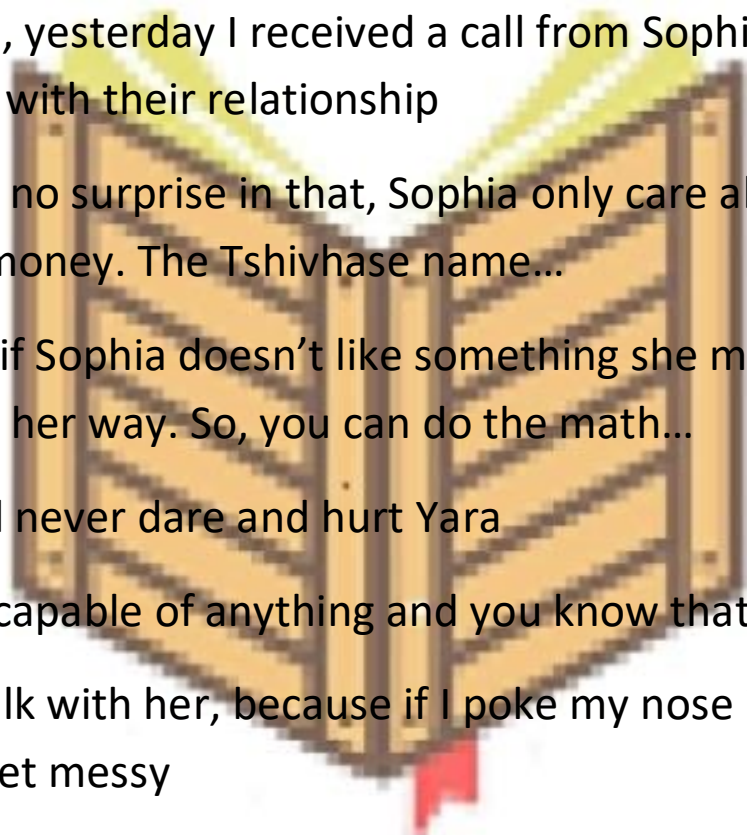
Him: She is capable of anything and you know that

Me: Then talk with her, because if I poke my nose in this matter things will get messy

Him: Does your sister love Ayden?

Me: It seems so; I have never seen Ayden as happy as he is right now. Now even Aurora had that effect on him

He stood up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I wish Zack can chain his wife; she always birth problems where they are not needed

Me: Sophia is spoilt

Him: Tell me something I don't know

Me: Just talk with her, I will never allow Yara to be treated poorly

Him: I will

I wonder why Ayden didn't tell me about this or Yara for that matter. Sophia can be brutal if she wants to and I don't see Yara standing up to her. She is going to break them apart, piece by piece and no one will see her coming. I'd hate for our relationship with Ayden to come down crumbling but Yara is now my top priority. I will protect her against anything especially against an animal like Sophia

Me; How's the business going?

Him: Gamblers are still queuing and I am still cashing in...

We laughed

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: We should come wipe you clean

Him: You can never, I trust my croupiers

MIMI

I walked in the kitchen; I was welcomed by Buhle humming whilst doing some dances moves. I stood at the door and watched her

Her: "Let's make love in the morning

When the bird is sane

Let's make love in the morning

You buy the soft and warm in bed"

I cleared my throat and laughed

She turned around and raised her left eyebrow

Her: Why you sneaking on me?

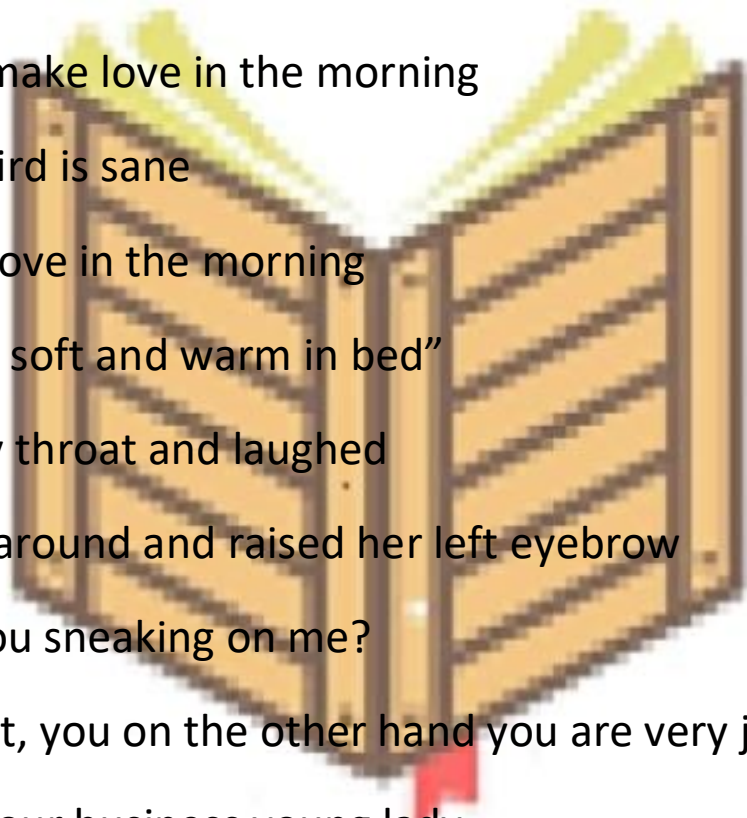
Me: I am not, you on the other hand you are very jolly

Her: Mind your business young lady

Me: Mh? Who got you in this mood?

Her: Mhlawumbe umuntu wami unesibopho (Maybe my man is responsible)

Me: Oh!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Ngicabanga ukuthi ngisemathandweni (I think I am in love)

Me: Awusho (You don't say)

She leaned against the kitchen counter

Me: I am happy for you B; I don't recall when last I saw you this happy

Her: Coming down here with you was the best decision I've ever made in my life

Voice: And I am sure that decision includes boys?

My mother said making her way to us

Me: Ha Mama

Ma: Am I wrong? I've been watching you girls and I can bet you are up to no good

Buhle: Up to know good sounds creepy

Me: Yeah

Advertisement

it does

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ma: I just hope you won't repeat the mistakes done by your elders

I know exactly what she is talking about, and I don't see myself making the same mistakes she did. Maybe someone can do that to me...

Me: No way!

Ma: Anyway, I am leaving

Buhle: Do you want me to accompany you to the bus station?

Ma: Maybe I should adopt you as my daughter because wow...

Me: Ha Mama

Ma: What? I am being honest

Me: Give me 30 minutes to get ready

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

If I say I was happy to see Mzo in my doorstep then I'd be lying. I hate this man so much; I don't think I will ever accommodate him in my life

He rested his hand on his cane and ran his eyes around the room



Him: I can't believe I am in your house right now

Me: And I do not like it one bit

Him: Then let me speak my mind and leave

I gave him my attention

Him: Sophia, we agreed to never cross paths again and until now we never went back on our promise. Maybe this is a sign for us to make up and forget about the past

Me: Hell will freeze before that happens

Him: Come on Sophia, there's really no need to punish my daughter for things that happened years ago

Me: I am not disapproving Ayden and Yara's relationship because of what has happened, no. I don't like that daughter of yours, my son deserves better than her. Ayden can get any girl that he likes but not that girl, a girl from his level. I mean look around, what do you see? This is place is not for your daughter, she is living a dream and someone must wake her up before is too late

Him: You are too old to be doing this

Me: I don't wanna fight with you Mzo, what I need is simple. Your daughter must leave my child

Him: You dare hurt Yara...

Me: What are you gonna do huh? What? Are you going to kill me like you did with...?

Him: Shut up!

Me; Thought as much. We decided to cut ties for a reason and I want to keep it that way but that won't happened if your daughter is with my son

Voice: No one is going to separate Yara and me

Ayden made his way down the stairs

Ayden: I've said it before and I will say it again, Yara is my girlfriend and I will fight tooth and nail for her

Me: You are delusional

Ayden: I will kick you out Mimsey, and I am not joking

I looked at Mzo

Me: Did you hear that? My own son is ready to kick me out? Are you happy about that? You are doing it again

Mzo: That's up to Ayden to decide, I don't see how I fit in that. You will not hurt my daughter and that's final Sophia

Me: Okay, fine. Do whatever you want. Go ahead and be with your Yara!

I clicked my tongue and walked away

YARA

On my way to the office I craved Milkshake; I think I missed the twins. There's nothing they love than Milkshake...

I shook my head and laughed softly at the thought of carving for a Milkshake. As old as I am

Cashier: There we go ma'am

Me: Thank you

I took the Milkshake from her hand

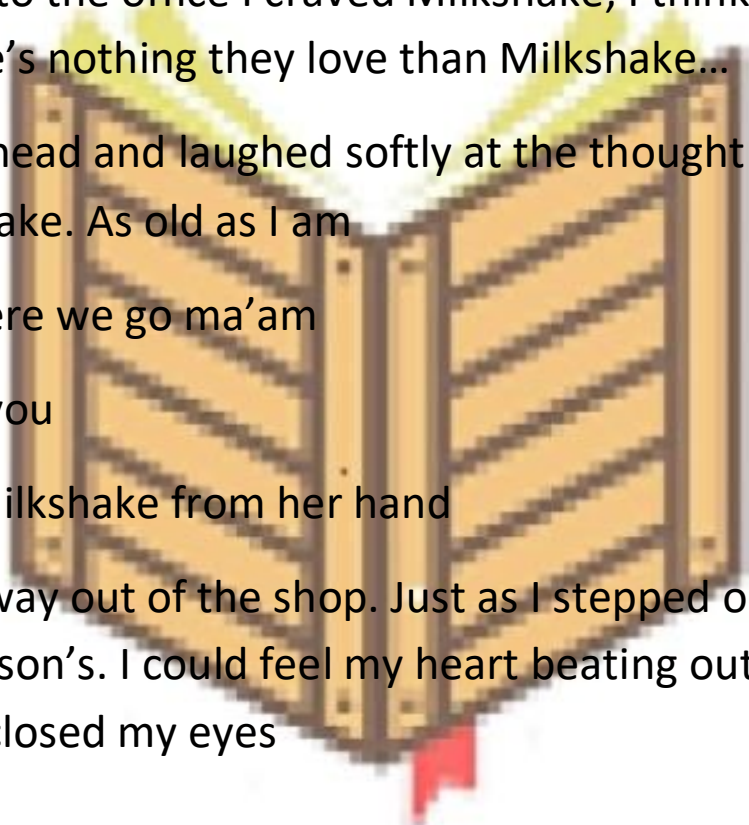
I made my way out of the shop. Just as I stepped out my eyes met with Tyson's. I could feel my heart beating out of my chest; I froze and closed my eyes

Him: Yara

I swallowed and looked at him... I could feel tears nearing

Me: Ty

Words were failing me right now, I am one to know what to say but right now I don't know what to say to him. I am feeling suffocated by his presence. After so many years I am finally



NOVELSGURU.COM



standing in front of him, in front of the man I loved with my  
being

Him: How are you?

Me: Fine, and you?

Him: Fine

Me: Can... can I get a hug?

He nodded slowly

I stepped closer and hugged him

Me: Ty...

A part of me was excited; I no longer feel the way I used to. My  
body no longer feel him; this is what I needed to feel. No  
questions asked Ayden is the owner of this body; my body is  
only attracted to his

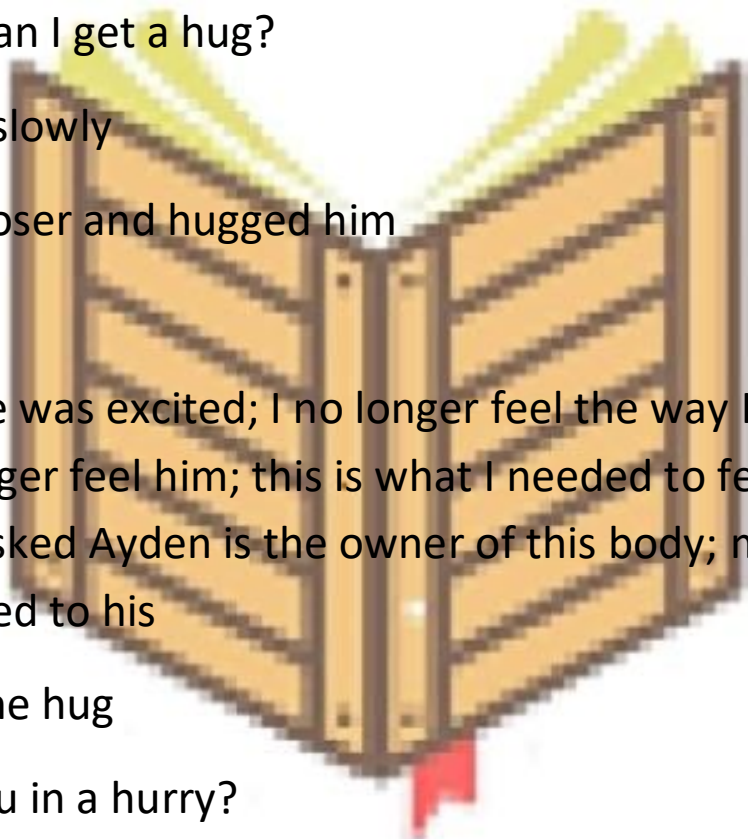
We broke the hug

Him: Are you in a hurry?

I have to be in the office but I need closure so that I can put our  
past behind. We never sat down and talked about how things  
ended

Me: I can spare few minutes

We sat on the bench that was next to us



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You are probably asking yourself, why?

I nodded

Him: I did what was right at that time; I couldn't let the opportunity like that slip through my fingers. The unfortunate part about it was losing you in the process; I still don't understand how our love died right after that

I sniffed

Me: Maybe we knew that distance will do more harm than good

Him: Maybe

He held my hand

Him: For what is worth, I really loved you Yara. With all my heart

Me: And I did too, but you turned your back on me. You never fought for our love

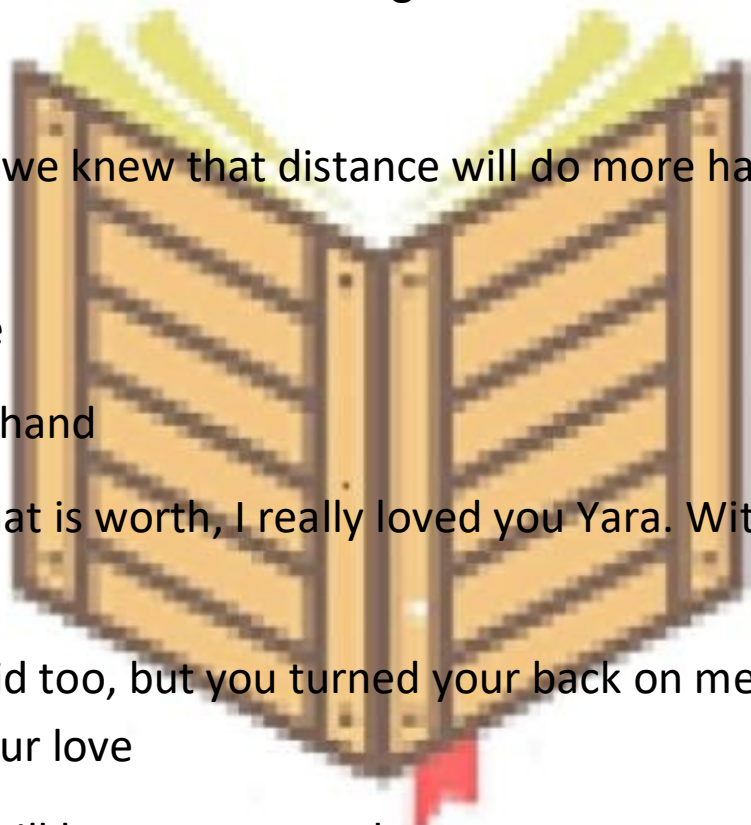
Him: And I will leave to regret that

I wiped my tears

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Him: But everything happens for a reason

That reason has a name, Ayden



Him: Forgive me for not fighting for our love, I was a coward and I hurt you

Me: No lie in that but I forgive you. It was fun but maybe we were never meant to be

Him: I'd like to believe that

We smiled at each other

He looked at his wrist watch

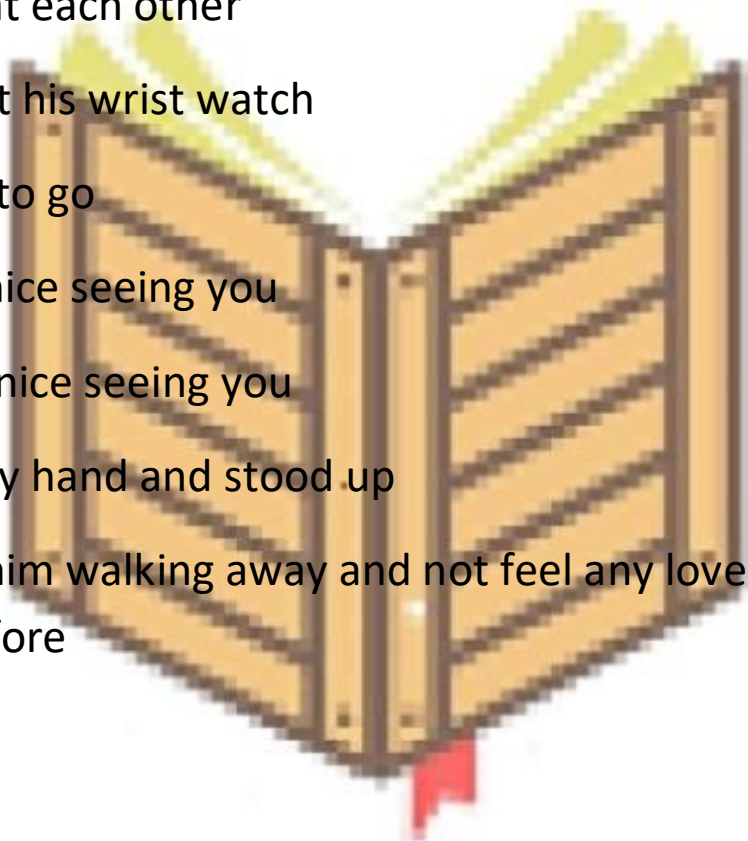
Him: I have to go

Me: It was nice seeing you

Him: It was nice seeing you

He kissed my hand and stood up

I looked at him walking away and not feel any love. It didn't hurt like before



To be continued... [NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

## MUNEI

I texted Sophia saying that I am about to reach the City, I thought I would find her waiting for me. I now regret why I left my car, I hate waiting

Me: Thank you

I gave the cabman money and got off the cab

I rang her

Me: I am waiting

Her: Give me 10 minutes, I got held up but I will be there in no time

Me: Drive to the parking lot that is close to the MK Casino

Her: Okay

She hung up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I don't know what plan Sophia has but whatever it is I gladly accept the mission. Ayden is any girl's dream, my dream. I bow for this girl because she managed to do the impossible, well after Aurora. But, the leopard doesn't change its spot. Ayden

will always be Ayden and no woman can tame him down unless he wants to

I was saw Sophia's car and walked up to her

Me: You took forever

I got inside

Her: And I already apologized. You look beautiful

She kissed my cheek

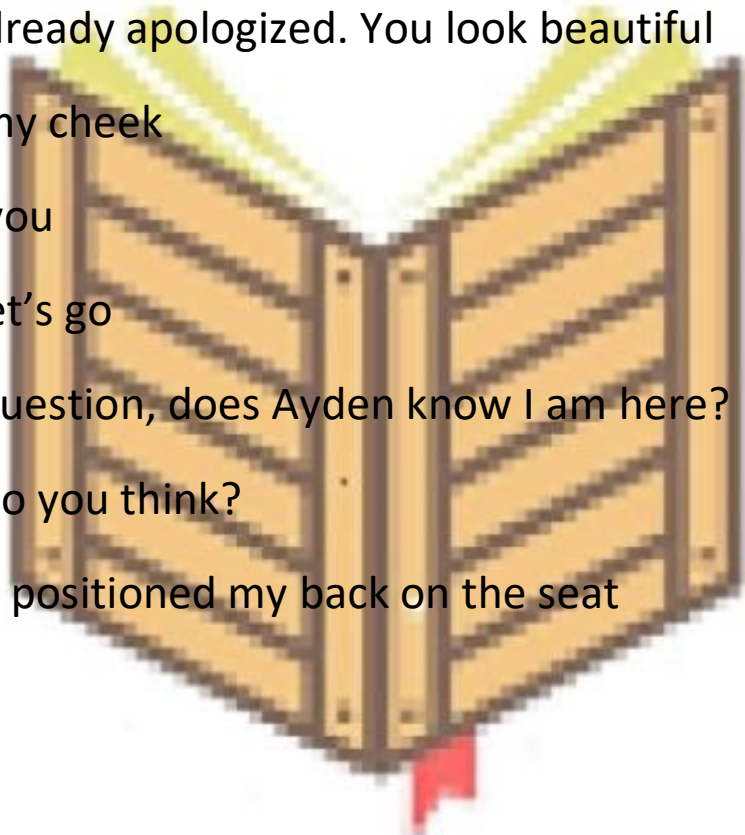
Me: Thank you

Her: Now, let's go

Me: Quick question, does Ayden know I am here?

Her: What do you think?

I smiled and positioned my back on the seat



TYSON

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

I gave Mulalo glass of juice

Me: Why are you not in work?

Her: Working outside office, and you?

Me: My classes were cancelled; Students have something going on for the day

I sat down

Me: I saw Yara today

Her: You did, and?

Me: We talked and nothing happened

Her: Am I not happy to hear that? I was worried

Me: But that doesn't mean if she wants us to try I will not give it a go

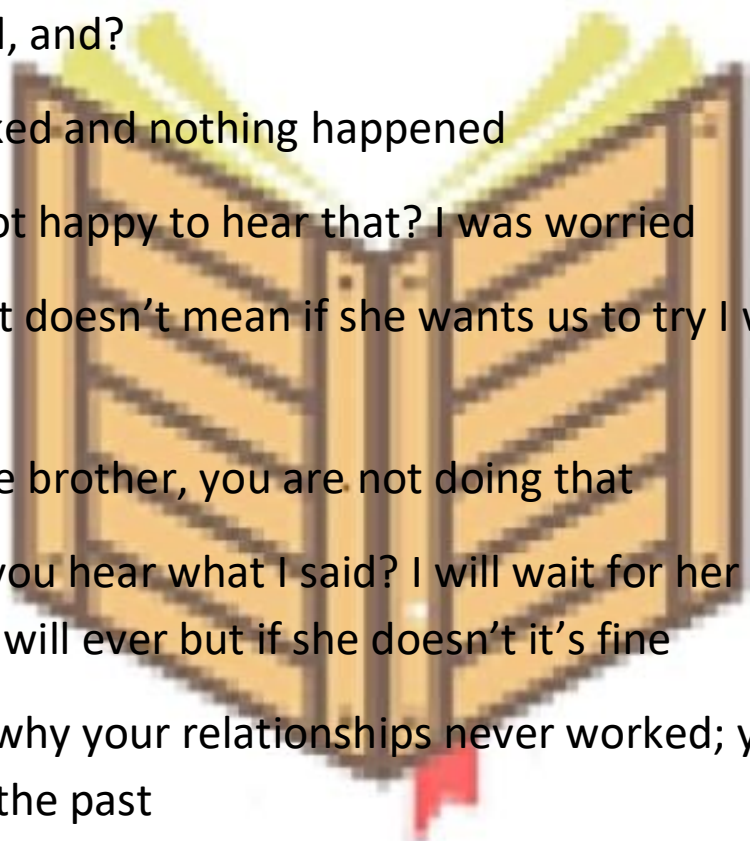
Her: No little brother, you are not doing that

Me: Didn't you hear what I said? I will wait for her to come that's if she will ever but if she doesn't it's fine

Her: That's why your relationships never worked; you are hanging on the past

Me: No, I am not. I haven't met the right girl when I do I will settle down

Her: Stay far from Yara, both of had the chance but it didn't work



Me: Oh Mulalo! What part of I am not planning on doing that don't you understand?

My mother made her way to us

Me: I thought you were at church

Ma: I was. What are you two gossiping about?

Me: We are not gossiping

Mulalo: I am telling your son to not interrupt Yara's life

I looked at her

Me: Really? Was there a need to tell her that?

My mother's face lightened

Ma: You saw her? Oh, I never understood how you let the girl slipped through your fingers

Mulalo: Not you too Mom, don't give your son ideas

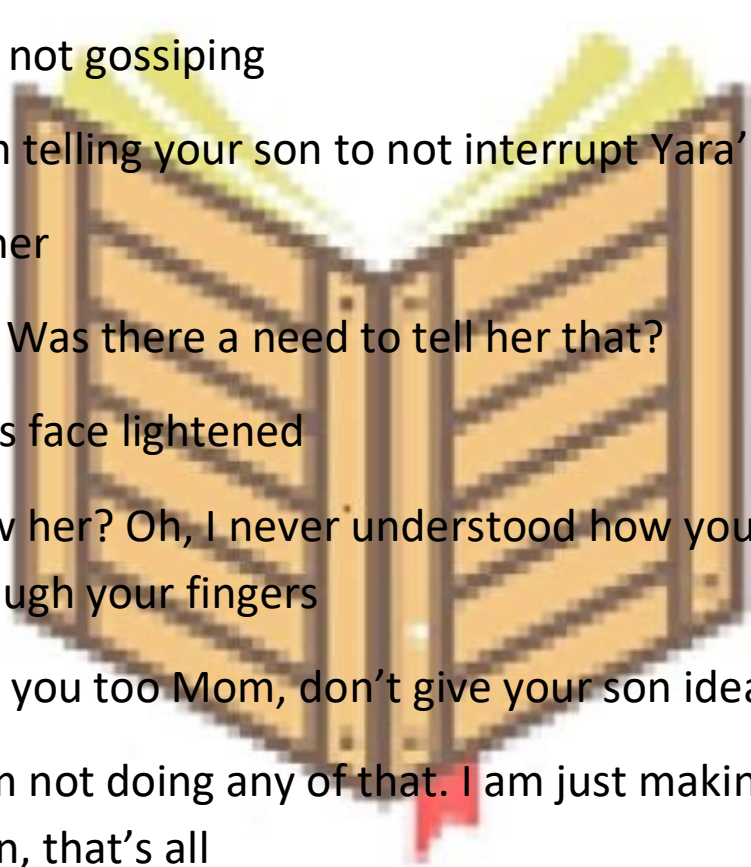
Ma: But I am not doing any of that. I am just making a conversation, that's all

Me: I will be in my room if you need something

I stood up

Ma: Running away?

Me: Avoiding drama



AYDEN

I placed small box in front of her

Yara: What's this?

Me: You won't know unless you take a look

She smiled and took the box. Inside there's a bracelet and necklace engraved Miss T

Me: You like it?

Her: I love it. Thank you Munchie

Me: Let me help you

Her: Miss T? Mh

Me: What? I am not a typical boyfriend

Her: And, what am I supposed to tell people when they ask what that T stand for?

Me: You tell them the truth, what's hard about that?

She chuckled softly





Her: I rather not

Advertisement

I can't imagine telling people my boyfriend's nickname is  
Tooth... the story that comes with it is not very pleasing

Me: Whatever

I stood up

Her: Did you look at the documents I sent you?

Me: I did...

Her: And, what do you think?

Me: Mh, I still need to look thoroughly at them

Her: Okay

The door opened, Panther walked in

Me: Brother

Him: Chief

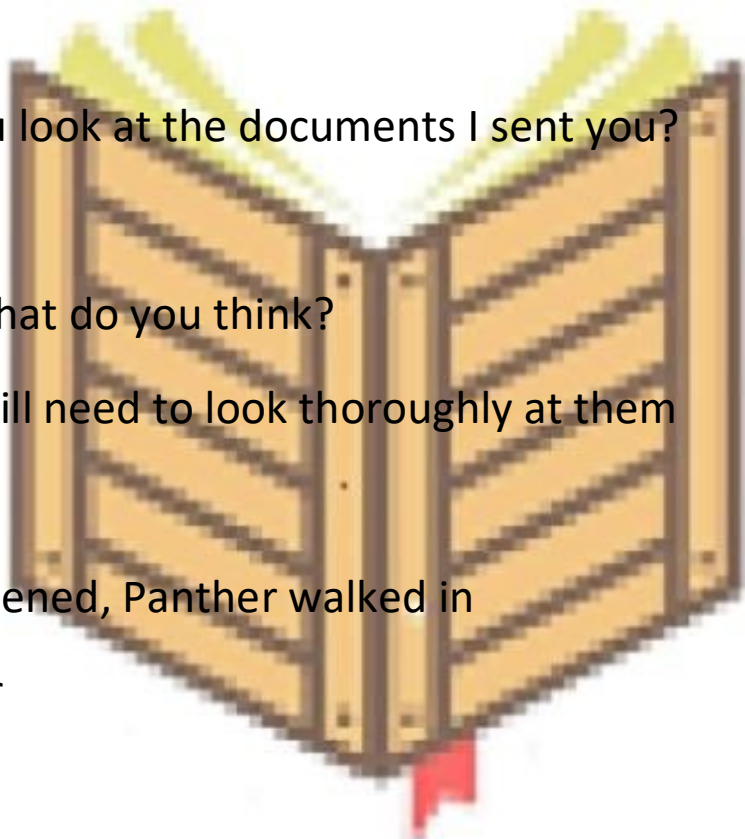
Yara stood up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Can I steal her for a moment?

Me: Yes, I'll be in my office. Don't go without seeing me

Him: I will not



SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I looked at Munei

Me: Yara have no idea of what is coming to her

Her: Why do you hate this girl so much?

Me: It's not hate; it's her fitting where she doesn't belong. I want her to feel the pressure

She laughed

Her: Tell me to never mess with you

Me: Keep that in mind

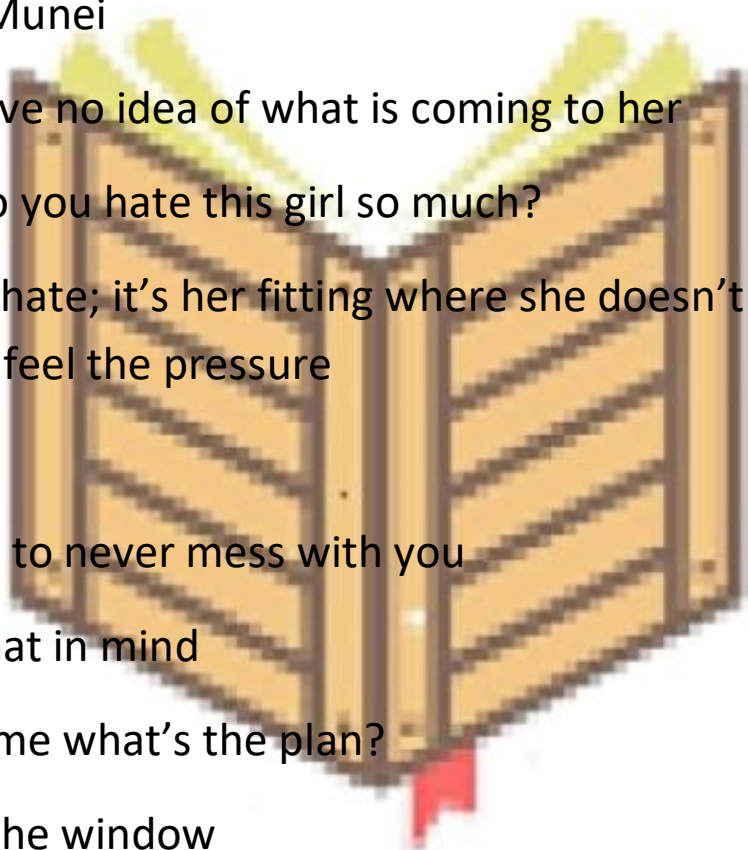
Her: So tell me what's the plan?

I moved to the window

Me: Tha plan is the oldest trick in the book sounds boring and plain but carries a dangerous weapon

Her: Stop talking in riddles

Me: Don't spoil the fun. Now, what's important is keeping you as a secret and me worming my way to Yara



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: How are you going to keep me as a secret?

Me: Ayden is hardly in the house, and Amelia is always busy with school work. You will lay low until I am sure of my plan

Her: You are a snake

Me: What does that make you? You are here with me...

Her: Learnt from the best

I took a sip of my wine

Her: What's so special about this girl anyway?

Me: I don't know. Let me show you her pictures

Her: Did she even go to school? What Degrees is she holding?

I showed her Yara's pictures

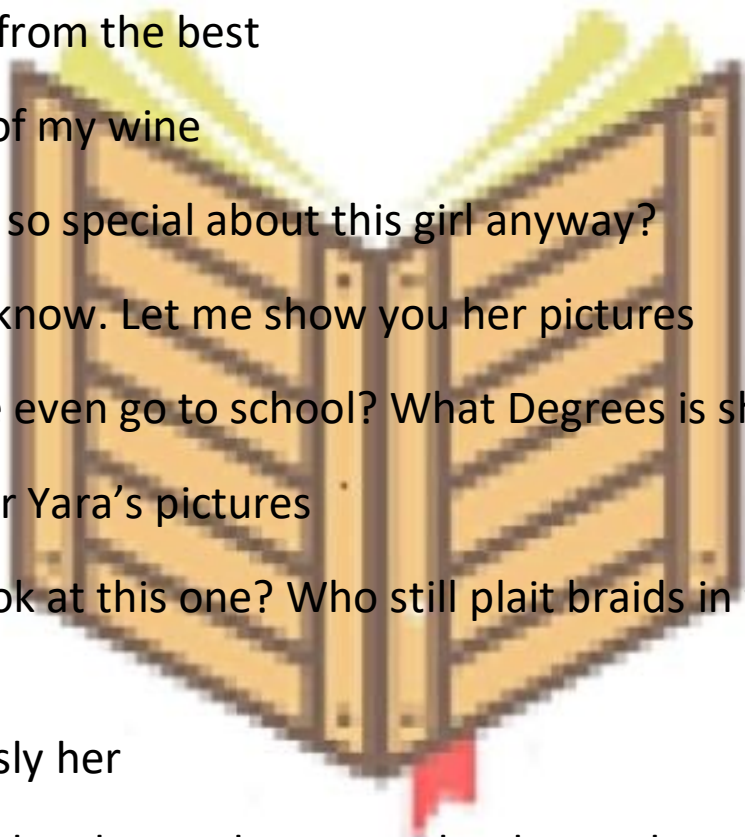
Her: Euw look at this one? Who still plait braids in this time of life?

Me: Obviously her

Her: One look at her and you can clearly see that she is not educated. I mean her working as a PA says a lot

Me: And they want me to accommodate her in my house. She is going to embarrass me, I host important people. I can't even start imagine her family, Oh Lord!

Her: That's a slap on the face



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ayden need someone like you, someone who will not need his money to buy a dress or to take a vacation. Someone to mingle with people of his calibre, a Fashion Designer like you maybe you can teach her a thing or two about fashion. Her clothes are hideous

Her: I will never win, I mean look at her

ZOE

I was having a mini brunch with Mimi; I need to get close to her to make my work easier. But, I will need a little help. Mimi is not stupid she can see right through me

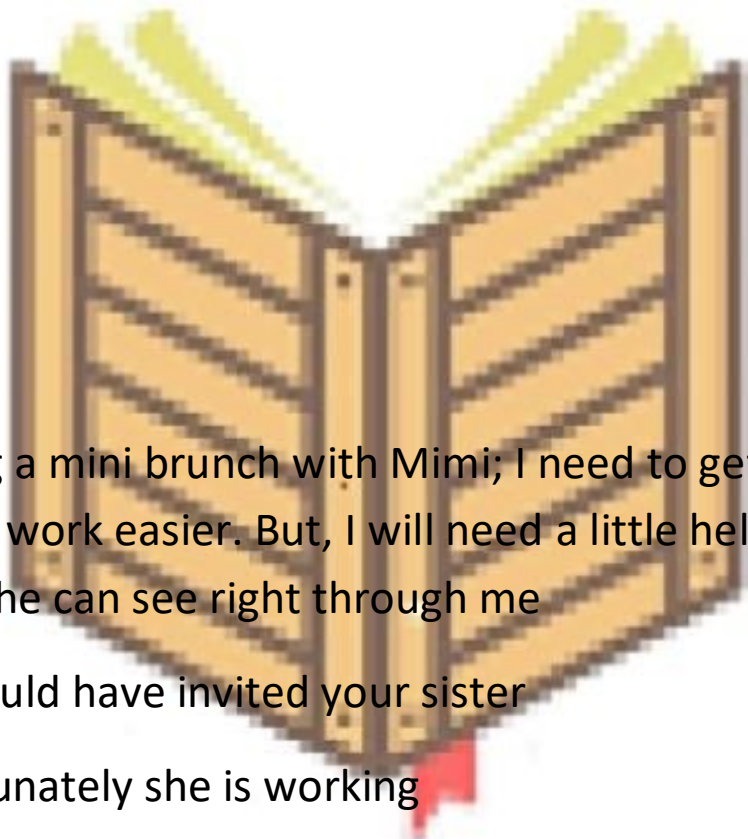
Me: We should have invited your sister

Her: Unfortunately she is working

Me: Next time. Thank you for allowing me to give you a treat. I still feel bad about what has happened between us not a way to start a relation

Her: It's old news, don't stress about it

Me: Where is the waiter with our drinks?



I ran my eyes around

I paid the waitress to put a drug in Mimi's drink. Something that is going to do a little trick in her mind, no one will see this one coming. Sometimes I surprise myself but this is just the beginning. The drug is called hallucinogenic drug, soon our super girl will start seeing and hearing things that don't exist. I also noticed that she pops some pills; I will have to swap them with this ones. She will keep on taking them and little by little she will start to lose it. I will be setting the plan

Her: Oh there she is

Waitress: Sorry for the delay but you can see the restaurant is busy

Me: It's okay

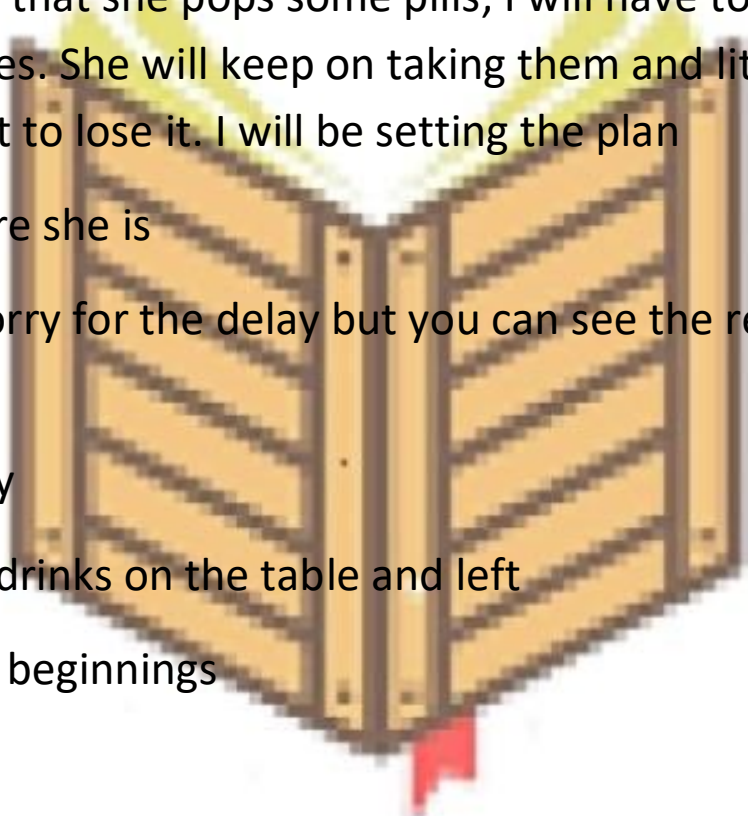
She set our drinks on the table and left

Me: To new beginnings

We toasted

I looked at her as she sips on her drink

Me: I am glad we can out our differences aside for the sake of Ethan



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

I held her hand

Me: I don't like it when you hide things from me

Her: I don't want to come between you and Ayden

Me: You come first Yara, and if something is bothering you I have every right to know. You should have told me that Sophia is treating you badly

Her phone rang

Her: Speaking of the Devil... Hello Sophia... I am good and you... Event? I don't know if I will be able to but I will get back to you before Friday

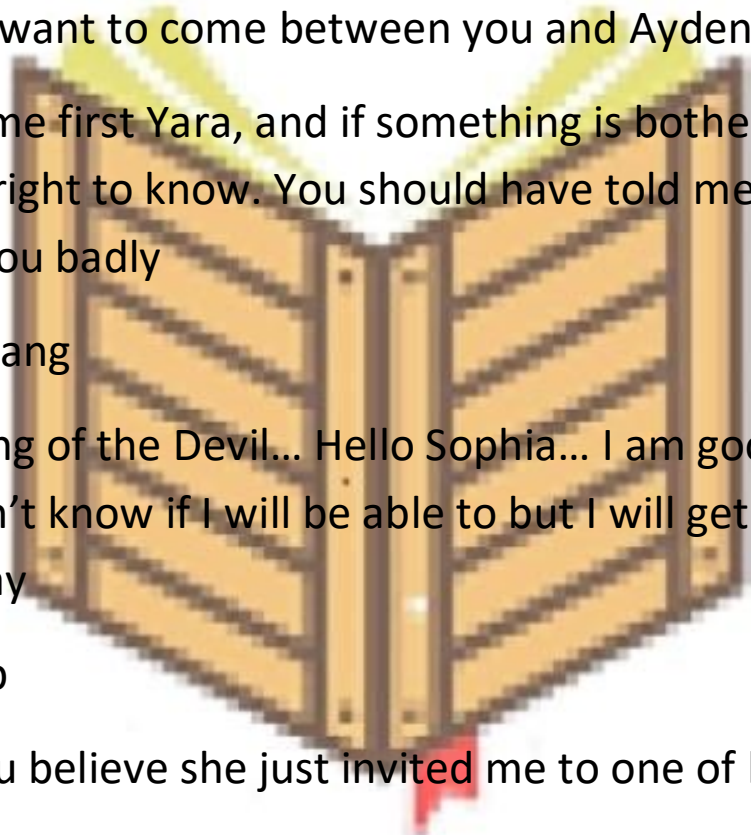
She hung up

Her: Can you believe she just invited me to one of her fancy dinners?

Me: Maybe Old man got to her; he did say that he will have a talk with her

Her: That was fast; maybe I should give a chance

Me: Maybe



NOVELSGURU.COM

I kissed her hand

Me: Don't ever hide things from me, I don't like it

Her: I will not

I squeezed her cheek

Her: Stop Lindo, I am not a child (Laughs) stop treating me like one

Me: You are my baby sis and I can do whatever I like with you

Her: It's not funny

Me: I love you too

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

59

MIMI

I don't know what's going on with me but I am feeling kinda confused. I feel like something is controlling my mind, I am feeling weird because I am hearing things that others are not. When I was with Buhle earlier I told her about the sounds erupting in the house only for her to tell me that there's nothing. If that was not enough I was surprised to find myself in Ethan's house is like I am not aware of my surrounding

Ethan held my hand

Him: You don't look good Cuddles

Me: I don't know what's going on with me. Have you ever felt like you are in your own bubble, you hear things that other people are not hearing?

He shook his head

Him: Now you are being weird

Me: I know babe, something is wrong with me. I never felt like this

Him: Maybe you are not getting enough sleep



Me: That might be it

He kissed my hand

Him: Let me get you something to drink and I'll take you back home. Fine?

Me: Yes

He stood up... I laid my head on the couch

I felt a hand on my thigh

Voice: Aunty...

Me: Why are you touching me?

I half yelled... I moved my eyes and realised it was Lex, she took a step back

Me: Oh baby, I am so sorry. I didn't mean to yell at you

I tried to touch her but she refused

Her: Don't get near me

Ethan made his way to us

Him: Why are you yelling at her?

Me: I am sorry babe, I don't know what happened but I thought it was someone else



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Who Mimi? There's no one in the house except us... Now look at her, she is scared of you...

He knelt before Lex

Him: Aunty didn't mean to, she would never do anything to hurt you

Her: I just wanted to play with her

Him: And she is aware

Her: I am going to my room

What's going on with me? My actions hurt Lex; I don't know what came over me

Ethan sat next to me

Him: Maybe I should take you home; I will talk with Lex later

Me: Babe, you know I can never hurt Lex right?

Him: I know but this shout paranoia babe

I know

Him: Let's go



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Ayden walked into the kitchen

Me: Beef or chicken?

Him: Beef... need a hand?

I put back the chicken in the freezer

Me: No but thank you

He leaned against the kitchen counter

Me: But I am not saying gawk at me

Him: I can't help myself

I walked to the sink and rinsed the glasses

Me: You won't guess what happened today

Him: Do tell Shawty

Me: Your mother called...

Him: Is that a good or bad thing?

Me: The latter

Him: Don't tell me she insulted you again

Me: Not exactly, she invited me to go with her to one of her Events this coming weekend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Wow, that's unexpected

Me: I know right? And the way she spoke with me, you couldn't even tell it was the same lady who was insulting me few days ago

Him: Maybe she is coming to terms with the fact that I will never leave you. I mean she has no choice but to accept you

Me: I guess you are right. You think I should go?

Him: What do you think?

Me: I am asking you Munchie

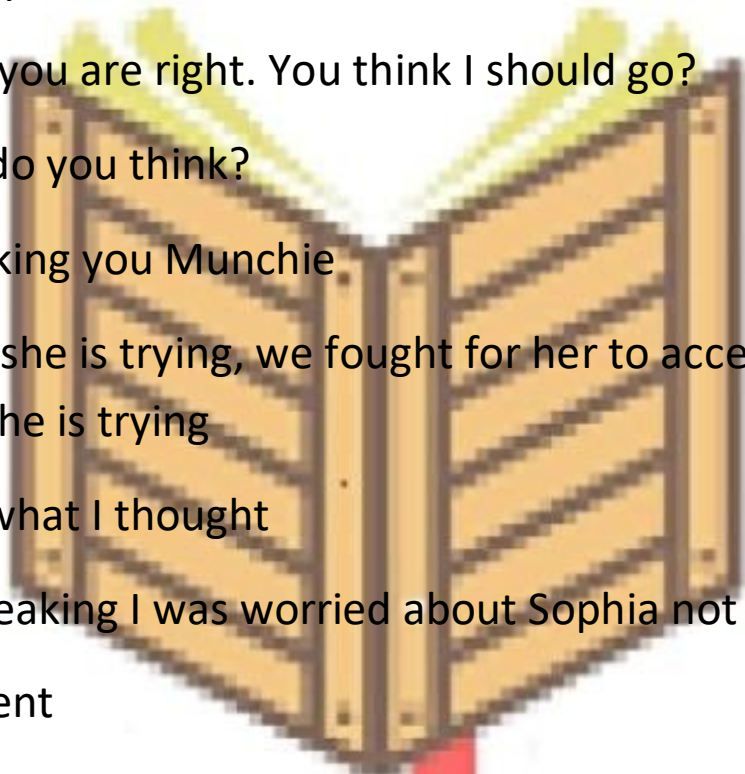
Him: I think she is trying, we fought for her to accept you and it seems like she is trying

Me: That's what I thought

Honestly speaking I was worried about Sophia not accepting me

Advertisement

I really love her son and her disapproval was hurting me. If she wants to give our relationship a try then I will try and meet her half way. She is human and if she is seeing her mistakes then who am I to judge her? If I do that I will be hurting my Ayden and I don't want that at all. I love this man with all my heart



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I was really starting to get worried; I've seen in-laws getting into battle with their daughters-in-law and it never ends well

Him: I know exactly what you are talking about; I saw that with my mother

Me: Mh?

Him: My grandmother never loved my mother for her son but Pops fought for their love. I saw how my mother cried for her mother-in-law's love and affection

I moved closer to him

Him: My grandmother died hating my mother, she hated everything that was connected to my mother. I never understood her hatred to my mother

Me: I am sorry to hear that

Him: We can't always get what we want Shawty but I never thought my mother would treat my partner like that

Me: Hey, she is now trying. I am sure she saw her mistakes and she is trying to rectify them. Can we at least give her a chance?

A corner of his mouth rose into a smile

Him: I think we can do that

He kissed me

Him: You are the best, you know that?

Me: I know

I turned around... he spanked my ass

Me: Munchie! (Giggles)

ZOE

I dropped the fork on the plate

My mother looked at me

Mrs G: Are you not enjoying the food?

Me: I am

Mrs G: But you don't look like the person enjoying

Me: Do you think I am lovable mommy?

Mrs G: Yes, you are

Me: Then why do I feel like I am not? I feel cursed when it comes to this love thing



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs G: You love the wrong people all the time Zoe, you need to stop seeking love at the wrong place

Me: I don't

Mrs G: You do, how many guys have you claimed they love you when it's all in your head?

Me: Let's not talk about that

Mrs G: You started the conversation we might as well finish it

Me: Mommy...

Mrs G: You need to get checked with reality, you know what happens whenever you start to see and feel things that do not exist

Me: Now I regret asking you that question. How did we get here?

Mrs G: We got here because you asked and as your mother it's my duty to tell you the truth. We don't need another Roxy, Moses and Debby drama, this time they will lock you up

I stood up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: There we go again; I am reminded of my past. I thought we passed that stage

I ran to the stairs and walked to my room

Me: I know Ethan love me, it's not in my head I am not making this up. I know it's real! I am not crazy; Mimi is standing in the way. Just like Goldie

I took the chair and hit the mirror

Me: He is mine!

I grabbed everything that was on the nightstand and threw them!

MIMI

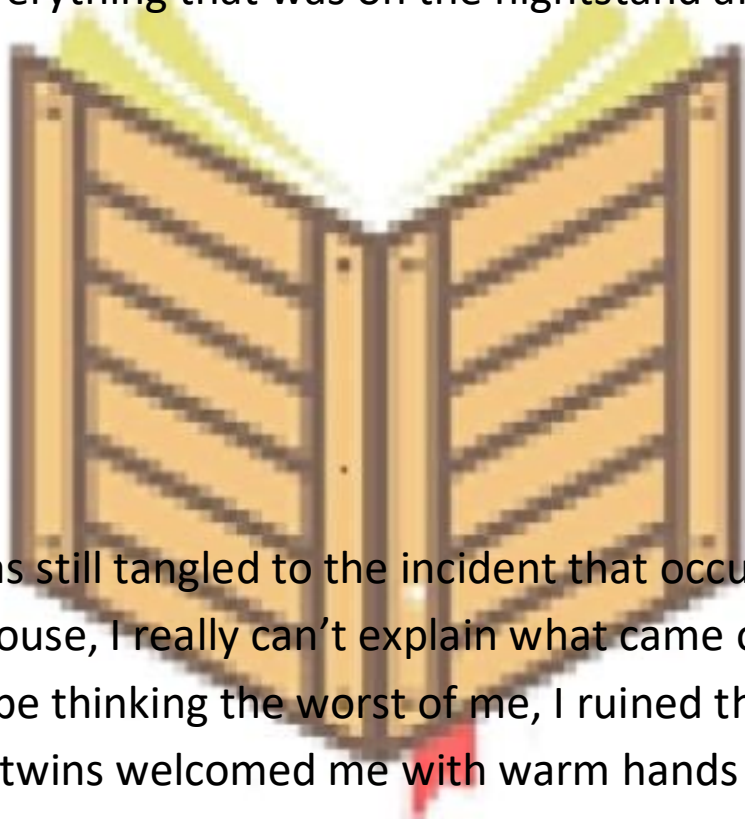
My mind was still tangled to the incident that occurred earlier at Ethan's house, I really can't explain what came over me. Alexa must be thinking the worst of me, I ruined things for myself. The twins welcomed me with warm hands and what did I do? I became a monster overnight

I rang Ethan

Him: Cuddly

I kept quiet

Him: Talk with me



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I'm sorry

Him: I talked with Lex, stop stressing yourself

Me: Can't help myself

Him: How are you feeling now?

Me: I woke up feeling better. I think I needed to rest

Him: See? I told you to get some sleep

Me: It must be the training thing, it's not easy and it requires my mind and body

Him: It must be

Me: Tell Lex that I am really sorry

Him: I will tell her

Me: I love you

Him: You complete me

Me: Bye

I hung

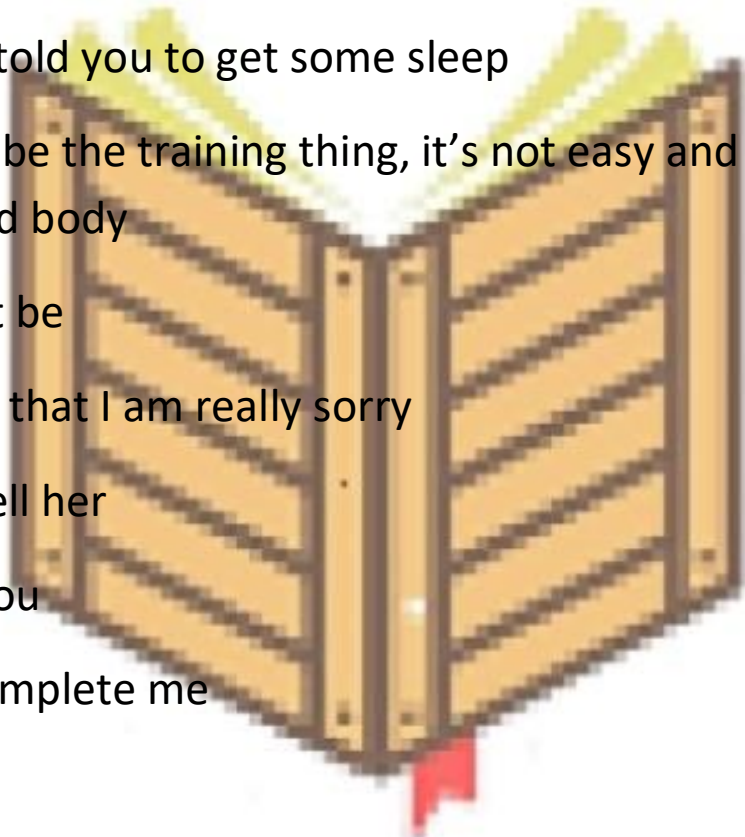
NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why are you looking at me?

Buhle was leaning against the wall staring at me

Her: Food is ready

Me: I am not hungry



Her: You never turn down food Mimi. Something is wrong with you

I stood up

Me: Let's go and eat. You will not stop nagging if I don't eat...

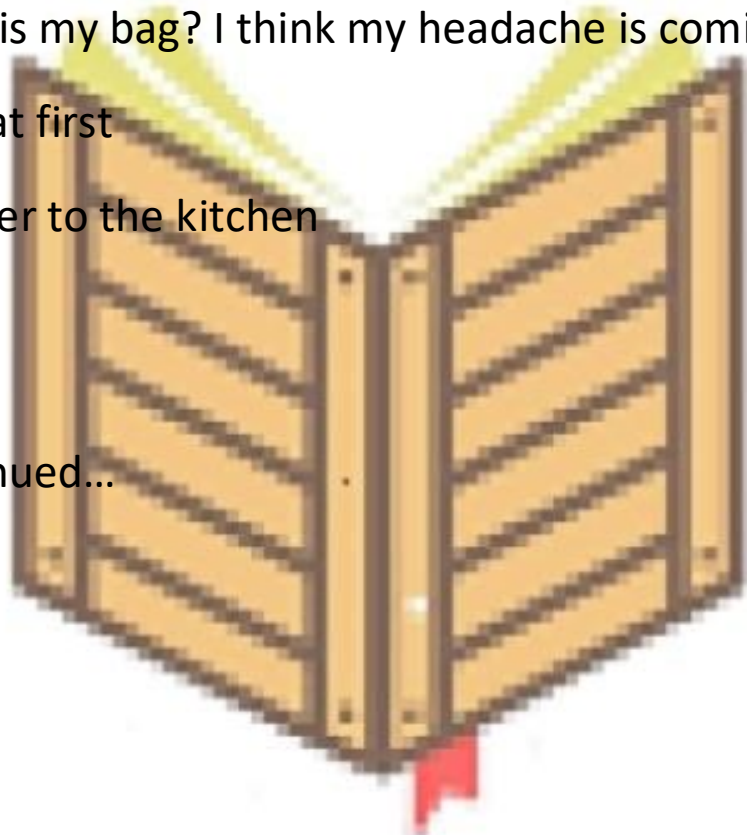
She clicked her tongue

Me: Where is my bag? I think my headache is coming back

Her: Let's eat first

I followed her to the kitchen

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

60

MIMI

The following morning I was feeling fine, the headache is now faint. I must admit I was starting to get worried but it seems like I was being paranoid as Ethan said. I grabbed my hand bag and walked out of my bedroom. Buhle was already waiting for me

Her: Stop dragging your legs

Me: Ha wena, just because you woke up early doesn't mean some of us have to suffer. Yoh!

Her: Let's go

I locked the door

Her: Seems like we are getting lift to work

I turned around

Me: Mr Khumalo the hunk...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

She smiled... That's how in love she is, whenever she sees Lindo nothing around her matters

Me: Stop drooling, he is yours already

Lindo got out the car and opened his arms for Buhle

Her: Sthandwa

He kissed her

Me: Come on guys, like really?

Him: Hello Mimi

I smiled at him

Him: Can I talk with you before we go?

Me: Okay...

Him: Did Yara tell you about her and Sophia's latest developments?

I shook my head no

Me: What happened?

Him: Well, other than trying to reach out and apologize...

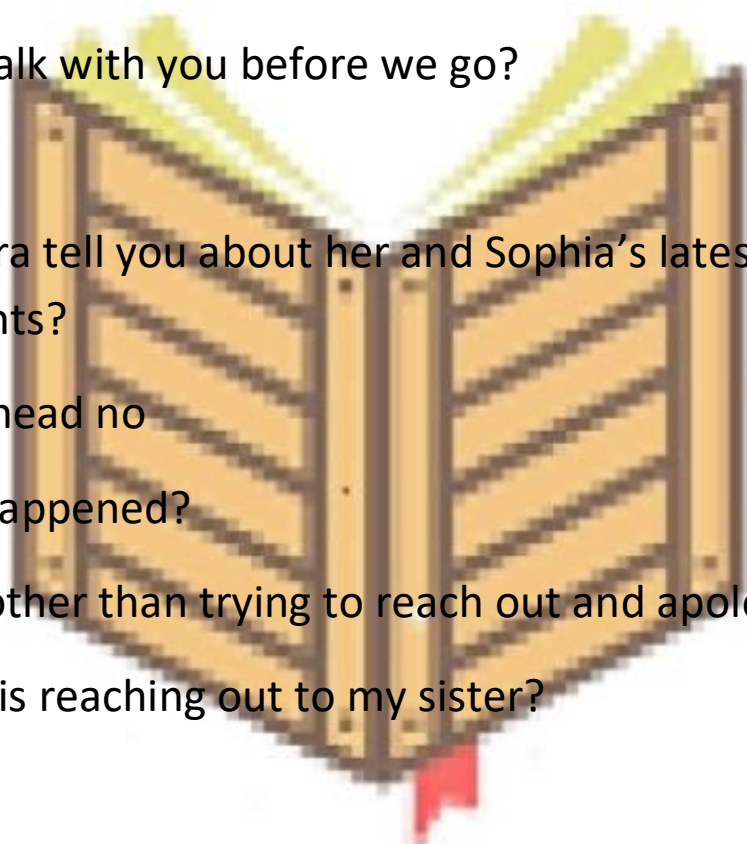
Me: Sophia is reaching out to my sister?

Me: Yes

Buhle: Isn't that a good thing?

Me: Good and bad but I don't want to discourage Yara. We will see how far she will keep her acting because I smell lies. Unless she has really changed

Him: We will be waiting for her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It has always been my wish for my sister to get married in a family that is caring and loving. Trauma that comes with monster-in-law is too much and my baby sister won't be able to handle such. She will literally be broken, she won't survive

AYDEN

My mother walked in my bedroom just after I closed it

Her: Morning

Me: Mimsey

Her: You are only coming back now?

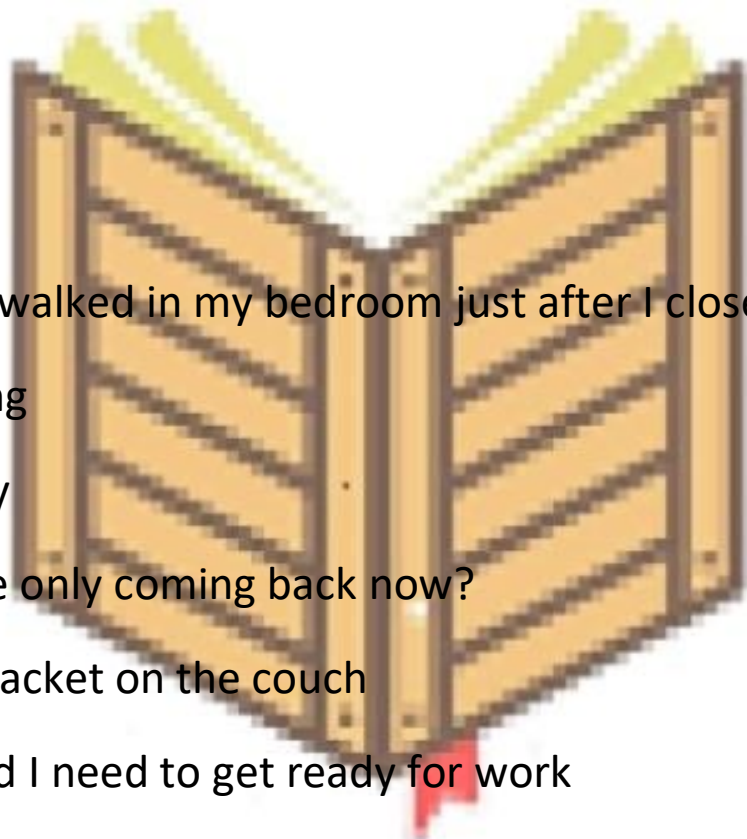
I threw my jacket on the couch

Me: Yes, and I need to get ready for work

She sat on the edge of the bed

Me: I heard you called Yara

Her: I did...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you Mimsey, it really means a lot to know that you are trying to reach out to her. She was really happy; all she ever wanted was just simple thing. You, accepting her

Her: Anything for you son. I just want to see you happy and you know I will do anything for your happiness

Me: I know and I promise you, you will not regret your decision. You are going to love Yara

Her: I am sure I will

YARA

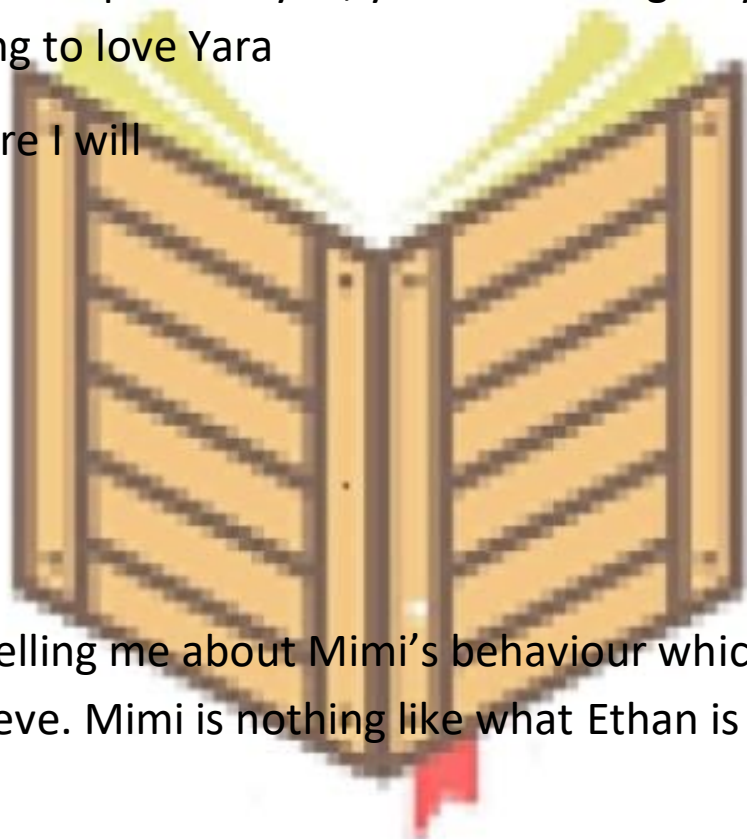
Ethan was telling me about Mimi's behaviour which I find it hard to believe. Mimi is nothing like what Ethan is saying right now

Me: Are you not exaggerating?

Him: I am not. She acted completely out of character

Me: That doesn't sound like Mimi

Him: But when I spoke with her this morning she sounded better than yesterday



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: And Lex how is she?

Him: You know her and after that bullying situation, I am scared she will distance herself

My sister doesn't need that...

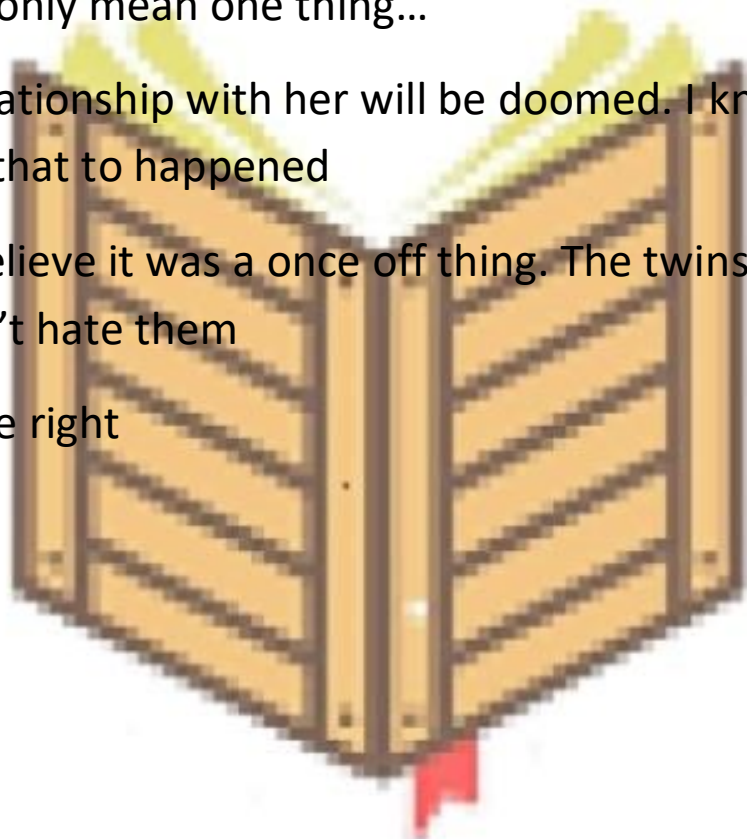
Me: That's the last thing we need. If the twins start to hate Mimi it will only mean one thing...

Him: My relationship with her will be doomed. I know and I don't want that to happen

Me: Let's believe it was a once off thing. The twins will see that Mimi doesn't hate them

Him: You are right

MUNEI



I looked around before making my way down the stairs

Sophia: You can come down, Ayden has left

I walked up to her

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: This hiding and seek game is starting to bore me. Can we start already with whatever plan you have?

Her: Just give me few more days. There won't be need for this

Me: I can't wait

I took cup of coffee from her

Me: Thank you

Her: I never asked; do you have a boyfriend?

I sat down

Me: Not at the moment. Do you seriously think I would be here if I had one? Come on Sophia, I am not that sleazy

Her: I was not trying to insult you if that's what you are thinking

Me: It doesn't matter. I just can't wait to get piece of that son of yours

Her: At least respect me, we are taking about my son

I chuckled

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: You are still going to hear juicy details

Her: I rather not. I just wanna see the results nothing more nothing less

I stood up



Me: You are indeed the Devil's daughter

AYDEN

I stood at the door and looked at Yara. She was busy typing on her computer; her braids are tied into a nice bun. She looked so beautiful, sight to sore eyes. So much that I wish I could get inside there and tore her clothes apart whilst exclaiming my love to her. Mh with that thought, I am thinking of planning something romantic for us. I love this woman so much and there's nothing I want than being inside of her whilst she moan my name

I laughed softly and walked back to my office... My phone rang, it was Mimsey

Me: Mimsey

Her: Son, I hope I am not disturbing you

Me: No, you not. You want something?

Her: Tonight I'd like to host you and Yara. Do you think you would be able to come?

Me: Should I be worried?

Her: Yes I can't even do a nice gesture without you suspecting me of something bad?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You can't blame, you are full of tricks. And when it comes to Yara I will always double check, get use to that

Her: Well you will be pleased to know that I am not planning anything sinister. If she wants she can come with someone from her family maybe that way she will be comfortable

Me: I will let her know

Her: Wonderful. Let me not keep you, have a great day

Me: You too Mimsey. And thank you

Her: Don't mention it

She hung up

Yara looked very happy when she was telling me about my mother's attempts to make peace with her, I never realised how much she wanted my mother's love until she talked about her reaching out. I could hear from her voice that she is excited. I guess it's every girl's dream to be close with their mother-in-laws and my girl is one of those girls

ETHAN

NOVELSGURU.COM

The door opened

Me: Portia, I asked not to be disturbed

I raised my head

Me: Zoe?

Her: Yes, and sorry for interrupting you

Me: Come in, it's always fun to see you

I shut my laptop

Her: Don't blame your Assistant, I twisted her arm. I wanted to see you

I laughed

Me: Please seat down

Her: Thank you

Me: You are hardly at the office, are you sure you are doing the job you are paid for?

She chuckled softly

Her: I am. It's been days since I saw you that's why I am here

Me: I am a bad friend, right?

Her eyes darkened

Her: Ethan, you are going to pretend until when?

Me: I don't think I understand

Her: This! The love between us, are you not feeling anything?

I am really lost now!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I can't pretend anymore Ethan; you know I never saw you as a friend. Yes at first I did but as time goes things between us changed

Me: But I see you as a friend, a very good one at that point

Her: There's always someone in my way that's why you don't want to admit to your feelings. First it was Goldie now it's Mimi

Me: Zoe, there's nothing between us and they will never be something

Her: You are lying to yourself

She stood up and walked up to me. She turned the chair and made me look at her

Her: Remember that night? What we shared what magical

Me: We were playing a game, it was a stupid game. We would have never kissed if it wasn't of that game. And we were like what, 21 y/o? Come on!

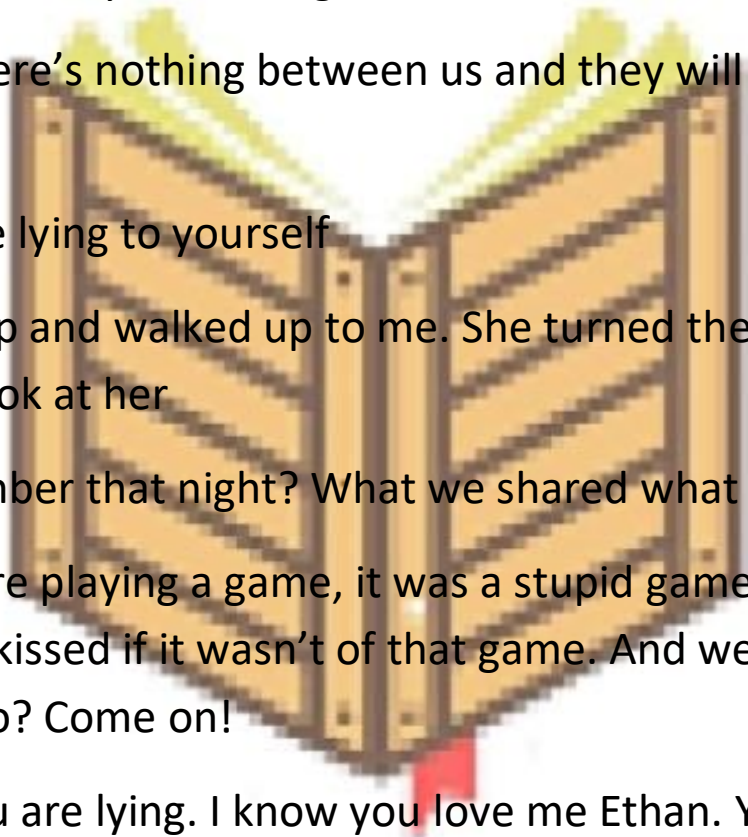
Her: No, you are lying. I know you love me Ethan. You love me!

She leaned and tried to kiss me

Me: Stop!

I pushed her

Me: Stay away from me, you are crazy! You are not my friend; my friend will never behave like this



NOVELSGURU.COM

She wiped her tears

What the hell is going on? I've known Zoe for years but I don't recognize the person who is in front of me

Me: Leave my office now, and don't ever think about coming back. Stay away from me and Mimi (Shouts) go with your craziness!

Her: You don't mean that

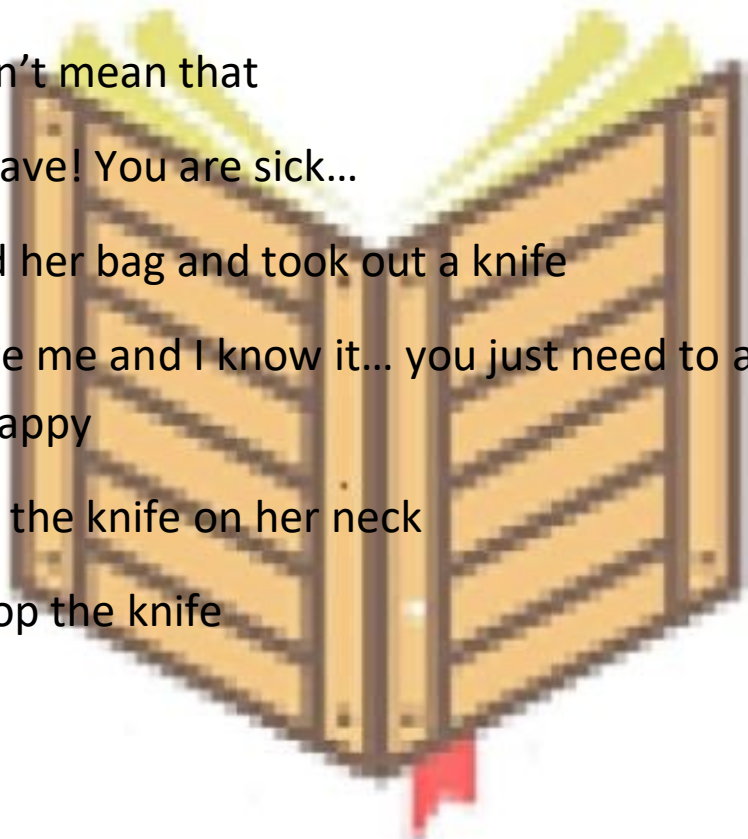
Me: I said leave! You are sick...

She grabbed her bag and took out a knife

Her: You love me and I know it... you just need to accept it and we will be happy

She pressed the knife on her neck

Me: Zoe, drop the knife



To be continued...

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

61

ETHAN

It was a mission and half to calm Zoe down; I've never seen anything of that kind. She literally threw my things around, she acted like a crazy person and for a moment I was scared. Not for me but for her. I ended calling her parents but when they arrived the damage was already done. She had hurt herself...

Mrs G sat across me... She ran her eyes around the office

Mrs G: I am really sorry Ethan

Me: Why didn't you say anything to me? She is my friend; you were supposed to let me know Mrs Griffins

Mrs G: I didn't think it was necessary, she told me she was taking her medication. And the symptoms were not showing anymore

She told me about Zoe's condition, shocked doesn't even start to explain the situation. I mean she doesn't look like someone who is unstable to think I even defended her when Mimi pointed it out

Mrs G: We will make sure she gets help. I am sorry again Ethan

Me: Please do that because what I saw was very unpleasing

Mrs G: In the meantime please try to not have any sort of communication with her. Even if she tries to get your attention, she must get professional help first

Me: I will keep that in mind

She grabbed her purse and stood up

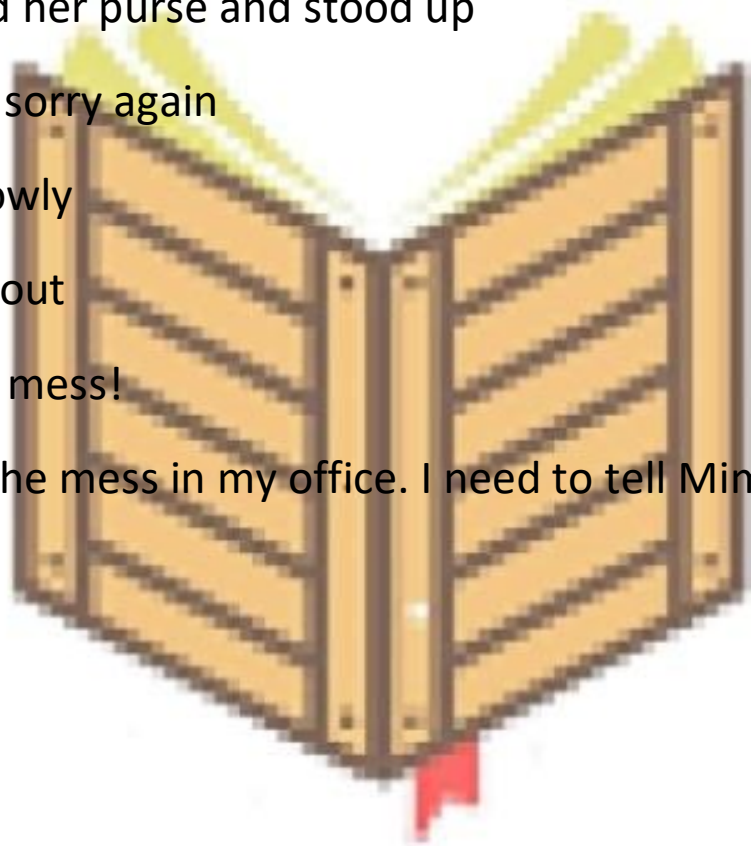
Mrs G: I am sorry again

I nodded slowly

She walked out

Me: What a mess!

I looked at the mess in my office. I need to tell Mimi about this



PANTHER

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I kept my eyes on the road with one hand on the wheel and the other one on Buhle's thigh

Her: I have to be heading back now

Me: Oh, that's a shame

Her: You will get bored of me if you keep me by your side all the time

I chuckled softly

Me: Never. What makes you say that?

I parked at the parking lot and stared deep into her eyes

Me: You haven't answered me Sunshine

Her: How serious are you about us?

Me: Serious to send my people to your family tomorrow if possible

She laughed softly

Her: Quit joking Sthandwa

Me: You see me laughing?

Her: No but...

Me: No buts. I am old Sunshine and I don't see myself toying with you. I've seen it all when it comes to relationships and settling down is the right word for me right now

I held her hand

Me: If that word come with your name then why not? I love you Sunshine and there's too much heat between us...





Her: With the life that you live do you think all of that is possible?

I looked away

Her: Answer me

Me: What I do is dangerous I won't lie, it comes with lot of danger but in the midst of all that I stand to protect my loved ones. I will rather die than let anything happened to them

Fear was written all over her face

Me: You don't have to get scared because for as long as I live no danger will come your way. Do you trust me?

Her: I trust you

Me: That's all I needed to hear



ETHAN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mimi's eyes shifted forth and back, not sure of what to say...  
She shook her head slightly

Her: But I told you Cuddly

Me: You did but you can't blame me. She has always shown me sane side

Her: That's what they do, I never believed it. She was just too good to be true! For all we know she poisoned me yester...

We looked at each other

"You think?" we asked in unison

Me: I'll be dammed

Her: Come to think of it, I started feeling weird hours after our brunch. But how? I was with her the whole time, I never left her side. Even when the waitress served us drinks I didn't see anything unusual from Zoe's side

Me: If she was adamant about hurting you then she must have organised something without you realising it

Her: That bitch! I will kill her when I see her, I swear...

Me: Cuddles, your choice of words

Her: It's all your fault suka and now you are telling me about choice of words. You will get us killed one day, you are too nice

Ethan

Me: I already apologized

Her: You are not forgiven

Me: I will keep on apologizing then

Her: Whatever!

YARA

I walked into Ayden polishing his gun. I stood at the door and looked at him

Me: You never told me what is it you do with my brothers?

Him: You never asked and I never told you

Honestly speaking, I don't know anything about their side job apart from their names. Which I heard goes side by side with their character

Me: Then tell me

Him: No will do

Me: I wanna know

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: What will happen after knowing?

Me: Nothing, I will just know

Him: Just know that I live by the gun, my life revolve around this

He looked at his gun

Me: So, you are indirectly saying that one day I can wake up and hear that you are dead?

Him: Yes

Me: Just like that?

He put the gun on the bed and stood up

Him: What do you want me to say? I can never lie to you

Me: Is not something you hear everyday

Him: I've known guns all my life; they are part of me Shawty

Me: You live by the sword you die by the sword...

He circled his arms around my waist

Him: Let's not stress about that now can we?

Me: Do I have a choice?

Him: You do but I am asking nicely

He kissed me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Ready to go?

Me: Yes

ZOE

I was curled up in the corner of the room

The psychiatrist looked and me

Psychiatrist: Zoe?

I kept quiet

Psychiatrist: You need to take your pills

Me: This is not over

Advertisement

it far from over! It is far (Whispers)

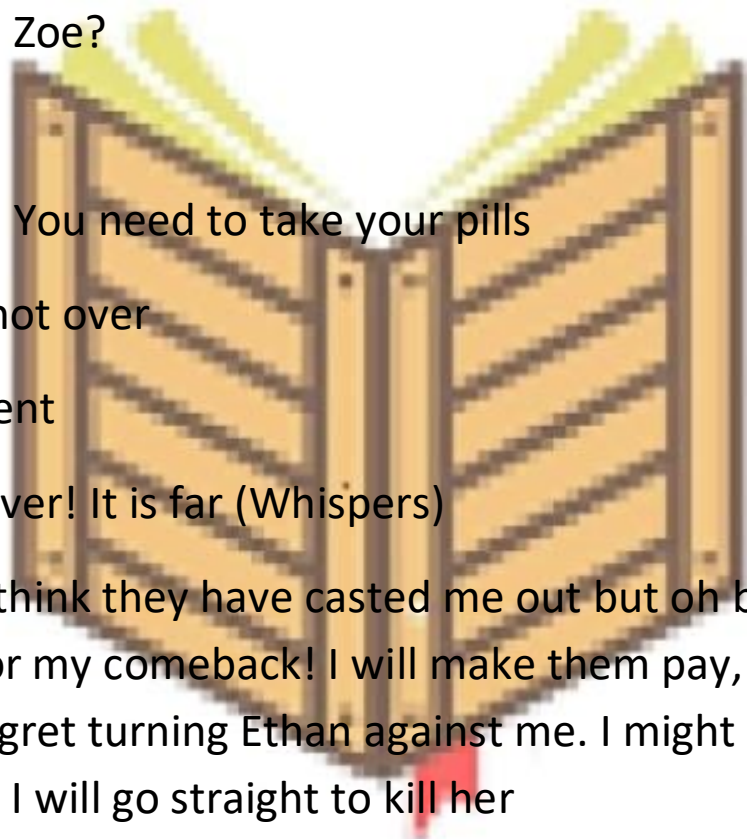
All of them think they have casted me out but oh boy! They are not ready for my comeback! I will make them pay, I swear...

Mimi will regret turning Ethan against me. I might not need that file after all, I will go straight to kill her

My mother walked in the room

Mrs G: How is she?

Psychiatrist: She is refusing medication; we will be forced to inject her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs G: Do whatever it takes. And if it's possible can she stay here maybe two months?

Psychiatrist: It will depend on her progress

Mrs G: I don't recognize my own daughter, I mean looked at her

Psychiatrist: Don't worry, she will be fine. Zoe just need to make room for rejection, if she start with that then everything will be fine

Even my own mother has turned her back on me! All of them did! All because of one person

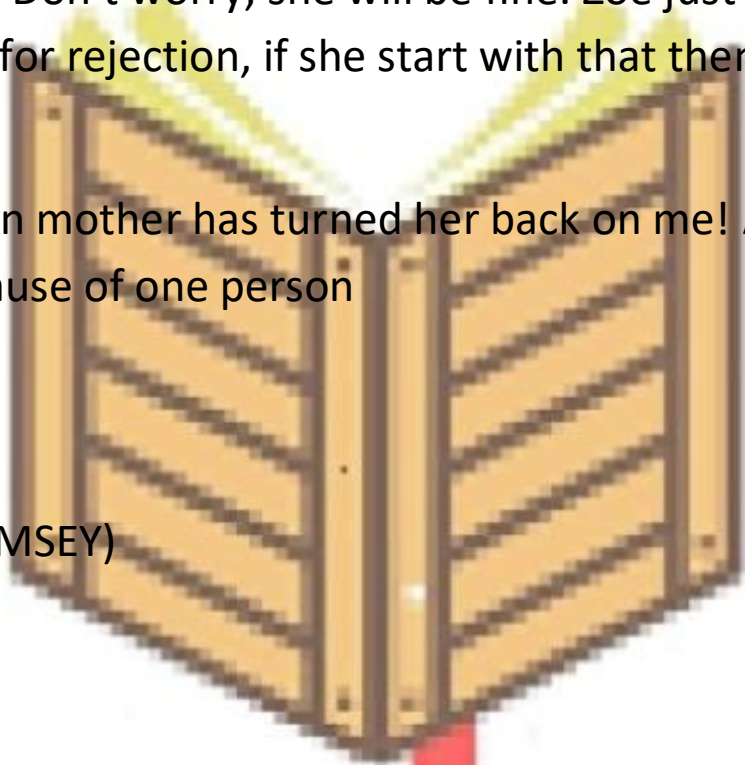
SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I was busy setting up the table. It's going to be one long night, tolerating this people is going to exhaust me. I heard she is coming with her sister

I took a sip from my wine

Voice: Mimsey

I turned around; it was Ayden with the girl



NOVELSGURU.COM

Time to act for mother-in-law of the year

Me: Son (Smiles)

I hugged him

Me: Yara, you look beautiful

No lie about that, she's really looking beautiful. Ayden must have chipped in for her to look this dazzling

Her: Thank you Mrs Tshivhase. I brought this for you

She gave me bottle of Wine, my favourite at that point. Wow she is impressing and I have to say that I am taken

Me: Thank you, how did you know this is my favourite?

She looked at Ayden and smiled

Him: Guilty as charged

Me: Well, thank you. I am adding it to my cabinet for special occasions

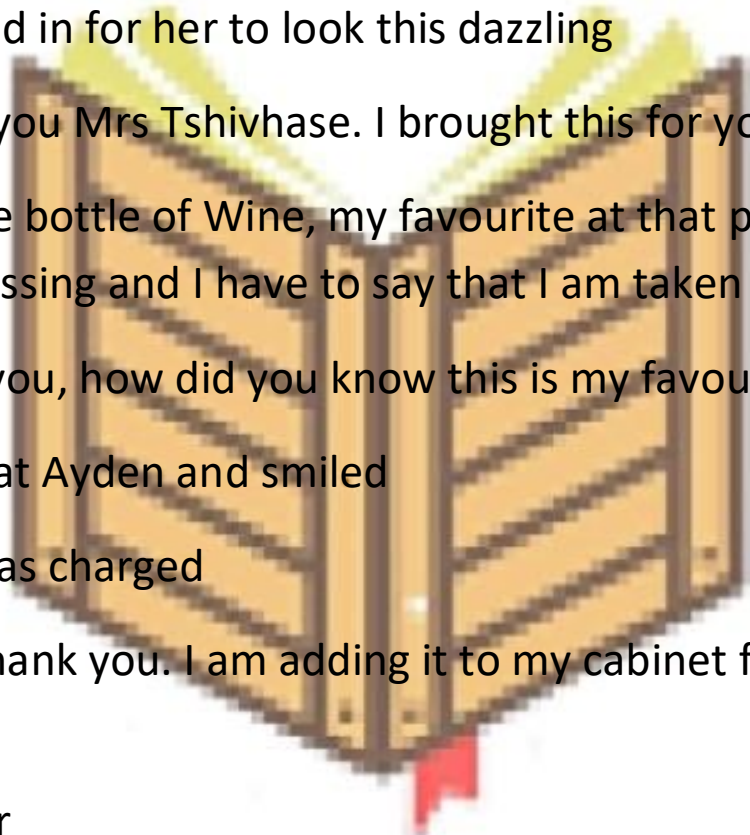
I hugged her

Him: Let me go and start fire

Me: Go ahead son

He kissed my cheek

Him: I love you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I lost my heart on you

They kissed... I cleared my throat

Him: See you...

Her: Do you need help with anything?

Me: I was just finishing up

Her: I can help, if you don't mind...

Me: Please...

We walked into the kitchen

(Doorbell rang)

Her: Must be my sister

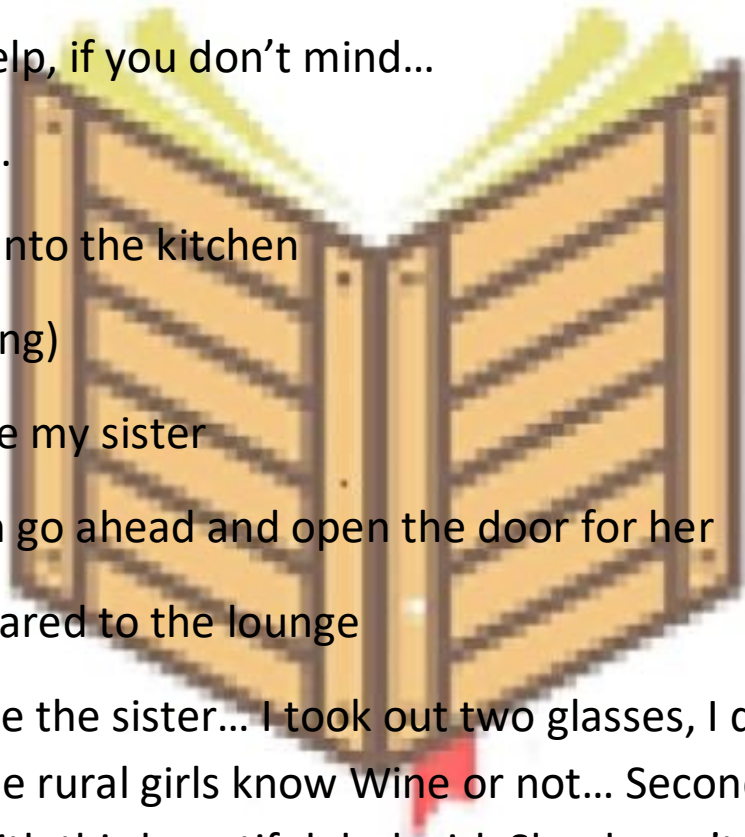
Me: You can go ahead and open the door for her

She disappeared to the lounge

Now let's see the sister... I took out two glasses, I don't even know if these rural girls know Wine or not... Seconds later Yara walked in with this beautiful dark girl. She doesn't reflect Yara's image but you can't miss their eyes. She dropped her purse on the chair and looked at me

Yara: Mimi meet Ayden's mom, Mrs Tshivhase meet my sister

Me: Nice meeting you



NOVELSCURU.COM



Mimi: Wish I could say the same about you Sophia

Me: I guess you've heard lot about me given your attitude

Mimi: Unfortunately...

Me: Okay, fine... Would you like Wine or juice?

Mimi looked at her sister

Mimi: White wine if you have, please

What? Okay, maybe I judged the sister quickly

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

MIMI

After that horrible dinner last night I needed some love and my man was on a standby...

Cuff me next time when a rich old hug invites me to dinner, for one moment I thought Sophia is suffering from middle-life crisis. I mean God! My sister got a big gap to fill and I am glad I am not her because amazing!

Ethan ran his finger on my tummy

Me: Stop! (Giggles)

Him: Morning Cuddles

Me: Morning

Ethan is respectful in such a way that is admirable and rare to find. When we arrived here last night he didn't take me to his room. Not that I wanted to sleep in his bedroom, no! But right now I am voicing the gentleman that he is. We slept in the guest room; I don't think I would have felt comfortable sleeping in the bed he shared with his deceased wife. But he promised to move the bed and get another one. Better the room than the bed!

Him: Can I bury myself deep inside you?

That made me gets goose bumps

Me: Thank you for last night, it was really amazing and too delicious

Him: Want another piece of me?

Me: No, I don't. You so full of yourself

He squeezed my breast

Him: But, your body is saying another thing. Now, what's that?

He got on top of me

This man, his manhood is already hard. You'd swear the first thing in his man when he wakes up is sex

Him: The twins will be very excited to see you

Me: I am not so sure about that

He circled his tongue around my nipple

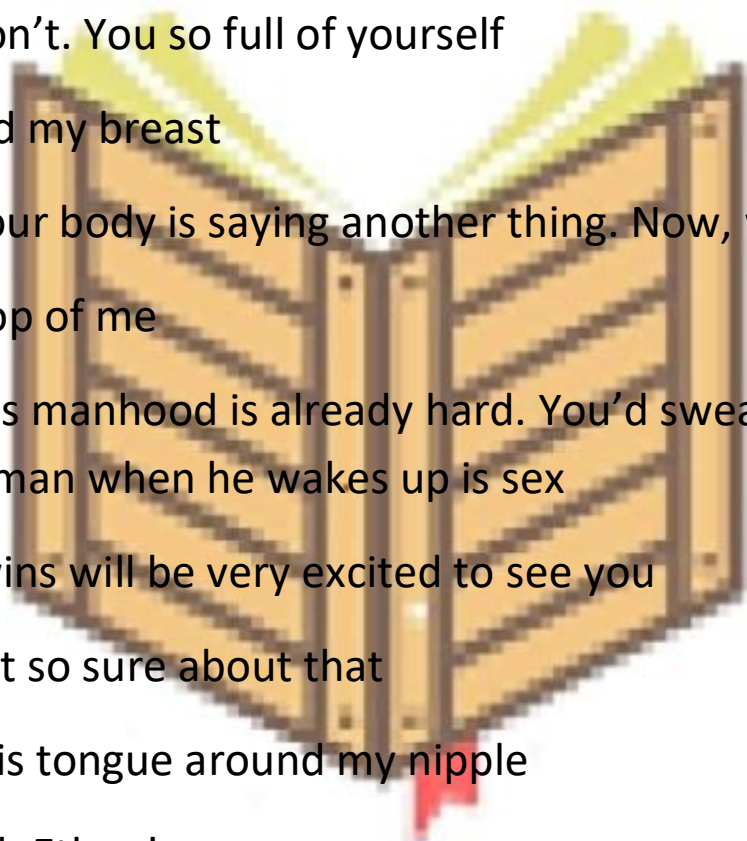
Me: Lex... Oh Ethan!

Him: You saying something?

He went down kissing my tummy

Me: Never mind (Low voice)

I closed my eyes



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I was still reliving what went down last night; I can only laugh about it now. It was gloves off between Mimi and Sophia, I knew from the moment she walked in that shit is about to go down

I was ecstatic about that!

Well, I wasn't really happy that they were exchanging words whilst pretending to be tolerating one another but in all of that I had great time with Ayden and the other woman in his life. As for Amelia, now that's Sophia's death in a form of a human. She is a rebel...

I kept the phone to my ear and listened to the dial tone. Trust Ayden to take forever to answer a call

Him: Shawty

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: And he finally answers

Him: Sorry, I was taking a shower

Me: It's fine. Just wanted to let you know that I will be 30 minutes late today

Him: Going somewhere?

Me: Going to see the twins, they are starting to think I am ignoring them. I'll probably drop them off to school

Him: You've been spending lot of time with me in return of neglecting them. I am sorry

Me: We were talking over the phone; I guess they just miss seeing my pretty face

Him: Pretty face you say? Should I get you a mirror?

Me: You will cry Munchie

He laughed

Him: Some of us have places to go so Miss M, see you later

Me: Bye

I hung up



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**ETHAN**

The twins were settling around the table eating their breakfast

Me: My rascals

The twins looked at me and smiled

Tenda: Guess who is coming to see us

Me: Only person is capable of making you grin and that is...

Drum roll!

“Aunt Yara” they shouted

Me: You should see your faces

Lex: You are just jealous of us. That’s all!

Mimi walked up to us

The twins’ eyes darkened

Mimi: Morning guys

They forced on their food

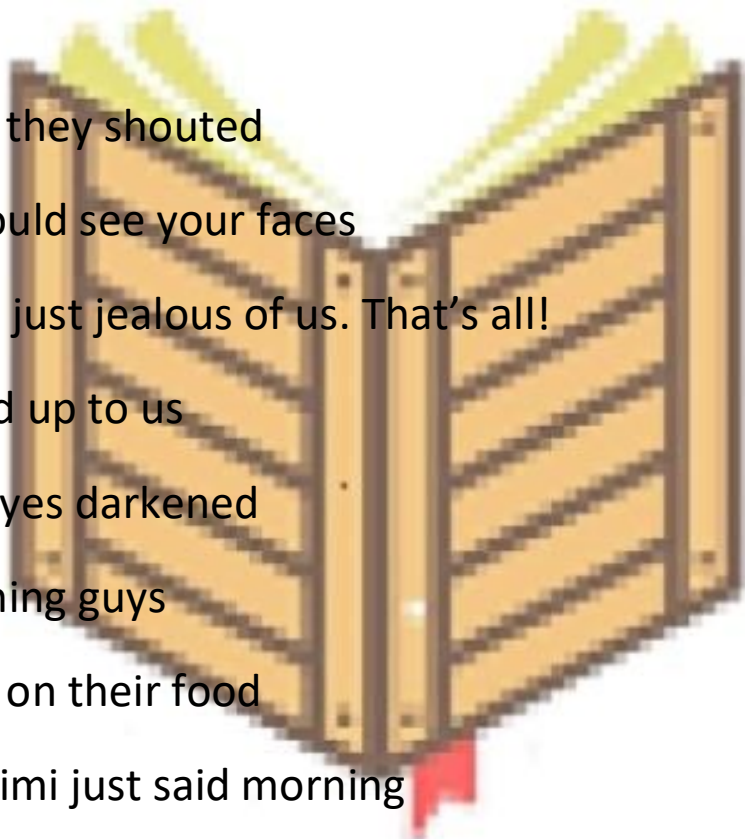
Me: Aunt Mimi just said morning

Tenda: Morning

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mimi: Can I please have a word with you...

She sat down



Mimi: I am deeply sorry about what happened the other day, I didn't mean to hurt you Lex, and you know I can never do that. Right?

Lex: You scared me

Mimi: And I am sorry baby, please forgive me

Lex: I forgave you

Mimi looked at me and smiled

Mimi: Thank you

She hugged them

Me: Now we can eat in peace

Tenda: Daddy?

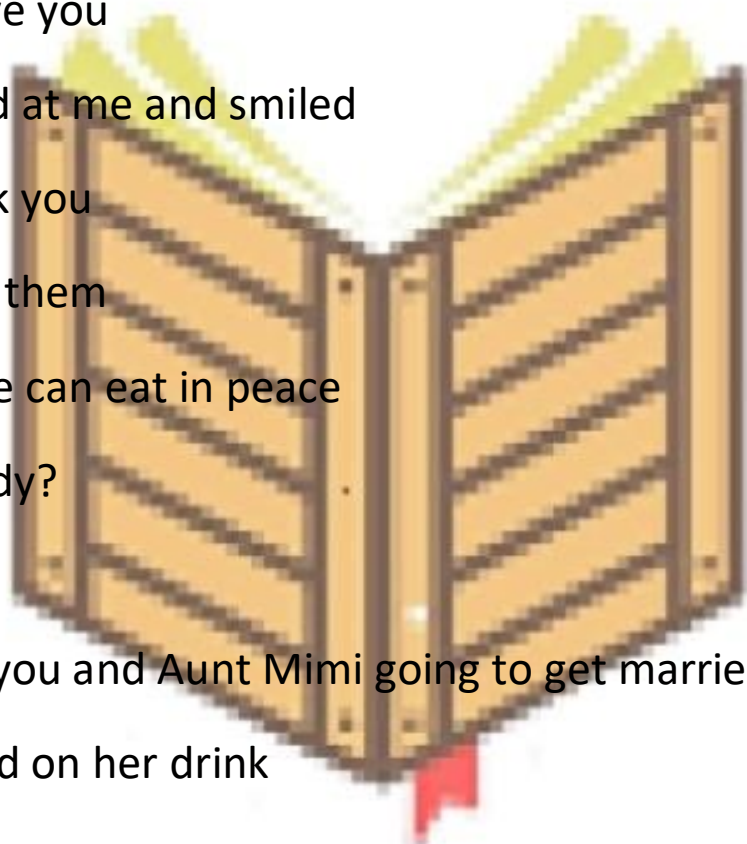
Me: Mh...

Tenda: Are you and Aunt Mimi going to get married?

Mimi choked on her drink

Me: And

what did I tell you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

ADYEN

Me: Mimsey, I will see you later

Her: Are you not having breakfast?

Me: No, I am in a hurry

Her: Okay

I put my jacket on and grabbed my keys

Her: Before you go...

I looked at her

Her: Please thank Yara and her sister for me. It was really nice hosting them

Me: And she enjoyed, thank you Mimsey

She smiled at me

Me: Let me go and make money for you

Her: Go ahead son

I remembered something...

Me: Mimsey

Her: Mh



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Last night I heard you talking with someone, who were you talking with?

Her: No one maybe you were dreaming

Me: I am sure I heard you, like the voices were coming from your room

Her: You are talking nonsense

Me: If you say so. Bye

YARA

I turned my gaze on them as they keep on smiling at me

Me: My babies

Lex: We are not babies

Tenda: Yeah we are not

Ethan laughed

Me: You will always be my babies whether you like it or not

I squeezed Lex's cheek



NOVELSGURU.COM

Tenda: Where is Uncle T?

Me: He's around and he misses you so much. He sent me to give you lots of kisses and hugs

Lex: But he hasn't come to see us

Me: Because he is busy but he will definitely come and see you

Ethan: Uncle T is contagious; they can't stop talking about him

Lex: Because he is fun

Ethan: In other words, I am boring?

Tenda: We didn't say that but come to of it

Lex: Uncle T can teach you a thing or two

We laughed

Ethan: Now, off you go. Go and fetch your bags. We are leaving in 10

They stood up

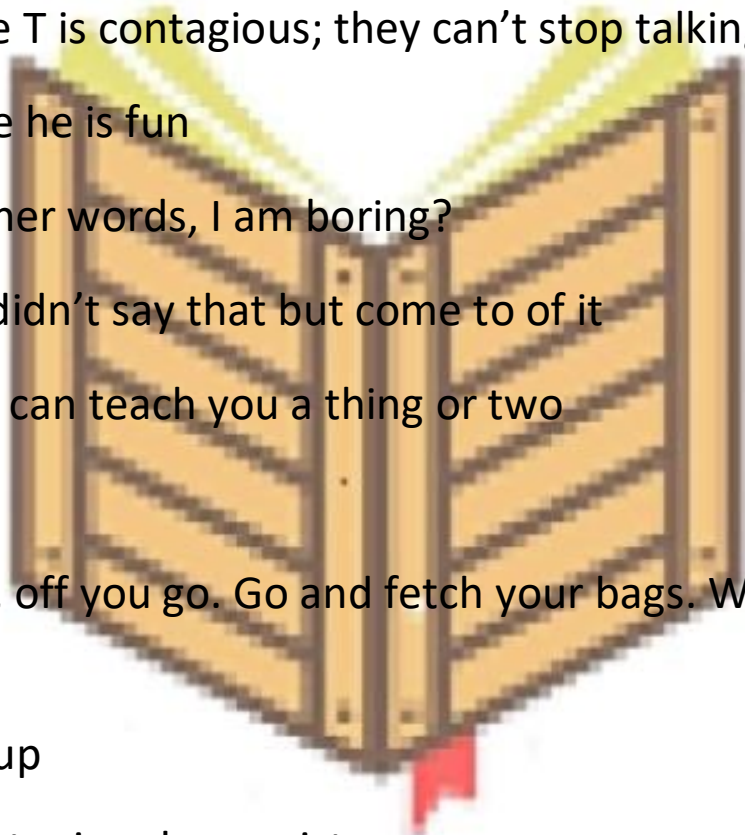
Him: You just missed your sister

Me: She was here?

Him: Yeah

Me: So did she reconcile with them?

Him: She did



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's good. How is she? Didn't have time to talk last night

Him: She is fine; we are suspecting that Zoe did something when they went for brunch

Me: The Giraffe is still tormenting everyone?

He sighed loudly

Him: You have no idea; she went all crazy on me last night

Me: What happened?

Him: She came by my office and proclaimed her love for me

I widened my eyes

I knew that douche bag had a thing for Ethan; I saw the way she looked at him

She stood no change in Ethan

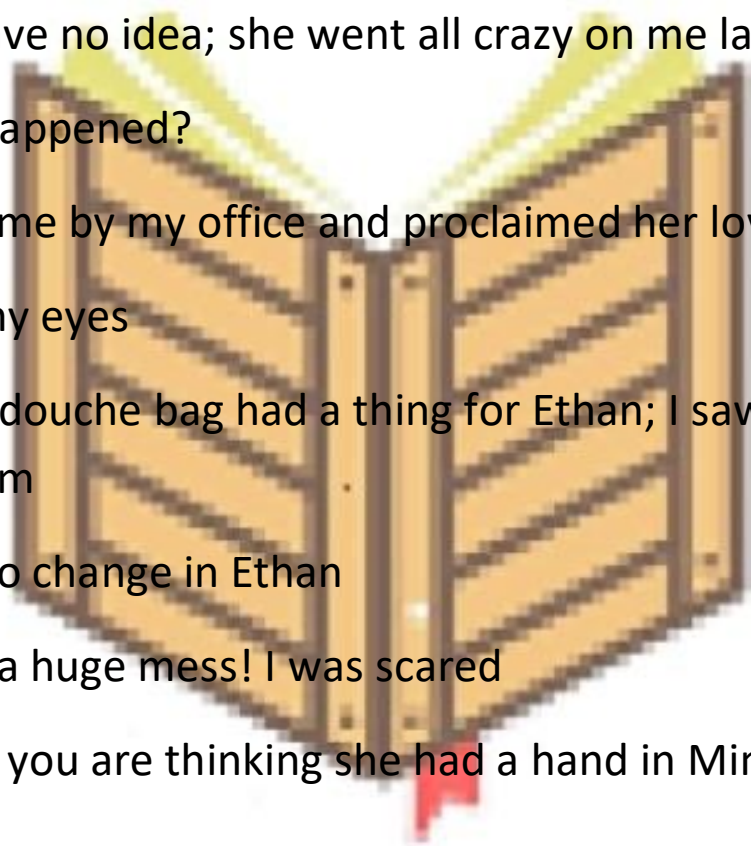
Him: It was a huge mess! I was scared

Me: Yoh, so you are thinking she had a hand in Mimi's weird actions?

Him: That's what we are thinking but we will see if they will continue now that she is admitted

Me: Hectic!

Him: Tell me about, to think I defended her



Me: You didn't know

Him: I was never going to forgive myself had something happened to Mimi

Me: Good thing, it didn't. I don't even want to think about it

MIMI

I yawned and leaned against the table

Me: I wanna sleep

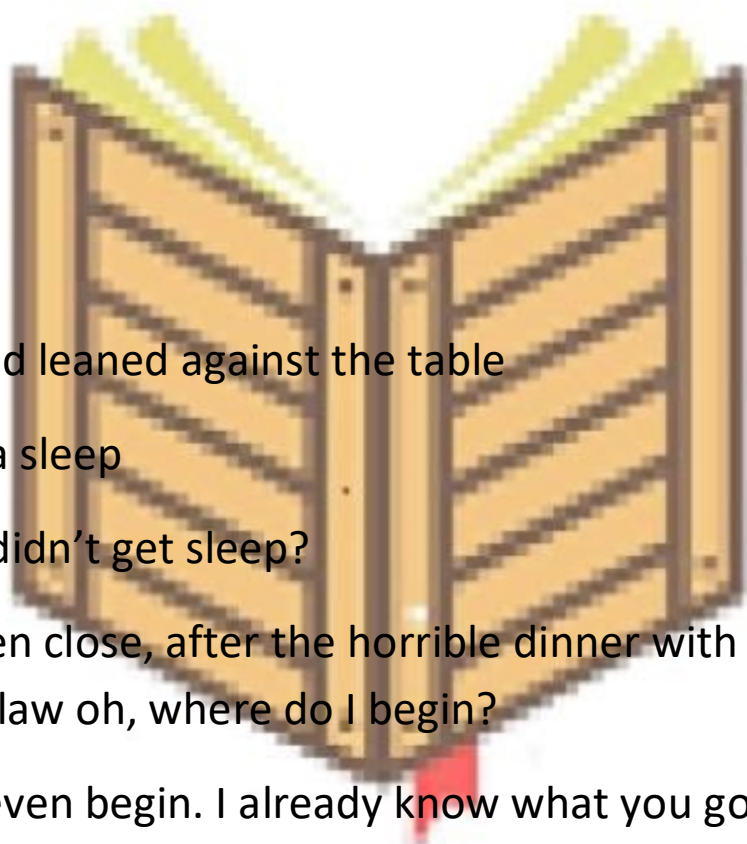
Buhle: You didn't get sleep?

Me: Not even close, after the horrible dinner with my sister's monster-in-law oh, where do I begin?

Her: Don't even begin. I already know what you going to say

Me: I am just having this pounding headache

Her: You and your headaches, I don't know why your doctor can't dictate what's wrong with you instead of prescribing this pills



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Headaches are part of me, I grew up suffering from them like it's torture

I looked for my hand bag

Me: Did you see my hand bag by any chance? I need my pills

Her: No, I don't know where you put it

She looked at time

Her: Let's go. Our break is over, I am sure Puleng is already waiting for us

Me: I will just drink water. I'll drink them later

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

63

AYDEN

I rang Mimi

Me: I am here, where are you?

Her: I am already in Yara's apartment

Me: On my way

I hung

I stepped out of the car and made my way to the apartment

I asked Mimi to help me set a beautiful gesture for Yara. Yara doesn't like surprises but I am taking the chance and set it. She will thank me later...

I opened the door and stepped inside

Mimi: Are you enemy with time?

Me: Come on, do you know how hard it is to leave the office without your sister questioning where I am going? It doesn't help that she handles my dairy

I hugged her

Her: (Laughs) I know what you talking about



NOVELSCURU.COM

I looked around

Me: It looks beautiful. You think she is going to like it? I mean I've turned her lounge into her into restaurant

Her: I will kill her if she doesn't. Stop stressing she will love this, you can teach my man a thing or two...

The floor was filled with red roses. She had moved couches a bit and laid a towel on the floor, four cushions were nicely posed on the towel. Wine, basket full of snacks and fruits were on the side. I wanted something intimate but romantic...

Her: You sure about cooking?

Me: Yes, I wanna cook for her...

Her: Then my work here is done

Me: It is. Don't forget to call your sister after an hour. I will be done by then

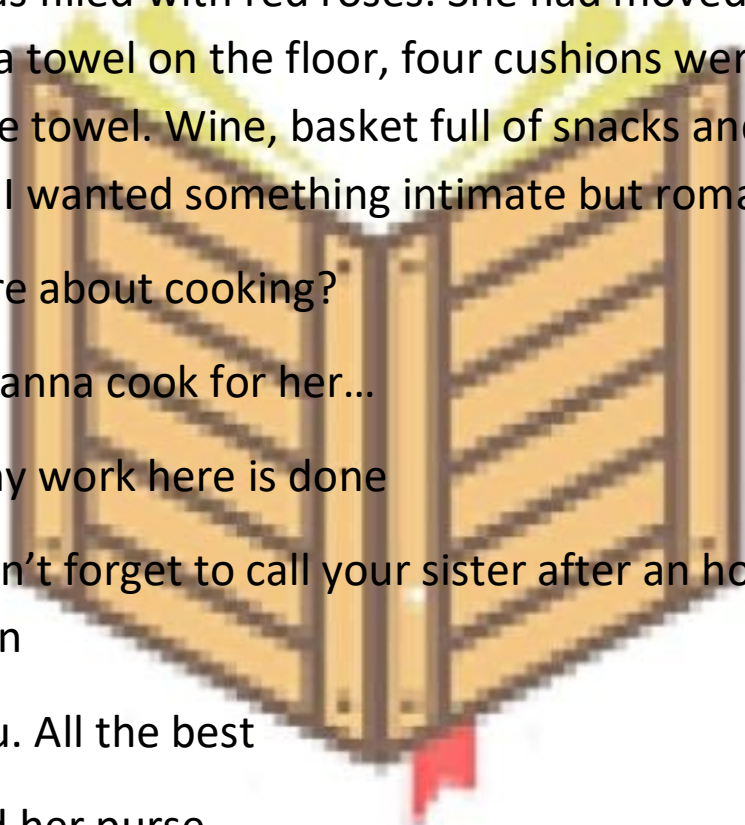
Her: See you. All the best

She grabbed her purse

Her: Don't make babies

She half-yelled making her way

I laughed and shook my head



NOVELSGURU.COM

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I downed the drink and set the glass on the table

I looked at Munei

Me: Are you mocking me? Tell me because I do not like your statements one bit

Her: I am not doing any of that, I am just stating the fact. I heard you laughing last night

Me: There was nothing funny about last night. Just thinking about it...

\*\*\*FLASHBACK\*\*\*

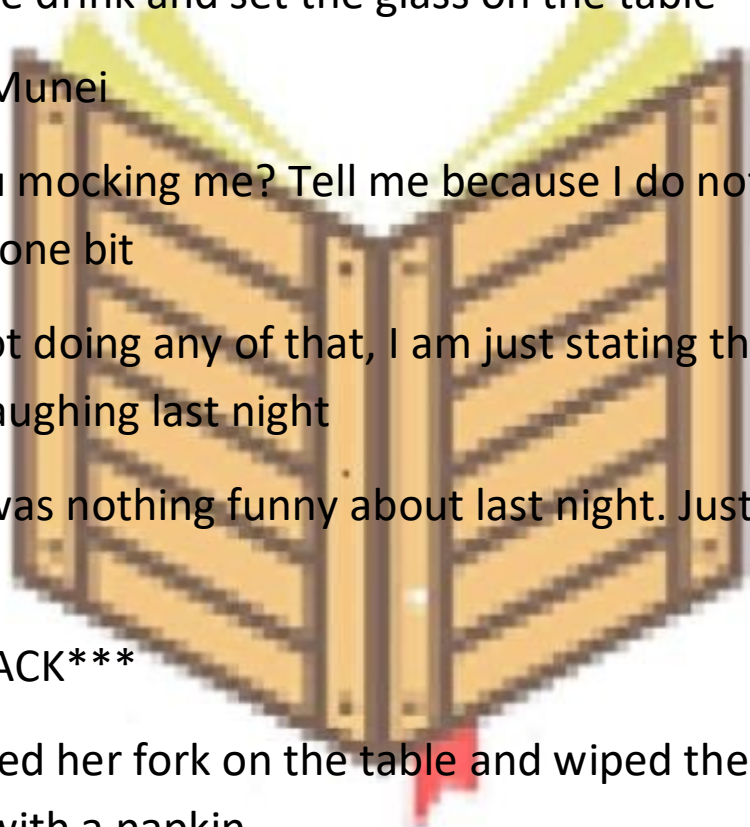
Mimi dropped her fork on the table and wiped the corner of her mouth with a napkin

Me: You are not enjoying the food?

Mimi: As much as I am trying but no

Yara: What's wrong with the food?

Me: You don't like sushi?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Mimi: With all due respect but I was expecting a proper food, you get me? Tripe and pap kinda food, you following me?

I choked on my drink

Me: Tripe? I can't stomach that, oh God. No wonder people get fat; I mean pap and the insides of a cow? Euw

Mimi: Ah rich kids, what's wrong with people in your circle and proper food? I mean sushi, really?

Yara: Sister (Whispers)

Mimi: I am trying to make a conversation Butterfly, focus on the food your mother-in-law made for you

She squeezed her cheeks and smiled at her

Mimi: You should allow me to tour you around my hood; I am telling you all of this nonsense in your head will be cleared. You need a bunny chow!

Ayden laughed softly

This stupid child! I am being insulted and what is he doing, laughing? They will pay for all of this.. She must just enjoy the show while it last

Me: I still say, what you eat is not healthy and that's why you are fat!

Mimi: Did you just use the word fat?

Ayden: Let's all calm down now, Mimsey come on. That's not a way to describe a body of a person!

Mimi stood up and slowly made a turn

Mimi: Look at me, what do you see? You see this figure, it was maintained by pap, chicken feet, tripe and whatever food you think is disgusting. Listen here Mrs Tshivhase

She rested her hands on the table and stared deep into my eyes

Mimi: This stupid and poor mentality you have about poor people must die and not even dare to be a Ghost, stop looking down on other people just because they don't have what you have. Do you know why?

Ayden: Tell us sister-in-law!

Mimi: You will get burnt whilst doing so. We are all the same; your bank account is nothing if your heart is pure evil

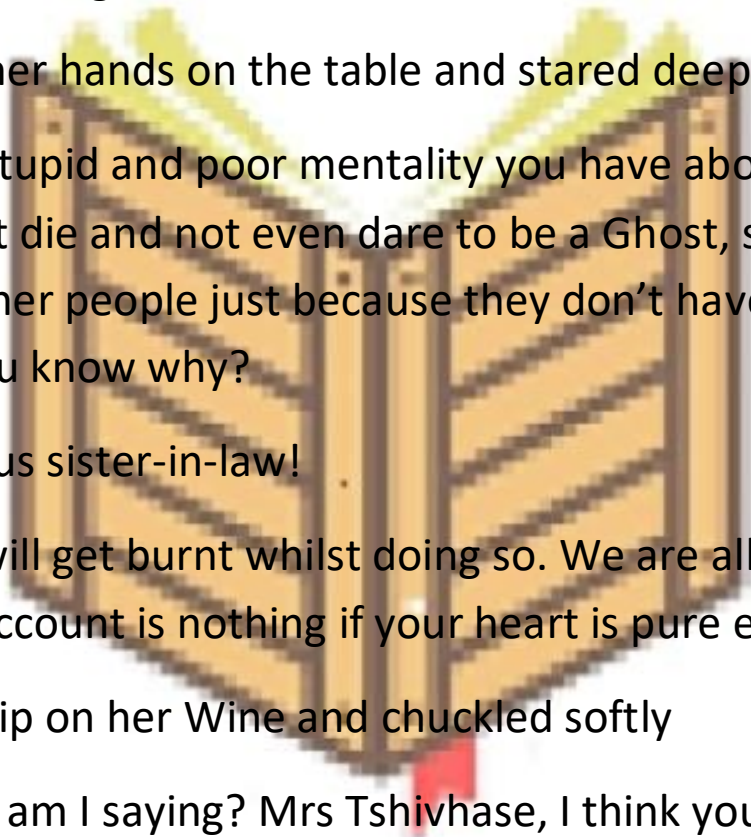
She took a sip on her Wine and chuckled softly

Mimi: What am I saying? Mrs Tshivhase, I think you were right- Wine is not for ours. I am tipsy!

Ayden and Yara looked at each other and smiled

Mimi sat down

Mimi: Can I get 100% juice? Apple juice would be appreciated



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ayden: Go Sister-in-law! Shawty, can I marry her instead of you?

Yara winked at him... My poor son, what have they done to him?

Mimi: I will be convicted with murder because I will kill your mother the minute I set my foot in this house. Right Mrs Tshivhase?

I took a deep breath and faked a smile

\*\*\*\*\*

Munei stood up and laughed her lungs out

Me: I am glad you find this funny

Her: Did she really say that to you?

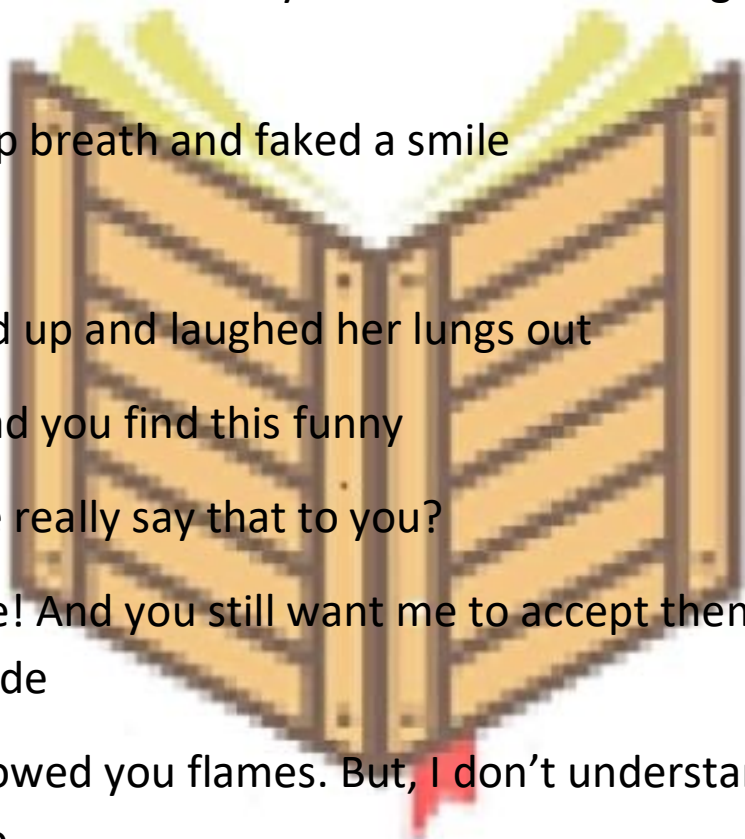
Me: Imagine! And you still want me to accept them? Her sister was plain rude

Her: She showed you flames. But, I don't understand why you let her do so...

Me: I couldn't show everyone that I am pretending, I got Ayden and Yara on the palm of my hand

Her: And, Mimi?

Me: That one is another gem, I can never play next to her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Do you know what that means?

Me: It means she will protect Yara at any cost

Her: Yes

she can be the doom of our plan

I got on my feet

Me: Not really

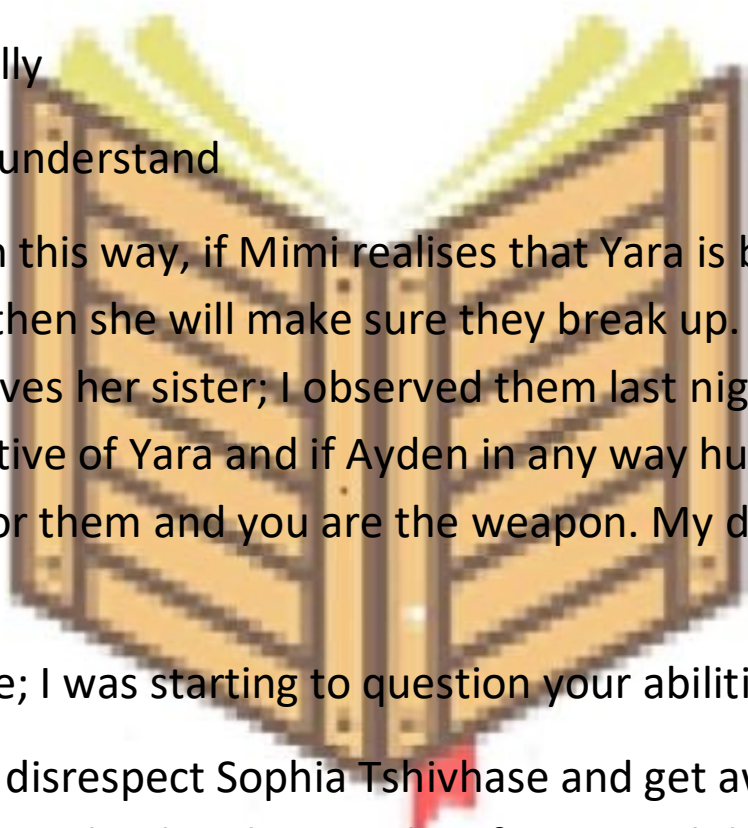
Her: I don't understand

Me: See it in this way, if Mimi realises that Yara is being mistreated then she will make sure they break up. That's how much she loves her sister; I observed them last night. She is over-protective of Yara and if Ayden in any way hurt her... Then it's tickets for them and you are the weapon. My deadly weapon!

Her: Oh I see; I was starting to question your abilities

Me: No one disrespect Sophia Tshivhase and get away with it. Mimi will curse the day she stood up for me with her cheap opinions, Yara will pay

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

I head to my office from HR department...

My phone rang, it was Mimi

Her: Butterfly

Me: Brock Lesnar

Her: You are not funny at all

I laughed and she joined me

To think few months ago I was ready to fight with my sister for Ethan... Yesterday she was the one defending me from Sophia, life and its tricks

Her: You won't guess what happened...

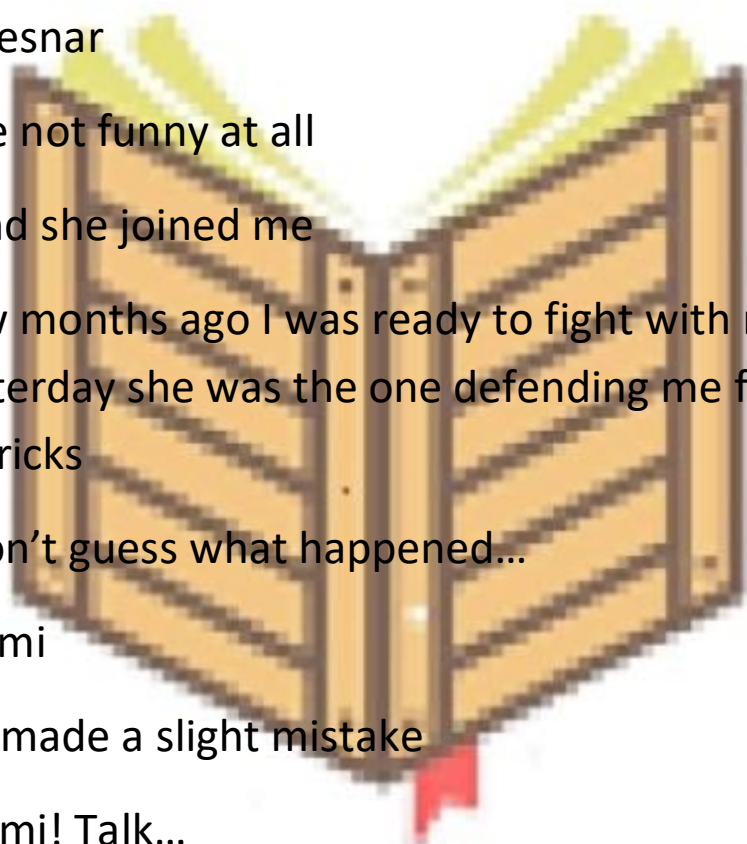
Me: Talk Mimi

Her: I kinda made a slight mistake

Me: God Mimi! Talk...

Her: I bought Ethan a present, I don't know what happened but I wrote your address on the package. And as we speak, the delivery man is on your doorstep

Me: Duh, tell him to take it to the right address



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: That's the thing; he said he is not going there. He has already wasted time so can you please go and attend to him?

Me: Hauw Mimi, you are not serious. I am at work and I can't just up and leave...

Her: Thank you so much Butterfly, I owe you one

She hung

Did she just hang up on me? Unbelievable!

ETHAN

I received a call from my mother

Me: Ethan's mother

Her: Listen to this boy (Laughs)

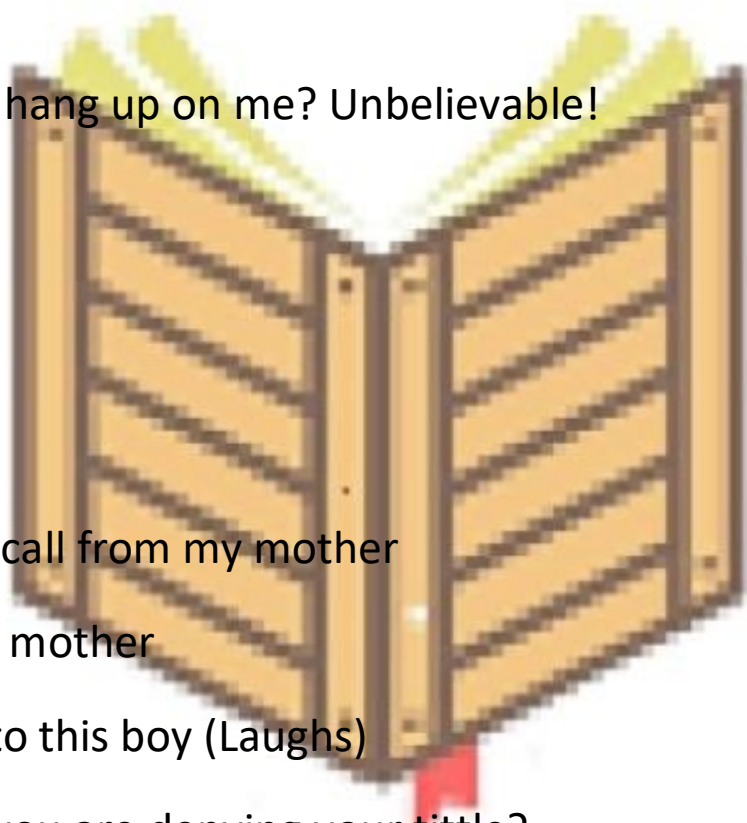
Me: Hauw, you are denying your tittle?

Her: Not even close

Me: How are you mother?

Her: Good, and you?

Me: Fine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Listen, I am calling to tell you that I am coming there tomorrow

Me: You are coming to my house?

Her: You are so slow but I don't blame you, after all you are the first born

Me: That hurts mom

Her: Anyway, as I've said I'll be visiting. Do you think you would be able to come and fetch me at the bus station?

Me: Why are you not driving better yet why Noah is not driving you? I have back-to-back meetings tomorrow

Her: He is going to work Ethan

Me: I will find someone to come and fetch you is it fine?

I will have to ask Mimi...

Her: It is. See you tomorrow

Me: Mom, should I be worried about your visit?

Her: No

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay, bye

I hung up

AYDEN

Yara must be here any moment from now, Mimi texted me

Warm water hit my body as I wash off my sweat. Minutes later I was done, I stepped out of the shower...

I wrapped the towel around my waist and made my way to the lounge. I checked my phone if she hasn't called

(Door opens)

I turned and looked at her; she smiled soon as she saw me standing in her lounge half-naked

Her: Why didn't I think about this?

Me: Because we didn't give you reasons to...

Her: This looks beautiful Munchie

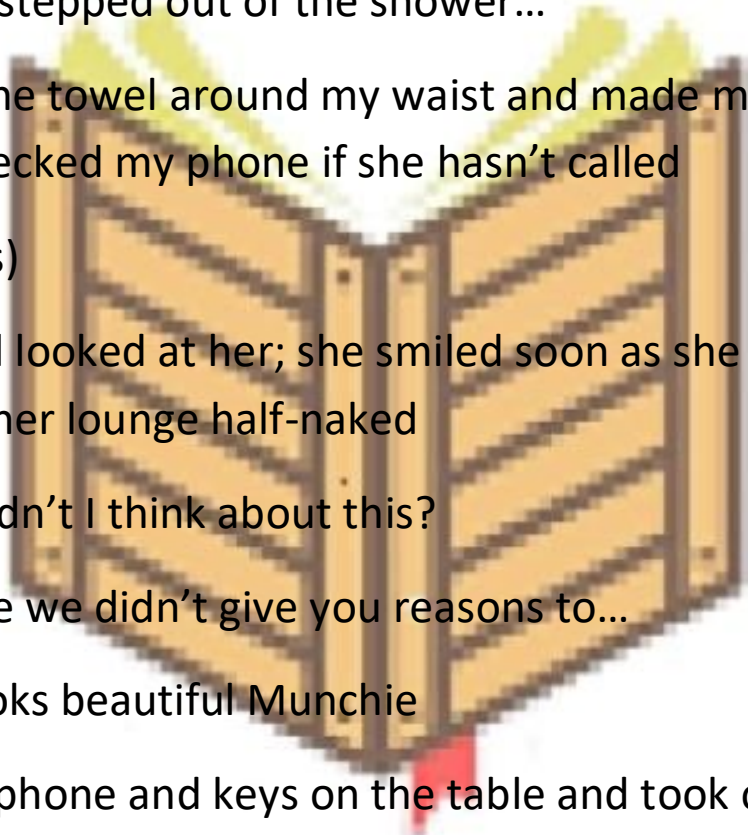
She set her phone and keys on the table and took off her shoes before making her way to me

Me: Hey

Her: Hey (Smiles)

Me: I am sorry for lying to you

Her: It's beautiful, thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM



She ran her hands on my bare chest

Me: Do you wanna eat?

She put her finger on my mouth

Her: Shh... Food can wait (Whispers)

She rubbed her nose against mine and kissed me

I unbuttoned her shirt whilst kissing her. I stripped off her bra, her hands moved to my towel as she unwrap it

Me: Did you look the door?

Her: Yes Munchie... stop talking (Whispers)

She bit her lower lip. I cupped her face and kissed her

She dropped her skirt on the floor... I moved my hand on her ass

Me: I want you so bad

I slowly circled my two fingers around her nipple. My gaze was locked with hers. I continued massaging her nipple

Her: Aaaah

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I traced my finger all the way down to her belly-button. I went down on my knees and play with her belly-button with my tongue. I slowly lowered her underwear; she lifted her legs and took it off. I guided both my hands to her hips; she wrapped her

arms around my neck. I love everything about this woman, her petite body, and her beautiful light stretch marks on her ass...

Her body was already ready for me; my dick was just waiting for the right moment. I was already hard, ah fuck! Her eyes stared deep into mine

She guided her hands until she reached my dick and she started playing with it. As she rested my dick on her hand I continued to kiss her neck, leaving my saliva here and there... She rubbed my dick against her pussy... I could feel the warmth of her pussy; my entrance will be a smooth one. She ran her hands through my chest

Me: I love you

I picked her and laid her on the couch... Still maintaining eye contact I ran my finger on her nose

Me: Don't ever forget that I love you, no matter what might happen between us. Always know that I love you

Her: I will die before forgetting that...

I slowly parted her legs-I played with her clit before inserting my index finger. She closed her eyes as I gently insert my finger

Her: Aaaah fuck (Whispers)

She moaned those words; my finger was still buried deep inside her already wet pussy. I moved my finger inside her-rested her

leg on my shoulder and bit her lower lip. I pulled the finger out and traced my finger on her pussy. Her tits were a sight for a sore eyes; I leaned and suck her nipples slowly

Her: Oooh Munchie, please don't... don't stop please

I continued sucking her nipples; my other hand was squeezing her ass...

Her breath on my neck left me wanting her even more. My penis hardens and her pussy kept on getting wet. I helped her lie on her side and entered her from behind; I slowly went in and out. She mumbled my name and moaned; my mind was registering her moans each time they left her mouth. I went in hard and fast then slow. I kissed her neck and squeeze her ass again, I pounded harder. I pulled out and went in slow; I made sure she feels every inch of my dick

Her: Oooh aaaah. Fuck!

I rolled her over. Her hand moved to her clit, she pleased herself whilst I massage her nipple. I spread her legs and shoved my dick deep inside her. I lost myself in her intense eyes; she stared at me with so much love

Me: Fuck, you are so tight Shawty

I wasn't in control of my emotions anymore; I increased my pace and went on her harder and faster. I pressed my lips firmly

to hers. She placed her legs on my shoulder and I repeatedly pounded her wet pussy. I thrust inside her hard

Her: I am about to come... Oh Munchie

She moaned loudly and I knew she has reached her orgasm. I pulled out and splash my semen on her stomach. Her juices dripped down my dick

I stared deep into her eyes

Me: I love you Shawty

Her: I lost my heart on you

She got on top of me; I circled my arms around her waist

This couch will never be the same!

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I felt a hand caressing my belly button, I opened my eyes

Me: Do you know the danger of playing with belly button

Ayden bit his lower lip and smiled

Him: That wasn't what you were saying few hours ago

Me: That was different

Him: What was different? I need to know

Me: No, I am not telling you a thing

I've had sex before but what Ayden showed me was flames.

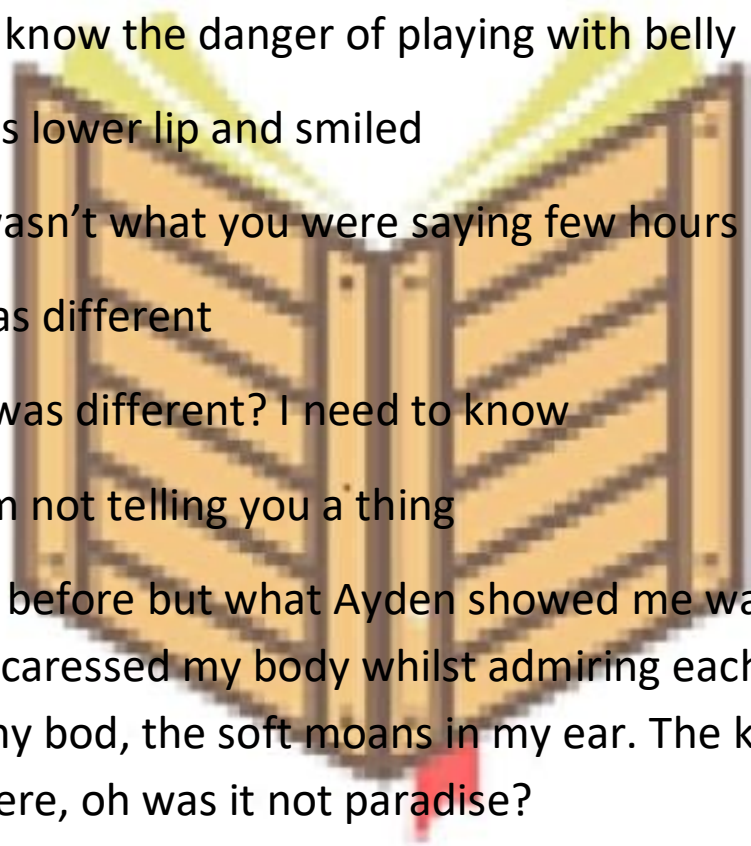
The way he caressed my body whilst admiring each and every feature of my bod, the soft moans in my ear. The kisses he left here and there, oh was it not paradise?

Me: We have to go back to the office

Him: There's no need for that, we are taking a day off. It's already noon, so?

Me: I don't get paid to loaf around

Him: I pay you



Me: No you don't, Sophia is the one who pay me

Him: Did you have to include her into the conversation? What a turn off

I threw at pillow at him

Me: Did you just call your mother a turn off? (Laughs)

Him: I did, didn't I? (Chuckles)

Me: Munchie, you are so bad

He jumped off the bed. Butt naked!

Him: I am starving; let's go make something to eat

Me: Pass me your shirt

Him: No, there's no need for that. We are making food naked

Me: What? You are insane, who makes food naked?

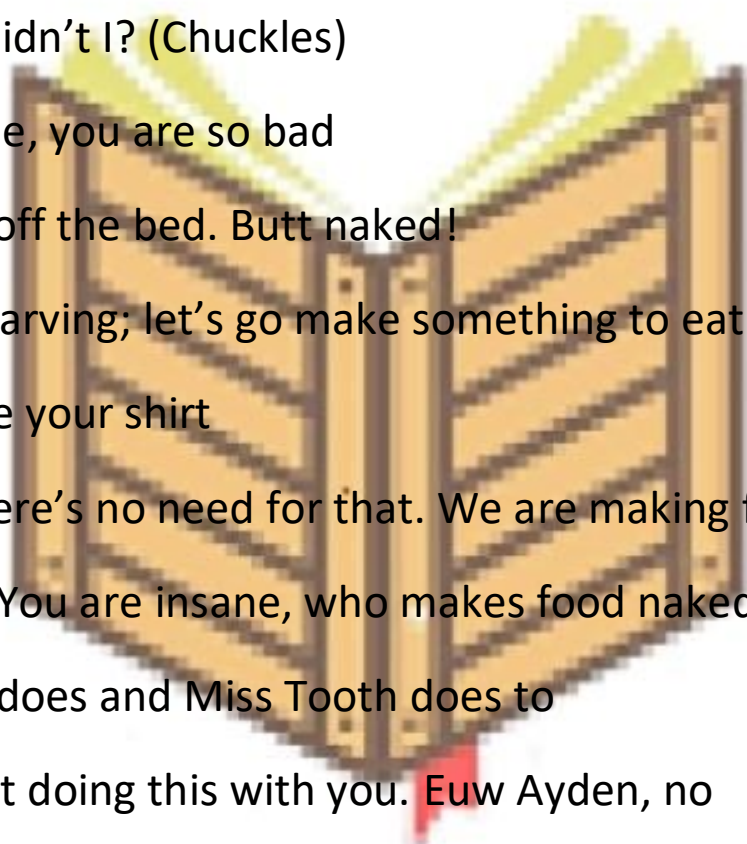
Him: Tooth does and Miss Tooth does to

Me: I am not doing this with you. Euw Ayden, no

Him: Let's go. I am waiting

Me: No Munchie

He looked at me



MIMI

I was on the phone with Ethan, he was telling me about his mother's visit. Sudden visit that is

Me: And you want me to be the one picking her up?

Him: Yes you...

Me: I don't know Cuddly

Him: My mother is not scary and you not scared of anyone

Me: Hello, we are talking about my future mother-in-law here

Him: More reason for you to go so that you two can bond

Me: Bond? I don't know about that

Him: Trust me, my mother is harmless. And it's not like she doesn't know you

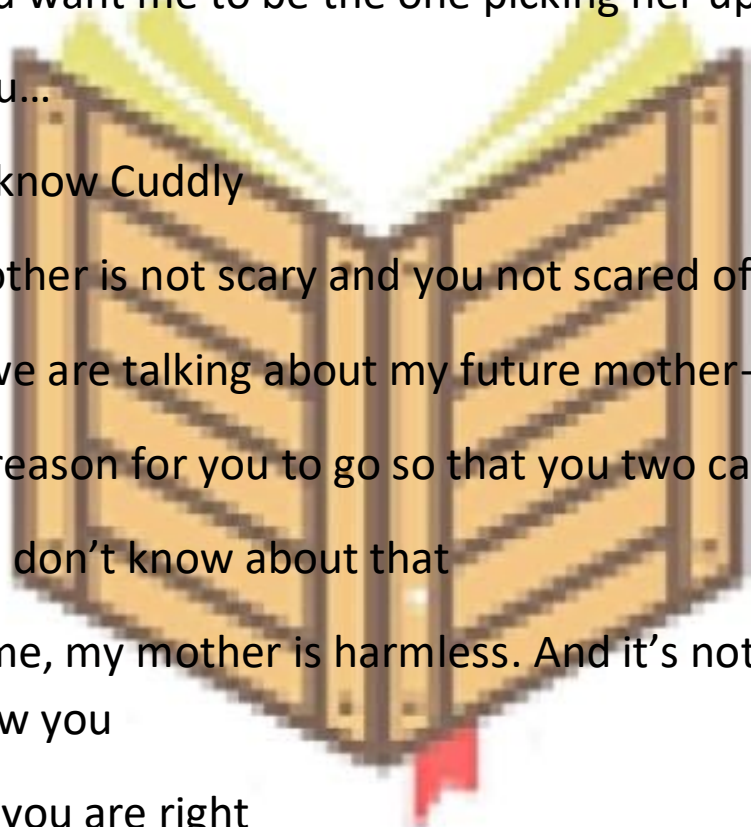
Me: Maybe you are right

Him: I know I am right

I stood up and made my way to my room

Him: Then it's set, you will pick her tomorrow

Me: I am, wow



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Video date, later?

Me: Yeah

Him: Bye

He hung up

I took off my clothes and put on my gown

Buhle walked in, dressed up

Me: And you, are you going somewhere?

Her: Yes, I am going to your sister's with Panther

Me: There go our plans for the night. Greet my sister for me

Her: I will babe. Hey, did you manage to find your pills?

Me: Yes

Her: Please give me some, headache

I reached for them and gave it to her

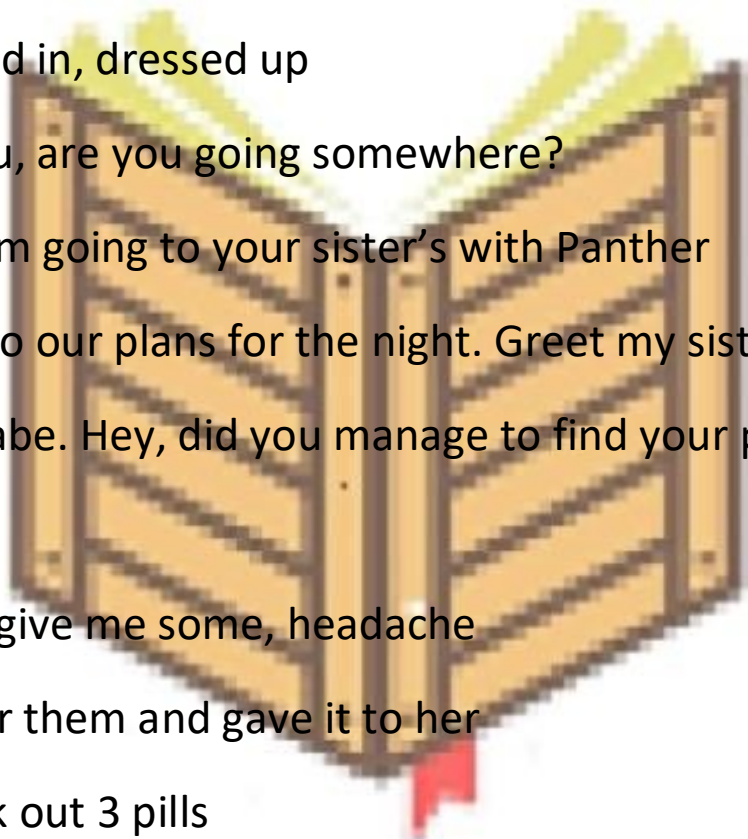
The girl took out 3 pills

Me: Do you want to overdose?

Her: My headache is stubborn, so this will do

Me: If you die don't haunt me

She laughed



NOVELSGURU.COM



SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I set my make-up kit on the dressing table

Munei: You are sure about this?

Me: I am. We are doing this the old-fashion way

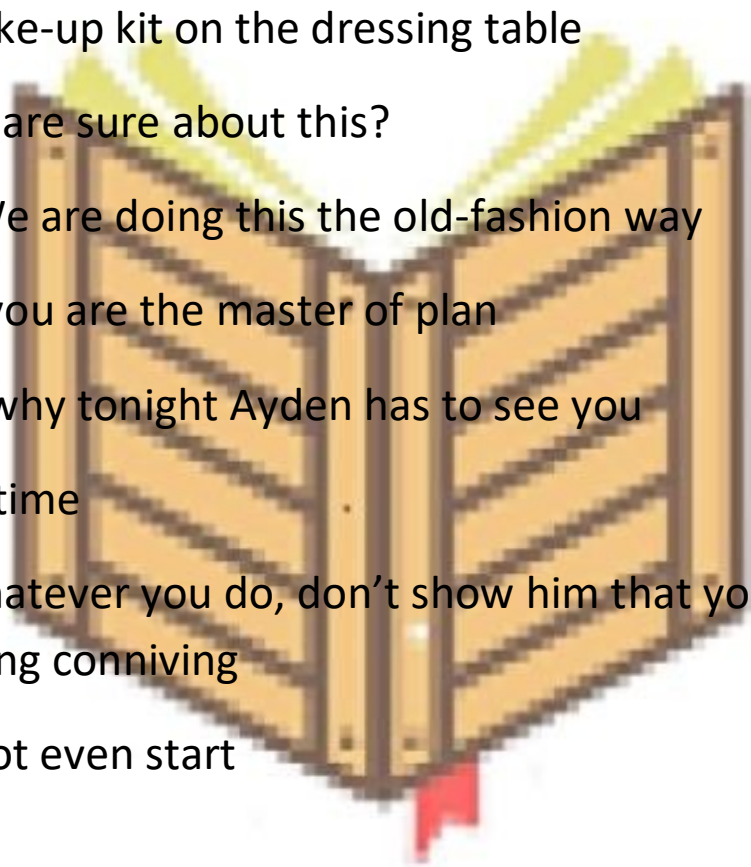
Her: Okay, you are the master of plan

Me: That's why tonight Ayden has to see you

Her: About time

Me: And whatever you do, don't show him that you are here for something conniving

Her: I will not even start



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I took the remote and switched on TV

My phone rang, it was Ethan

Me: Ethan...

They laughed on the other side. The twins!

Me: Oh you are laughing at me

Tenda: Who told you it's dad?

Me: Mh hello, whose phone is this?

Lex: Dad's

Me: Exactly

Advertisement

you have nothing. Shame on you

Lex: We wanted to talk with you before we sleep

Tenda: What are you doing?

Me: Watching TV, I am so bored

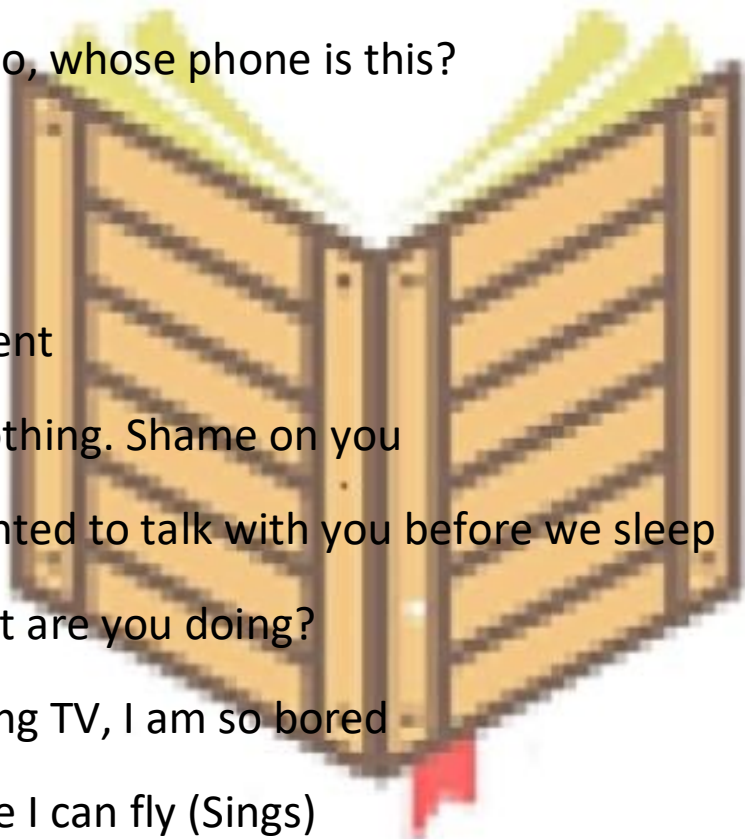
Lex: I believe I can fly (Sings)

Me: Since when? (Laughs)

Tenda: Ask her, Lex doesn't have senses

Lex: Whatever! At least I was trying to cheer Aunty up

Me: I know... Do you wanna come and visit this weekend?



NOVELSGURU.COM

“Yes” they answered quickly

Me: You can never refuse. I will talk with dad

Tenda: No need, he already said yes

Me: Ha, liar!

Ethan: Yes, I did

Me: You are listening to our conversation, shame on you Mr Liremi (Laughs)

Ethan: Ever thought maybe I was forced

We laughed

Ethan: Anyway, they wanted to say goodnight before they go to bed

Me: Thank you. Goodnight, I love you

Twins: Good night, we love you too

Me: Kisses and hugs... Night Ethan

Ethan: Good night

I hung up... As I set my phone on the table a knock came on the door

Me: Coming...

I went to the door



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Brother

I hugged him

Panther: Hello, sorry to just show up but needed to see you

Me: Come in please

Panther: Came with someone

He stepped aside and Buhle appeared

Me: Oh sister-in-law

Her: Hey Yara

Me: Please come in

They walked in and followed me to the lounge

Him: I am glad to see the half is not here

I laughed... he is referring to Ayden

Me: Yet you are here with your half

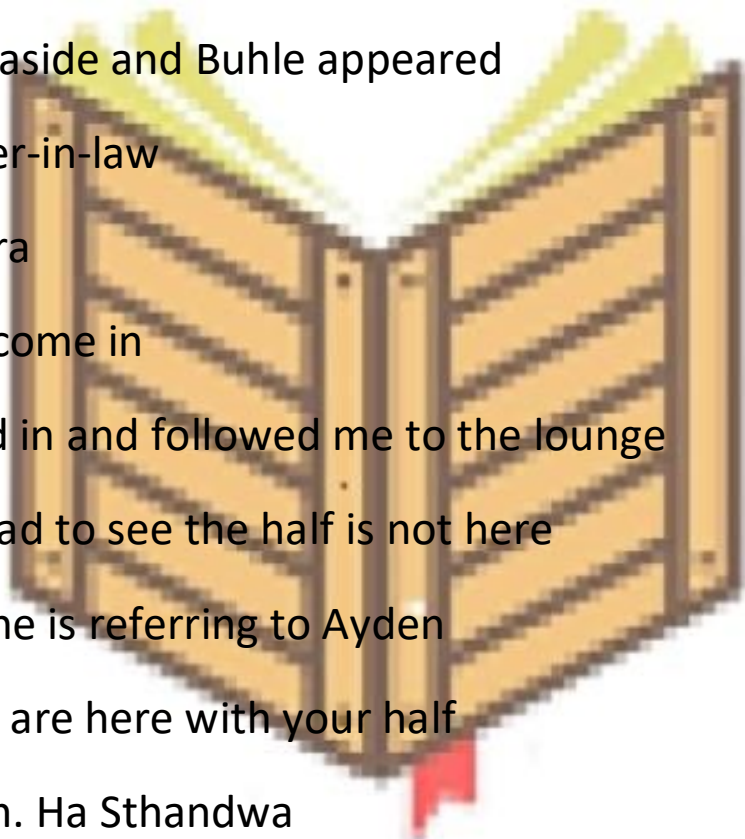
Her: Tell him. Ha Sthandwa

Him: What? I said nothing, I am just making a conversation

Me: Yeah, right

We sat down

Me: I am having ice-cream, want some?



NOVELSOURU.COM

Her: I do

Him: I'll pass... What about a beer?

Me: I don't drink

Him: But Ayden does, and I am sure he left some in the house

Me: I will check for you

Him: Now that wasn't hard, was it?

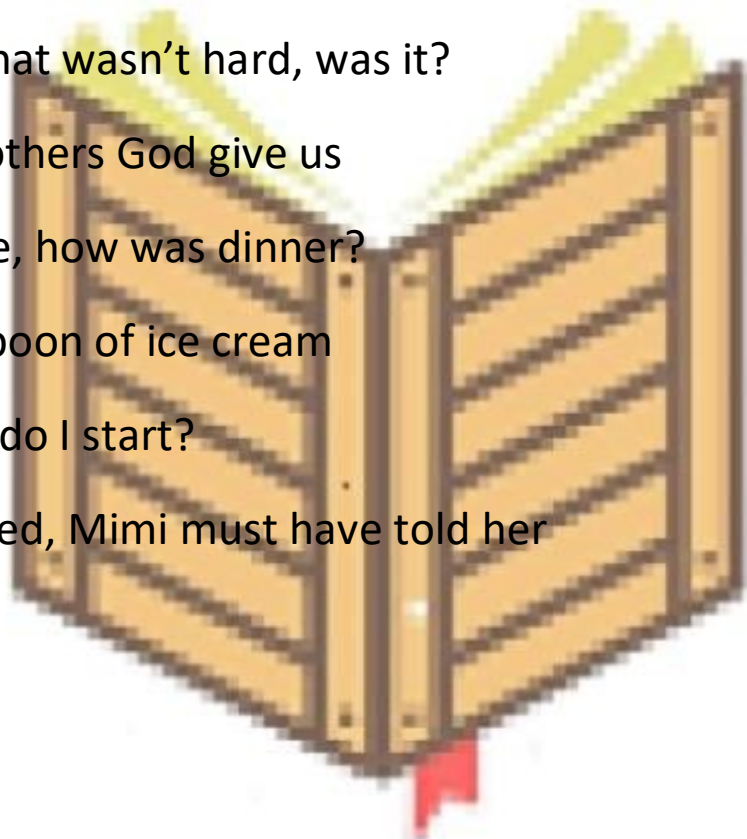
Me: The brothers God give us

Him: Tell me, how was dinner?

I scooped spoon of ice cream

Me: Where do I start?

Buhle laughed, Mimi must have told her



AYDEN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I closed the door and walked further into the room

My mother's laughter was so loud; she can never laugh like this with Amelia. I wonder who she is with... She was with Munei, what is she doing here?

My mother's eyes met with mine

Ma: Guess who came to visit? We've been waiting for you

Me: Munei? What are you doing here?

She stood up... We hugged

Munei: I have fashion show in the Province and Sophia suggested I stay in the house instead of booking into hotel

Me: Oh, I see. Why didn't you tell me Mimsey?

I looked at her

Ma: I know this is your house, but do I really have to inform you with everything that goes on? I mean you are hardly at the house

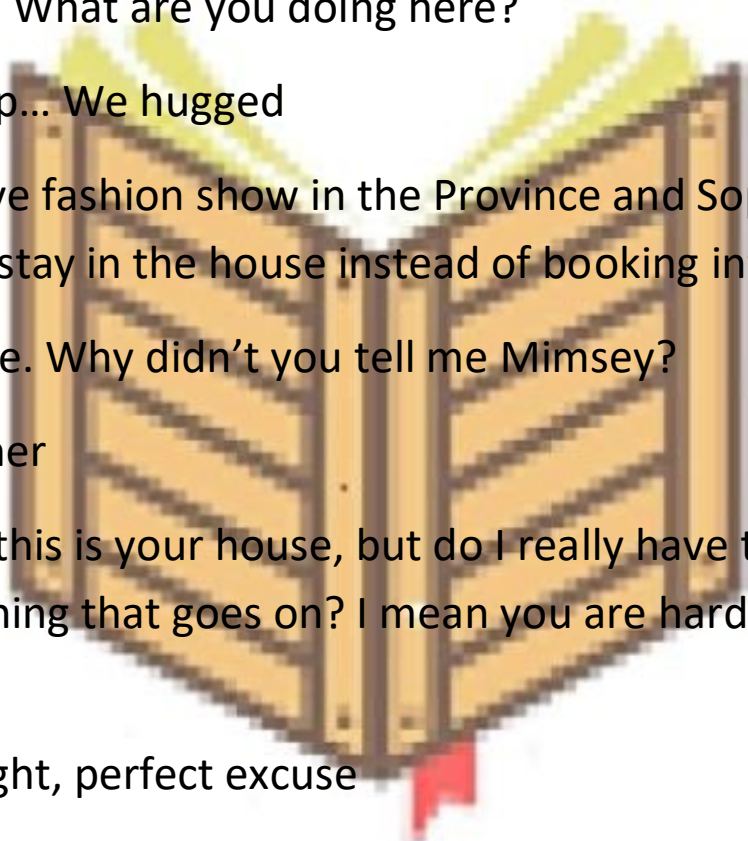
Me: Yeah right, perfect excuse

Munei: You are not happy with my visit?

Me: It's not that, it's just that you know our history...

Munei: Nonsense, I am not here to rekindle. And I heard you have a lovely girlfriend, so I won't spoil things for you

Me: Still, it will be awkward



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: Oh if you don't feel good about it she can go

Munei: Yeah, I can

Me: No, I will be the one to move out. I will crash with Yara for some days

Mimsey smiled at me

Ma: Understandable

Munei: But, don't be a stranger

Me: No, I won't

Munei and me have nasty history like the rest of the girls in my past but with Munei is different. It was more of booty call vibes and she caught feeling along the way but we ended things in civil manner

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

65

AYDEN

Instead of going to Yara's I decided to crash in with Panther in return of telling him everything. He wasn't pleased about it but I managed to calm him down. It's not like I asked Munei to resurface

He set pot of tea on the table

Him: I am not your girlfriend so I won't be making breakfast for you

I laughed

Me: I don't see any harm in you serving your brother-in-law breakfast

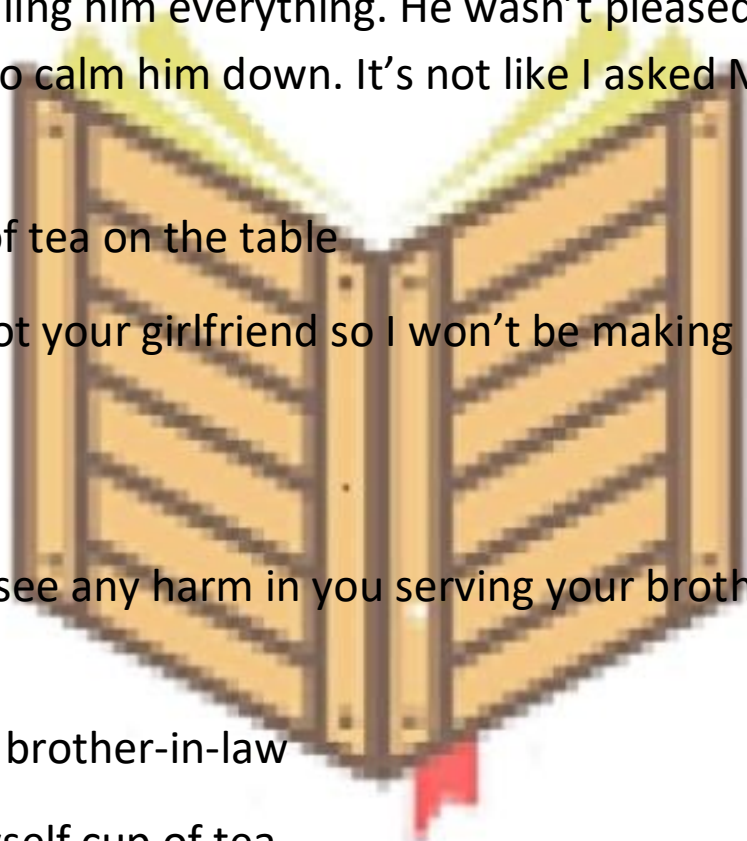
Him: Stupid brother-in-law

I poured myself cup of tea

Him: Have you told Yara about Munei?

I shook my head no

Him: And don't expect me to not tell her because I am going to



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: I have nothing to hide Panther and right now you are making it sound like I am

Him: I am not saying you are but what if a big what if; Munei still has hots for you? Remember how things ended last time?

Me: I know and if I remember very well, you are one of the people who witnessed our separation or you forgot?

Him: No, I didn't

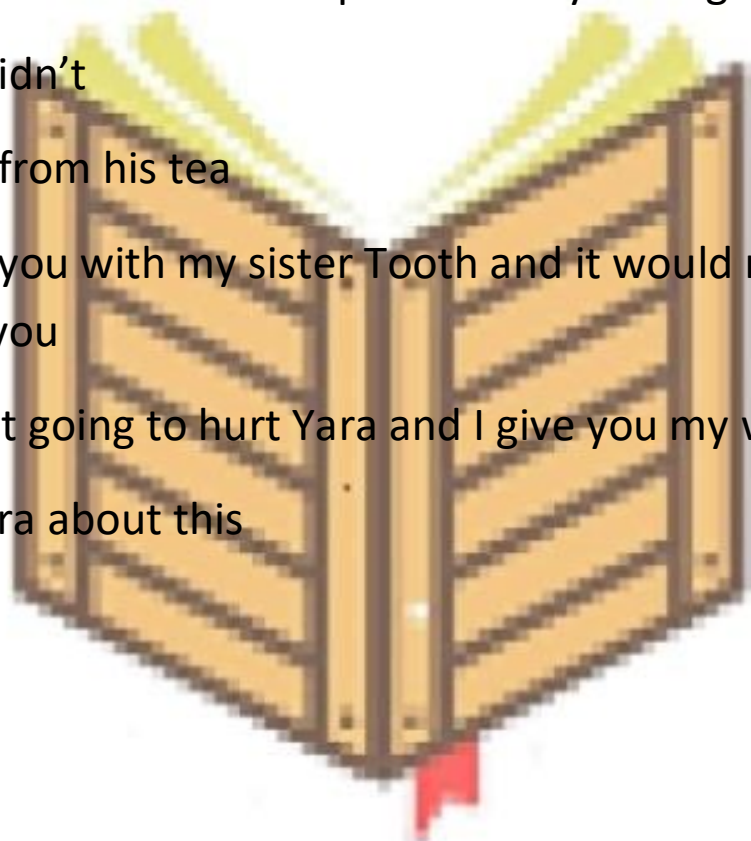
He took sip from his tea

Him: I trust you with my sister Tooth and it would really hurt me to hurt you

Me: I am not going to hurt Yara and I give you my word

Him: Tell Yara about this

BUHLE



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I closed my eyes and opened them again

Me: Who are you?

I rubbed my eyes whilst getting out of the bed

I saw a reflection on the wall. The figure of it wasn't visible

Me: Is anyone in here?

I ran my eyes around... I felt footsteps

The door opened, Mimi stepped inside

Her: Hey

Me: Do you see that?

Her: See what?

Me: There on the wall

I pointed at the wall

Her: Mh, I see nothing. Are you sure you are okay?

I took a deep breath

Me: I don't know what's wrong with me but I think I am experiencing the same things you were the other day

Her: You think we are being bewitched?

Me: Don't be crazy

NOVELSGURU.COM

I put on my robe

Her: Then how do you explain this Madam? First it was me hearing things and then now it's you seeing things, I say someone is bewitching us

Me: I don't believe in that. Let's go, have you prepared something?

We walked out of my room

Her: I was waiting for you

Me: Lazy!

She wrapped her arm around my waist

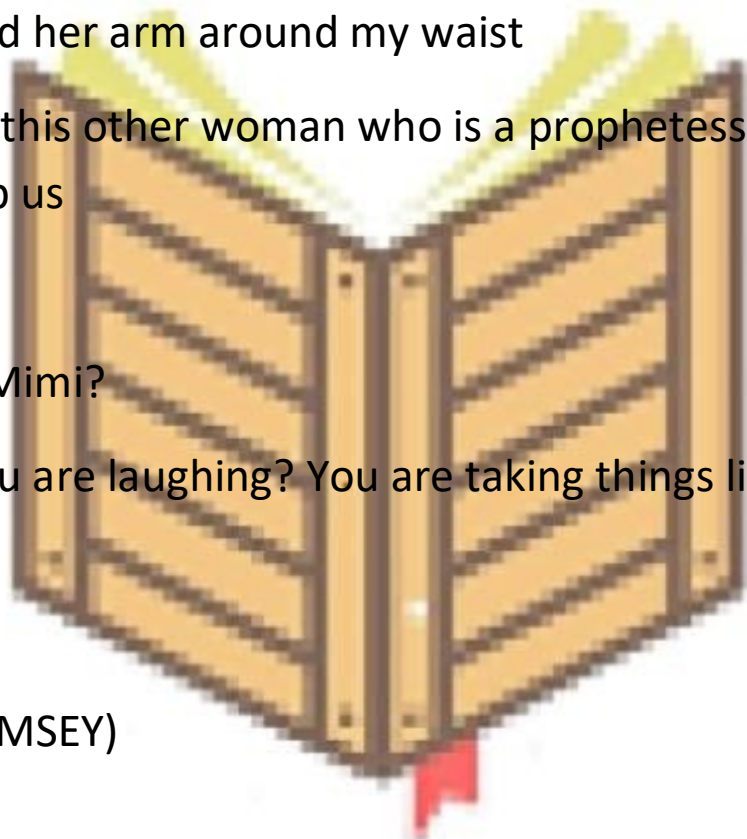
Her: I know this other woman who is a prophetess I am sure she can help us

I laughed

Me: Really Mimi?

Her: And you are laughing? You are taking things lightly

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Zack stood in front of me and crossed his arms over his chest

Him: Tell me, why are we not meeting in your house?

Me: I wanted us to get a fresh air, is that a problem?

Him: Not really

I sat on the couch

Me: Tell me something, if you still want me so bad why don't we work things out?

He looked at me

Me: I mean; you spend most of your time with me instead of your so called wife... I don't even know why we divorced if you still run after me

Him: Not this conversation again

Me: You don't love your wife Zack and you know that

Him: I love her

Me: Then what are you doing with me?

Him: I am here because you are the mother of my children and the bond we share is unbreakable. You will always be part of me, no matter what happens

Me: I just don't get it; you fought tooth and nail to be with me. You even went as far as defying your mother's wishes to be with me

Him: I can't just leave Nandi and come back to you, not after we broke up

Me: I am really a fool but a fool in love

He knelt before me and held my hands

Him: You are not a fool Sophia

Me: Yes, I am. You left me to be with Nandi but still I am running after you. What does that make me?

Him: Anything but a fool

He kissed the back of my hand

Him: You will always be part of my life; no one can change that  
Sophia

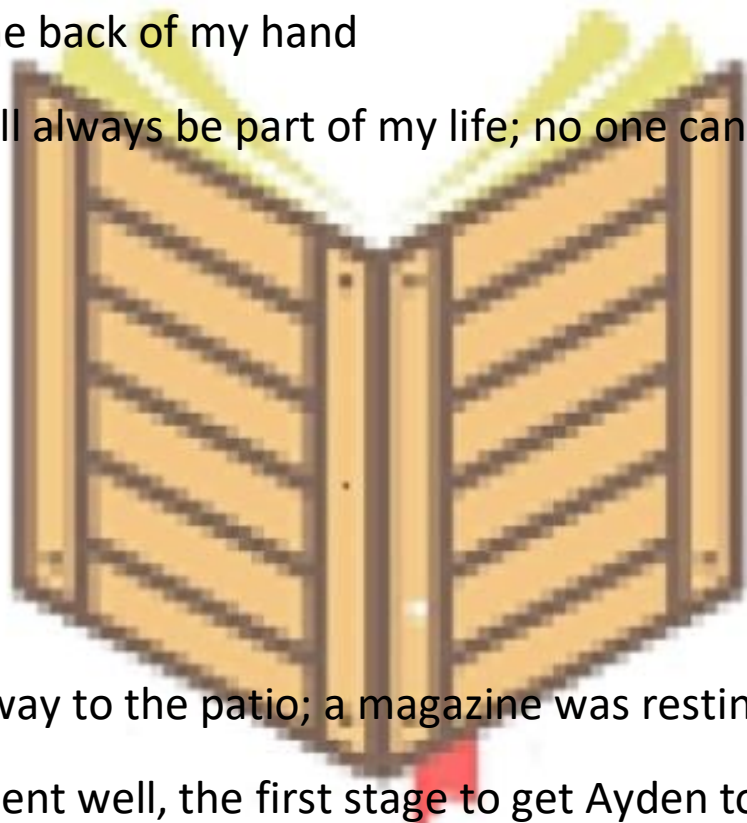
MUNEI

I made my way to the patio; a magazine was resting in my hand

Last night went well, the first stage to get Ayden to believe us was a success... and we move to the second stage, it was so nice seeing Ayden. Old feelings came back rushing, I don't know about Sophia's plan but if it doesn't work I am going to use my own. Even if it means betraying Sophia in the process

Voice: Why are you here?

I turned my head slightly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Amelia, it's nice to see you

She stepped closer

Her: I asked you a question

Advertisement

why are you here? I don't buy the story you gave my brother, he is a fool to believe you

Me: I have no agenda; I am here because of the show

Her: You are here for Ayden and sorry for you mara Ayden una muthu wawe and vha ya funana, athi vhoni ma muthu ane anga vha fhambanya (Ayden has a partner, and I don't see anyone separating them)

Me: Ndi ya zwidivha Amelia hafhu athi khou hana (I know and I am not disagreeing) He told me about his girlfriend

Her: Stay away from them

I wanted to punch off the smug off her face

YARA

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I held a glass of juice between both hands

Mimi lifted her leg and placed it on the couch

Me: You wanna damage mom's couch, she will kill you when she comes back

She giggled

Her: I will not

Me: I don't see Buhle around, where is she?

Her: She is sleeping. You needed something from her?

Me: No, is she not fine? Who sleeps during the day...?

Her: She didn't get sleep, she woke up hallucinating. Can you imagine?

Me: Hallucinating?

She sat up straight

Her: Yeah, when she woke up she told me she was seeing a shadow in her room and I didn't see any shadow. She refused to believe that the shadow was a hallucination

Me: That's weird, has she experienced something of this kind before?

Her: Not that I know of. I told her we are bewitched and she laughed

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: If anyone is bewitched then that person is you, where did you get that from?

Her: Butterfly, few days ago it was me hearing things and now it's Buhle. Don't you find any of this weird?

It is kinda weird but I am sure there's explanation and what Mimi is saying it's definitely not it

Me: As weird as it Mimi but I don't think that's what is happening here. Didn't both of you take medication you are not familiar with, I've heard about people hallucinating due to medication they take. It can alter with their thoughts and feelings

Her: No, we didn't. I don't remember taking any, and so is Buhle

Me: Well, maybe you...

She jumped off the couch

Her: Zoe! (Shouts)

Me: How is Giraffe involve in this?

Her: Yes, how did we miss this? Ethan and I talked about it but it didn't occur to our minds at that time... It's her

Me: It's her what Mimi Masia?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...



PANTHER

Mimi, Buhle and I were waiting for the Doctor to give us results

I held Buhle's hand and ran my thumb in her palm

Me: Why didn't you tell me you were not fine?

Her: But I am fine

Me: Says someone who is seeing things

Her: Stop fussing Sthandwa I am fine

Mimi laughed

Mimi: I am sure the Doctor will solve this puzzle for us

Me: You are right

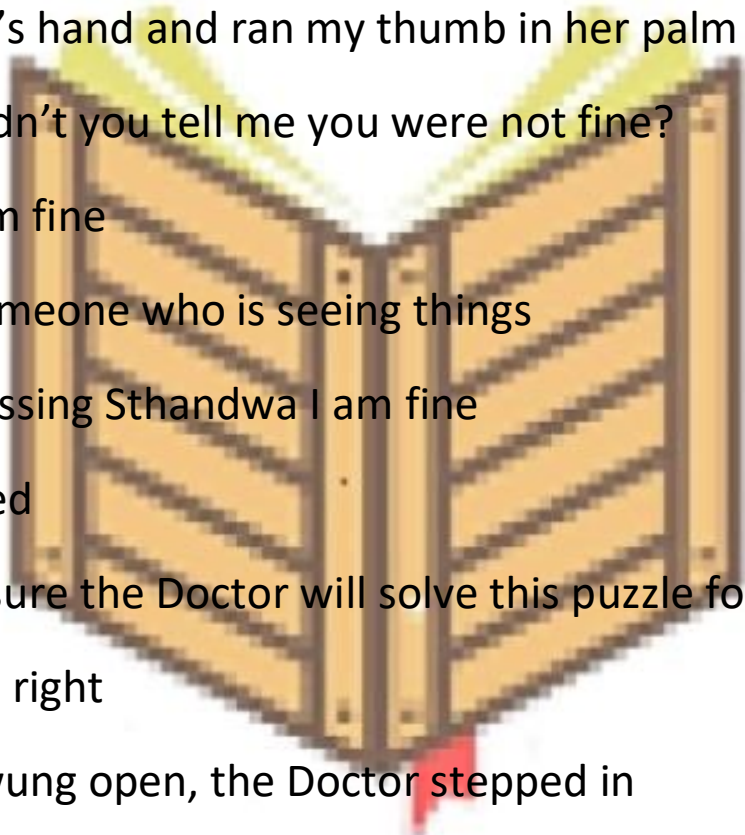
The door swung open, the Doctor stepped in

Doctor: Hello again, sorry for the delay

Me: It's okay Doc

She sat down

Doctor: So, we got the results. Miss Bhengu the results show that you were taking Lysergic acid diethylamide



Buhle: No, I am not

Buhle looked at Mimi

Me: Sunshine let him explain. Doctor, what is this LSD?

Doctor: Is a hallucinogenic drug. That explain why she was seeing things. Miss Masia, I take the pills she took was yours...

Mimi: Yes, it was

Doctor: Did you also experience what Miss Bhengu experienced?

Mimi: Yes but to me it was more like hearing things

Doctor: That's what the drug does

Me: I don't understand; why are you girls taking such pills? You are trying to perform exorcism?

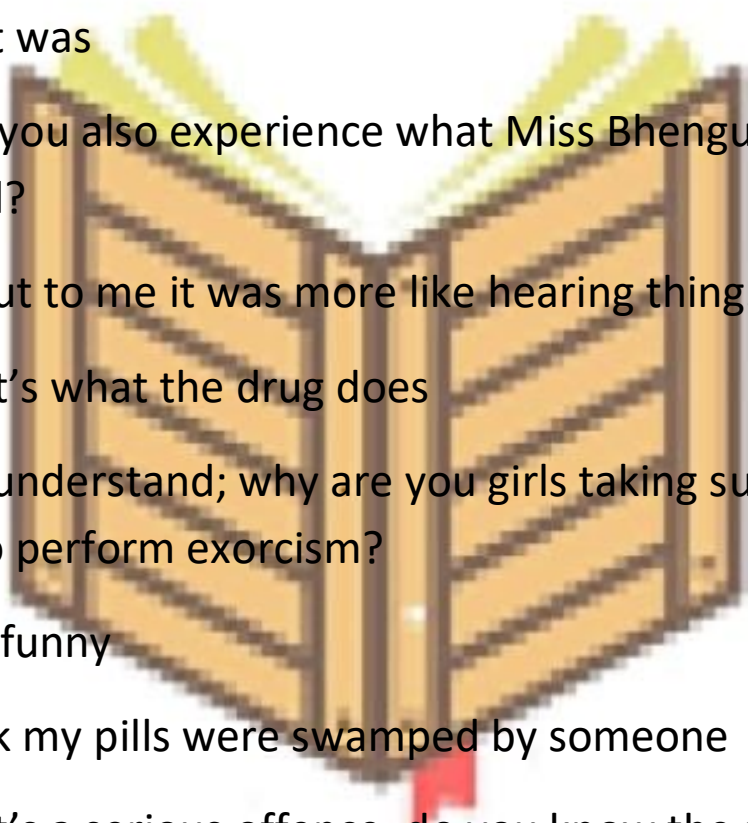
Buhle: Very funny

Mimi: I think my pills were swamped by someone

Doctor: That's a serious offence, do you know the person?

Mimi: I do but she is mental unstable. As we speak now she is admitted

Doctor: Okay I see, I suggest you get your Doctor to prescribe another pills for you as you can no longer take the ones you have



Me: And none of you noticed that it wasn't Mimi's pills?

Buhle: No

I shook my head and chuckled

Me: Thank you Doctor for coming to her aid. So, she is going to be okay?

Doctor: She will be fine, the drug last for up 12 hours

I kissed Buhle's hand

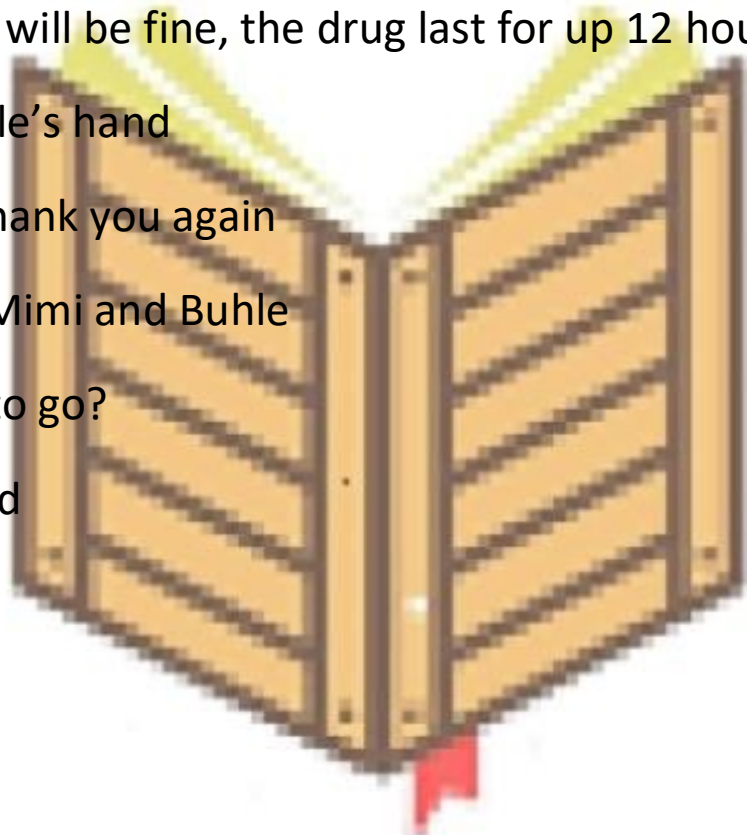
Me: I see, thank you again

I looked at Mimi and Buhle

Me: Ready to go?

They nodded

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

I made my way to the reception

Sphehile: And, she crawls out of her hole (Laughs)

Me: Wow, I decided to come and see you and what do I get?

Her: You hardly leave your station; you can't blame me for missing you

Me: And, I am sorry for that but I am getting things you can't afford to give me

Her: Oh (Laughs) okay, okay fine. Don't even bother telling me those things

(Elevator opens)

Me: Do you wanna grab lunch? We have lot to discuss...

Her: It's a date

Voice: Sorry, but can I ask?

The lady stood in front of me

Sphe: Go ahead

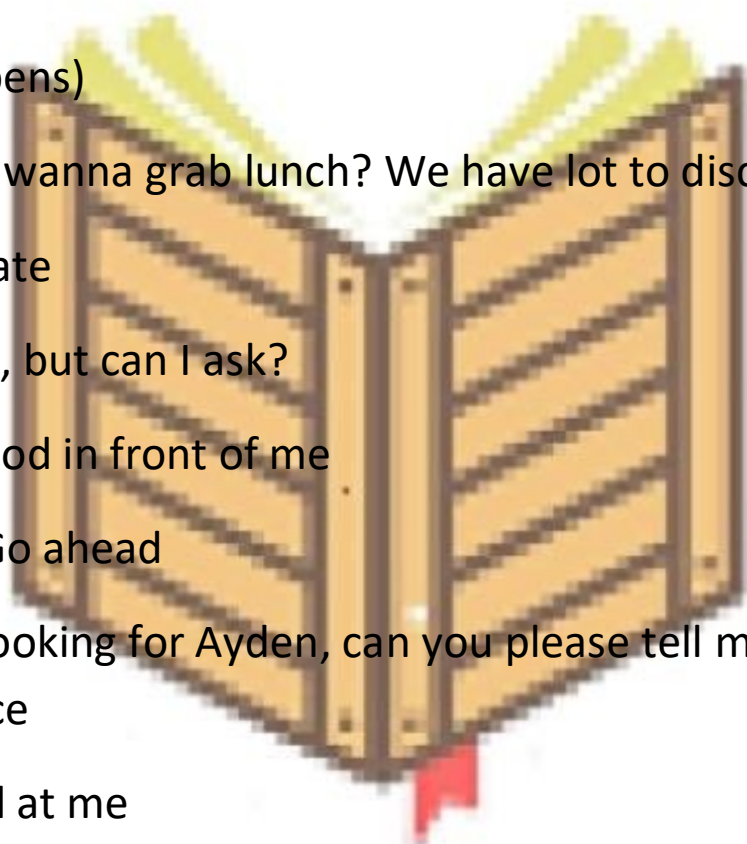
Lady: I am looking for Ayden, can you please tell me where I can find his office

Sphe looked at me

Sphe: She is the one who can help you; she is Mr Tshivhase's PA

Lady: Oh, so you are the girlfriend? Wow, it's nice to finally meet you. I've heard lot about you... Munei...

She extended her hand for handshake



Me: Nice meeting you Munei and I wish I can say I've heard a lot about you but unfortunately I haven't

Munei smiled at me

Munei: It's okay. Can you please take me to his office?

Me: Yes, please follow me. Sphe, I am coming back

We walked to Ayden's office; I knocked before I stepped inside

Me: Mr A, there's someone for you

Ayden stood up from his chair

Him: Who? Did I miss a meeting by any chance?

Me: No, I guess this is a personal visit... Please come in

Munei slowly made her way

Munei: Ayden, sorry I didn't call but I thought you were going to pass by the house in the morning but you didn't. So I thought I should just come here...

Okay... I better get the hell out of this office before I start overacting

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Munei

He looked at me

Me: I will give you space

Him: Miss M, please wait. Can we first talk?

Me: No

Advertisement

I have to get back to work

I looked at Munei

Me: Can I get you something to drink?

Her: Espresso would be fine

I nodded and walked away

As I closed the door I took a deep breath

MIMI



I stood at the bus station waiting for the bus to arrive

Ethan told me his mother is on her way, anytime she would be here... I don't even know I am going to react or how to behave

|Act normal, don't be scared my mother. She is not scary, she's a darling and she is going to love you... Ethan|

NOVELSGURU.COM

A message came through

|That's what you think but I am about to wet my pants. I am going to kill you with my bare hands Cuddles... Me|

I sent the message and shoved my phone inside my purse

After some few minutes the bus arrived... I waited for her to make her way out of the bus

Me: You can do this Mimi, I know you can. I trust you girl

I exhaled and waved at her

Mrs L: Hello, I am so sorry my daughter but hey the bus took longer than I expected

Me: It's okay

Mrs L: You are good?

Me: Good, and you?

Mrs L: Fine. I am sorry Ethan forced you to come and pick me up

Me: No, he didn't really force me

I took one of her suitcases

Mrs L: You don't have to lie to me, I know my son

I laughed



Okay, she is not bad but we will see. I am really not ready to have another Sophia's drama...

Mrs L: Would you like to grab something to eat before we go to the house? I am famished

Me: Yes, we can. Where do you wanna eat?

Mrs L: Surprise me

My kinda girl, not all rich old women are picky. Mrs Liremi is humble and nice; I was just worried for nothing

Me: As you wish

Mrs L: You haven't changed at all, you still the same Mimi I last saw couple of years back. You are aging well

Me: Thank you Mrs Liremi

Mrs L: Why so formal? Call me Samantha

AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

The look on Yara's face said it all; I really made a mess for myself... I should have told her about Munei and now she won't



even believe a word of what I am going to say. I foresee our very first big fight about a girl

Let's hope it will be worth it

Me: Why brings you here Munei?

Her: I want to run something by you

Me: And, what is that?

Her: I talked with Sophia about it but she said it's your place; she can't make decisions about it

I waited for her to stop bushing around

Her: I would like to use your garden to prepare my models and shoot pictures, let's say two times a week. It's just that I can't afford to rent a place and your garden is perfect for my work

I stood up

Me: No, I don't think that's possible

Her: Oh, is it?

Me: Don't get me wrong but you know how much I love my privacy. I don't like my place to be crowded, you know that already

Her: I see. I just thought maybe you've changed



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's a thing, you are thinking too much. But, I can ask around and find you places that have the perfect garden like mine

Her: That would be nice, I'd like that a lot

She stood up and grabbed her clutch bag

Her: I will take my leave

Me: Can we talk before you go?

Her: Sure

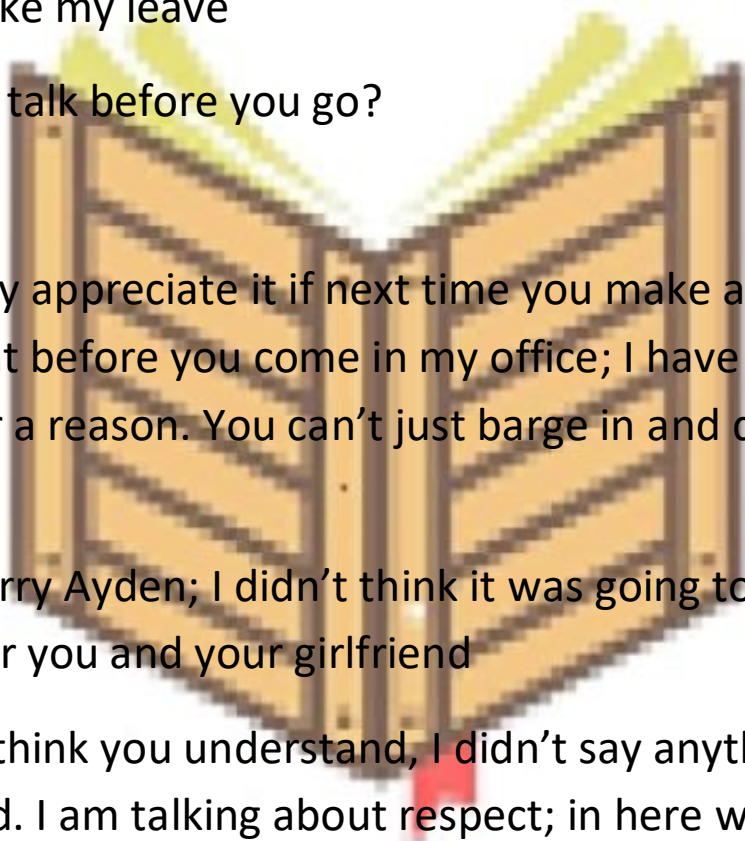
Me: I'd really appreciate it if next time you make an appointment before you come in my office; I have a personal assistant for a reason. You can't just barge in and demand to see me

Her: I am sorry Ayden; I didn't think it was going to make problems for you and your girlfriend

Me; I don't think you understand, I didn't say anything about my girlfriend. I am talking about respect; in here we don't talk about my girlfriend, she is my assistant. And also know that she is off limits

Her: Chill Ayden, I didn't mean any harm and I fully understand you

Me: I am happy you do. Also learn to use your phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I will

Me: Thank you

I walked to my chair and sat down

Me: Close the door on your way out

She walked out

MUNEI

I looked through the glass and saw her inside her office

Let's say how strong their relationship is, lecturing me about respect... Insecure is the poison to any relationship and our Missy seem to suffer from that syndrome

I knocked on the door

Her: Come in

I opened the door and walked inside

Me: Yara, can we talk?

Her: Come in

I sat on the couch next to her desk

Me: I just want to apologize to you

Her: Apologize for what?

She stood up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I saw how my visit rubbed you the wrong way

Her: Sorry for you it didn't

Me: Ayden does know his assistant; I mean he told me that you are not bothered but I insisted. You are the best assistant and Ayden is lucky to have you

Her: I am just doing my job and I really don't care about Mr A's visitors... I mean I am just an employee in his Company

I chuckled

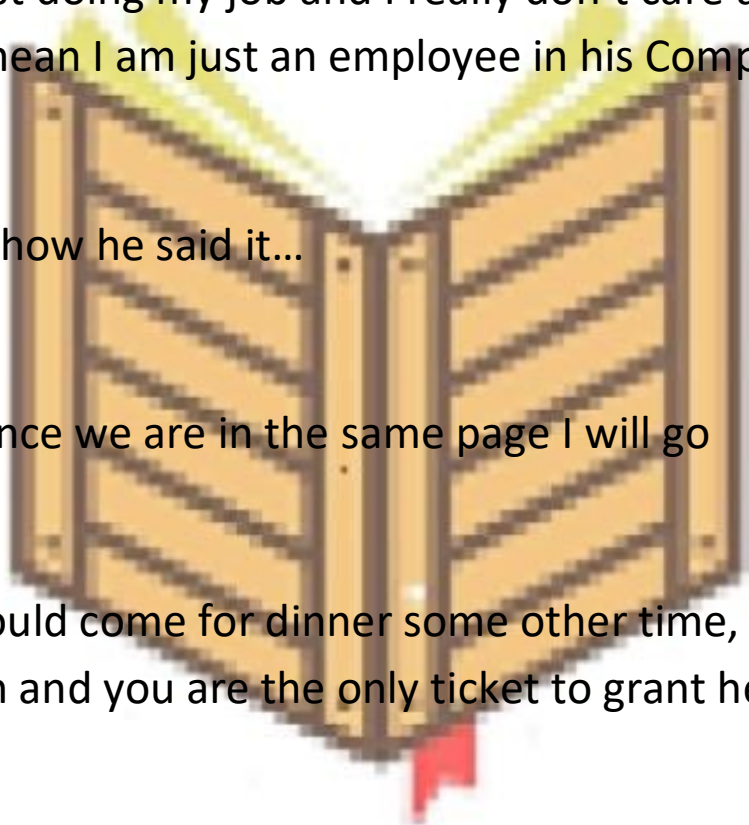
Me: Exactly how he said it...

I stood up

Me: Well, since we are in the same page I will go

Her: Okay

Me: You should come for dinner some other time, Sophia does miss her son and you are the only ticket to grant her that wish



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

67

ETHAN

My mother walked in with Mimi laughing their laughs out

I looked at them as they make their way to me

Me: My two favourite ladies

Mrs L: Thought I was the only one

Me: Not anymore

Mimi smiled... I kissed her forehead

Me: You okay? (Whispers)

Mrs L: What are you whispering about?

Mimi: I am fine, but still going to kill you

I spanked her ass

Mimi: Cuddles

NOVELSGURU.COM

My mother turned around and looked at us

Mrs L: Ethan, get us something to drink. I am sure Mimi is thirsty, the sun outside also did a number on her

Me: Coming right away...

I walked to the kitchen

I walked to the fridge and took out glass of juice

Mrs L: Yoh! I am defending someone who is not showing interest in resting

I heard my mother talking in the lounge

Mimi walked in smiling

Me: And you, what are you doing here? I thought mom said I must serve you

Mimi: I want you; I can't hold myself any longer

She pressed her lips against mine

Me: Mom can walk on us

Her: Fun of sneaking around

I laughed

Me: You look very happy

Her: Your mother is fun, I think I overreacted

Me: You can go ahead and thank me

Her: Thank you? You are so full of yourself (Laughs)

Me: I am happy to see you two getting along, I don't know what I was going to do if you were not getting along



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I am the happy one; imagine fighting with your mother. I wouldn't want to make you choose between me and your mother because I know who is going to lose

She wiped the lipstick on my lip

Her: Lipsticks! It actually looks good on you

Me: What are you implying?

Mrs L: The drink! (Shouts)

PANTHER

Buhle got on top of me; she positioned herself and inserted my dick inside her

She circled her arms around my neck; I circled mine around her waist. She slowly went up and down

Me: Fuck (Whispers)

She leaned and kissed me, I squeezed her ass

Me: Do you know how scared I was when Mimi called saying you are not fine?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You are such a baby

Me: Wait until you receive a call about me being in hospital

Her: Don't say that

She stopped moving and stared deep into my eyes

Her: You promised to not

Me: I know what I said... What do you say we go and see my mother this weekend?

Her: Is not too early for that?

Me: My mother is leaving town for some time and I wanna see her, so why not go together

Her: Okay, I will tag along

She started moving again, both of my hands were on her ass

Her: Oh (Moans)

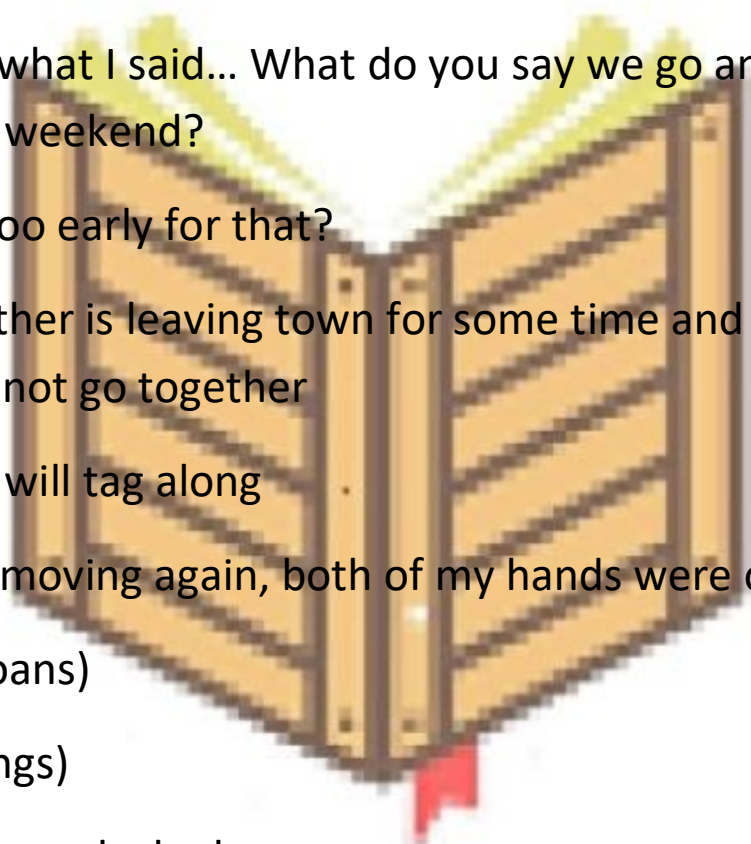
(Doorbell rings)

Her: Tell me you locked...

Me: I did and judging from the way the person is ringing the bell I have no doubt is my brother

I gently got her off me

Me: The brothers we have



NOVELSGURU.COM



I gave her my shirt... I put on my jean and went to the door

Me: What are you doing here Viper?

Viper: At least let me in

He pushed me out of the way

Me: Really?

Viper: Oh, you have company?

Me: As you can see Viper

Viper: Hello, I'm Craig nice meeting you

Her: Buhle

Him: Sister-in-law?

Me: Sunshine, go to the bedroom-I am coming. And you?

I looked at Viper

Him: I wouldn't be here if it wasn't serious

Me: Talk...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I left the office before I could have a talk with Ayden, I really wanted to have a talk with him but something came up

I was called to come and collect assignment at the Campus

YV: Hello stranger

I smiled at YV, she is my study buddy. Even though I hardly attend but work and school it's a job and a half

Me: Come on, how are you?

YV: Fine, and you?

Me: Fine

YV: Let's go. Mr Tyson is already handing out assignment

Me: Tyson Munyai is our new Lecturer for Communication?

YV: Yes, you know him

Me: Unfortunately

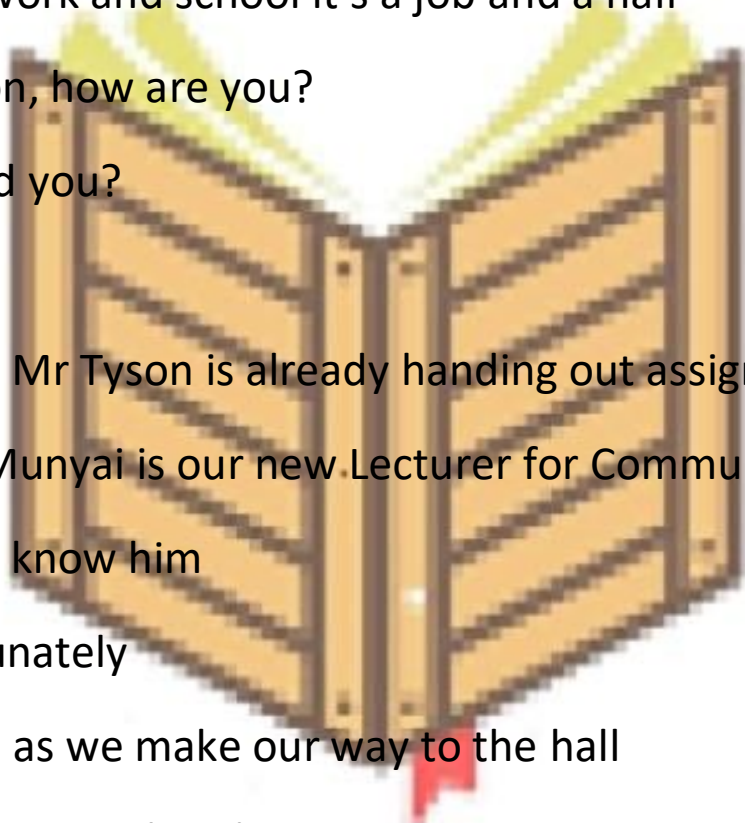
She laughed as we make our way to the hall

Indeed Tyson was already giving out assignment

YV: Sorry Sir

Ty: It's okay, take a seat

We sat down



NOVELSGURU.COM

He updated us on what he was saying and how to write the assignment and when it is due

Ty: And, we are also going to create a WhatsApp group you'll be divided into groups since they are many of you. Everything you need to know will be shared on the group and also if you have any questions. You can contact me anytime of the day

Students: Okay sir

Ty: That's all for the day, I'll see you Saturday

We stood up and walked out of the hall

YV: I really like Mr Tyson; he is different from other Lecturers

Me: How is he different?

YV: Duh, he is patient with us and we understand him better. Mr Mulovhedzi was a disaster

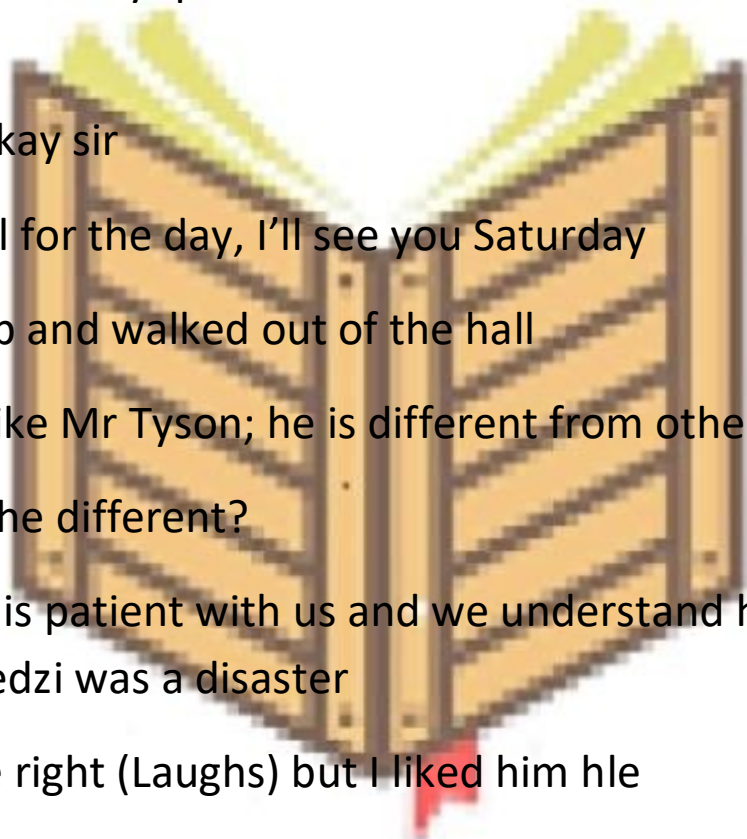
Me: You are right (Laughs) but I liked him hle

YV: You have a boyfriend

Me: I know and I love him a lot but browsing is allowed

YV laughed

(Message alert) it was Ayden



NOVELSGURU.COM

|I am in the apartment, please come back. We need to talk  
Shawty|

MUNEI

Sophia smiled at me

Her: I underestimated you

Me: It worked as a charm

Her: Ayden will never change and it will take him time to realise  
it but he will eventually

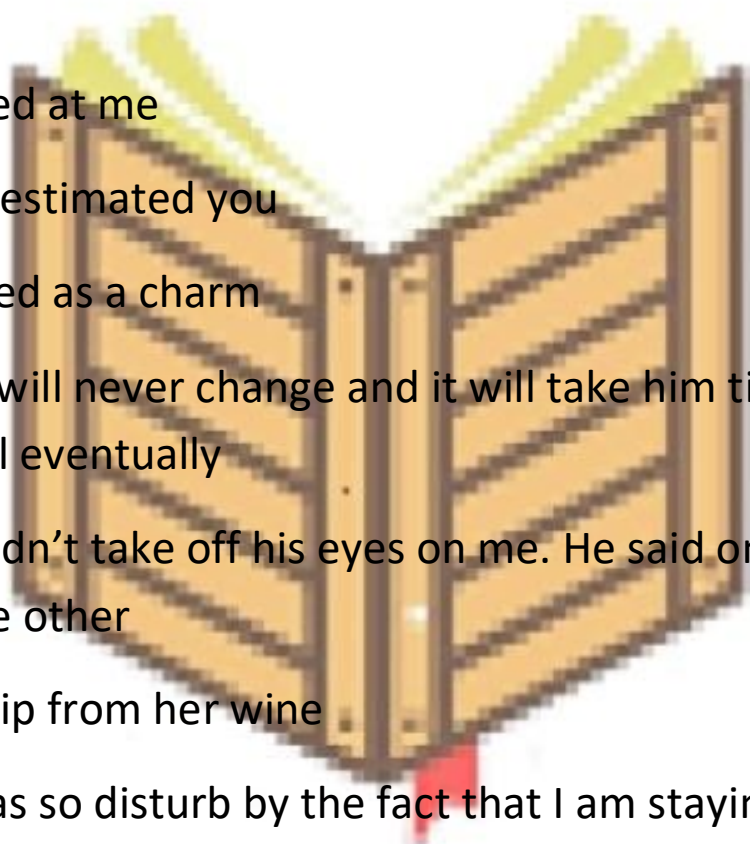
Me: He couldn't take off his eyes on me. He said one thing but  
acted on the other

She took a sip from her wine

Me: Yara was so disturb by the fact that I am staying here and  
Ayden didn't tell her a thing

Her: What did she expect? Ayden is just pushing time with her,  
and God knows I tried telling her but she didn't wanna listen to  
me

Me: Now, we implement stage two



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Cheers to that

As crazy as it sounds, but today proved to me that Ayden still has hots for me and after implementing stage tow he will be head over heels

AYDEN

The door opened, Yara walked in

Me: Shawty

I rose to my feet

Her: Hey

Me: Can we talk?

Her: Yes, let's talk

She sat down

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Who is she?

Me: Someone from my past

She chuckled



Her: Why don't I know about this "someone from my past"?

Me: Because I didn't think she would come back and...

Her: And live in your house

Me: It's not like that

Her: How is it like Ayden? Break it down for me

Me: Munei is no one important to me, yes we do have history but we were never in a relationship

She stood up

Her: Then why didn't you tell me about her? That's what I need to know

Me: I knew you wouldn't understand

Her: What did you say Ayden? Are you for real?

Me: Calm down

Her: I remember very well asking about you if there's someone who can disrupt our lives and what did you say?

Me: I said no... that must mean something

She shook her head

Her: I opened up to you, I told you everything but you didn't have the decency to tell me something Munchie (Crying) do you know how I felt when she parade her way to the office? She



stood in front of me and belittled me. I found out from her that you she is staying in your house, do you have any idea how that made me feel? You are staying with her in the same house and you want me to smile

Me: I moved out, I am staying with your brother

Her: Did you tell me?

Me: Shawty...

Her: I wanna know why you didn't tell me. I am already fighting to be in your life, I can't really say your mother likes me. She is just tolerating me and this Munei girl might be exactly what she needs

Me: Stop crying, please. You are breaking my heart

I hugged her

Her: I am crying because of you, you are breaking my heart

Me: My aim was never to hurt you

Her: My sin was to be born poor, but I am not ashamed of that. I am working my ass to make something for myself but no they don't see that! I am not crying for your mother's love or anything because I know I will never force her. I will never! If she doesn't love me-she doesn't. I care about you but if you don't consider my feelings then why am I wasting my time trying to get your mother to love me? Tell me

Me: I love you and I don't care about you coming from poor family, you are the girl I love and want to grow old with

Her: Act like it Ayden!

Me: I am doing my best to protect you

Her: Please, leave

Me: Shawty, don't do this

Her: Leave Ayden, I wanna be alone (Sobs)

I cupped her face

Me: I am sorry but don't shut me out

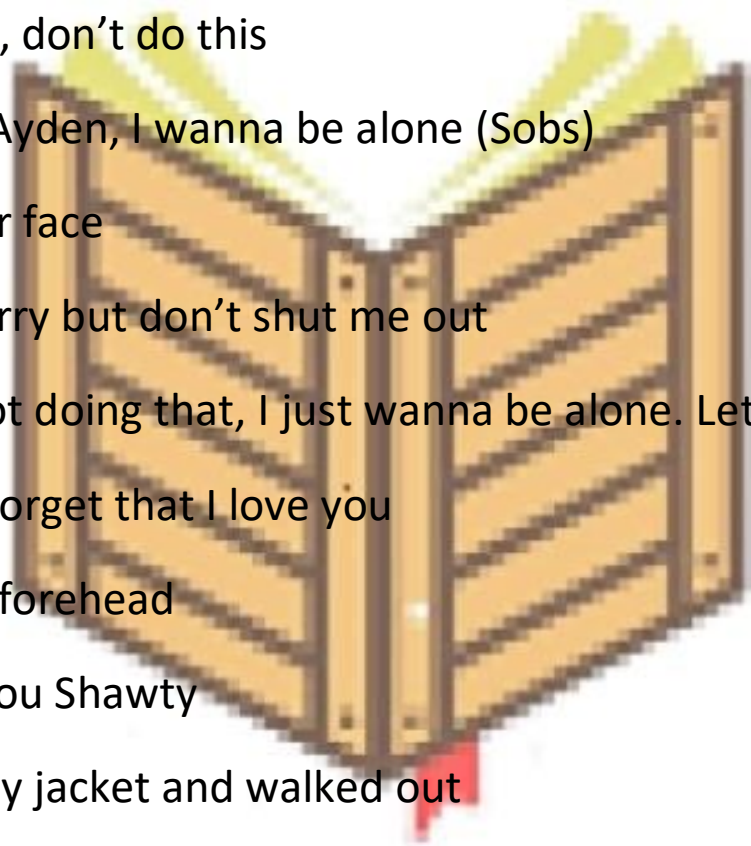
Her: I am not doing that, I just wanna be alone. Let me be...

Me: Never forget that I love you

I kissed her forehead

Me: I love you Shawty

I grabbed my jacket and walked out



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...



YARA

The following morning I woke up with headache of all mothers, I don't even know what time I dozed off. I cried myself to sleep; I am close to go nuts...

One thing for sure I might have pushed Ayden away but I wasn't going to let him get away with it. We agreed on honesty and I'm starting to think I was a fool to open up to him, so in all honesty I was wronged. If Ayden is committed to our relationship he won't even think twice about cheating, he is old enough to know that communication is the key. The least he could have done was to tell me, he could have made it a point to find time and tell me about Munei. I am not overreacting, he is aware of the tension between me and his mother. My heart is with Mr Tshivhase no joke in that but I will not allow anyone to walk over me

I made my way to the kitchen, Mimi was already making breakfast

Me: It smells nice

Her: I was about to come and drag you out of that shower.

Breakfast will be ready in few

Me: Thank you

Her: How are you feeling?

Me: Better, only because you are here

Her: But was it really necessary to call me in dawn? You interrupted my beauty sleep

Me: It was

Her: Are you not going to work?

I shook my head no

Her: You soon or later you will have to talk with him right?

Me: I know, and I am going to

Her: Then go to work

Me: I won't concentrate, you know me... I will call Ayden later and we will meet up

Her: He hasn't called you since last night?

Me: You don't know him; he has left me countless messages and still coming

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

She laughed softly

Her: He loves you

Me: And, I love him too. With all my heart

Her: Butterfly?

Me: Mh?

She dropped the knife on the tray and stepped close to me

Her: If ever those people start to treat you like trash I am going to fight for you, I will not think twice before I take you away from them. You hear me?

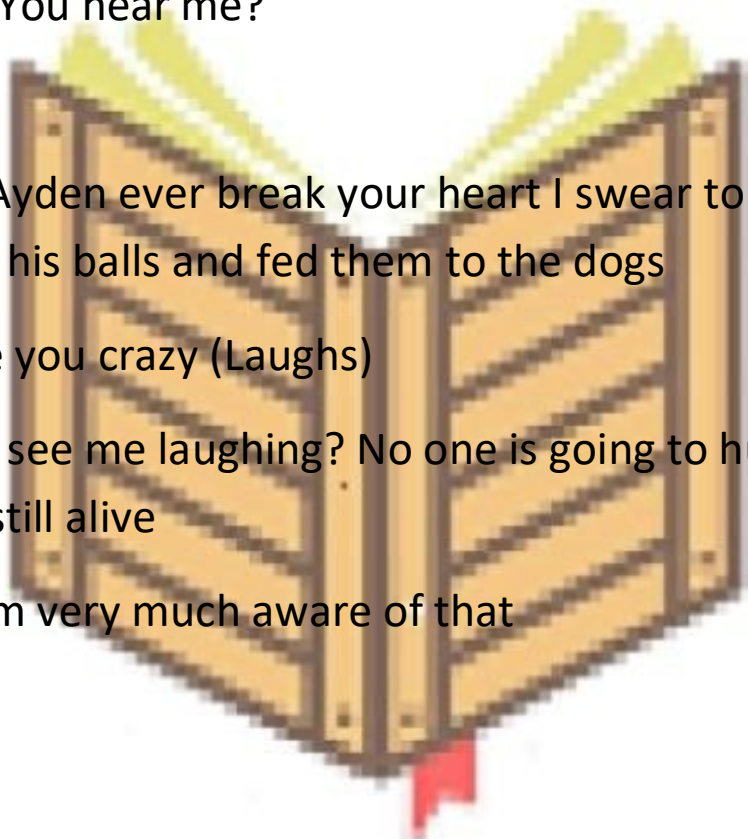
Me: I know

Her: And if Ayden ever break your heart I swear to you, I am going to cut his balls and fed them to the dogs

Me: No! Are you crazy (Laughs)

Her: Do you see me laughing? No one is going to hurt you whilst I am still alive

Me: And I am very much aware of that



AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

Yara sent me text saying she won't be going to the office today; oh my girl is really upset with me. I don't even know where to start to at least get her to talk with me. What she said last night

was heart-breaking, standing there and listen to her yelling out the truth. I couldn't care less about her status and I know my mother will never fully accept her but that is something I am ready for. I am going to fight tooth and nail for her and after last night I am going to fight demons to get her forgiveness

It's a matter of time until Panther find out and when he does Hell will freeze...

My phone rang, it was Mimsey

Me: Morning

Her: Son, how are you?

I'll never dare and tell my mother what happened between us. She is going to use it to come between Yara and me

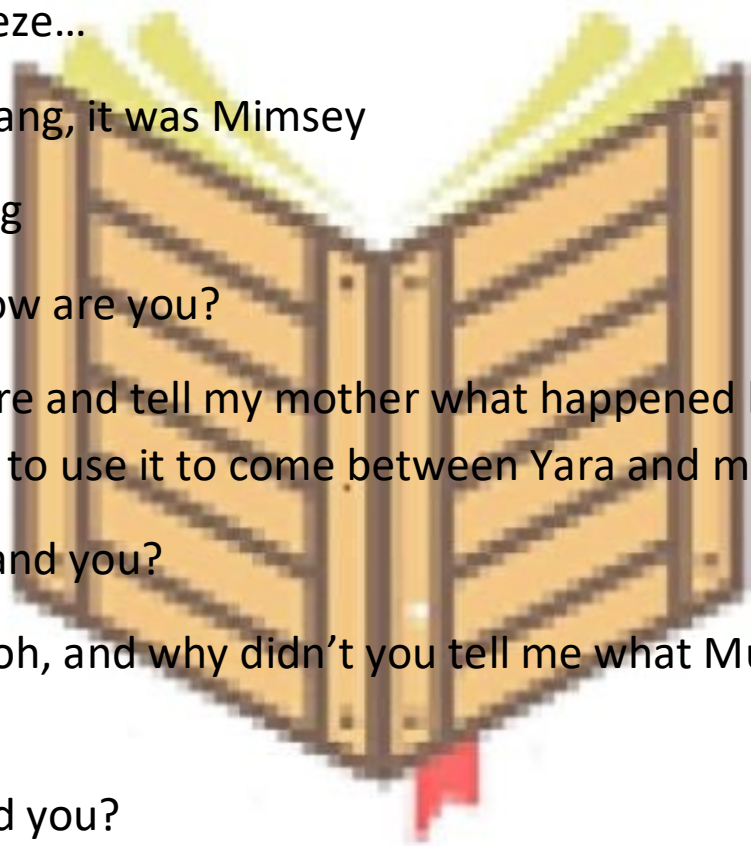
Me: Good, and you?

Her: Fine. Yoh, and why didn't you tell me what Munei did Ayden?

Me: She told you?

Her: She did, and I can't believe you didn't tell me. What she did is not acceptable at all

Me: As if you care about what happens to Yara



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I can't believe you just said that to me. I am trying to accommodate her but you always find something to pin me down with

Me: It's fine Mimsey

Her: You are still coming today right?

My mother has this crazy tradition, every Friday noon she hosts her children and sometimes my father attend. I've never missed one; it's a must to attend

Me: I did not forget. But Munei must not be there, I don't want problems. If she is attending I am not coming

Her: Munei is not family so she won't be attending

Me: Okay fine, I will see you Mimsey

Her: Bye

She hung up

I grabbed my car keys and walked out of my room, I made my way downstairs

Panther was already settling having breakfast with Viper and his son

Me; Good morning

Marcos: Uncle Ayden (Smiles)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hello Champ

Panther: What's going on with you?

Me: Nothing...

Viper: Did you check the time? It's unlike you...

I sat down

Me: I am not having a great morning

Viper: Did you have a fight with my sister?

Panther looked at me

Me: Sort of

Viper: What is sort of?

Me: I kept tiny details from and she found out

Viper: Just tell us the whole story because I am getting tired of asking questions

My focus was on Panther, he is not acting to anything I am saying and I am getting worried to be honest

NOVELSGURU.COM

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

Everything is going according to plan and it's so amazing how no one is seeing what is happening. Yara is going to be history after this afternoon, she is going to walk into a trap and not even Ayden is going to convince her otherwise

It's nothing personal; I am just doing what is right for me and my family

Me: Amelia (Shouts)

I opened her bedroom door, she was on the phone

Her: I would like to attend but Friday's are reserved for family...

No friend, please understand... Okay

Advertisement

I'll see you at the Campus

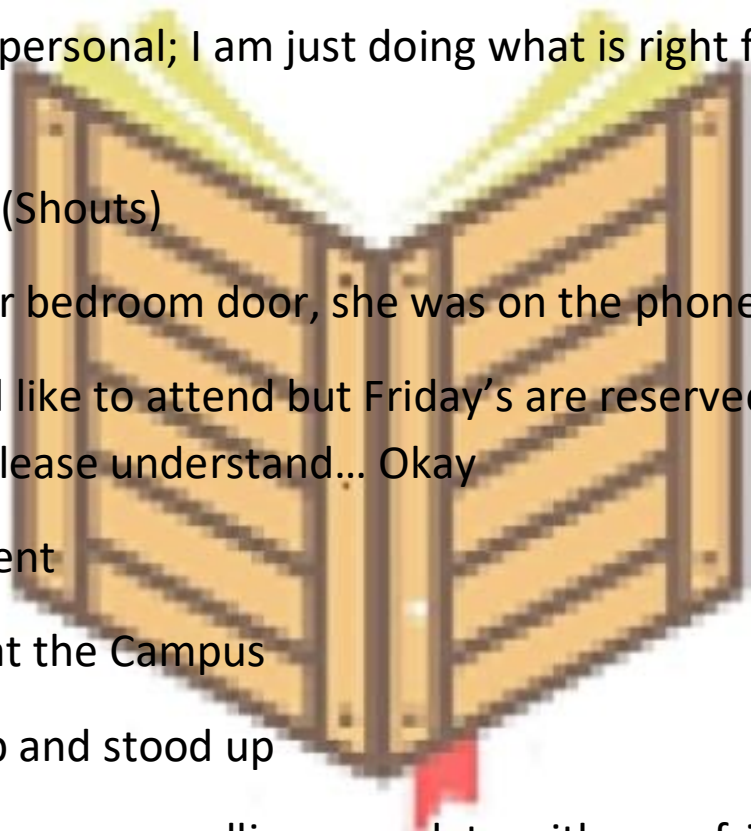
She hung up and stood up

Me: Why are you cancelling your date with your friend?

Her: You forgot which day it is today? You always preach about this day

I laughed

Me: You can skip today, you have been working very hard on your studies and you deserve a break



NOVELSGURU.COM

She jumped and hugged me

Her: Thank you, thank you I owe you one... But Ayden will be sad, let me call him

Me: Don't worry about him; I will apologize on your behalf. Now call your friend and tell her the plans are still on

Her: Thank you Mom

Me: Pass by my room, and take the card

Her: You are in good mood today

Me: I am... let me leave you

I walked out

If this doesn't work then my name is not Sophia

Munei: Sophia

Me: I was coming to you. Come, we need to talk

We walked into my bedroom

Me: It's all set

Her: You sure about this?

Me: Trust me



NOVELSGURU.COM



YARA

Mimi left an hour ago and now I am mopping around. There's only one person in my mind right now, oh how did we get here?

I lay on my tummy and took my phone... I stared at the wallpaper

Me: I miss you Munchie

I guess I will not lose anything if I call him, I can't take it anymore

I rang him

Him: Shawty

I smiled as if he can see me

Him: You have no idea how long I've been waiting for this call

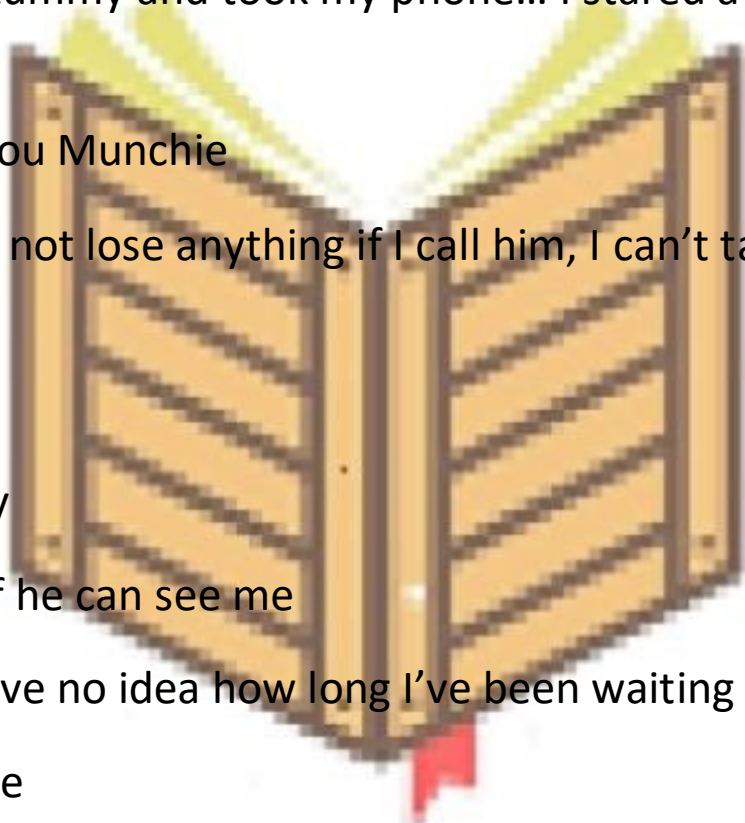
Me: Munchie

Him: I am sorry Shawty. Can we please talk about this?

Me: Yes... I miss you

Him: I miss you too. I will come by later, right now I am driving to my mother's. She's preparing Lunch for us

Me: No problem



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I love you

Me: I lost my heart on you

I hung up

MUNEI

I stood before the mirror and smiled

I am feeling very anxious, for one moment I didn't think Sophia can really pull this up. I just love having fun with naïve girls, I know Ayden will never love me but this will be my revenge for toying with my feelings

Me: Let the game begin

I walked out and made my way to Sophia

Her: You looking beautiful

Me: Thank you

The drug was resting in her hand

Her: He is on his way

The drug she is holding is our Stage two...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: About the phone thing, do you know his password?

Her: He will be drugged so I'll use his fingerprint

Me: Wow

(Door closes)

Her: Go to your room, he is here

Me: Good luck

I ran to the stairs

ETHAN

I sat across my mother

Me: You haven't told me why you are here

Mrs L: No reason, I just wanted to see my son

Me: You are lying Mom, I know that look

She sighed loudly

Her: I am bothered by the dreams my son

Me: You are still having them?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She nodded slowly

Me: How are we going to interpret them?

Her: That's a thing

Me: Maybe they were about Zoe but now she is admitted. We are no longer in danger

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes mom but if it will give you peace of mind, stay and look after me (Smiles)

Her: That's what I am going to do

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

Ayden took another sip from his scotch as I took mine from my wine

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Without Amelia is so quiet; if she was here we would be laughing

Me: You know your sister very well. Should I call her?

Him: No, let her enjoy herself with friends

He closed his eyes and sighed quietly

Me: Scotch is getting to your head already?

Him: I think so

Me: But we haven't had lunch ha Ayden

His phone was set on the phone; I have to make sure he doesn't take it

Him: But you are still cooking, I can just go and lie

He stood up

Me: Are you really drunk?

Him: Weird, right?

Me: Let me take you to your room

I grabbed his phone and wrap his arm around my waist

We made our way to his room

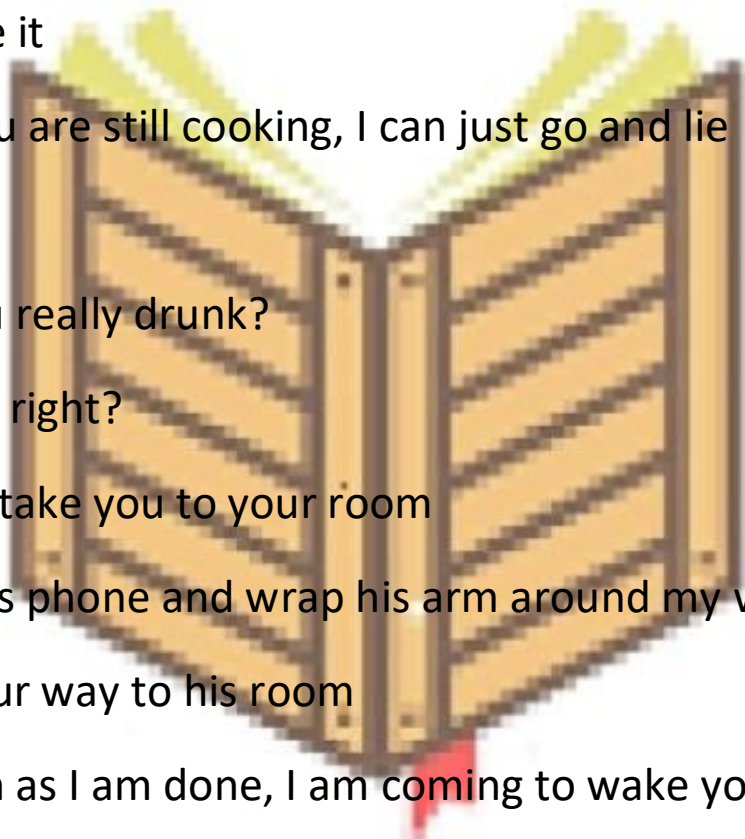
Me: As soon as I am done, I am coming to wake you up

Him: Do that (Low voice)

I gently laid him on his bed... I pressed his finger on the sensor

I sent Yara a text

|Shawty please come to my house, there's something I need you to see. I love you|



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

I moved to the window and gave Viper my back

Him: What do you think is going to happened with Ayden and Yara?

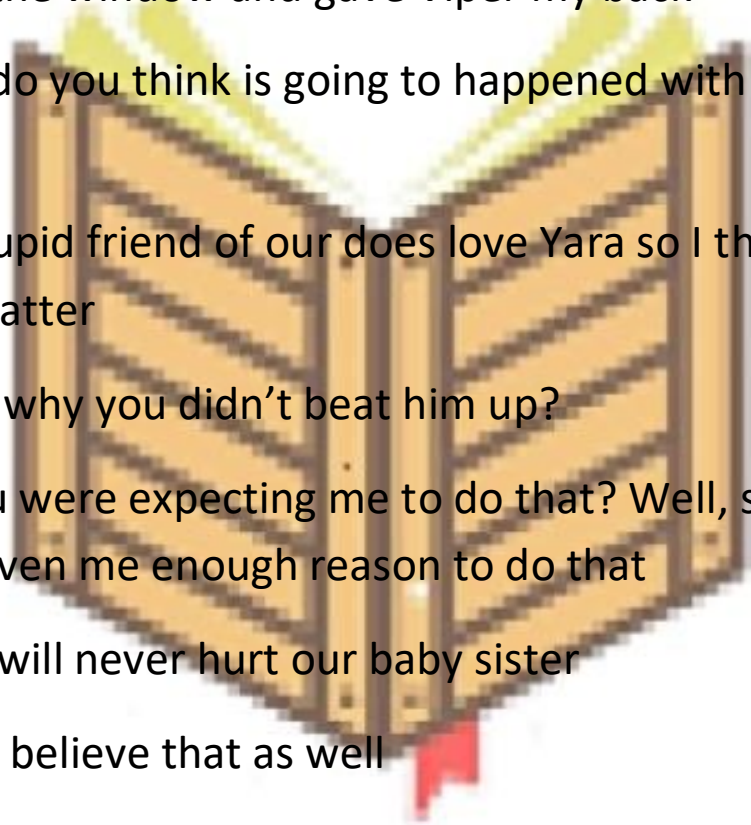
Me: That stupid friend of our does love Yara so I think they will solve this matter

Him: Is that why you didn't beat him up?

Me: Oh, you were expecting me to do that? Well, sorry for you. He hasn't given me enough reason to do that

Him: Tooth will never hurt our baby sister

Me: I like to believe that as well



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I rang the doorbell and waited for Ayden to open

I was all smileys; I can't believe I doubted his love for me. I am so stupid

The door opened, Sophia stood there and smiled at me

Her: Yara, I didn't know you were coming

Me: Actually I was not but Ayden asked me to. Is he here?

Her: Yes, he is. Please come in

I followed her

Her: He is in his room; he told me he needs to take care of something before we have lunch

Me: Can I?

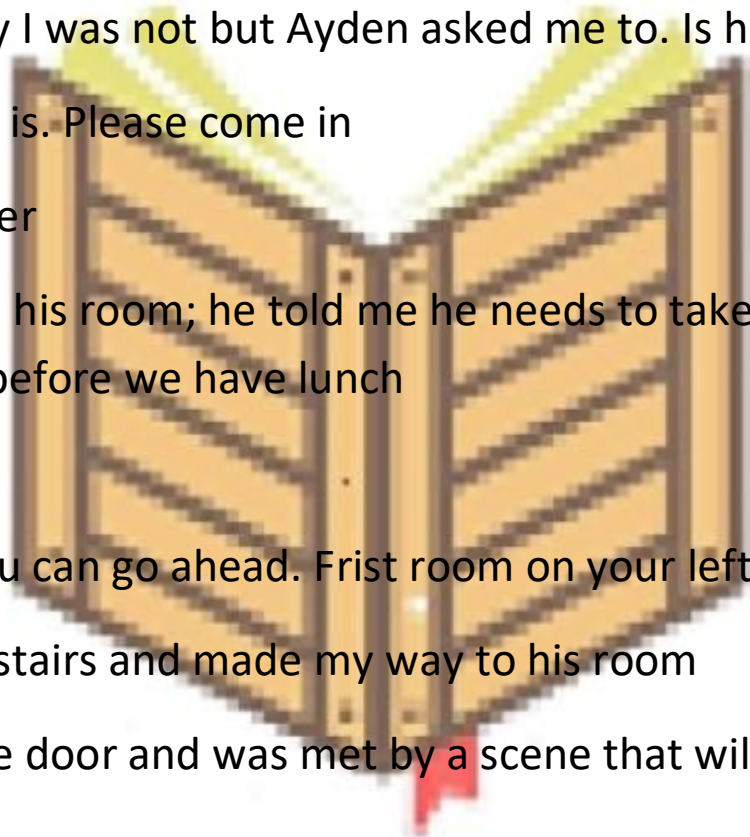
Her: Yes, you can go ahead. First room on your left

I ran to the stairs and made my way to his room

I opened the door and was met by a scene that will haunt me forever

Munei was on top of Ayden, they were kissing... she's half-naked

To be continued...



NOVELSGURL.COM

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

The drug I used is untraceable; even if they go to the Doctor nothing will show. It will only show that Ayden was drunk but not drugged. There's nothing that I want than finally get rid of Yara, I always say it's nothing personal. I am pretty much aware of what the Khumalo brothers might do to my son but I am also at ease because I know they won't kill him. The worst they can do is panel beating him or rough him up but he will be fine...

Now it's time to play the player

I gulped down my drink and continued with my pots

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt my knees getting weak. How could you Munchie?



I will not leave this house before giving this people peace of my mind; if I do I'll be proving to them what they believe I am. A fool! Well, I am anything but a fool!

I am Yara Masia, Elisa's daughter!

Me: Ayden Tshivhase! (Shouts)

I took the cushion that was on the floor and threw it at them

They stopped kissing. And oh my Ayden is very much aware of what is going on... Their clothes were still on

Me: Did I interrupt the lover's make out?

Ayden widened his eyes and slowly pushed Munei

The bottle of scotch was on the drawer next to his bed. So he has been drinking?

Him: Shawty? What... you are here?

Me: I am here? Are you kidding me?

Him: No, I mean what are you doing here?

He jumped off the bed followed by Munei

Me: You can't handle your alcohol now Ayden? Huh? Tell me

He leaned on the chair and tried to regain his strength

Him: It's not what it looks like... I don't even know...

He smelled like alcohol

Her: You wanna force this on me now? Wow Ayden

Him: Shut up, she is forcing her throat down on me Shawty. I swear to you

I chuckled softly

Her: I am sorry Yara but you weren't supposed to see this

Him: What the hell are you talking about?

Me: Is this the reason why you called me here? To humiliate me to this extent? Talk Ayden!

He stepped closer to me

Him: I have no idea of what is going on, one minute I was drinking and the next moment...

Her: The next moment I came to your room wanting to talk with you about me leaving the house because I am causing a drift between you and Yara but what you did next was unexpected. You kissed me and I tried to fight it but you overpowered me... I told you are drunk but you didn't listen

Me: Hey wena, hey wena FOKOF man! FOKOF! (Yells) I am talking with my man here and I suggest you keep quiet before I make you. I will panel beat your face, don't try me! Now move!

Her: But...

Me: I said move! Are you deaf?

She stood there

Without thinking twice I slapped her across the face, so hard that she fell on her side

Me: As for you...

I pointed at Ayden

Me: You've disappointed me greatly

I took my phone and showed him the message

Him: I didn't send this, I swear!

Me: Who has access to your phone? You and me, and I wasn't here

Him: Munei must have unlocked it when I was still out of it

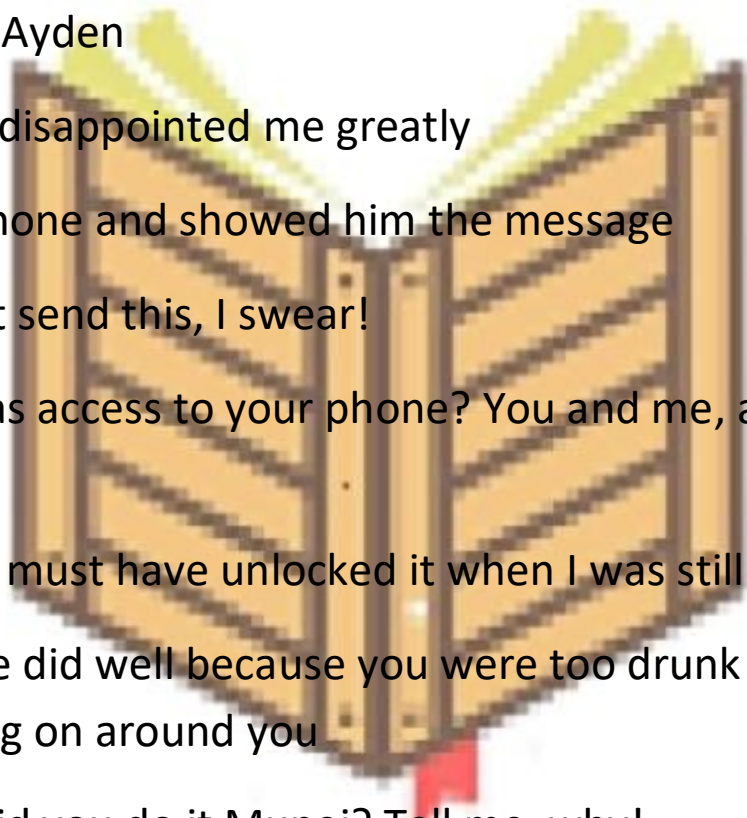
Me: And she did well because you were too drunk to notice what is going on around you

Him: Why did you do it Munei? Tell me, why!

Me: I don't care if this was made up or not but what I know is that I am not staying for this shit

He tried to touch me

Me: Don't touch me Ayden! I am so furious that I can kill you with my bare hands



NOVELSCURU.COM

Him: Sorry

He stepped back

Him: Can we talk about this?

I laughed whilst shaking my head

Me: We have nothing to talk about. Stay away from me and your filthy friends with their fake accent. Sort your life first but until then erase me from your heart and mind. I rather love you in distance than suffer next to you! (Emotionally)

Him: Oh God! Believe Yara, I would never hurt you like this

Me: Of course you wouldn't but you making hard for me to respect and trust you. I knew everyone hated me I just didn't know it was this deep

Him: Is this the end of our love?

Me: Didn't you hear and understand what I said?

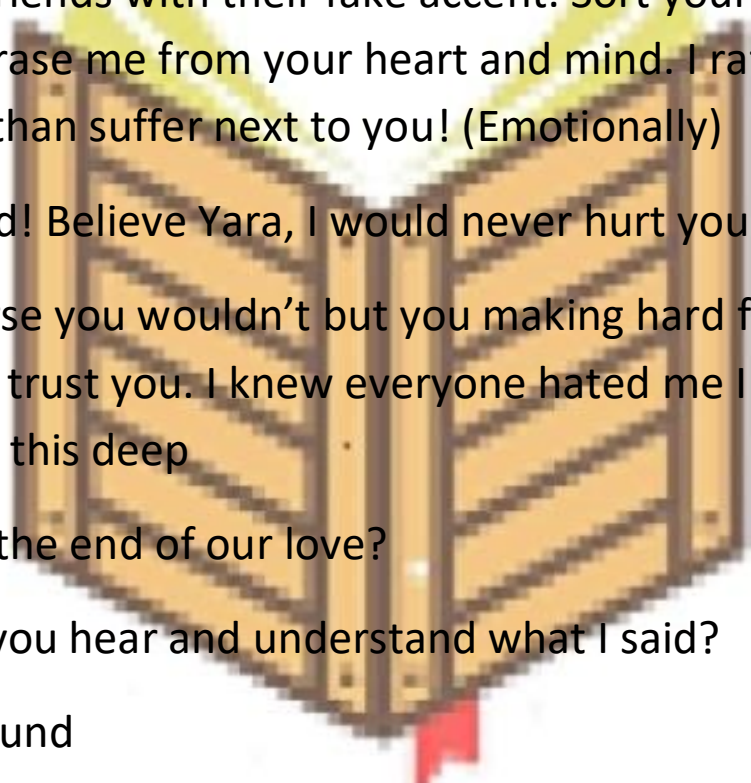
I turned around

Me: And wena missy goody two shoes

I said to Munei who was now seated on the chair

Me: Pray our paths don't cross again because if they do  
(Chuckles softly) let it be a misery

I maintained my calm posture



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turned around and walked to the door but I stopped on my tracks

Me: One more thing, fuck you Munei and fuck you Sophia. She already hates me so why must I lick her wound? (Yells)

I could feel the tears nearing but I don't want to cry before him, I refuse to cry before him. I will not give them the satisfaction

I ran down the stairs, Sophia was sitting in the lounge

Sophia: Yara. What's going on? Are you crying?

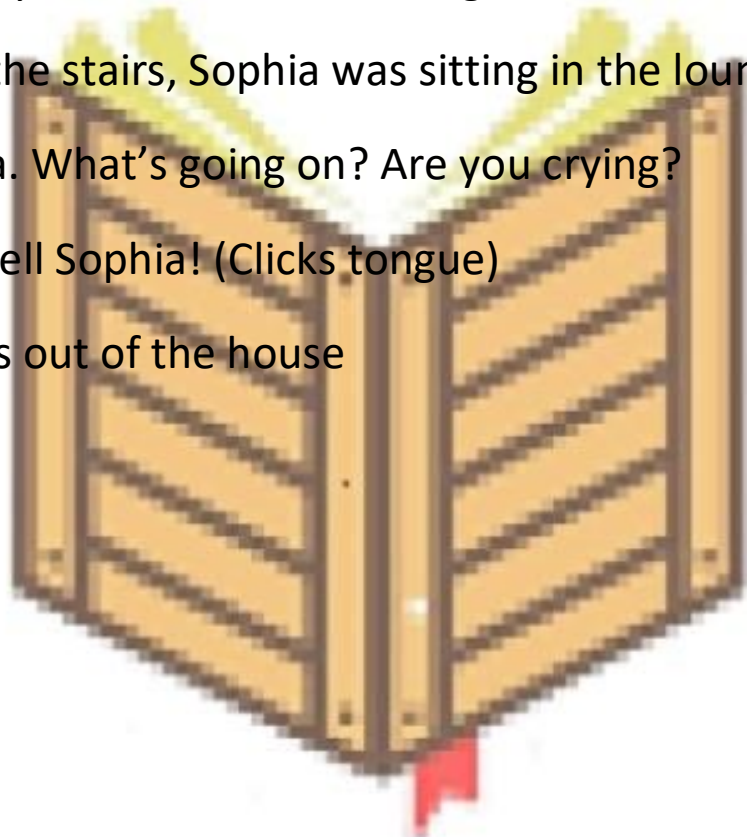
Me: Go to hell Sophia! (Clicks tongue)

I ran my legs out of the house

AYDEN

I stared at the message trying to get answers

I don't know what's going on but I don't remember sending Yara this message. Was I that drunk to not remember a thing? And even if I was cheating, how stupid it is to send my girlfriend a message like this? But if indeed I was drunk then I must have sent it not aware of what I was doing. Oh Ayden! I mean I am



NOVELSGURU.COM

not perfect I've done things like this in the past but I promised to never hurt Yara

Me: Munei, did you drug me?

Her: What? Are you insane?

Me: Then how do you explain all of this? I don't want you

She put on her shirt

Her: Be glad Yara arrived in time because you could have committed a crime. You were going to rape me

I chuckled softly

Me: Rape? You were on top of me, and you took advantage of me. I was weak and confused

Her: I am not listening to this

Munei stood up and bumped into Mimsey walking

Mimsey: Anyone who cares to explain what is going on here?

Me: I should be asking you that. You said Munei wasn't in the house

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Advertisement

she drugged me

Mimsey: She did what?

Me: You heard me. I think she spiked my drink that's why I was not in control of my actions. She even sent this message to Yara...

She read the message

Mimsey: Ayden, you sent this message to that poor girl? I don't know why you fought for her if you knew you were going to hurt her like this. You even insulted me to be with her but you went on and did this to her?

Me: Mimsey, I didn't send this message, I don't remember asking Munei to my room also

Mimsey: Yoh!

Me: And, now she is threatening to report me for rape!

Mimsey: What?! I am at fault here, I called that girl to come and stay here, now look at the mess she has caused

Me: Of course it is your fault

I picked my car keys on the drawer

Mimsey: So that's why your girlfriend insulted me?

Me: Yara did that?

Mimsey: Yes

Me: I don't have time for this Mimsey like really, now what I need to do is talk with Yara and try to solve this also proving that Munei drugged me

I know she said she doesn't want anything to do with me but if I stay here and fold my arms then I'll only be sending one message to her

Mimsey: Yes, I support the testing. I know I don't like Yara but what Munei did is not on at all

Me: Go and tell your friend to leave my house! I don't want to see her in my house

I looked at Mimsey

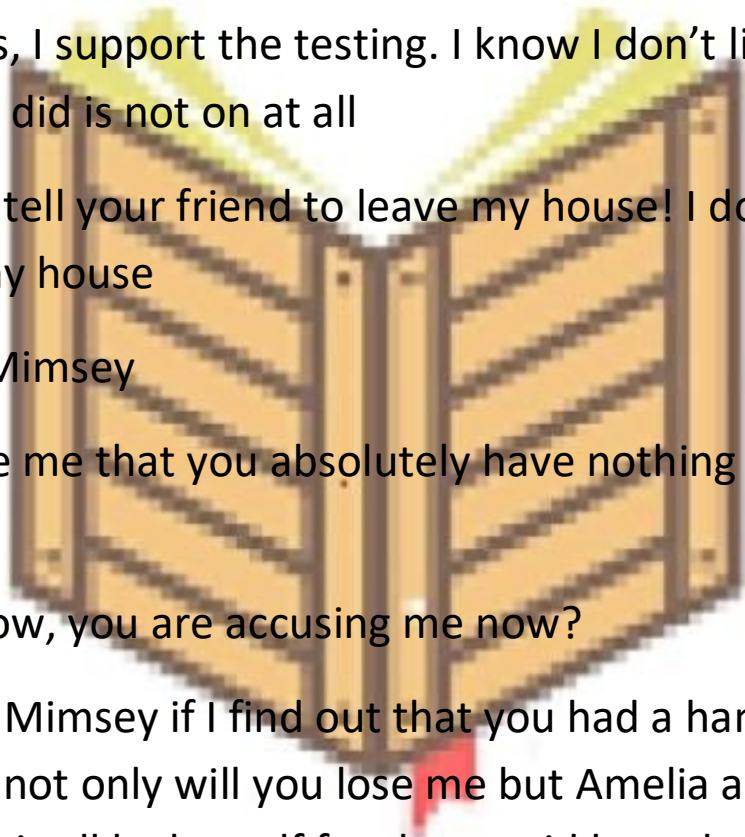
Me: Promise me that you absolutely have nothing to do with this?

Mimsey: Wow, you are accusing me now?

Me: I swear Mimsey if I find out that you had a hand in this entire thing not only will you lose me but Amelia also. I pray Munei did this all by herself for the stupid love she has for me

Mimsey: I didn't, my only mistake was allowing her to stay here. That's my mistake but a hand in all of this? Ha Ayden I am hurt by your words

Me: For your sake I hope so



NOVELSGURU.COM



I walked out of the room

YARA

Tears were streaming down my cheeks as I dialled Mimi's number

Her: Butterfly

I kept quiet and continued to cry

Her: Yara I am talking with you, are you crying or just playing with me?

Me: Come and fetch me please (Crying)

Her: You are crying! What happened to you?

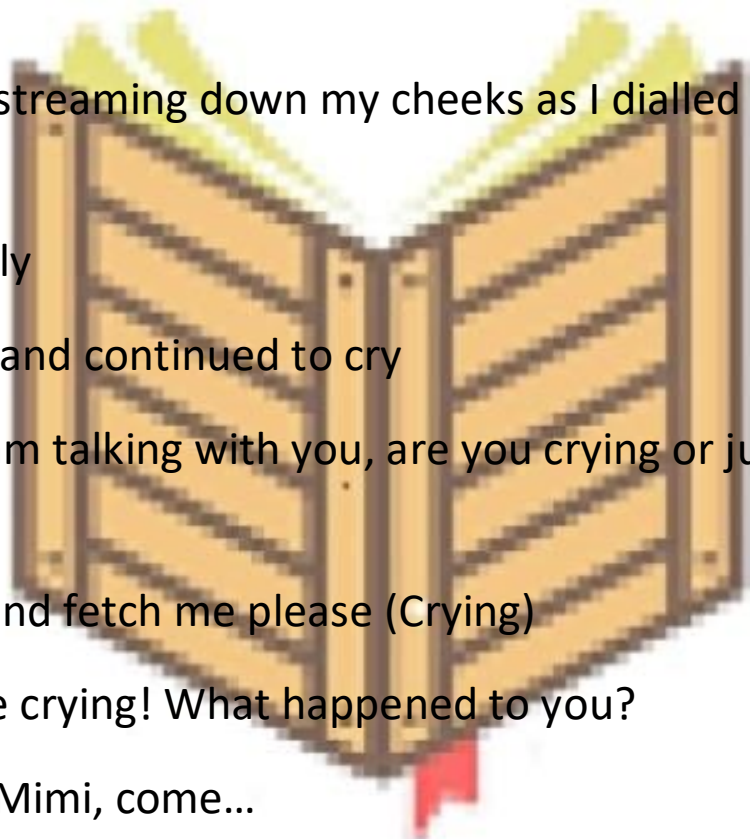
Me: Please Mimi, come...

Her: Where are you?

Me: Cambridge Street next to house no 201. Please come sister, I won't make it home

Her: Stay right there, I am coming?

I slowly sat down on the lawn



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

Me: Babe, banana or strawberry smoothie?

Her: Strawberry

She yelled from the lounge

I grabbed glasses and walked to the lounge

Me: Here we go mi amor

Her: Thank you (Smiles)

My phone rang

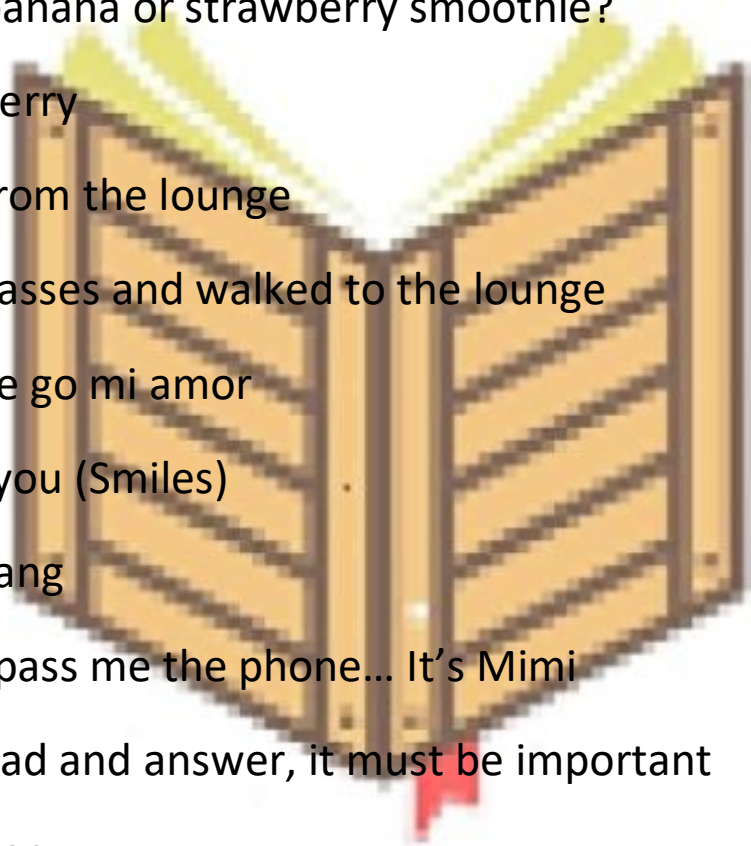
Me: Please pass me the phone... It's Mimi

Her: Go ahead and answer, it must be important

Me: Sister Bae

Her: Brother Bae, I just received a call from Yara, she didn't say what's wrong but she was crying. I am on my way to fetch her with Ethan

Me: What do you mean crying? Did someone hurt her?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I don't know, I just wanted you to know

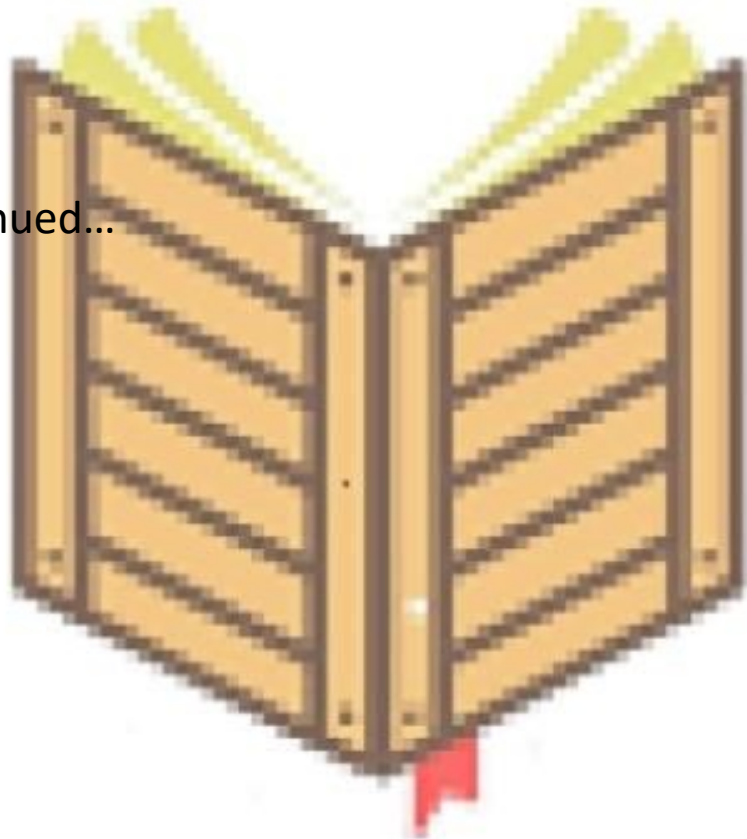
Me: I'll meet you at her apartment

I hung up

Her: Is everything fine?

Me: About to find out. Sorry Sunshine but I have to go

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

70

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I sighed loudly and sat on the couch

Munei: That was one hardest mission I've ever come across

Me: At one point I thought he was going to catch us

Her: I was too

Me: But, there's something

She looked at me

Me: I might have made a slight mistake; I swapped the drug by mistake. The one I used can be detected

Her: What?

Me: Yes but, relax! Ayden is probably going to his doctor for consultation, if I call him and offer him money. He will say he is not drugged and our problem will be solved

Her: Do whatever that is right. I am just happy those two have broken up, I can now go. My work here is done, I am leaving now. Now I have to stay far from Ayden until he cools off

Me: It's a shame my son doesn't love you. You would have made a beautiful couple

Her: It's his loss. I got my revenge for what he has done to me and you got yours what you wanted

(Door closes)

Me: You think he is back? Oh my God!

Amelia made his way to us

Amelia: Mimsey

Me: Hey, you back?

Amelia: Yes, where is brother? I cut short my date

I looked at Munei

Munei: You can go ahead and tell her. I know you are dying to

Amelia: What happened?

Me: Yara found your brother with her in bed

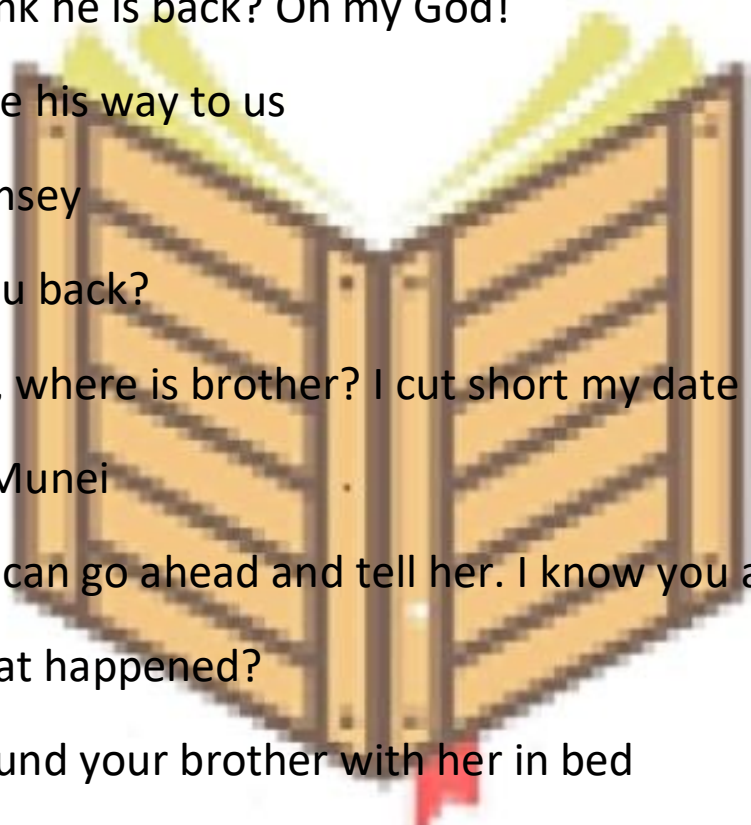
Amelia chuckled

Amelia: There's no way brother can do that

Me: He was drunk and he dragged Munei into his room

Amelia: What did you do to my brother?

She moved to Munei



Amelia: I asked a question, my gut was right to not trust you.  
You are only here to cause problems

Munei: Watch your tongue; I will not be interrogated by you.  
Your brother did this...

Amelia: Say that one more time

Amelia slapped Munei across the face

Yoh! Today is Munei's slapping day

Munei: Sophia, you are going to stand there and allow your  
daughter to do this to me?

Me: Amelia, stop!

Munei: Are you in this together? Mimsey?

Me: Of course not. I will never hurt your brother.

Amelia: I wouldn't be surprised; none of this is a coincident.  
Munei coming out of nowhere, you playing happy family with  
Yara and this happening? No, I refuse to believe that

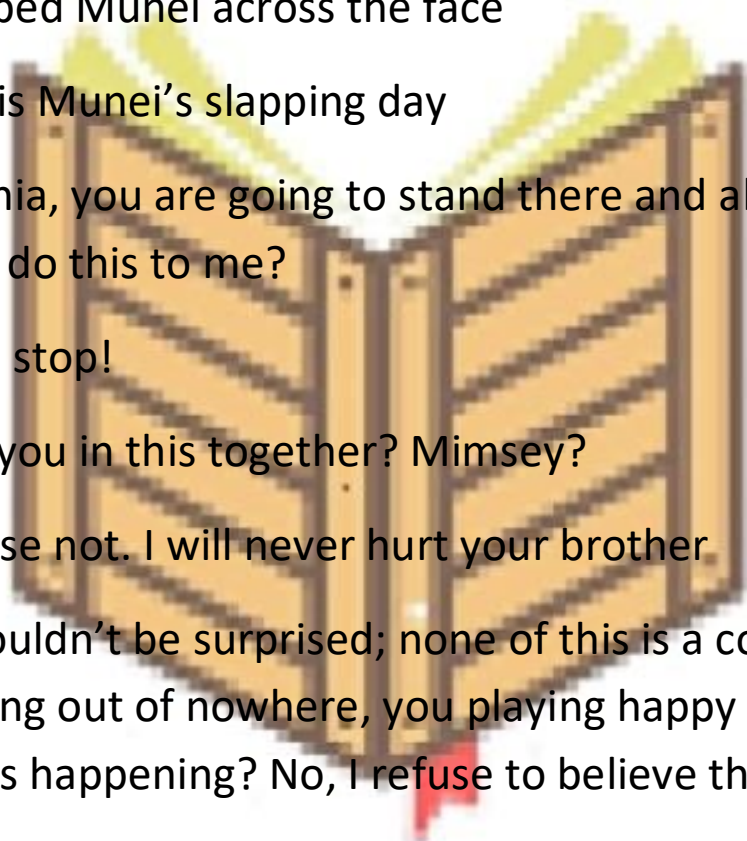
Me: Go ahead and accuse me

Amelia: I feel for you

She ran to the stairs

Munei: I need to leave now

Me: Yes, you have to



NOVELSGURU.COM

MIMI

Yara was curled up on the couch, she has been crying since we fetched her

I couldn't believe it when she said she found Ayden with a girl, the same girl who made them fight. Right now there's no proof that Ayden was set up because everything pointed to him doing this willingly... I don't want to talk about Panther and Viper they are fuming fire, if I was Ayden I was simply going to hide for a while because if they see him oh only God knows

Me: You should have let me go into that house and beat the shit out of that girl

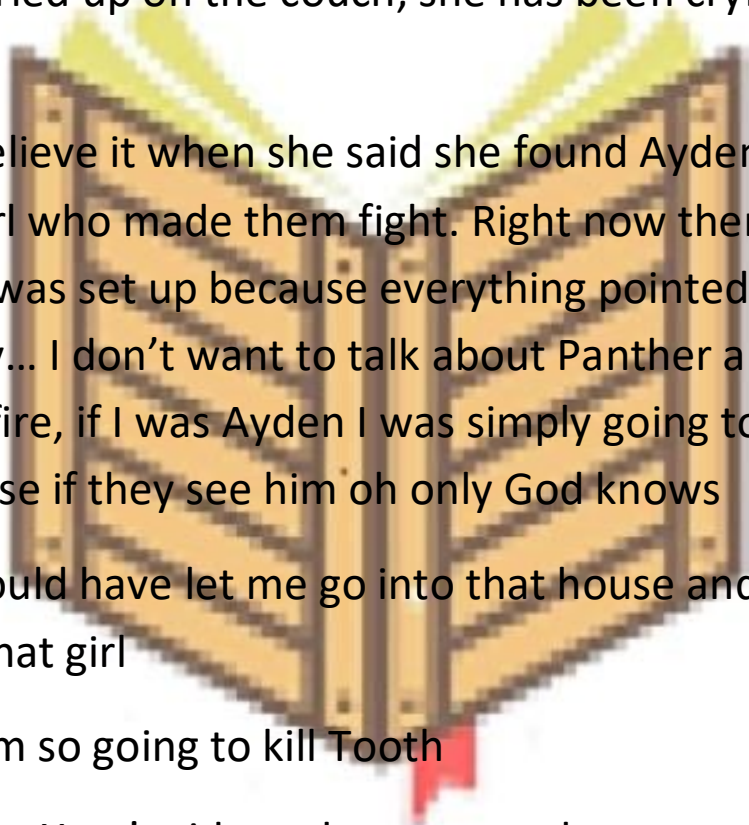
Panther: I am so going to kill Tooth

Viper went to Yara's side and sat next to her

Viper: You need to stop crying, you are breaking our hearts

Yara hasn't said anything, she is just crying...

Viper: Yara, please. Say something



NOVELSGURU.COM

Panther: Sister Bae, look after her I need to run somewhere. I will see you

Me: Okay, I will prepare something for us to eat

Panther: Don't worry, I will order pizza

Panther walked up to Yara and kissed her forehead

Panther: I am coming back

Viper stood up

Yara grabbed Panther's hand

Yara: Don't hurt him, please

We looked at each other

That's exactly what they are thinking

Yara: Please (Whispers)

Panther: Let's go Viper

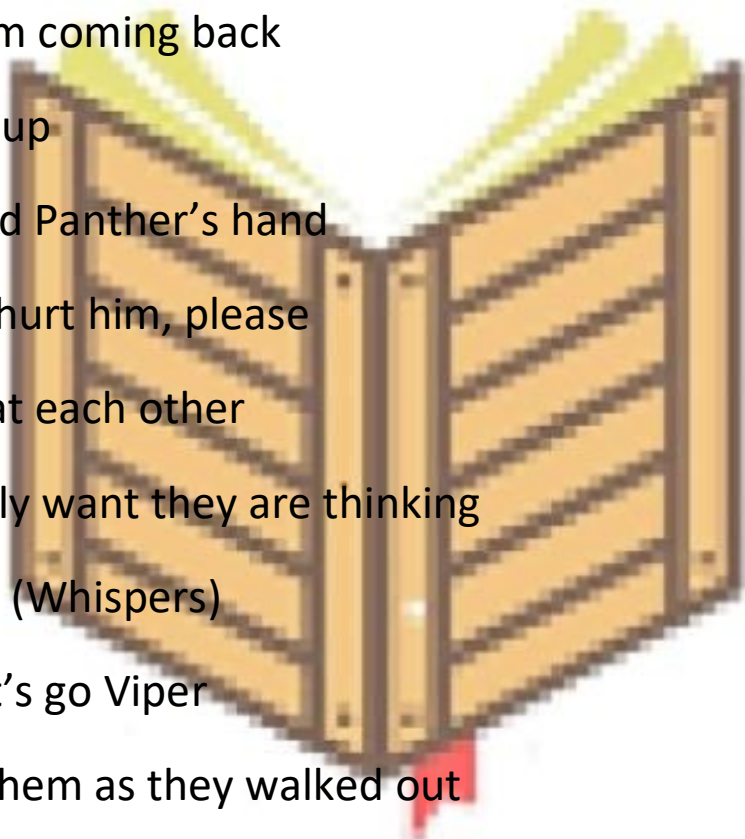
I looked at them as they walked out

Yara: Mimi...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I moved to the couch and knelt before her

Her: Don't allow Ayden to come here, if they see him they are going to hurt him





Me: You know your brothers Butterfly and no one can change their minds

A tear dropped

Me: Why do you care anyway

Advertisement

he is responsible for what you are feeling right now. They must teach him a lesson

I held her hand

Me: How are you feeling?

Her: Hurt and broken, how can he do this to me? I love him Mimi and after Tyson saga I honestly thought I'd never find someone I can love but he came and I was head over heels but maybe we are not meant to be... My status will always be a problem and I tried to fit in but nothing is working out. I am fighting senseless battle, I can't do this Mimi (Emotionally) I can't

Me: I am sorry nana but Ayden is a coward

NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Going to the doctor was waste of time because tests proved I was not drugged which means I was just drunk. With that being said, I might have dragged Munei into my room but I have no memory of that. This is one big mess and I don't even know where to start solving it. Without proof Yara won't believe me, it's my word against Munei's. She has already planted seed of doubt

My phone rang, it was Amelia

Me: Amy

Her: Where are you at?

Me: I am parking outside Yara's apartment

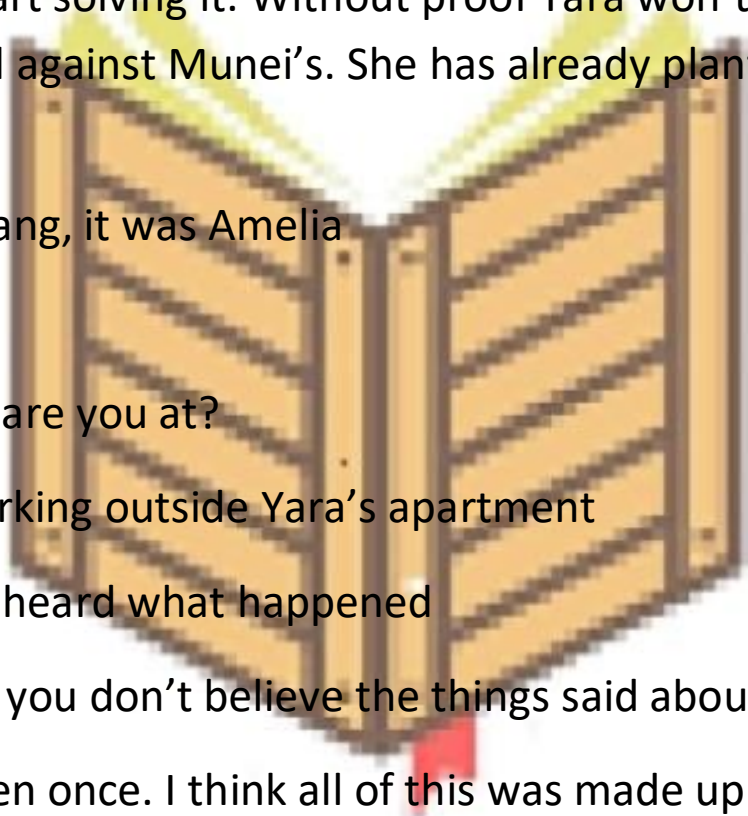
Her: Okay, I heard what happened

Me: Tell me you don't believe the things said about me?

Her: Not even once. I think all of this was made up to separate you and Yara and mom might be the mastermind. We all can't pretend that she never loved Yara and since when do you get drunk from drinking scotch?

Me: You are right. Is Munei still in the house?

Her: No, she has left



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: So it's up to us to find out if really Mimsey was behind this

Her: Yes

TYSON

Me: Do you still need us to eat out?

Mulalo: Yes, we are already here so we might as well

Me: Ha Mulalo, I wanna go home and rest

Her: Come on brother

We got out of the car

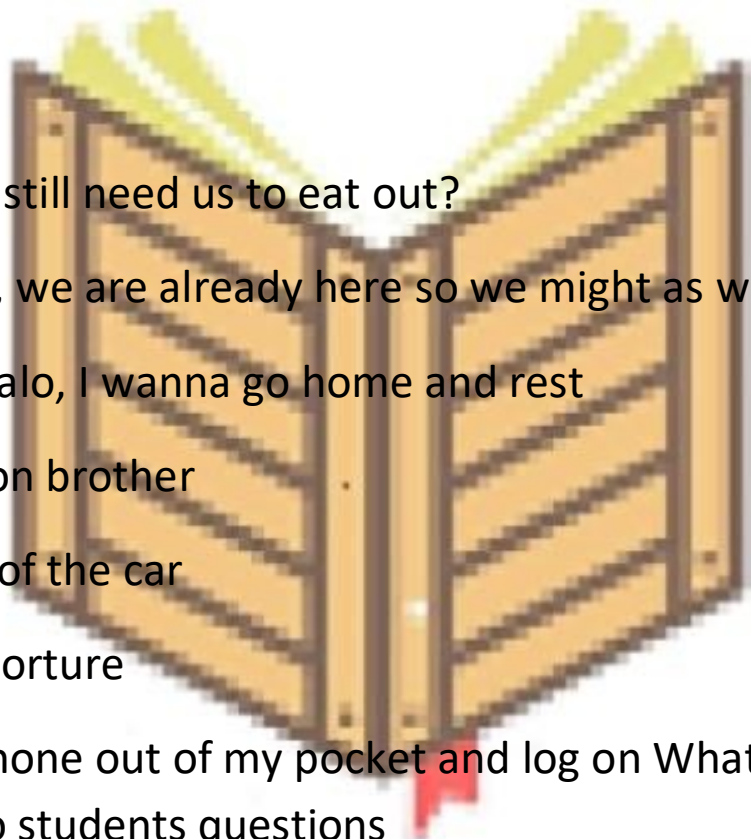
Me: This is torture

I took my phone out of my pocket and log on WhatsApp,  
attending to students questions

Her: And now you are stuck on your phone?

Me: I am attending to some questions; I will be with you in a  
sec

Her: You will find me inside



NOVELSGURU.COM

I nodded and kept my focus on my phone

As I moved away the car I bumped into someone

Voice: I am so sorry

Me: No, sorry I was on my phone

Voice: I was too

We looked at each other and laughed

She picked her cell phone

Me: Is it damaged?

She slowly nodded

Me: I am sorry; let me take a look at it

She gave the phone

Her: It's fine, I will have it repaired. Don't stress about it

Me: Okay if you insist

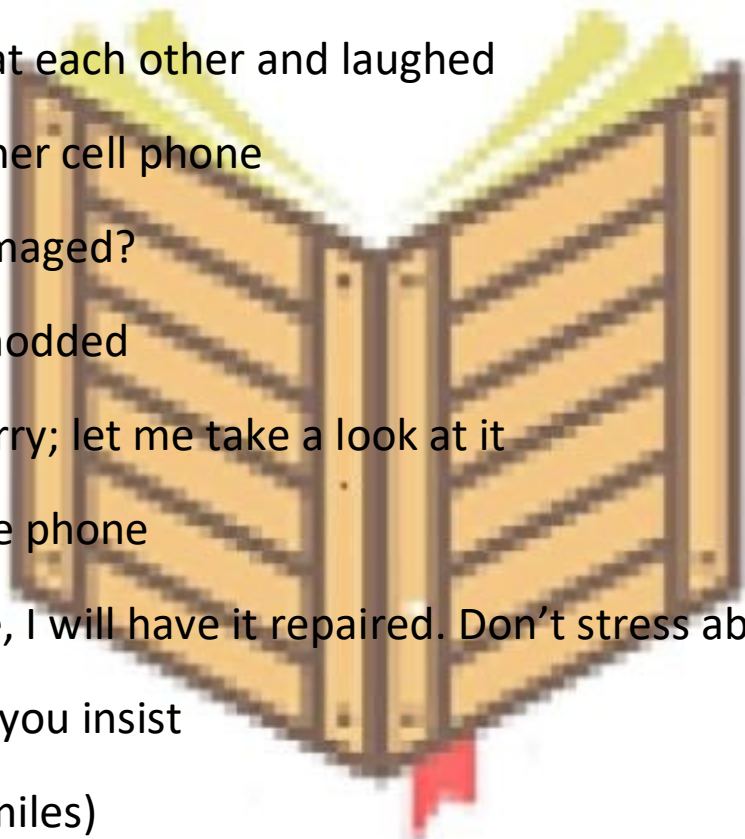
Her: I do (Smiles)

Me: Can I at least take you out for lunch to say sorry?

She smiled at me

Her: I'd love that

Me: Tyson



NOVELSOURU.COM

Her: Munei

YARA

I held cup between both hands and took a sip

I am emotionally drained; no matter what I do I still can't register what happened earlier in my head. A part of me wanna believe Ayden because I know he would never do anything to hurt me but another part can't turn a blind eye to the fact that before Ayden's family I will always be this poor girl, who is after their money. Sophia will never accept me and she will do whatever it takes to always come between us. I don't need stress, I just want peace

Mimi: You feeling better now?

Me: Far from it but I will be fine

Her: You have to

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

(Knock on door)

Mimi went to the door and opened

Her: You gotta be kidding me

Him: I need to see Yara

He walked inside

Her: You have some nerve to come here after what you've done

Him: I am not here to fight; I just wanna talk with Yara. We need clear the air

Me: Ayden, I already said what I wanted to say. We have nothing to talk about now

Him: We can't end things like this; we can't give up on our love

Me: I am not doing any of that, I just need time to breathe and be alone. The only thing that connect us right now is work which of course I am expecting you to respect it

Him: I don't want to lose you

(Footsteps approaching)

It better not be who I think it is

Me: Leave Ayden please. Just respect my decision

NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice: You gotta be kidding me. What are you doing here?

Panther stood at the door with box of pizza in his hands

Ayden: Brother, I came to talk with Yara

Viper: Get out Tooth!

Panther set the pizza on the table

Panther: After you humiliated him? I told you to never hurt her but it didn't take you long to do that

Ayden: But I didn't cheat on her

Viper: What do you call what she saw?

Ayden: Everything was a set up

Panther: Show us something that you were drugged

Ayden: I was not drugged, I was drunk

Me: That's your cue to leave Ayden. If indeed we were set up then it shows we were not meant to be. That's why they saw it fit to play with our relationship

Viper: You heard her, leave Tooth

Ayden: I am not leaving

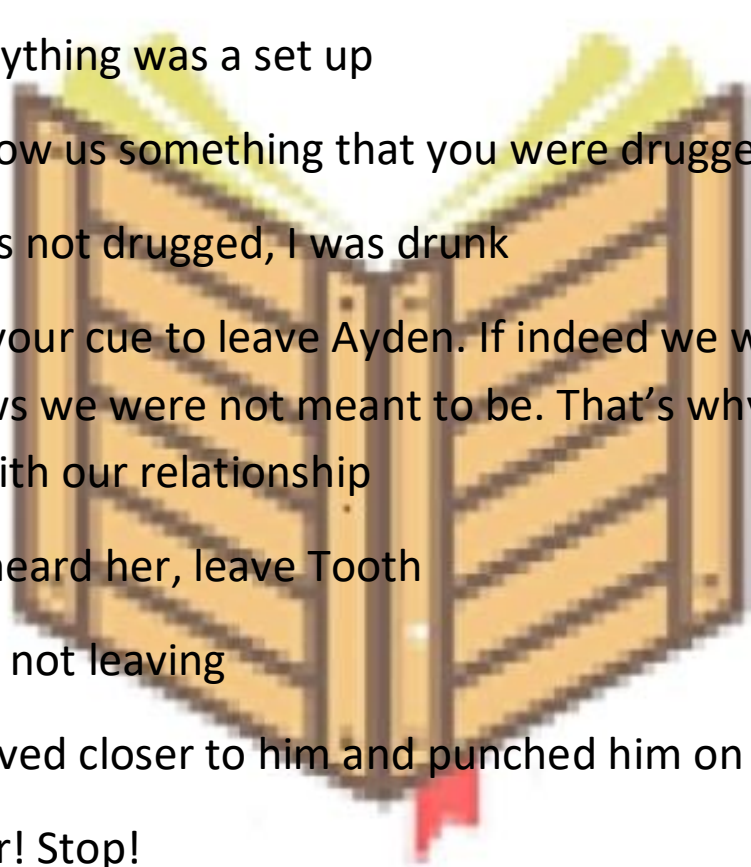
Panther moved closer to him and punched him on the face

Me: Panther! Stop!

Viper held Ayden and Panther punched him again this time very hard

Me: Mimi, we have to do something

Mimi: How do we get involve in that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

If I don't intervene they are going to kill him

I walked to them and grabbed Panther's hand

Me: He is still your friend, stop. Please

Ayden coughed and Viper let go of him

MUNEI

I held the contact card and smiled

I took my phone out and texted Tyson

|I arrived safe and sound in the hotel|

I sat on the couch and continued smiling

My phone rang

Him: Wow, answered right away

Me: It was in my hand (Laughs)

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)



NOVELSGURU.COM



Amelia was very much upset with me, she is not backing down on thinking I planned all of this

I might have celebrated too early

(Door closes)

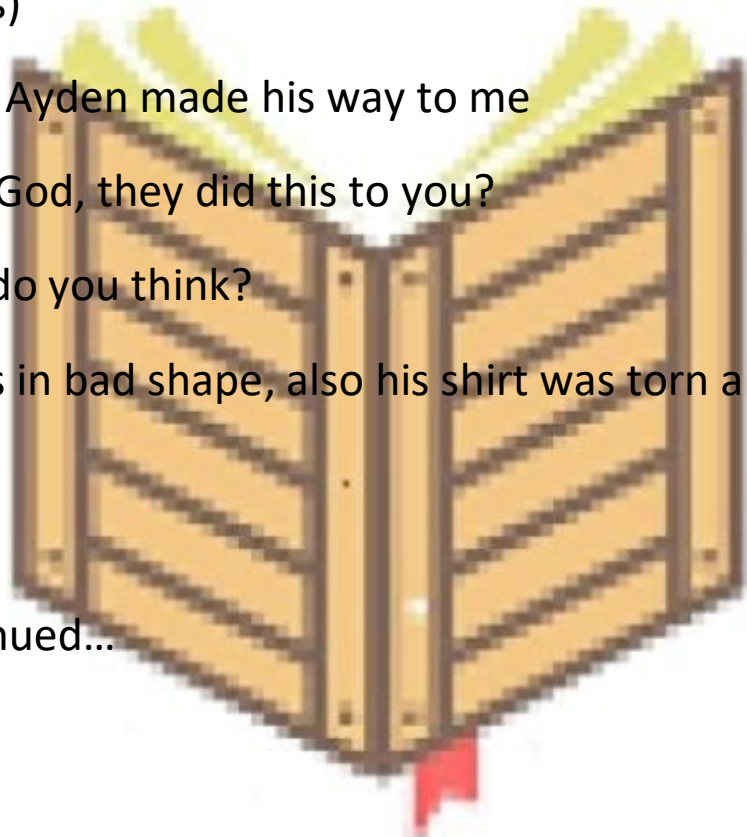
I stood up... Ayden made his way to me

Me: Oh my God, they did this to you?

Him: What do you think?

His face was in bad shape, also his shirt was torn apart

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I literally spent the whole weekend in bed ignoring Ayden's calls and messages

I've lost count of his messages, and when he saw he was not getting my attention he started sending flowers after every three hours. Asking for my forgiveness and promising to fight for us and get the proof that Munei and Sophia planned this. I am really not surprised that Sophia might have a hand in this I mean Dragon lady already showed me that she doesn't love me. I have to give it to her though, she deserves an Oscar. What put my mind at ease about this whole thing is to know that Ayden didn't sleep with Munei I arrived in time. But another boring thing is the crack in my brother's friendship with Ayden. They are refusing to even work with him before he shows them that he's innocent. This is probably the hardest test in our relationship

NOVELSGURU.COM

(Cell phone rings) it's my mother

Me: Mama

Ma: Yara, finally you answered my calls. The whole weekend your phone was off, I had to talk with your sister to know that you are fine

Me: Sorry Mama, I didn't mean to upset you

Ma: Kanti, what's going on there?

Me: Nothing, everything is fine

I don't want to tell my mother what is going on. She will be stressed and stress is not good for her BP

Me: I am just busy with work, nothing major. How are things there with Aunty Rosetta?

Ma: You know your aunty

I laughed

Ma: She is forever complaining

(Knock on door)

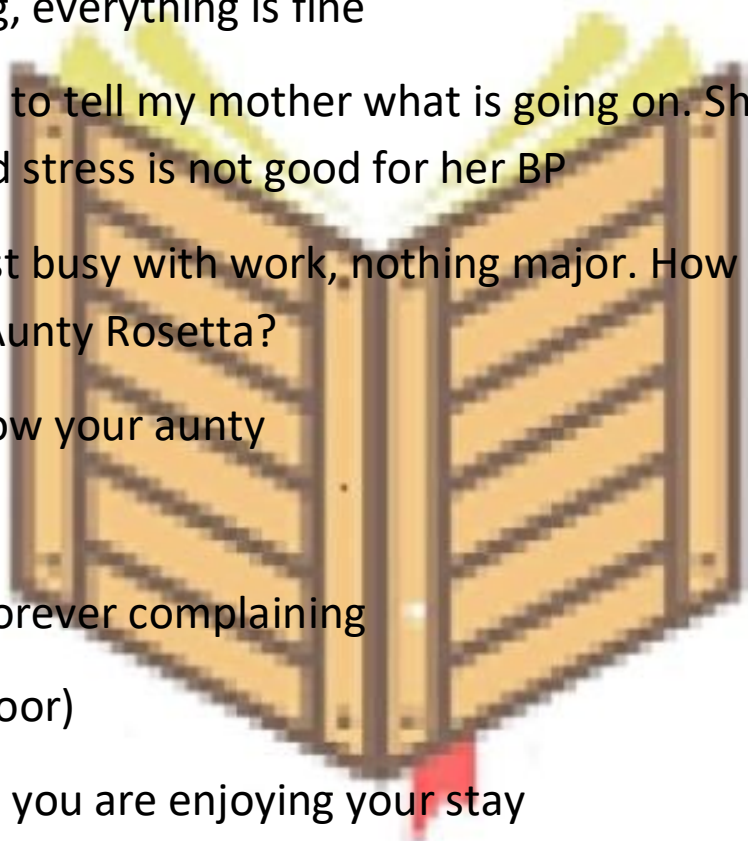
Me: At least you are enjoying your stay

I went to the door and found no one but the rose and a card

Me: Mama, can I please call you back?

Ma: Okay

I hung up



|I can't wait to see you at work, and please come to work. I really wanna see you Shawty|

He will not give up!

MIMI

I grabbed my handbag and walked out of the bedroom

Me: Buhle (Shouts)

I opened her bedroom door and stood at the door

Me: Are you done?

Her: Almost

Me: I will be waiting

I closed the door

I rang Ethan

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Cuddles

Him: Morning

Me: How are you?



Him: Good and you?

Me: Good. And the twins how are they?

He sighed loudly

Him: Not so good

This Yara's situation messed up the twins' mood, they were looking forward to spend the weekend with Ayden and Yara but when we told them that won't happened they were hurt. Also Yara wasn't a good company she didn't even talk with, she just sent them messages

Him: They will be fine; they need to get use to disappointments. This world is full of those

Me: They are just kids they don't understand a thing

Him: They will... Anyway my mother invited you for lunch today, you will make it?

Me: Yes, today it's our last day of training so I am sure Puleng will spare me few hours

NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Yara hasn't come into my office since she got here, I am even scared to go and see her. She can breathe fire if she wants to I've been trying to find answers to this mystery with the help of Amelia, and so far it's a dead end. There's no sign of Munei and Mimsey said she doesn't know where she went. Even my calls are not going through I don't want to talk about Panther and Viper they are still furious at me. I feel like I've lost my brothers forever

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

My Shawty walked in

Advertisement

my heart started to beat fast

Her: Morning Mr A

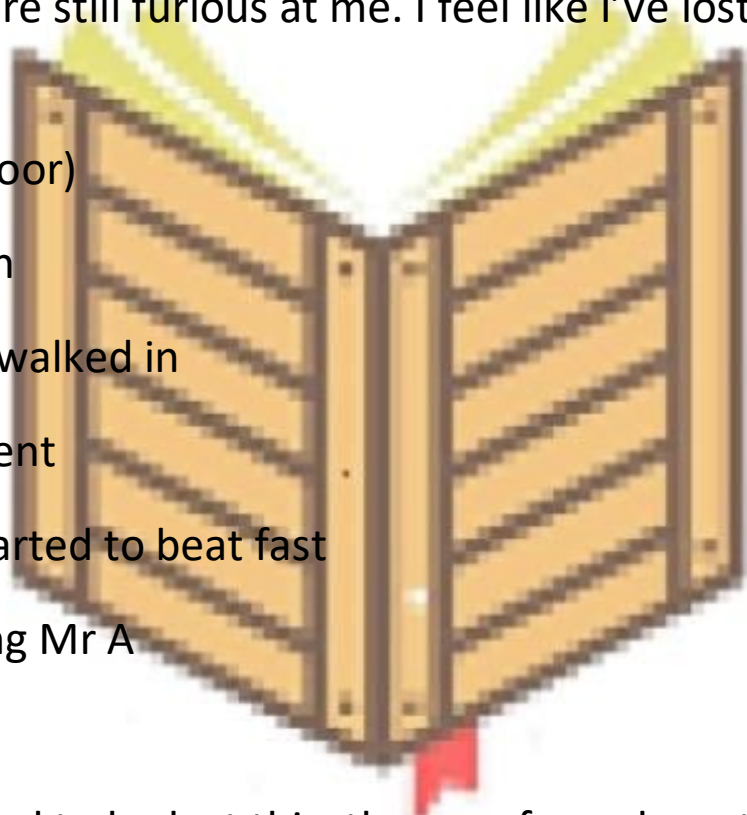
Me: Miss M

Her: You need to look at this; they are from department of finance. Your signature is requested

Me: Thank you

Her: Should I wait for them or you will call me?

Me: I will call you



NOVELSOURU.COM

She didn't think twice before turning around

Me: I miss you

She stopped on her tracks

Me: I am dying to touch and hug you Miss M, please talk with me

Her: I asked us to be professional and you agreed. I need this job Mr A and I don't want to lose it so please...

Me: You are not losing your job I just want us to talk

Her: When I am ready we will talk

Me: I have to wait until when?

Her: Until my heart soften

Me: I guess I deserve this; after all we are here because of my stupidity and trusting too much

Her: Let me get back to my work

She walked away



NOVELSGURU.COM

TYSON

I was going through the answer sheets and one was missing,  
Yara's script is not amongst this ones

She hasn't submitted and it's unlike her to do something of this  
nature

I dialled her number on the telephone

Me: Miss Masia

Her: Speaking...

Me: Mr Munyai here, I don't see your script and Saturday was  
the due date

Her: Oh due date? I forgot about it Sir

Me: You forgot about it? Everyone was reminded on the group

Her: I am sorry but I haven't been online through the weekend

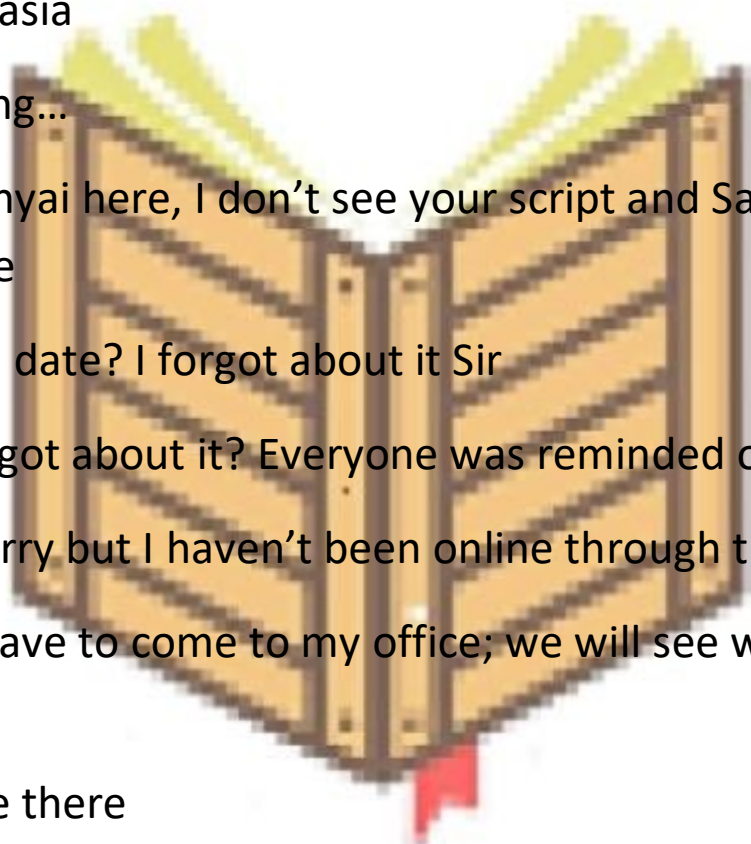
Me: You'll have to come to my office; we will see what we can  
do about it

Her: I will be there

Me: Okay, I will see you when you come by

I hung up

I leaned against the chair and one person popped in my mind





I am so taken by Munei, I don't know but she is so much fun and I am very comfortable around her. We spent the whole Sunday together and it was the best Sunday of my life

MUNEI

I looked at my ringing cell phone and ignored it

Sophia has been calling me all weekend and I really don't wanna talk with her. I am trying to collect myself and focus in my newly found friendship. Spending time with Tyson has changed my way of thinking, he is an honest man and I am just full of lies and deception. I am starting to feel guilty about what I've done I wish I meet Tyson before I agreed to help Sophia with her sick plan. Because now I am feeling the love I was seeking from Ayden, maybe Tyson is what I've been waiting for

NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I stepped inside Tyson's office

Me: Good day

He stood up

Him: I thought you weren't coming

Me: Delay at work

Him: I see. Now, let's take. Why didn't you submit your assignment? Everyone has expect you

I sighed loudly

Me: I totally forgot about it, I didn't have a great weekend

Him: Wanna talk about it?

Me: You don't wanna listen to my problems like seriously

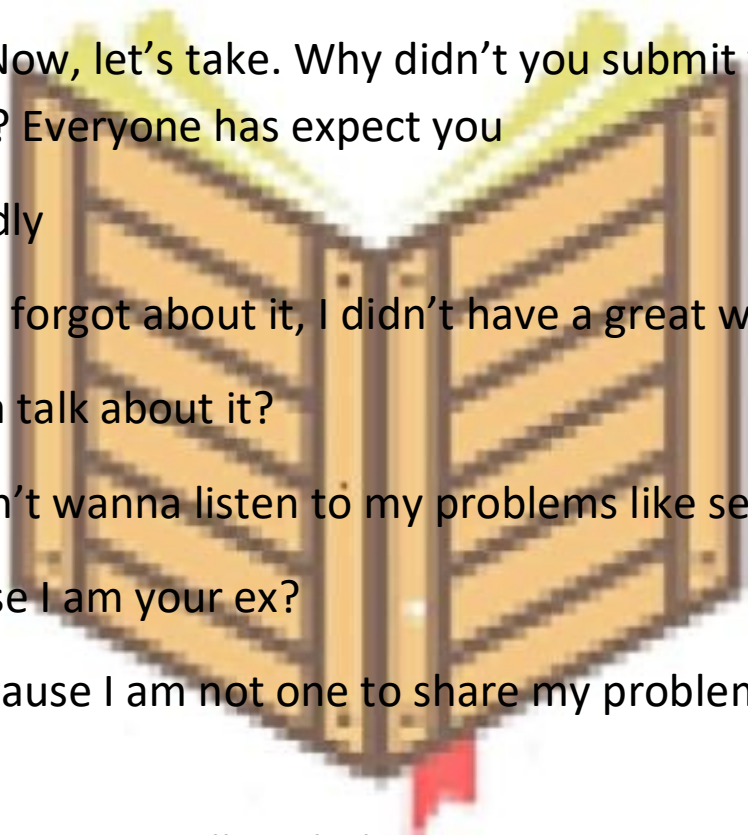
Him: Because I am your ex?

Me: No, because I am not one to share my problems and you know that

Him: But sometimes talking helps...

Me: The thing is, my boyfriend and I are having problems and there's another girl involved and you know how hectic it is to fight such things

Him: Vey hard but you shouldn't let that distract you from your school work



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I know and I am sorry, it will never happen again. It's a shame I couldn't submit this one

Him: I can make an exception for you

Me: Really? Thank you

I hugged him

Him: Easy but you are welcome

Me: You have no idea how much this means to me

He chuckled and broke the hug

Me: Why are you chuckling?

Him: I am just thinking about something silly

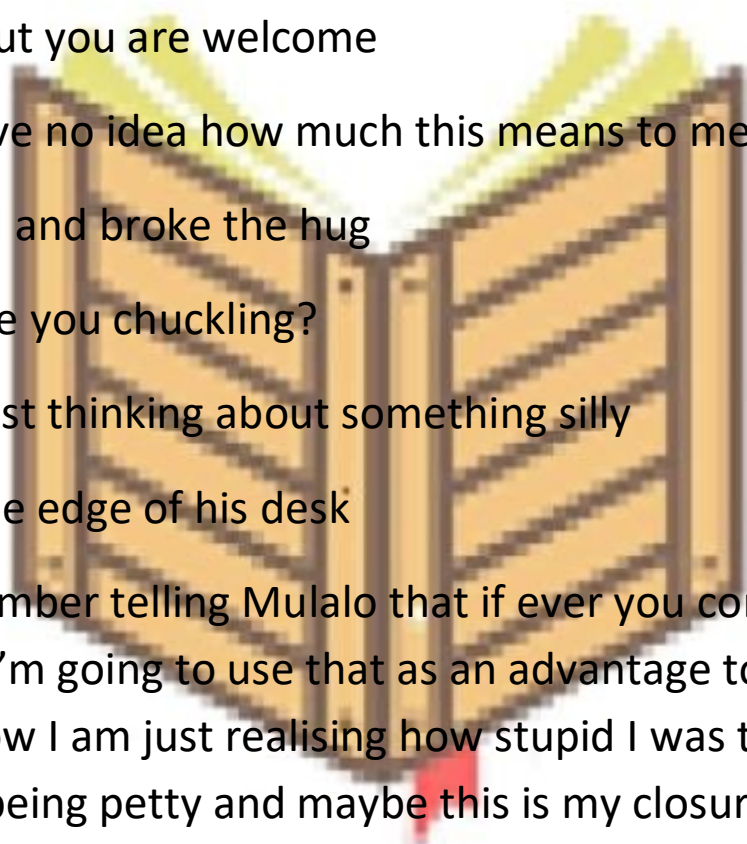
He sat on the edge of his desk

Him: I remember telling Mulalo that if ever you come to me vulnerable I'm going to use that as an advantage to win you back and now I am just realising how stupid I was to even think that. I was being petty and maybe this is my closure

Me: I thought you already had your closure

Him: No, I thought maybe we will get back together but now I can see I no longer love you. I am not saying this to hurt you

Me: No, I am not hurt. The feeling is mutual and like I said before maybe we were never meant to be



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You are right. And it would really hurt me to see history repeating itself. Getting hurt all over again

Me: I am used to pain, I will be strong

He nodded slowly

Him: The assignment, how far are you?

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ETHAN

My mother was helping me in setting the table

I am looking forward to spend a day with Mimi and her. Her visit here is really doing well on her relationship with Mimi, they click but what was I thinking? Mimi is a bubble person

Mrs L: I talked with your brother last night

Me: Mh, he is nagging you to come back home?

Mrs L: He sure is

Me: My brother doesn't want to grow up; he will always be mommy's boy

(Door closes)

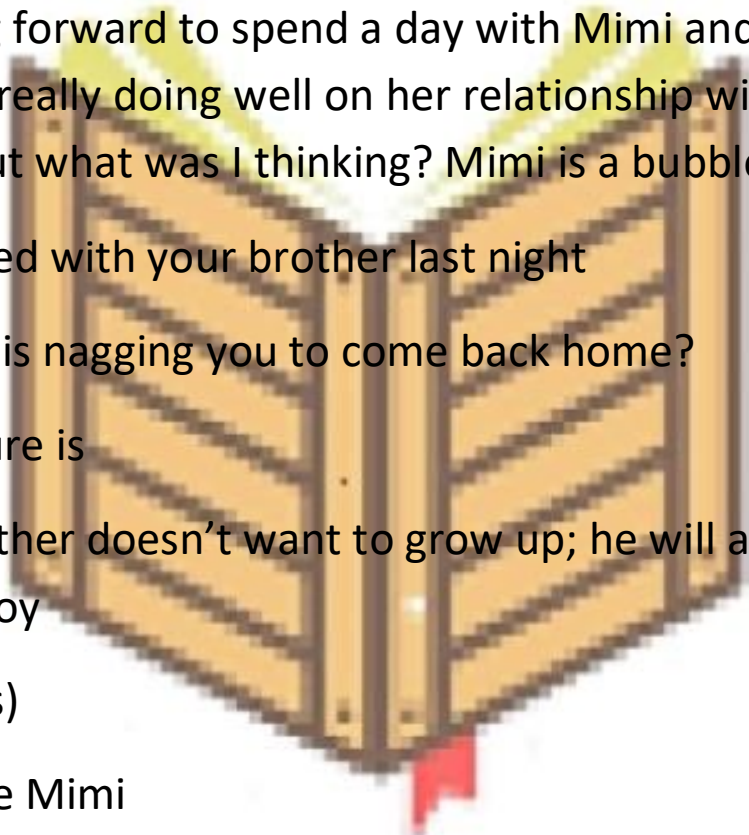
Me: Must be Mimi

Mimi walked in with plastic smiling as always

Her: Good day

Mrs L: My daughter

Me: Babe



She placed the plastic on the table

Her: Some things for the twins

Me: Thank you, they love goodies

Mrs L: The way you spoil them with junk food, oh God

Her: Not all the time Mama

Me: Mom, can you finish up here? I just wanna have a word with Mimi

Mrs L: Go ahead

I looked at Mimi; we walked out of the kitchen

We made our way to the bedroom

Me: I miss you so much

I pinned her against the wall and kissed her

Her: You not thinking what I am thinking are you?

Me: Thinking exactly that

I squeezed her butt and kissed her on the neck going down

Her: God Ethan! Your mother will know what we did

Me: So?

Her: I will be so embarrassed to look

Me: Stop talking



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

Viper patted me on the back

Me: Brother

Him: Hey

Me: What brings you here?

Him: Want us to talk about Ayden

My mood changed

Me: What about him?

Him: When last did you talk with him?

Me: Friday and no Craig I have no intentions of talking with him

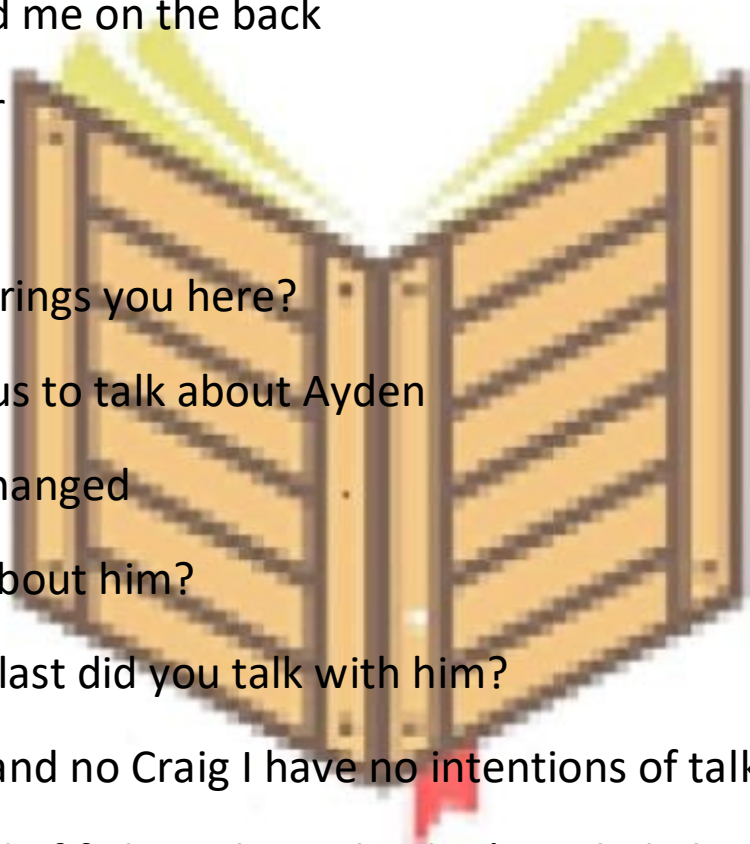
Him: Instead of fighting him why don't we help him clear his name to Yara?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: He is not only trying to clear his name to Yara but us too

Him: I don't know but I feel like he is being honest

I looked at him



Me: Why do you think I haven't put a bullet between his eyes?

Him: You believe him?

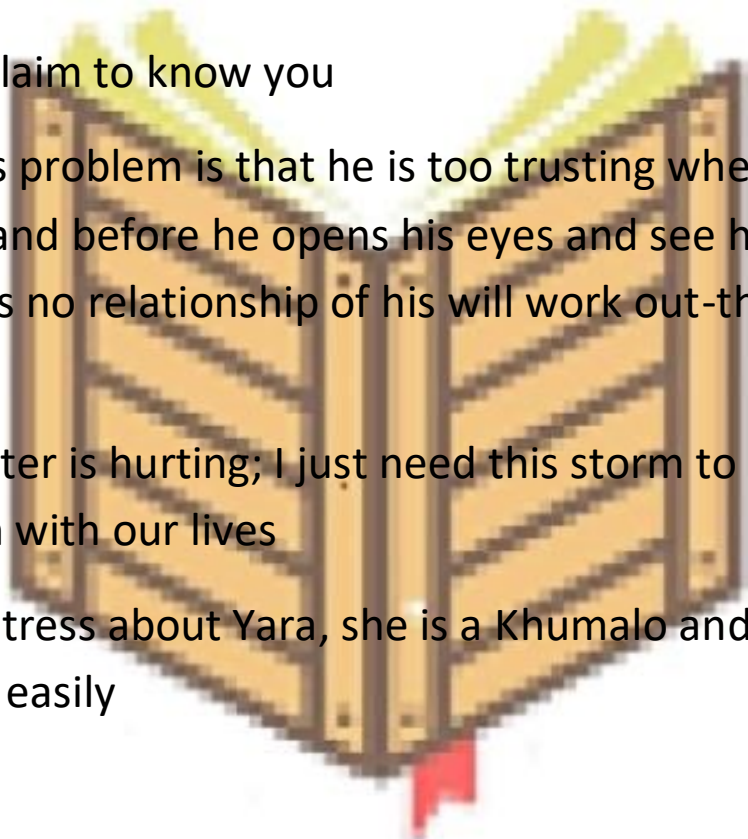
Me: I do but I will not let him get off so easily. Whatever that happens in that house hurt our baby sister and we have to support her even if it means hurting Ayden. If he is really smart as he claims then he will clear his name and we all move on

Him: And I claim to know you

Me: Ayden's problem is that he is too trusting when it comes to his mother and before he opens his eyes and see her for what she is truly is no relationship of his will work out-this one included

Him: Our sister is hurting; I just need this storm to clear so that we move on with our lives

Me: Don't stress about Yara, she is a Khumalo and we don't break down easily



YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM



I am really grateful for Tyson, if he had not given me a second chance I was going to fail and without high marks my Cass will remain poor

I am really stressing about what's happening between Ayden and me. And it's starting to cost me lot of things

My phone rang... Either my eyes are deceiving me or this woman has shares with the Devil

Me: What in the Devil's name are you calling me?

Her: I want to know how you feeling, the last time I saw you, you were not in a good space

Me: Are you surprised?

Her: No

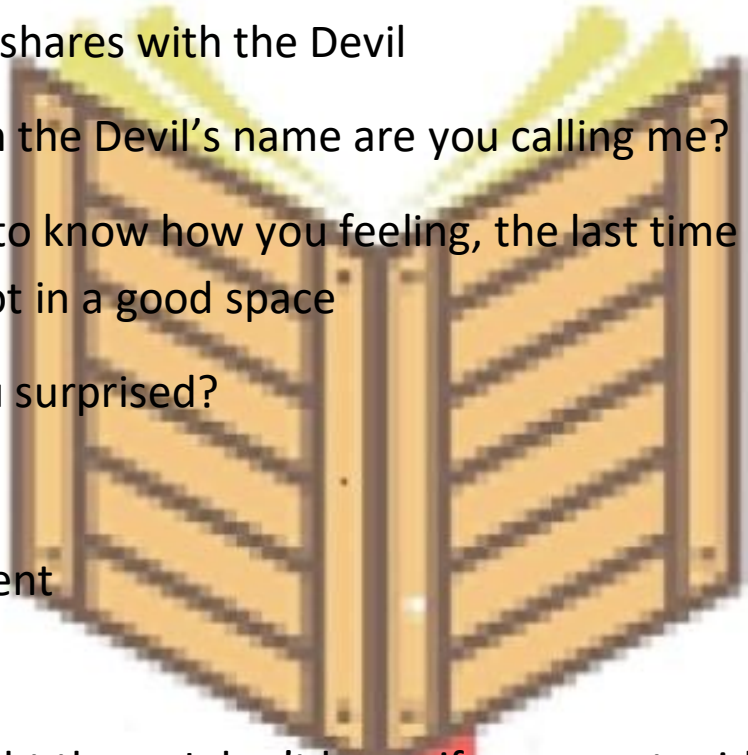
Advertisement

it's just...

Me: Stop right there, I don't know if you are stupid or claim to be or if you think I am the stupid one but Sophia your time to manipulate me is over. I am over the days of you sweet talking me

Her: How can you say such a thing to me Yara?

Me: You deserve that and a whole lot more; you are nothing but a green snake in a green grass just waiting to attack. I



NOVELSGURU.COM

meant what I said that day you know that? Everything I said about you and your family I was not joking

Her: I always knew you were hiding your real character and I am happy my son cheated on you

I laughed softly

Me: And that's the real Sophia, the conniving and vindictive Sophia. It must have been very hard trying to be someone you are not, but I have to give it to you. You are the best

Her: You are so naïve my girl and it took me long to finally remove you from my family

Me: To remove me? Oh you think you have removed me? No, mommy! You didn't, Ayden is still very much my boyfriend and you are still going to see us together. And the set up thing with Munei that was actually poor acting next time try something convincing

She kept quiet

Me: Play far from me and my relationship because next time you try a stunt like that I might unleash my dogs and you don't wanna know what they are capable of

I hung up

Nonsense!

AYDEN

Amelia barged in my office

Me: Really Amelia?

Her: Sorry but you need to see this

Me: What?

She buried deep her hand inside her handbag

Her: I found this in Mimsey's room. I think this is the drug that drugged you

I stood up

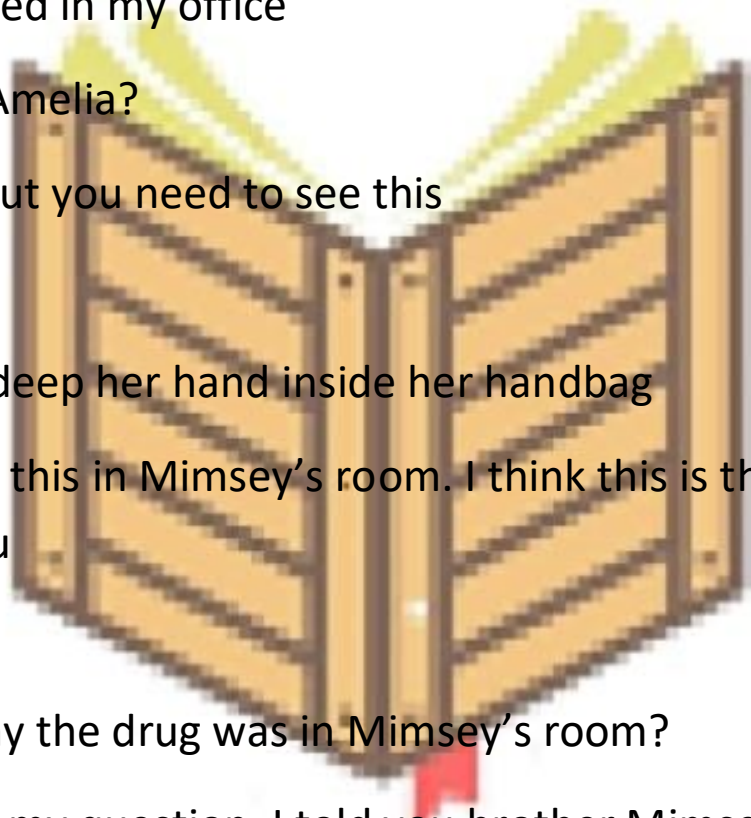
Me: And why the drug was in Mimsey's room?

Her: Exactly my question. I told you brother Mimsey planned the whole shit

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: And she fooled all of us, I don't believe it

Her: She's manipulative and she seem to do that very well with you



Me: I am so done with her; she went too far with the whole thing. My relationship is on the edge of collapsing and enjoying every minute of it. The Khumalo brothers want nothing to do with me because they think I hurt their sister

Her: But now you can prove to everyone that you didn't plan to hurt Yara

Me: Even if that's the case Amelia the doubt will always be there, whether I was drugged or not the fact is I let my guard down and broke the trust

Her: That doesn't matter, what matters is this

If I went to the Doctor and he said I wasn't drugged then how come this was found in the house?

Me: You know, I went to the Doctor and he drew my blood but the results came back negative

Her: Mimsey must have paid the Doctor. Wake up and smell the coffee

Me: it all makes sense now

NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Over the weekend I had unusual experience, I suddenly couldn't stomach the smell of eggs and some other foods. And when I checked my period calendar I realised I was two days late and that meant one thing

I sat on the floor and stared at the pregnancy test that was in my hand

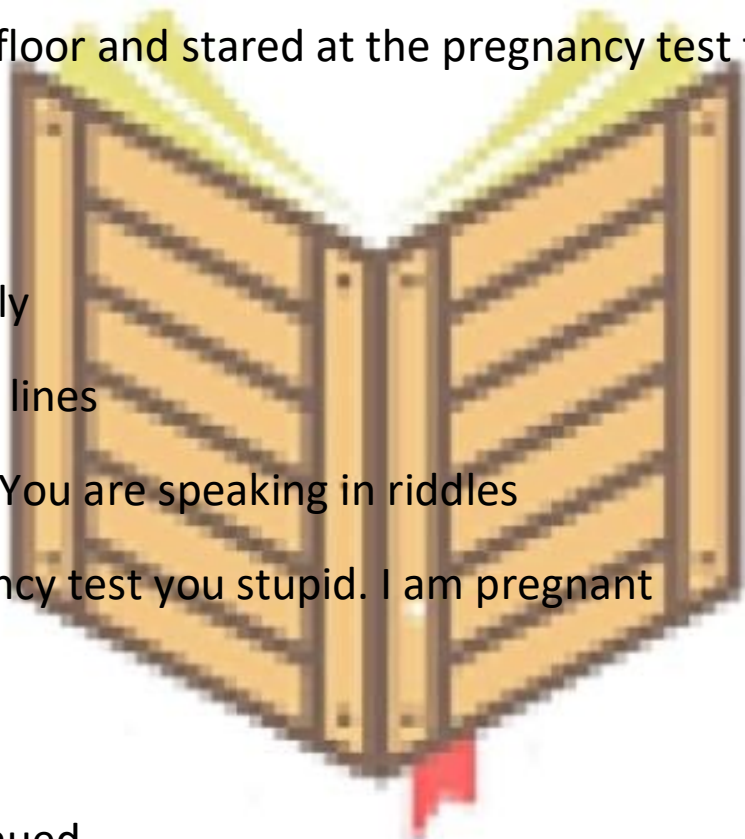
I rang Mimi

Her: Butterfly

Me: It's two lines

Her: What? You are speaking in riddles

Me: Pregnancy test you stupid. I am pregnant



To be continued...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I am feeling overwhelmed right now. I am actually pregnant, pregnant with Ayden's baby. We've been dating for only few months and now this? There's so much going on right now, and I don't even know how Ayden is going to take the news...

Pregnancy is something to be celebrated but I am here feeling all kind of emotions, not sure of what to do. What if Ayden is not ready for this responsibility? Trust "I'll put out" to pull a stunt like this

(Knock on door) I got up and went to open

Mimi stood at the door and smiled

Her: You disturbed my lunch with my mother-in-law, you know that?

Me: Rub it on my face. Come on in

She hugged me from behind

Her: So, you are carrying the Tshivhase heir?

Me: It turns out I am

Her: Are you not happy?

Me: I am happy but...

Her: But what?

Me: This is too much Mimi; a child is not child's play. I don't think I am ready for this responsibility...

Her: As long as you not thinking of abortion

Me: What? Never! I will never think of doing that

We sat on the couch

Me: This child might be exactly what Ayden and I are looking for or the opposite

Her: That stupid boyfriend of yours will be over the moon trust me

I laughed softly

Me: Is "Stupid" necessary? Leave Munchie alone

Her: Jokes aside, he will be very happy. But, someone will not be happy at all

Me: Dragon lady? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Yes, she will be breathing fire. She will wish for you to lose that child

Me: I don't care about her; she can go and jump off the cliff. And if Ayden is serious about us then he will have to tell his mother where to get off

Her: She must, I will hate to be arrested before I see my niece/nephew. You've been through a lot and no one is going to stop you from enjoying this pregnancy. Hell will freeze before I let that happen. Are you going to tell Ayden now?

Me: No, I will first go to the doctor and then tell him. I don't want to get him excited before I am 110% sure

Her: There's no need for that, you are definitely carrying little Munchie or Shawty in there

She looked at me and smiled

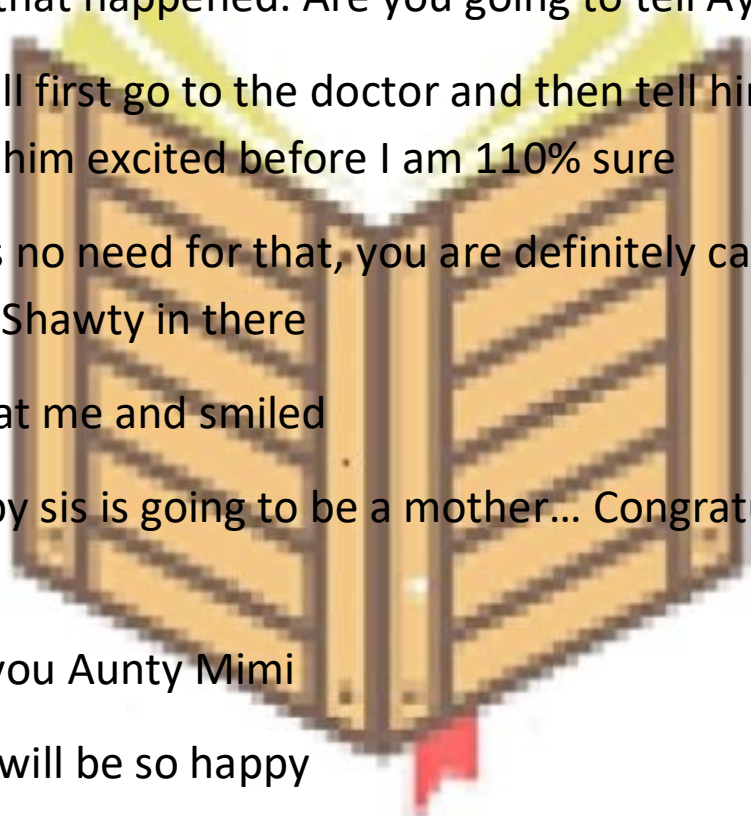
Her: My baby sis is going to be a mother... Congratulations Butterfly

Me: Thank you Aunty Mimi

Her: Mama will be so happy

Me: Let's video call her, I wanna see the look on her face

AYDEN



NOVELSGURU.COM



Amelia held my arm and made me look at her

Me: Let go of my arm Amelia

Her: You need to relax; you can't approach Mimsey when you are like this. You are only going to say things that you are going to regret later

Me: Mimsey deserve everything that is coming her way, she made a fool out of me Amelia. She came between me and what I lost most; she doesn't deserve to be called a mother

I ran my legs to the door and opened

Me: Mimsey (Shouts)

Amelia: Oh my God!

Me: Mimsey, get down now!

Mimsey know better than mess with me, she knows what I am capable of but still she went ahead and do this to me

Mimsey: What's going on here? Why are you shouting my name? Ayden, Amelia?

Me: What did I say to you about coming between me and Yara?

She looked straight into my eyes and knew I already know everything

Me: I asked you a question Mimsey, talk before I lose my cool!

Mimsey: I did what was right and I won't stand here and try to reason with you. What you should be doing is thanking me for what I've done, I saved you!

Me: You are not ashamed of what you've done? You went too far Mimsey!

I stepped closer to her and grabbed her arm

Amelia: Brother, please don't do this! I am begging you

Me: How could you do this to me? I expected you to support and be happy for me but you are doing the opposite of that. Tell me why Mimsey, how can you hurt me to this extent? I am your son!

Mimsey: I am opening your eyes because you are too blind to see the truth before you... That girl is not right for you and she will never be right for me, you can fool yourself all you want but she is not right for you

I twisted her arm and she flinched

Mimsey: You are hurting me Ayden, Amelia talk with your brother

Me: You deserve this and a whole lot more. You had no right to control my life

Advertisement

no right whatsoever! I love Yara; she is the only woman for me.  
Why can't you just be happy for me? For once in your life just  
be happy for me

Amelia: Ayden, stop!

Mimsey: You are willing to hurt your mother for that girl?

Me: This will show you how much I love her

Amelia put her hand on my shoulder

Amelia: Ayden, let go of her

Me: Why should I? She is not my mother; no mother can do  
what she has done to me.

I fixed my eyes on her

Me: Tell me, is it fun to humiliate and insult my girlfriend?

Mimsey: She is below our status; she is not suitable to be your  
girlfriend

I let go of her arm **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I love her regardless

A tear dropped

Me: I never wanna see you Mimsey, from today you no longer have a son. To me you are dead! You can keep the house or buy another one. You have money to feed the world!

Mimsey: Don't do this son

Me: Don't call me your son; you no longer have one as I no longer have a mother

She went down on her knees and cried

Mimsey: Amelia, talk with your brother

Amelia: You made your bed Mimsey now, lie on it

I kissed Amelia's forehead

Me: I will see you

Amelia: Where are you going?

Me: I need to cool off

Amelia: Please be safe

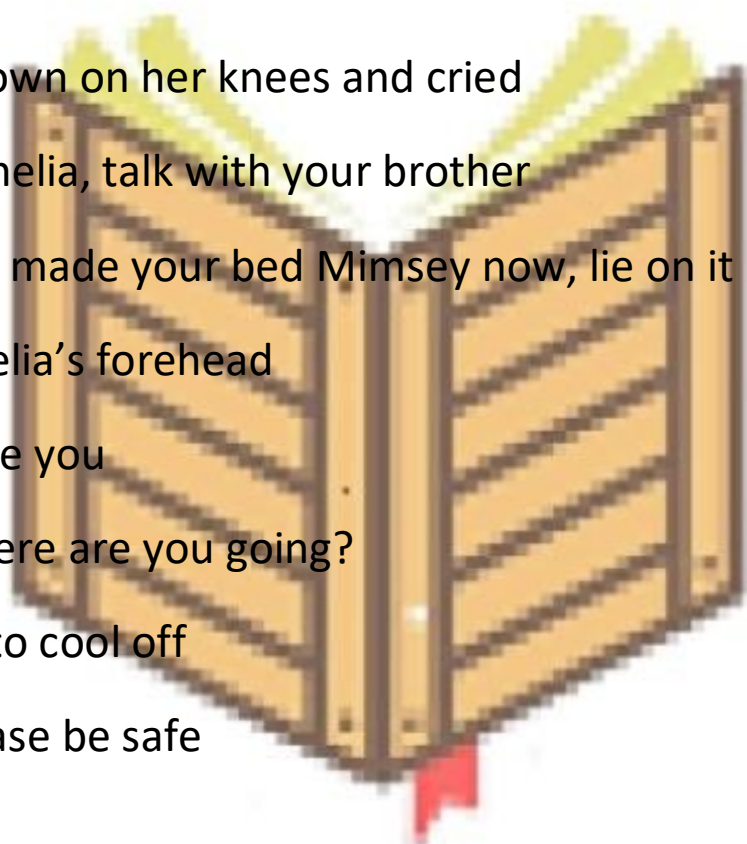
TYSON

I was having lunch with Munei

I looked at her, she was here but her mind was far

Me: Today you don't look happy, what's wrong?

Her: Mh



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I asked what's wrong with you

Her: I am fine

Me: You could have fooled me. Yesterday you were joyful and today you are burying yourself deep in thoughts

Her: Have you ever done something thinking it's right thing to do but regret it immediately?

Me: Not always but yes

Her: I've messed up big time and now I am regretting, I am literally the cause of lovers tears at the moment

Me: I am not following

Her: I did something bad in the name of love, one sided love. I came between lovers and separated them

Me: That's not a good thing, I might not know you but you don't look like someone who can stoop that low

Her: I know. Ever heard about crazy things that people do for love?

Me: All the time

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: That's what I did but in this case the guy didn't even love me, I was forcing things. Yara doesn't deserve what I did to her

Me: Wait a min, didn't you say Yara?

Her: Yes, you know her?

Me: I do. And don't tell me she is the girl you talking about

Her: It is her

Me: Unbelievable! How can you do something to hurt another woman? Yara is down to earth and what you did to her is despicable

Her: I can explain

I stood up

Me: Not interested, fix this before you think about us having something

Her: Tyson

She grabbed my arm

Me: Let go of my arm Munei

Her: I am going to fix this, I promise you

I shook my head and left



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

Panther: Baby sis

Me: Hey

He kissed my forehead

Him: How was your day?

Me: Coming to terms with what has happened

Him: Stop stressing yourself

Me: I don't like the fact that I came between you and Ayden, I feel bad

Him: Don't stress about us, we've had fights before and we always come out strong. Right now I just want to make sure that you are fine

Me: I am fine

Him: And Sophia hasn't bothered you?

Me: As if she can contain herself. She called me today

Him: She doesn't know when to stop, neh?

Me: I am starting to think she is suffering from middle life crisis. But after today I doubt she will ever bother me. I told her where to get off; I was tired of her abuse

Him: It was about time; Sophia has to know that she doesn't own the world

Me: Amen to that

I walked to the kitchen

Me: You having dinner with me tonight?

Him: What are you cooking?

Me: It's a surprise

(Cell phone rings) It's Amelia

Me: Hello

Her: Yara (Sobs) something happened

Me: Amelia, are you crying?

Panther stood at the door

Her: It's Ayden, he is in hospital. He was in car accident (Crying)

Me: What!

Panther walked up to me

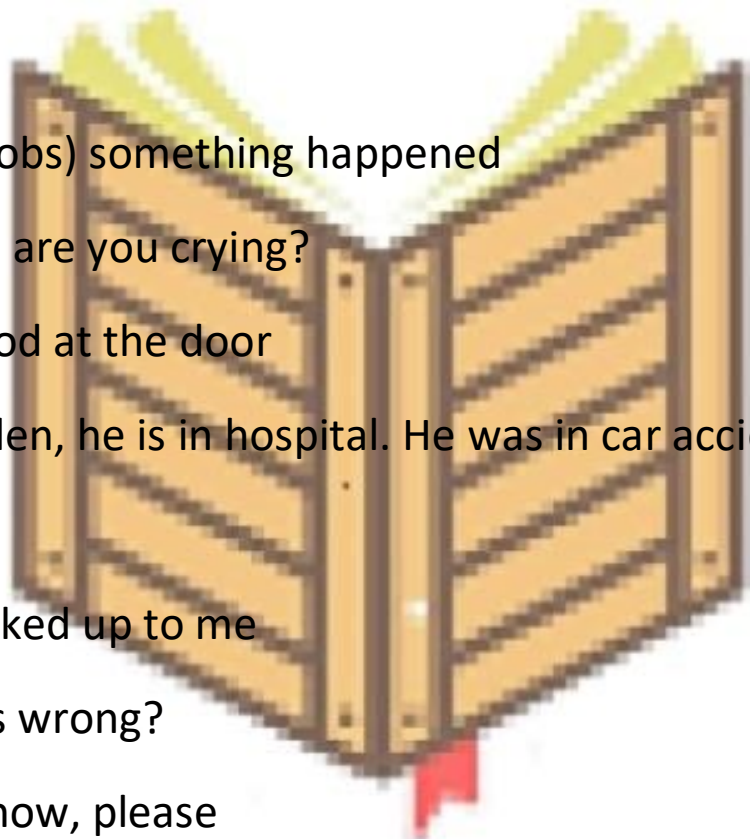
Him: What's wrong?

Her: Come now, please

I let go of the phone

Me: It's Ayden

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM



MIMSEY

I slowly opened my eyes and stretched my arms

I ran my eyes around and Amelia wasn't in the sight...

Me: Oh God!

Amelia made her way to me

Her: You are awake? Here's coffee

Me: Thank you

Her: Don't you think you should go home and rest? I will stay behind and wait for the Doctor

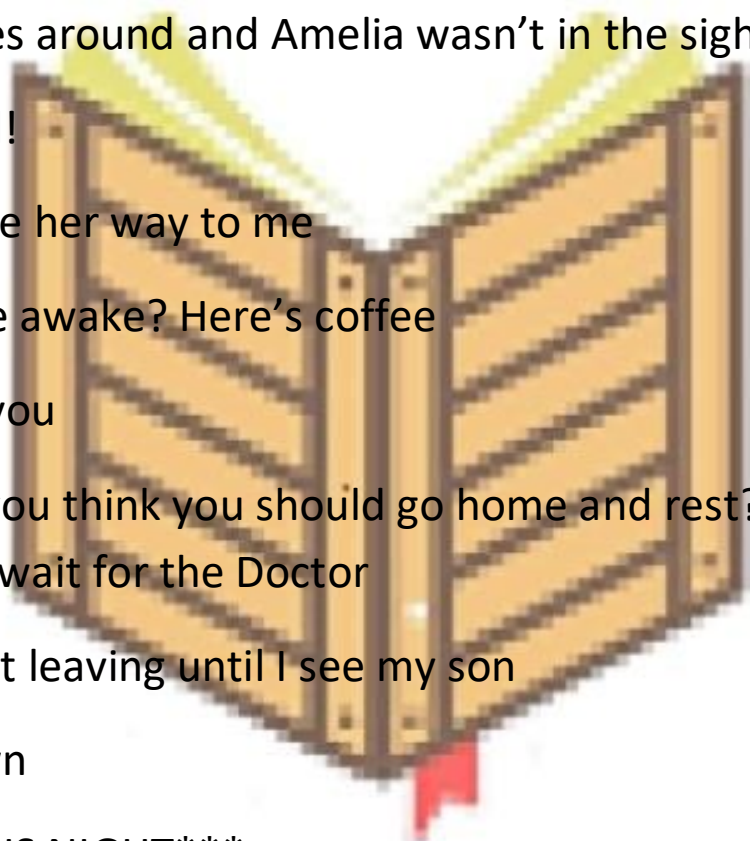
Me: I am not leaving until I see my son

She sat down

\*\*\*PREVIOUS NIGHT\*\*\*

I was pacing up and down

When Paramedics called saying Ayden was involved in a car accident I felt like someone was cutting my insides. I don't know what Ayden was thinking to drive like a manic, he know



better than driving when he is angry. I will never forgive myself if something happened to my son, I will never!

The doctor made his way to us

Amelia held my hand as we wait for the doctor to give us news

Doctor: Are you Mr Tshivhase's family?

We nodded in agreement

Me: How is my son Doctor?

Doctor: We are doing our very best to save your son, he has lost lot of blood but worry less we stopped the bleeding. We are assuming he slammed against the steering wheel or side door because his head and neck is injured...

Amelia: The head? Is it serious? We've heard stories about head injuries

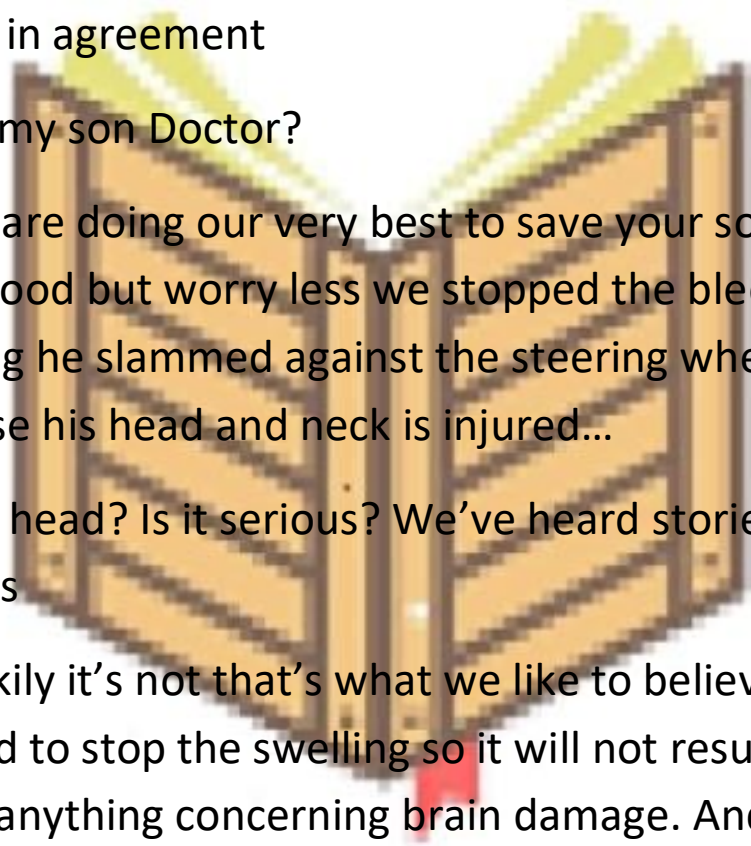
Doctor: Luckily it's not that's what we like to believe right now; we managed to stop the swelling so it will not results in amnesia or anything concerning brain damage. And as for the neck it can result in paralysis

I took a deep breath

Yara and Panther made their way to us running

Me: And, what are you doing here? Did you call her Amelia?

Amelia: Yes, I did



Me: My son is in there because of you, it's your fault that my son is fighting for his life

Panther: Sophia, we didn't come here to cause problems so please contain yourself. You are only embarrassing yourself

Panther looked at the doctor

Panther: How is he?

Doctor: As I was telling them, Mr Tshivhase slammed the steering wheel and injured his head and neck. As for his internal injuries we managed to stop internal bleeding. His car caught fire and his arm got burnt, his leg is fractured and broken ribs. He will need surgery but we also can't rule out possibilities of his leg not functioning

Yara staggered back

Yara: What?

Me: Don't say what, if Ayden wasn't angry he would have never got inside that car and drove off like a manic

Yara: Don't act like you have nothing to do with this

Panther held her back

Doctor: I will suggest you go home and rest, right now there's nothing you can do for him

Me: Do whatever it takes to save my son

“Doctor Masango, you are needed in theatre right now” the doctor got paged

The doctor turned around and ran to the theatre

Yara: Oh God, Panther, he can't die. Not now, please God

Panther: Shush, stop crying. They will save him, okay?

Me: They will save him, they will save him! This is bull!

Amelia: Mimsey, can you just keep quiet (Shouts)

I turned and looked at Yara

Me: As for you, I want you to leave at this moment. I want you far from my son

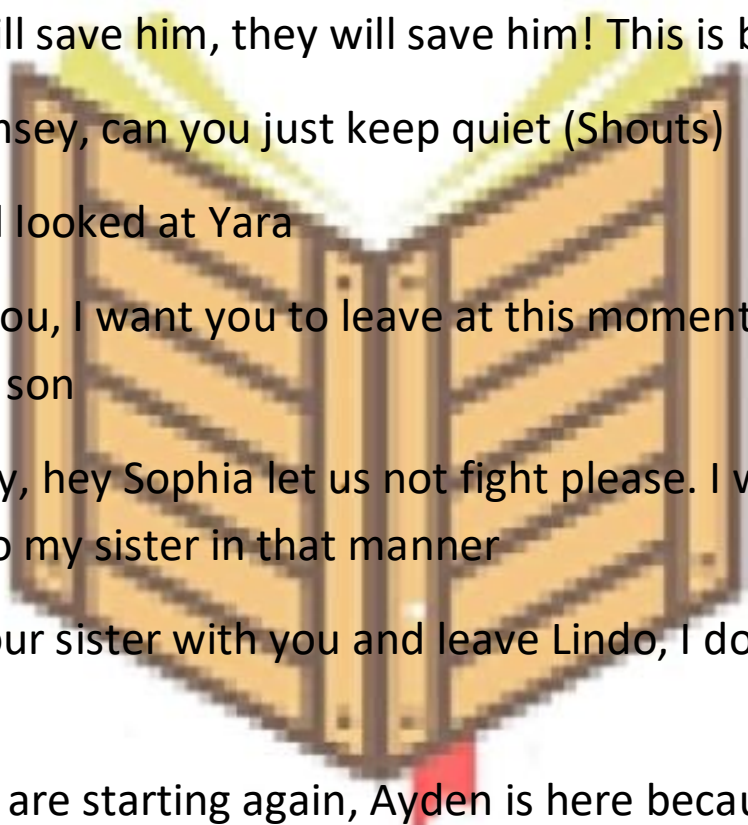
Panther: Hey, hey Sophia let us not fight please. I will not let you speak to my sister in that manner

Me: Take your sister with you and leave Lindo, I don't want to see her

Amelia: You are starting again, Ayden is here because of you but you still stirring trouble for every one

Yara: Let her be Amelia... Let's go brother, I will see Ayden tomorrow

\*\*\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I want to see my son that's all. Where is the doctor anyway?

Amelia: Let me go and ask...

Me: He is coming

We stood up and met with the doctor halfway

Amelia: Doctor, how is my brother?

Me: Please tell me the surgery was a success

Doctor: Your son is very lucky Mrs Tshivhase, the surgery went well. Mr Tshivhase is out of danger but we still can't tell on the risks we've told you about. The paralysis...

Me: Can we see him?

Doctor: No, he is in Coma at the moment

Me: Coma?

Doctor: Induced Coma, don't stress about it. We just want his body to rest and let antibiotics work. He will be out of it for some hours or a day

NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

I shook Yara who was sleeping on the couch

I can't believe she slept on the couch, she is feeling cold. Yara can be stubborn sometimes...

Me: Yara, wake up

She didn't move an inch

Me: Come on, you need to wake up

Her: Why haven't they said anything to us?

She sat up straight

Me: You know Sophia will never call you

get up! Go and take a shower. I will call Amelia; she will give us an update

Her: Why is this happening to me? Am I ever going to find peace and just enjoy my relationship with Ayden? It's one drama after the other, I am starting to think that I am cursed

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hauw Yara, you are not even close to curse. Take this as test to your relationship

(Knock on door)

Me: It must be Viper; he said he is on his way

I got up and went to the door

It was Munei

Me: Am I being tested? What are you doing here?

Munei: I wanna talk with Yara

Yara: Let her in

I looked at her and clicked my tongue

Munei: Yara, thank you for seeing me

Yara: What do you want?

Munei: I came here to tell you the truth, Ayden didn't try anything with me it was all made up. Sophia called me to come here and help her separate the two of you

Yara: And you thought it was a great idea to play along, do you have any idea how much of a damage you and Sophia caused?

Munei: I know there's nothing I can say right now that is going to make you forgive me but I thought you should know that Ayden is innocent and Sophia was behind everything...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Yara: I already know, and Ayden too

She raised her eyebrow

Yara stepped closer to her

Yara: As we speak now, Ayden is in hospital

Munei: What happened?

Me: Do you really care? I don't even know why my sister is giving you her time, you don't deserve it

Munei: Please tell me what happened to Ayden

Yara: He was involved in a car accident last night, all thanks to you and Sophia. Now my...

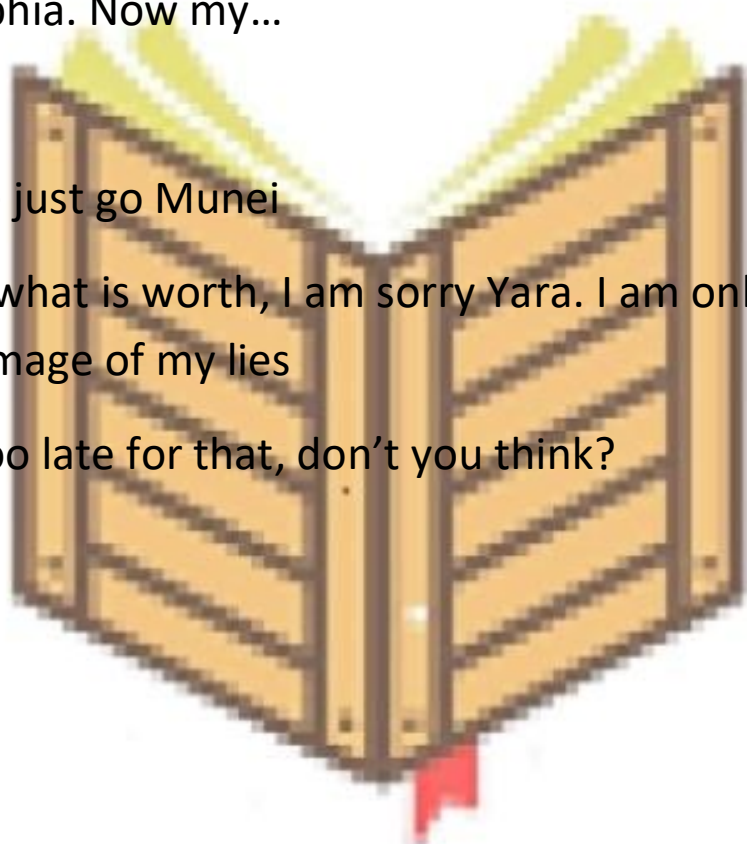
She sobbed

Yara: Please just go Munei

Munei: For what is worth, I am sorry Yara. I am only realizing now the damage of my lies

Me: Little too late for that, don't you think?

MIMI



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I was on the phone with my mother

Her: How is Yara?

Me: She is trying to be strong but all of this is taking a toll on her Mama



Her: I am coming back

Me: No, don't

Her: How can I stay here when my daughter is in need of my support mara Mimi?

Me: Mama, you are there to rest besides I am here to look after Yara

Her: She can't afford stress when she is pregnant Mimi, I am worried. If Yara lose the baby...

Me; Yara will not lose the baby, and Ayden is going to get better

Her: Eish (Sighs) I will pray for both of them

Me: Okay Mama, I will call you later. Right now I need to go and see Yara

Her: Tell her that I love her so much and God will give her strength to overcome this storm

Me: I will Mama, bye

She hung up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I closed the sliding door and walked inside the house

Alexa: Aunty?

I turned around and looked at her

Her: Aunt Yara doesn't love us anymore, right? That's why she doesn't wanna see us

Oh! Kids! How do you start to explain to them what is going on? They always feel unloved when you stop doing what they like. I also pray they don't feel left out when Yara will be spending lot of time with Ayden and her baby in few months to come

Me: No, she does

Her: When are we going to see her?

I crotched and looked at her

Me: Aunt Yara is not doing fine at the moment but when she does she will come and see you

Her: Is she going to fine?

Me: She will because she has so much to live for

Her: I miss her so much and Uncle T, they keep on cancelling our dates and it hurts Aunt Yara

Me: You will see them both soon

I hugged her

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I will take you to see Yara, okay?

She nodded in my arms

YARA

I was here but my mind was on Ayden, there's nothing I want right now than telling him how much I love him and want him to live for our child. Ayden can't die on me like this; this was never part of the plan. We still have so much to do and his death is not part of those things. Last night I barely slept whenever I closed my eyes I would see Ayden walking away from me shouting for help. And I can't even do anything to help him. Sophia is a witch and she keeps on proving how evil she is. The stress is not good for the baby, I don't wanna lose it. Now more than ever I wanna have this baby and Ayden has to live for us both. He can never leave us!

I felt Nosizwe's hand touching my thigh

Her: Are you listening to me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Sorry, I got lost along the way

Her: Do you want me to call Amelia and find out if Sophia has left the hospital?

Sophia literally told everyone in the hospital to not allow me anywhere near Ayden and there's nothing I can do. Viper suggested sneaking me inside his ward the minute she leaves the hospital but bad for me she hasn't. Amelia was kind enough to let me in on what has happened to Ayden, I am so glad he is out of the woods. We will attend to everything later, but right now I just want him to wake up. Ayden has to wake up!

Me: Wait, we will call her...

Her: What are you thinking about?

I looked at her

Me: Amelia said something about his leg...

My voice cracked

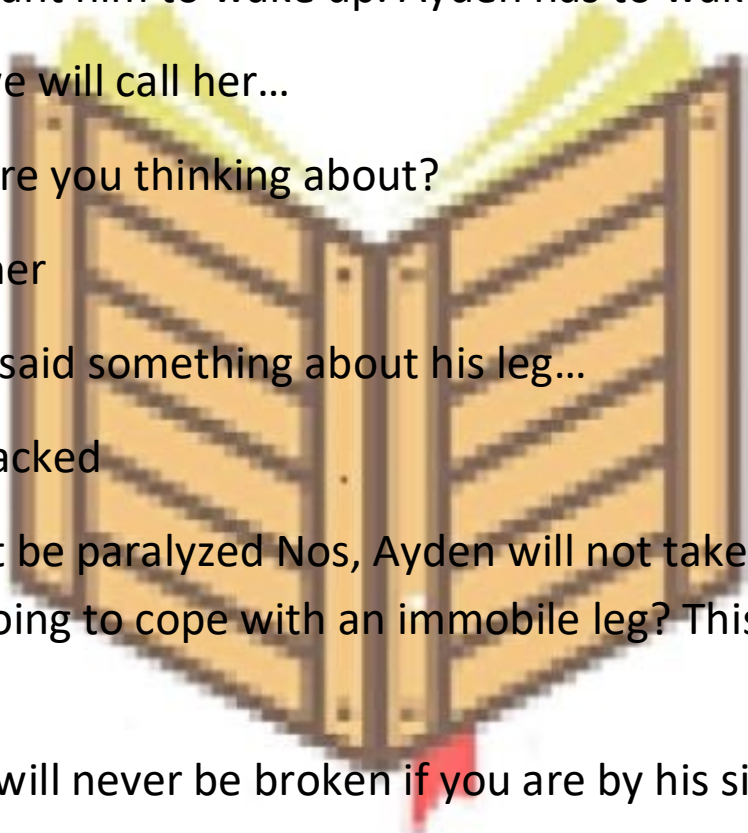
Me: It might be paralyzed Nos, Ayden will not take this well. How is he going to cope with an immobile leg? This is going to break him

Her: Ayden will never be broken if you are by his side, you will give him hope

Me: He is a man and he has pride, what can I possibly do?

Her: You see this...

She pointed at my chest

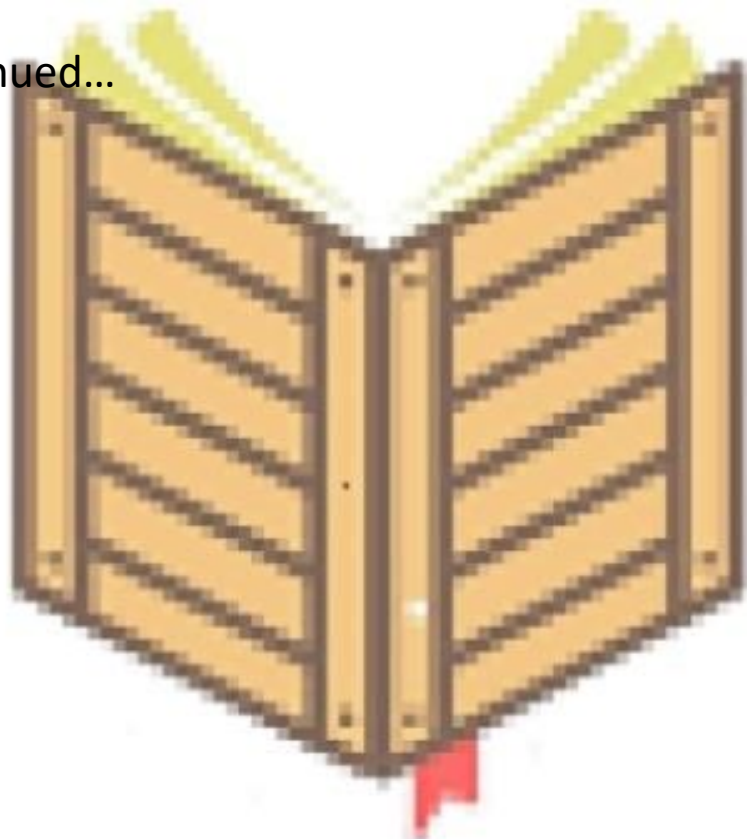


NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Your heart is his and his is yours. Whatever you tell your heart to do, Ayden will soften to it. You are going to do this, I trust you Secrets

I ran my hand on my tummy

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I unlocked the door and stepped inside

Zack: When are you going to stop meddling in Ayden's life, Sophia?

Me: Oh please stop lecturing me Zack, just stop! If anyone doesn't have a say in my children's lives then that person is you. You, Zack!

Him: I might not have say but I am certainly not going to sit and let you ruin our children's lives. You need to stop acting like God; they are old to make their own decisions!

Me: Go back to your house and lecture your own children because I am not in the mood for your bickering

I threw my handbag on the couch

He grabbed my arm and forced me to look at him

Him: Sophia, you need to stop acting like a mad woman! This is not a way to seek Ayden's love or attention. When are you going to start realizing that your actions are destroying your relationship with him?

Me: Let go of my arm Zack

Him: Not only will you lose Ayden but Amelia as well. The only thing on your side is going to be money and status, you will die alone. Feeling miserable

He let go of my arm

Him: Think about it

PANTHER

Old man sat across me

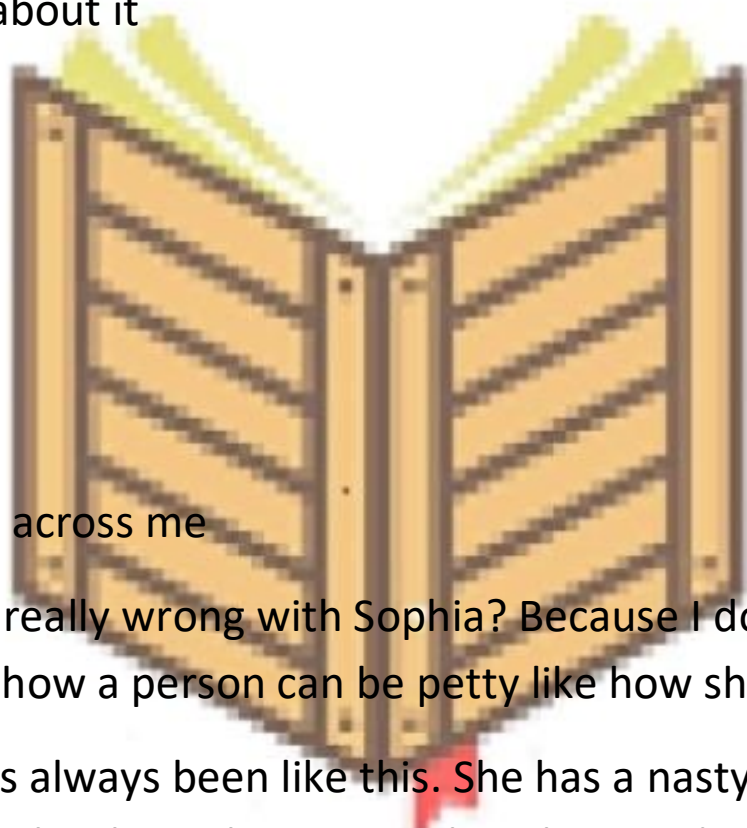
Me: What's really wrong with Sophia? Because I don't understand how a person can be petty like how she is

Him: She has always been like this. She has a nasty past so I think that's why she is the person that she is today...

Me: Are you pulling my leg? Old man, everyone has a past but you don't see us acting like her. A past is there for a reason

Him: You won't understand. Sophia is used to fight her own battles and protecting her children comes first

Me: Is there something you know that we are not aware of?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Even if I do I don't think it's my place to tell you Lindo

Me: So whatever past she has, justifies what she is doing to Yara? That's what you are saying?

Him: Not at all. I am not standing with how she has decided to solve matters

Me: It looks like it

Him: This won't end well let's rather stop talking about it

I fixed my eyes on him

Me: You are keeping something from us

YARA

Mimi held my hand as we enter the hospital

Her: Your brothers are very good in this

Me: They know Sophia better

Her: I don't understand Sophia at all, I could swear some of her wires are disconnecting

Her: No questions asked there



NOVELSGURU.COM



We made our way to the reception

Me: Good day, can I please see Ayden Tshivhase?

Receptionist: What is your name?

Me: Mudzunga Tshivhase, his cousin

Receptionist: Please sign here but you will have to see his doctor before going into his ward

I nodded and sighed

Me: Thank you

We walked to the passageway

Me: The doctor better not give us a runner round

Mimi: You just pour your heart out, cry if you have to

I rolled my eyes

Her: I will sit here and check the coast

Me: Thank you sisters

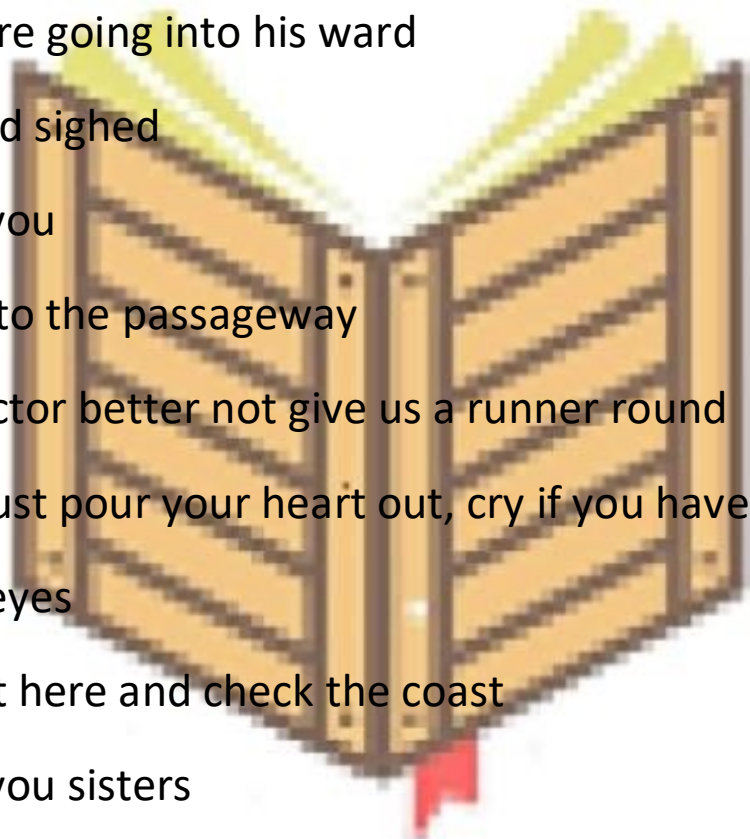
We hugged

I knocked on the door

Doctor: Come in

I opened the door and stepped inside

Me: Can i?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Doctor: Yes, please take a seat

I won't lie to the doctor because he has already seen me and he saw the fight between Sophia and me

Me: I'd like to know if it's possible to see Mr Tshivhase

Doctor: Is Mrs Tshivhase aware?

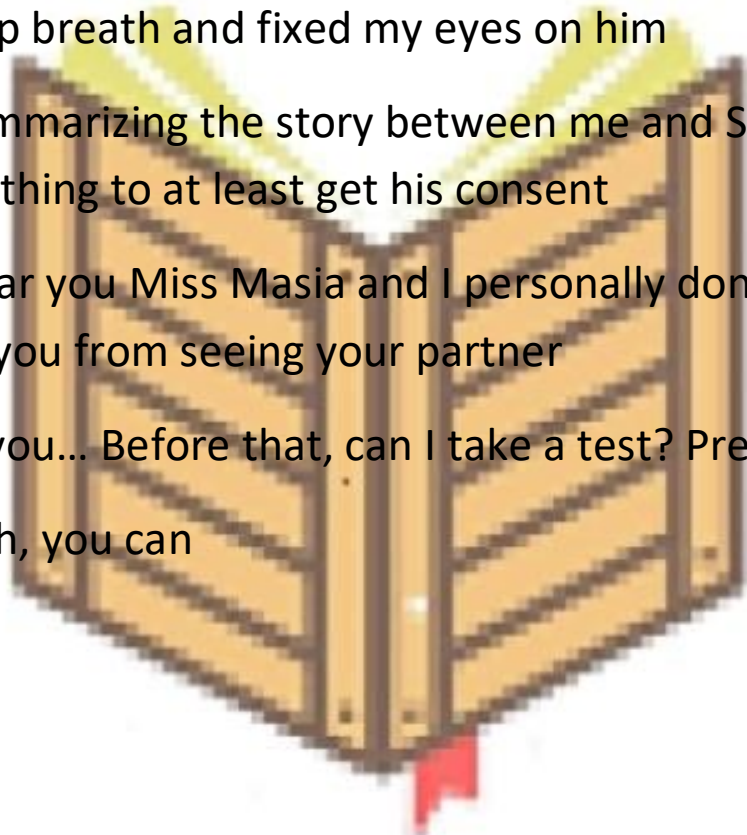
I took a deep breath and fixed my eyes on him

I started summarizing the story between me and Sophia; I had to say something to at least get his consent

Doctor: I hear you Miss Masia and I personally don't think it's fair to stop you from seeing your partner

Me: Thank you... Before that, can I take a test? Pregnancy test

Doctor: Yeah, you can



ETHAN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I was on the phone with Mimi

Her: I am just waiting for her; she is trying to get permission from his doctor

Me: I can't believe Sophia is doing this to his son

Her: Let her be, she is crazy. Can we talk about something else?

Me: Anything

Her: How do you feel about relocating?

Me: Where is that coming from?

Her: It's a question Cuddles

Me: Well, it depends where we are going and reasons for leaving

Her: Sometimes I just feel like leaving everything behind and go away you know that. This place is becoming unbearable

Me: To all of us, we've been through a lot and we are taking a strain

Her: Can we visit this topic when Yara and Ayden are fine?

Me: We can

YARA

I took another test and it came back positive I am two weeks pregnant...

I looked at Ayden and my heart sunk. Cervical collar was around his neck, the leg sling was lifting his left leg. His face looked so pale



NOVELSGURU.COM

I sat on the chair and held his hand

Me; Please wake up Munchie, we need you. You need to pull through for us

I squeezed his hand

Me: I am not asking for much, I just want you to open those eyes and smile at me.

I caressed the back of his hand and kissed it

Me: If you wake up, I promise to never get angry at you. I will never let you go to sleep without hearing my voice, I promise you that

Him: Shawty (Low voice)

he moved his hand

I raised my hand and sniffed

Me: Munchie, you came back for us

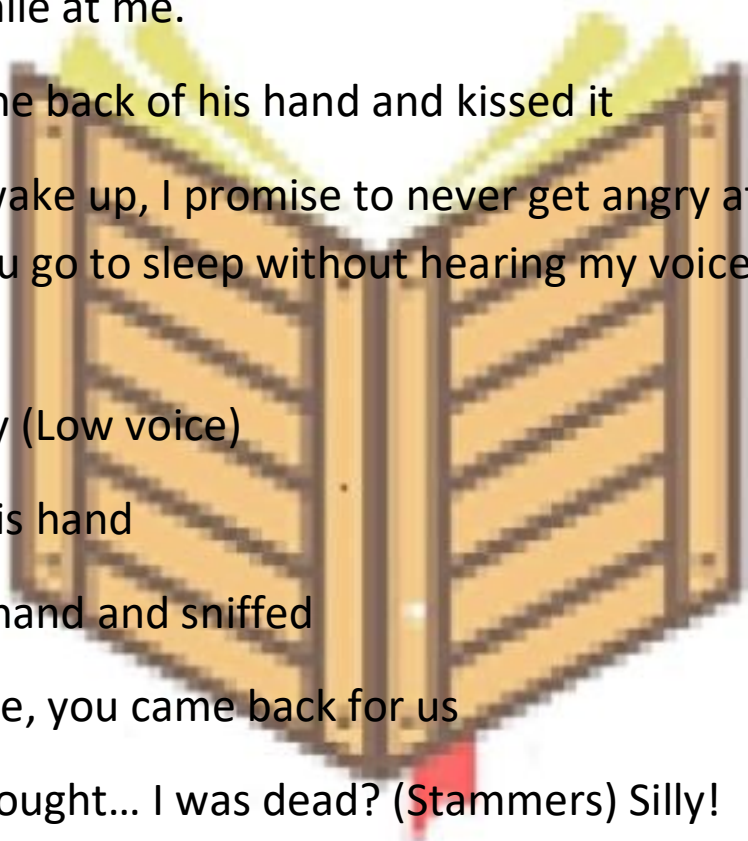
Him: You thought... I was dead? (Stammers) Silly!

Me: Do you want me to call the doctor?

Him: No, just get me water

I poured water in the glass and helped him drink up

Him: Thank you



I set the glass on the table

Him: My whole body hurts, it's like I've been hit by a truck

Me: You got jokes Ayden, you nearly died but here you are joking. Really?

He tried to move but he groaned in pain

Me: I am calling the doctor, don't be stubborn

Him: No, first come and lie next to me. We will call the doctor later, I am not dying and my heart is doing well. Please, Shawty

I shrugged my shoulders

Where am I gonna lie here? Ayden is full of games, even at his lowest...

Me: There's no space in this bed for both of us

Him: There's plenty of space... stop being stubborn

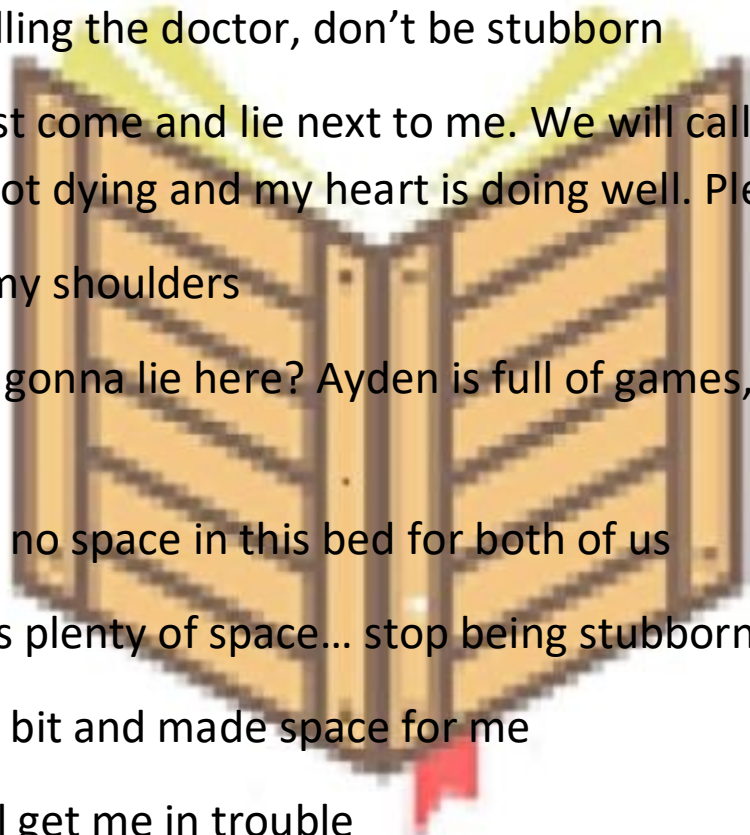
He moved a bit and made space for me

Me: You will get me in trouble

Him: I am sorry for scaring you

Me: Don't say anything, you being alive is what is important right now

Him: About what has happened...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I know what happened and right now I don't wanna talk about that. We have plenty of time to talk about all of that now I want to tell you something important

Him: What?

I looked at the hand that is not bandage and it was his right one. I took it and put it on my tummy

Me: We are pregnant (Smiles)

Him: You said what?

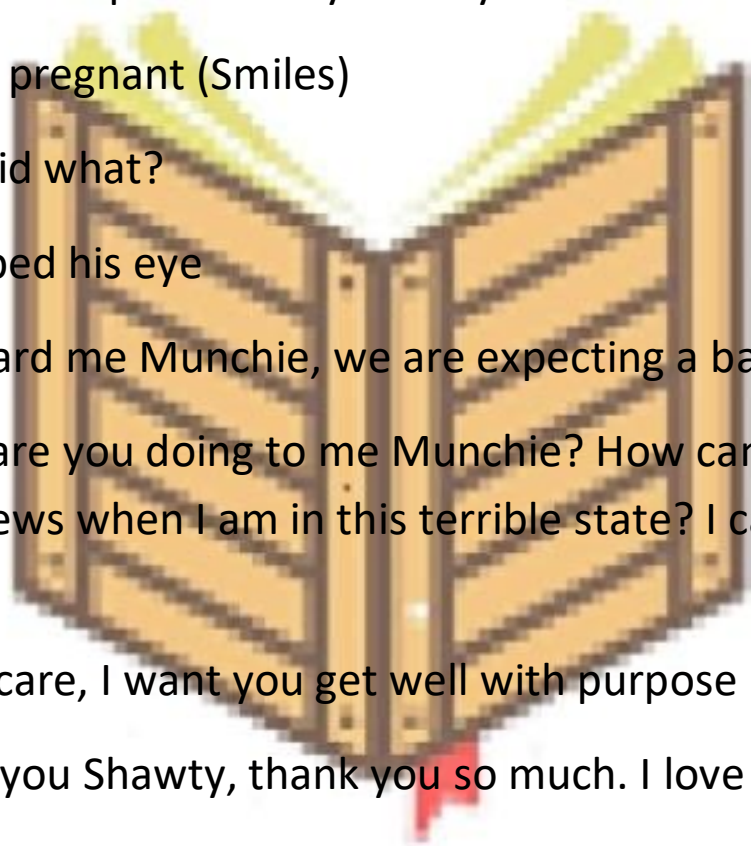
A tear escaped his eye

Me: You heard me Munchie, we are expecting a baby

Him: What are you doing to me Munchie? How can you tell me this great news when I am in this terrible state? I can't even hug you

Me: I don't care, I want you get well with purpose

Him: Thank you Shawty, thank you so much. I love you



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

76

YAYA

[A MONTH LATER]

Whoever said pregnancy is fun must be found and is dealt with. First trimester is the worst, moods, nauseous, cravings and morning sickness. But, I am taking one day at a time; I have the best support system. Ayden insisted on living with me, at first he wanted us to move in to his house but I was against the idea but to settle the matter we decided on him moving in with me. Living together has its ups and downs but at the end of the day we make sure we don't go to bed angry at each other

Ayden and his mother are still not in any communication, he last saw her the day he was discharged. She has made several attempts to reach out to him but Ayden is done with her

I stood at the door and looked at Ayden

Me: Hey, I am going to work; do you need something before I go?

I am still working at Tshivhase firm, Sophia didn't fire me but since Ayden is not working. I am currently an assistant to Mr

Mpumlani in the department of finance, he is not as funny as Mr A but I will survive

Him: Come, sit here

He patted the bed

He spent two weeks in hospital; the doctors were more concerned about his neck and head. They were afraid of the worst but no permanent damage was made. The only problem is his leg, it hasn't fully healed but it is not immobile. He limps every now and then and sometimes it pains a lot that he needs something to balance. But, the doctors are sure he will help completely. I am just happy he is alive as for the rest, we will tackle it together

I sat on the bed

Me: What's wrong?

Him: Do you really have to go to work?

Me: Yes, I do. If I don't, I am going to live off what?

Him: I am still alive to take care of both of you

Me: Forget, I am going to work and I will not be emotionally blackmailed. This is your trick and I happened to know it



Him: What if you get sick at work? You are carrying Tshivhase child and that surname come with lot of headache so, what if you start feeling sick at work?

I stood up

Me: You talking nonsense and you know it. I will see you later; if you get bored call my brothers they will come and kill boredom with you

I leaned and kissed him

Me: Have a good day daddy

He put his hand on my tummy

Him: I love you both

MIMI

I walked into the kitchen; Buhle was standing before the stove

Me: Morning...

She turned her head slightly

Her: Morning, breakfast is almost done



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay...

I pulled the chair and sat down

Me: Have you seen my mother? I checked in her bedroom and she is not there

Her: Yeah, she is out but didn't say where she is going

Me: Maybe she went to see Ma Sadiki

Her: Must have

Buhle hasn't been looking good for the past few days and I have been trying to avoid it. Something is wrong and I hate the fact that she doesn't wanna open up to me

Me: Why are you bottling things?

She put the spoon on the lid and turned around

Her: What are you talking about?

Me: I know you Buhle and you can't lie to me, something is wrong with you and I can see it

She sighed loudly **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: I am having issues with Lindo; we are not really in good space at the moment

Me: Something you can't solve?

Her: I've been trying to but he is distant and tossing my attempts. I don't even know what's wrong with him, or where we went wrong

She shook her head

Her: I always thought communication is the key and talking helps. I don't even know what's going on in his mind; we are just cold towards each other

Me: That doesn't sound like you two

Her: Exactly

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I knocked at the door

Me: Amelia?

She darted her eyes to the door and looked back at her phone

Me: I am tired of this negative energy in this house; you either look yourself inside or ignore me... Can we at least talk?

I moved further in the room



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Don't you like the peace that is coming with this silence?

She said with her eyes still glued to the phone

Me: I am already suffering Amelia, your brother want nothing to do with me. Whatever I try to do he just doesn't want to see me

Her: Do you blame him? Ayden is happy wherever he is and that's what matters, let him be

Something on the dressing table caught my attention

Advertisement

it was an ultrasound. Is Amelia pregnant?

I picked it and looked at her

Me: Are you pregnant Amelia?

Her: What are you talking about?

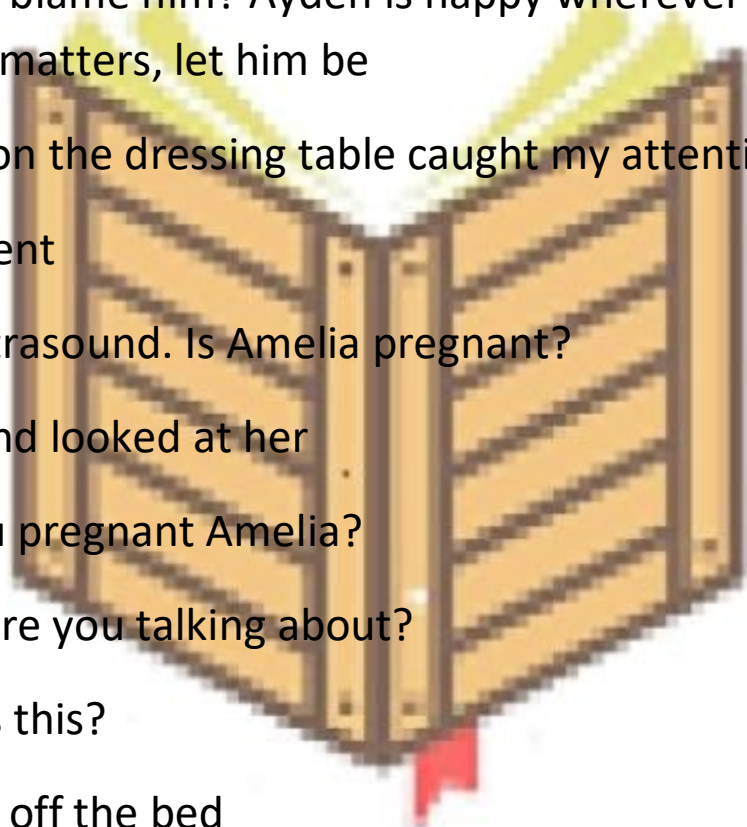
Me: What is this?

She jumped off the bed

Her: Give me that Mimsey

Me: You didn't even tell me...

I looked at it and the bottom I saw names. Yara & Ayden?



Me: This is not yours, it's Yara's... Yara is pregnant and no one thought about telling me?

She took the ultrasound from my hand

Her: You had no business in taking my things Mimsey, no business. And do you really think Ayden will tell you something like this? You are dead to him!

My son hate me this much to not even see the need to let me know that I am about to be a grandmother

Me: But, how... I thought...

Her: Stop thinking, Ayden was never going to tell you

Me: That child is my first grandchild...

She chuckled softly

Her: Your first what? Are you for real? Oh now you wanna claim the child when you hate his/her mother

AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

I reached for the crutch and got off the bed

Today is one of those days, when it's cold my leg tends to act up. I am still not used to how things are but I am hoping for a miracle. I am still not comfortable about what has happened, but that accident changed my life. If I say I know exactly what happened I will be lying, one moment I was lost in my thoughts and the next moment the truck was before my car and boom! The only thing that is making me strong is Yara and the child. That day at the hospital when she told me that she is pregnant I felt love and excitement, I felt like God was reaching to me in different way. It took me back to the time Aurora told me she is pregnant but won't keep the baby, I was shattered and I thought I will never be a father. A part of me was scared that Yara will say the same thing seeing that our relationship was still in the rocks. But, she surprised me. The accident was the final nail to my relationship with my mother, if she had not decided to play God none of this would have happened. I nearly lost my life; my child was going to grow up without a father because of her. She has asked for apology but I am not buying any of it. I am done with Mimsey

I called Panther

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: You on your way?

Him: Still at the house

Me: Can you please pass by Pharmacy, my cream is finished and the itching is starting

Him: No problem

I hung up

I rubbed my arm and balanced hand on the crutch

PARIS



Me: Mpendulo, stop running around the house. You will get hurt

He looked at me and laughed

Me: I am warning you

I pointed at him

I took my phone and dialled Mzoxolo's number

Old man: Son

Me: Baba, how are you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Old man: I am good, just surprised to hear from you

Me: I want us to talk

Old man: Sound serious

Me: It is, baba, I've made decision

Old man: Paris, khulum'

Me: I am coming back to South Africa

He kept quiet

Me: Baba?

Old man: We've talked about this

Me: You talked and I listened

Old man: Is it about missing my visit last week? I told you I've been very busy, and I will come and see you

Me: It's not about that, it's about getting to know where I was born. Botswana is not home and it will never be home

Old man: We've been doing so great, and now you wanna ruin things?

Me: I've been here for so long under your orders Baba, I think it's time for me and the family to get to know each other. Don't you think so?

NOVELSGURU.COM

He kept quiet

Me: For the past 30 years I've been alone...

Him: But you have people there Paris

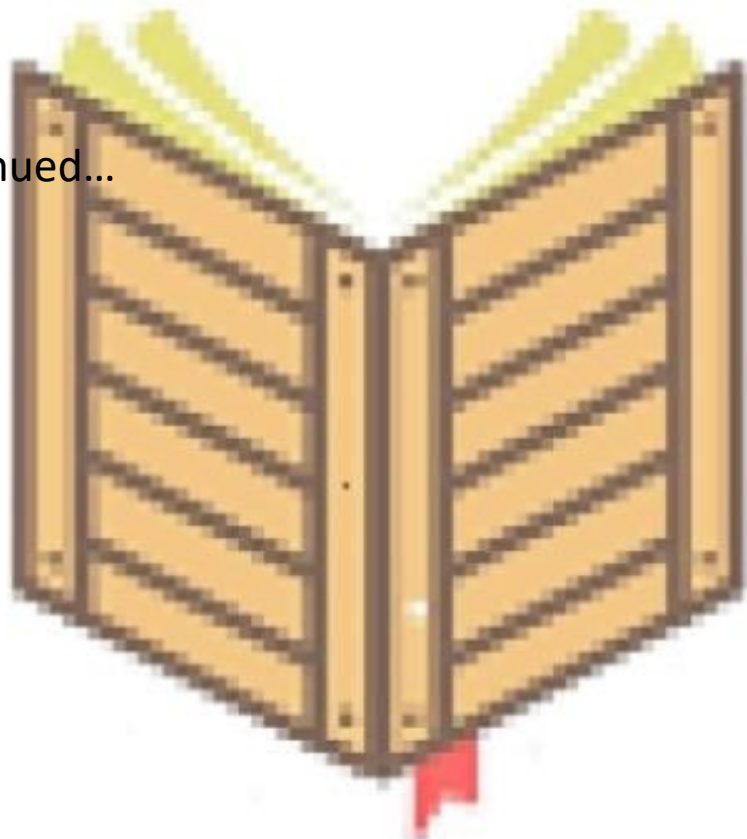


Me: They are not family, I am coming back to South Africa and you are not going to stop me. I am sorry but I am tired of being kept as a secret

Him: Paris...

Me: No baba and I also wanna see her. It's time I met her

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## MZOXOLO

I gulped the drink and sat down

I honestly don't why Paris is seeing it fit to come back. His mother is not even aware of his existence, he is about to open can of worms. I've managed to keep him as a secret for 30 years old and now he wanna come and rekindle whatever relationship he is thinking will existence. I should have known that one day he will want to know his mother. The problem is the lies I've told both him and his mother. Now my lies are catching up with me and I am going to get burn. You can never avoid fate, Paris is stubborn I will never win in changing his mind

(Door closes)

"Grand-pa" Marcos yelled my name

Me: Champ

NOVELSGURU.COM

He ran to the couch

Me: You came with whom?

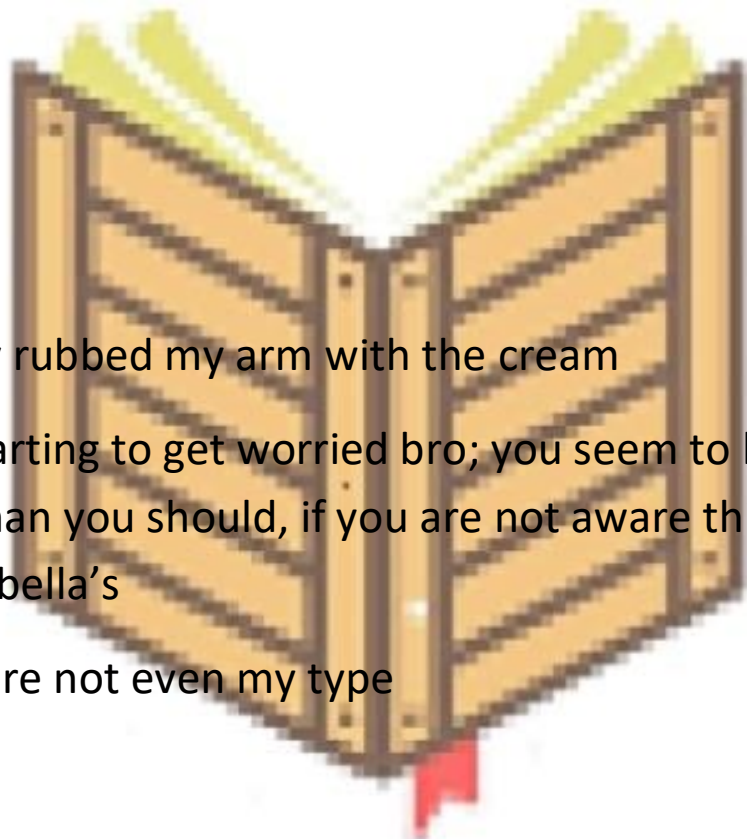
Him: My driver dropped me here

Me: Does your parents know you are here?

He shook his head no

Me: Nkosi yam'. Let me call them, your mother will be worried and you know her

AYDEN



Viper gently rubbed my arm with the cream

Me: I am starting to get worried bro; you seem to be enjoying this more than you should, if you are not aware this is my arm and not Arabella's

Viper: You are not even my type

We laughed

Panther set the drinks on the table

NOVELSGURU.COM

Panther: How is the itching?

Me: Better but we are not going to sit here and talk about me as if we are group of teenagers. It's too depressing, let's talk about something else

Viper: My sister will do her bit later at least I helped  
I grabbed can of beer

Me: How is business? I miss action, sitting here is starting to get  
to me

Panther: Truck of firearms is leaving the country tonight

Me: Have you heard from the Mexicans about the auction...

Viper: We are not doing this with you, we promised Yara to not  
discuss work with you. Sorry bro but nope

Panther: Focus on your health and stop worrying about work.

Viper and I got everything under control

Viper: He is right

Me: I don't like what you are doing; do you have any idea how  
boring it is to stare at these four walls, doing nothing exciting?

Viper: We are still standing with our decision

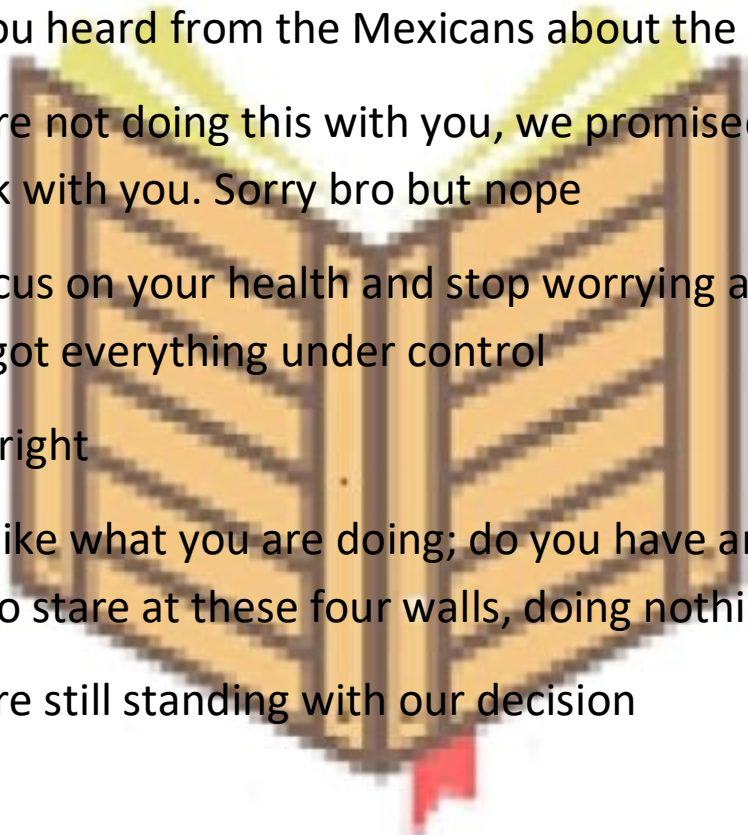
Me: Fine

I took a sip from my beer

Me: And you, how are you feeling?

I asked Panther

He leaned back on the couch and sighed



NOVELSGURU.COM

Panther: What can I say? I am feeling anxious

Me: When are you getting your results?

Panther: I don't know, I haven't asked the doctor and I haven't called him

Viper: I don't get why both of you have to be stubborn about important things. What's so hard about calling the doctor and find out?

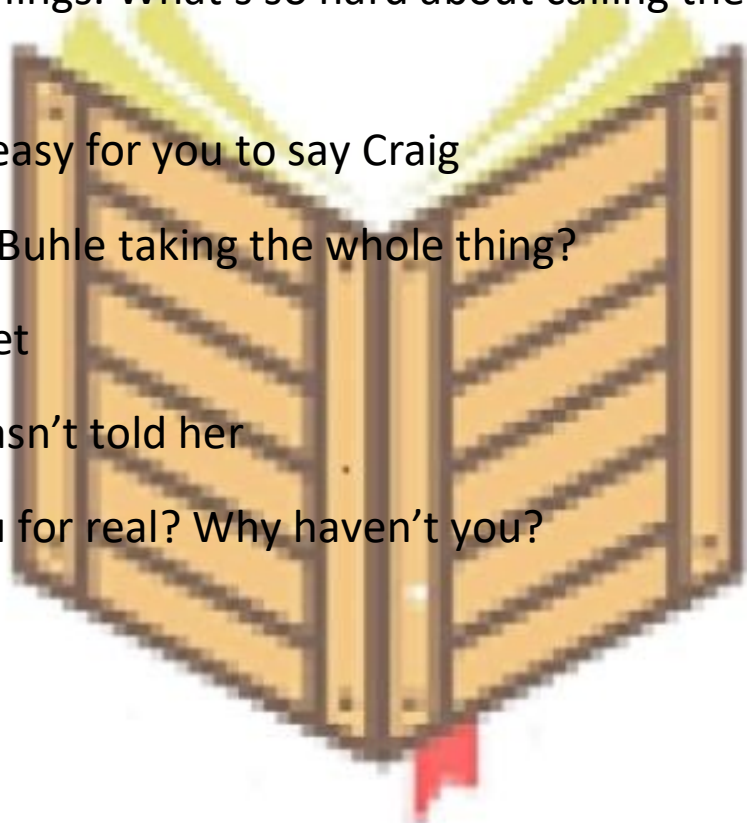
Panther: Is easy for you to say Craig

Me: How is Buhle taking the whole thing?

He kept quiet

Viper: He hasn't told her

Me: Are you for real? Why haven't you?



YARA

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Nos: Can I offer you something to drink?

Me: No, thank you. I am not looking forward to go in and out of ladies room

Her: Is it that bad?

Me: Next time you hear me talking about falling pregnant please beat the shit out of me

She laughed

Her: Mr Tshivhase is not going to dance to your tune

She sat down

Her: And, you are looking so beautiful. The glow Secrets

Me: Thank you Secrets (Smiles)

I put my hand on my tummy

Me: The way I am tired (Sighs) the work I am doing at the office is too much. I really don't think I will be able to put up with it for so long

Her: You are just spoiled because Ayden didn't want you to take in lot of work

Me: Ayden never gave me pile of files to sort out in a day and call God knows how many contacts

NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Maybe it's time you take Ayden's advice and stop working for a bit

I looked at her

Me: I don't believe it's you who is saying this...

Her: I don't mean it in that way, just until Ayden returns

Me: I can't risk losing my job; I don't want to stop working

She looked at me and said nothing

Me: Depending on Ayden is the last thing in my mind right now; I don't want to give Dragon lady reasons to despise me even more. I can't just stop working now

Her: Talking about her, has she tried anything with you?

Me: No. If ever she comes to the firm she greets me and mind her own business

Her: It took her long to mind her business

Me: I think what Ayden did has deeply hurt her

Her: I am not feeling sorry for her, you reap what you sow



BUHLE

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Evodia

Advertisement

are clean towels already in Room 12?

Her: Yes ma'am

Me: Okay, also make sure the foam bath is branded. Our guest is very picky and the last thing we want is angry guest like her

Her: Is it Mrs Goliath?

Me: It's her

She laughed softly

Me: If we still need this job we will dance to her tune

Her: Let me go and get her room ready, she will be coming here looking like someone from 90's stories

(Cell phone rings) It's Panther

Me: Sthandwa

Him: Sunshine, can we talk?

Me: Can spare few minutes

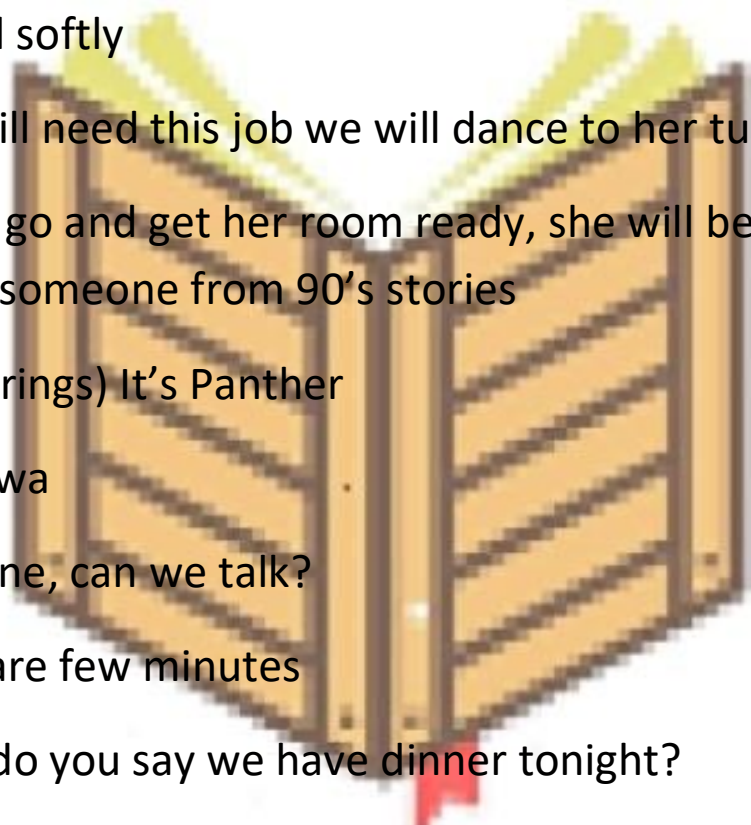
Him: What do you say we have dinner tonight?

I sat on the chair that was next to me

Me: Is it worth it? I mean you hardly pay attention to me; lately you've been giving me cold shoulder

Him: Wanna make it up to you Sunshine

Me: You will talk with me?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: I always talk with you

Me: No, I don't mean that kind of talking. I wanna know what's going on

He kept quiet

Me: Panther?

Him: Sunshine, not now...

Me: Suit yourself

I hung up

As much as I try he will never let me in, what's the use of trying and pushing? I should just focus on my job, he will talk when he feel like

(Message alert)

|There's nothing I hate than someone who hangs up whilst I am talking Sunshine. I don't care how angry you are but I wanna see you later. Ngiyak'thanda |

YARA

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Later on the twins surprised me at the office, Ethan drooped them off

Truly speaking I've been so busy with my life resulting to spending less time with them. I am sure they are thinking I've

abandoned them which is not true, I am caught up in my own stuff

Lex crossed her legs on the couch

Her: Your office is so cool better than dad's

Me: Such lies!

Her: Am I lying, Tenda?

Him: You are not; dad's office is filled with designs. Everywhere you look is them, is so dull for our liking

Me: You forget that I know you?

They laughed

Me: I have surprise for you

I rose on my feet and sat on the couch

Her: What? (Giggles)

Me: We are video calling Uncle T

They widened their eyes

Ayden: Shawty

Me: Munchie, guess who is here...

Them: Uncle T (Smiles)

Ayden: Monkeys, I miss you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lex: We miss you too

Tenda: How are you feeling? Dad told us what happened to you

Lex: Sorry, we didn't come and see you

Tenda: We really wanted to come and see you but...

Lex: Dad told us that you need to rest

Tenda: If it was up to us we would have come and nurse you

Lex: He is right but since we are small...

Tenda: We can't even defend ourselves

Ayden closed his eyes and laughed

They are not going to let him speak before they say whatever that is in their chests...

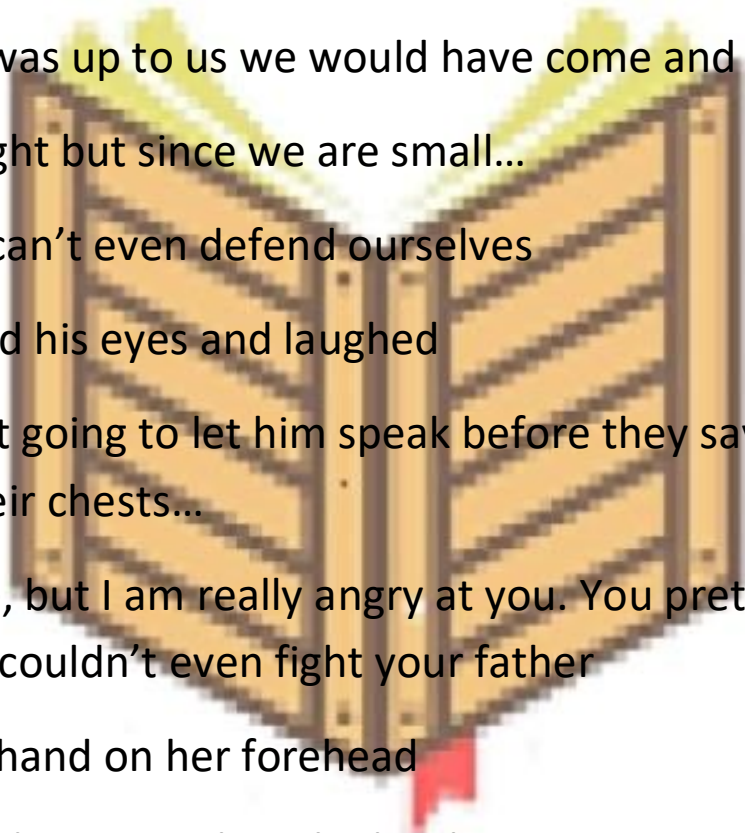
Ayden: I see, but I am really angry at you. You pretend to love me but you couldn't even fight your father

Lex put her hand on her forehead

Lex: We tried every trick in the book trust us

I can't wait to see him with his own child; parenting seems to be a nature to him

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

## PANTHER

The following morning I decided to face my fears and go to the doctor

When I started experiencing headaches, unexplained nausea and loss of balance I brushed it off and thought it was just my body reacting to stress. I never thought it was going to be something serious, my brother forced me to go and consult because headaches were becoming intense. And the day I stepped in this office my world changed. Luck turned a blind eye for me; the CT scan picked a tumour

Doc: I was starting to get worried; I've been calling your cell

Me: I know and you didn't have to call my mother

Doctor Maphosa is my mom's friend; I am hoping, he will honour doctor-patient confidentiality

Doc: Your results are back but first...

I massaged my forehead

Doc: Are you still experiencing headaches?

Me: They are worsening and gradually becoming more frequent and severe

He nodded and reached for the file

Doc: You sure you don't want to call someone? News like this requires your love ones around...

Me: Doc, let us get this and done with. Please

Doc: Okay. As suspected, there's indeed a tumour growing in your brain. It's an astrocytic tumour

I clenched my jaw and looked down

Doc: I am sorry Mr Khumalo and I understand receiving news like this is hard to adjust to. But, on the bright side we've picked it early

I just wanna punch a wall and yell it out!

Doc: It's Diffuse astrocytoma (Grade II) the tumour is growing and spreading slow which I consider good. Chances of spreading into nearby tissue are low...

Me: Can it be cured?

NOVELSGURU.COM

That's all I need to know right now

Doc: Well, in some cases, it can be cured if it is completely removed by surgery. Chances of coming back are very much high

I sighed loudly

This is not happening, how? What about my life plans? I got so much to do, now will I ever live to do all of them? How am I going to carry on with life after this?

Me: Can you please not tell my mother anything if she asks you, I am not ready to tell them. I just need time to process it

Doc: We have no time; we have to do surgery before it spreads. Letting your family know is the first step...

Me: Don't make me remind you of the doctor-patient confidentiality

Doc: All I am saying is please sit your love ones down and tell them. You are going to need all the support you can get; you can't embark on this journey alone. You need their support...

Me: I know and I understand you very well but please respect my decision

Doc: As you wish. We need to talk about the way forward...



NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

Me: You look so happy this morning

I said to the twins who were busy whispering and laughing

Me: Care to share with daddy?

Tenda: No daddy, it's between us

Lex: It's twins' thing dada

Me: "its twins' thing dada"

I mimicked her voice

Me: You woke up and decided to act like fools I see

(Doorbell rang)

Lex got up and went to the door

Me: Who is there?

Tenda: Wait for her to come back, it's not like someone will come and rob you. I mean daddy, you are not even in top 10 of richest man in SA

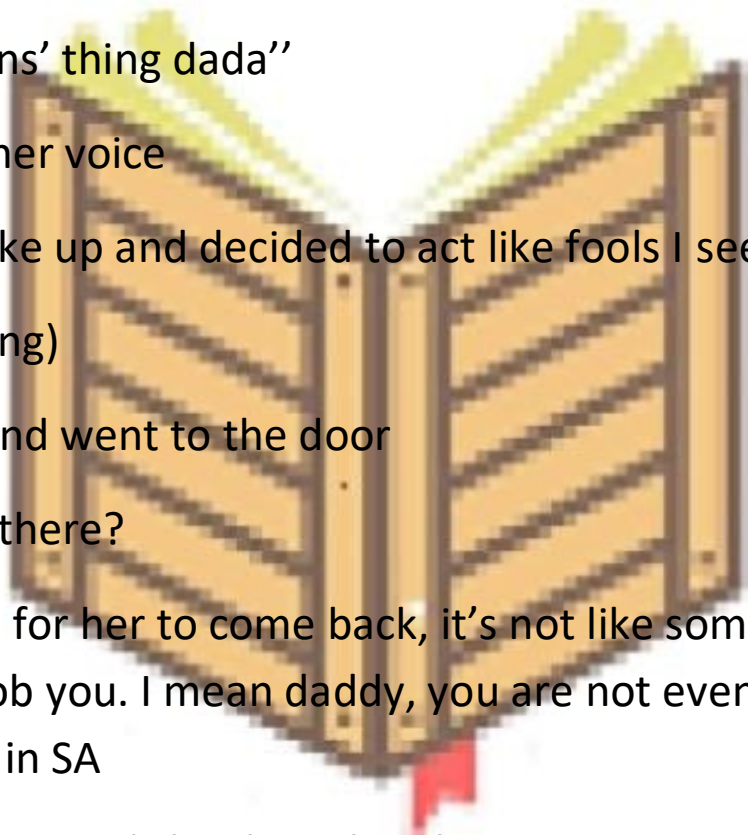
I looked at him and shook my head

Me: I am sure one day I am going to belt you

He laughed and stood up

Lex: Check who is here

I turned around



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yara, morning. What a pleasant surprise

Yara: Good morning, sorry to just show up. I should have called

Me: Don't apologize, please sit down

She pulled the chair and sat down

Me: You arrived in time for breakfast, let me dish for you

Tenda: Sit down daddy, let us serve you

Yara: Okay, are we ready for this?

Me: Don't think so... How are you?

Yara: I am good, and you?

Me: Good, can't complain. These two are keeping me on my toes, children will always be children

Yara: Talking about children there's something I need to tell you

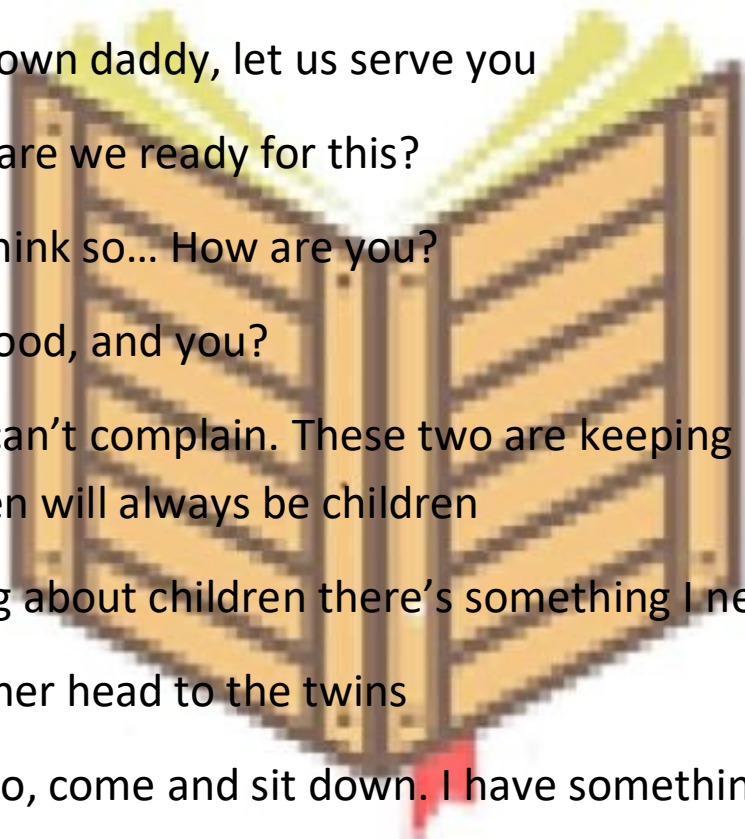
She turned her head to the twins

Yara: You too, come and sit down. I have something to share with you guys

The twins sat down and fixed their eyes on her

Yara: Okay

Advertisement



NOVELSGURU.COM



well I have some great news that I need to share with you.  
Aunty Yara is expecting a child; you'll soon have someone to  
play with

Me: What? Wow, congratulations Yara. This is great news

Yara: Thank you Ethan... And you, are you not happy for Aunty  
Yara?

I certainly didn't expect this from them; they are not even  
showing any excitement

Tenda: We are happy

They held hands

Lex: Yeah, we are

They are lying, well they are happy for her but they are thinking  
about something

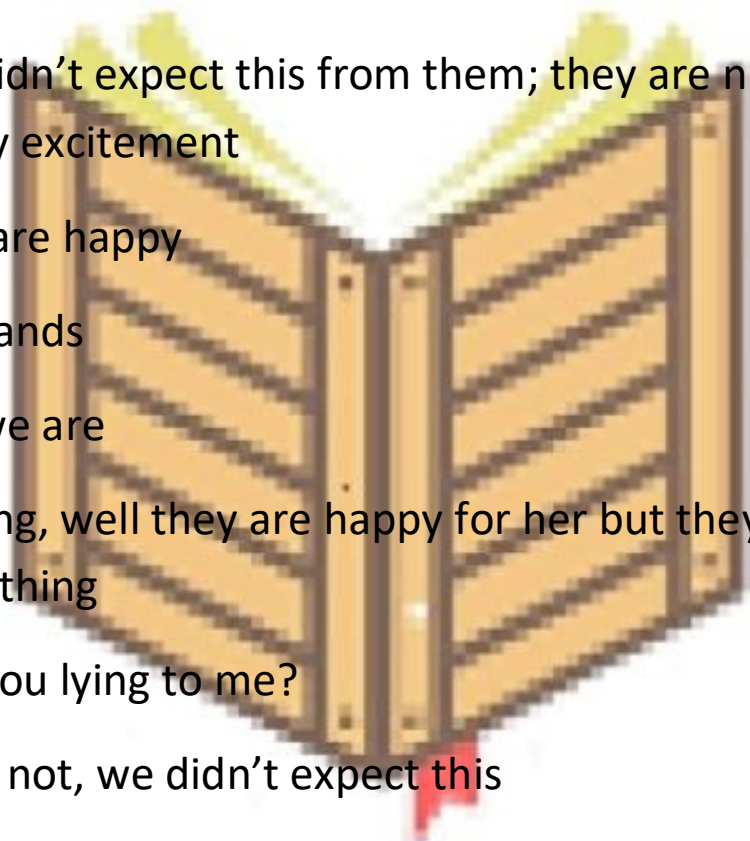
Yara: Why you lying to me?

Lex: We are not, we didn't expect this

Tenda: Lex is right

Me: Give them time

AYDEN



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood at the door and looked at her

Me: What are you doing here?

Mimsey: Are you not going to let me in?

Me: You have no business here, and I made it clear about that

Her: I miss you son, we've fought before but it never reached this point. The house is so quiet without you, please let's try and solve things. I don't even know how you are doing, no one is telling me anything

Me: We managed to solve things before because I didn't know the type of person you are but now I know

Her: We can solve this

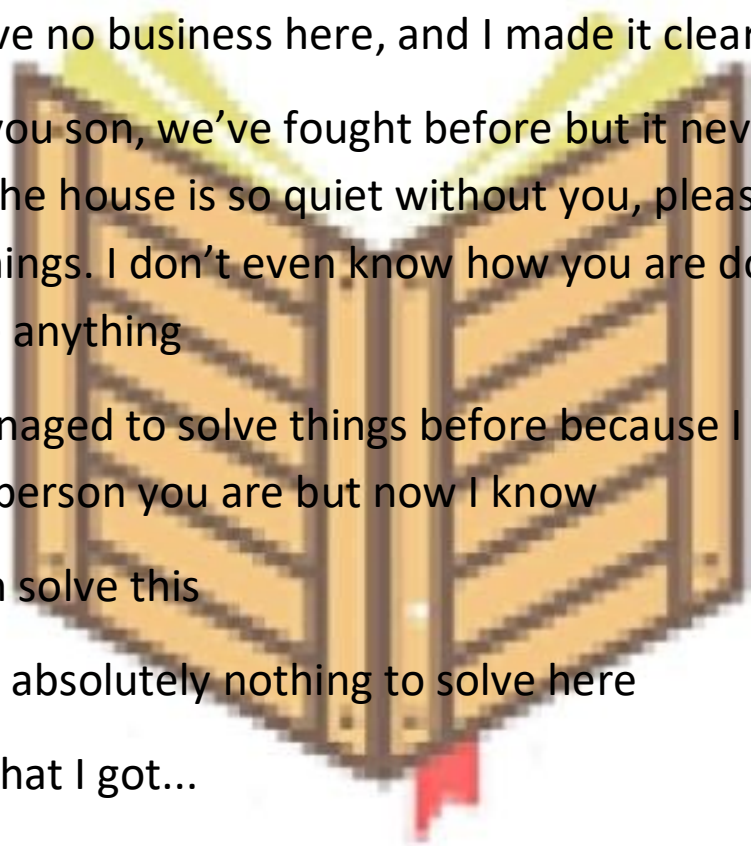
Me: There's absolutely nothing to solve here

Her: Look what I got...

She handed me a shopping bag

Her: I heard she is pregnant, so I bought few things for her. I couldn't help myself when I saw them in the shop the other day

I looked at it and chuckled softly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yara doesn't need your presents; we will get things ourselves. Now take this and leave, and don't come back again

Her: Ayden, you cannot continue to do this to me. Your actions are hurting me

Me: I am and I will, I told you that I no longer have a mother. Didn't I?

Tears were streaming down her cheeks

Her: If you forgive me I promise to treat Yara the way she deserves, I will never speak ill of her. I just want us to solve things, I love you so much

Me: So you are only willing to solve things because you want me back not because you love Yara? Don't you think we are again starting on the wrong foot?

Her: I will learn to love and respect her. For you I will do anything, and now my grandchild is on the way. I wanna bond with him/her, don't deny me that chance

Me: No Mimsey

My phone rang

Me: Please don't bother and come back. Stay away from me, Yara and our child

I close the door and answered the phone

Me: Viper

Him: Can you come here?

Me: What's wrong?

Him: It's Panther. Please come

Me: Okay, fine. I am coming

I hung up

YARA

I really didn't expect cold reaction from the twins, maybe I am reading too much into this but telling them was not a great idea. I have no doubt; they were hurt instead of getting excited. I am now regretting it

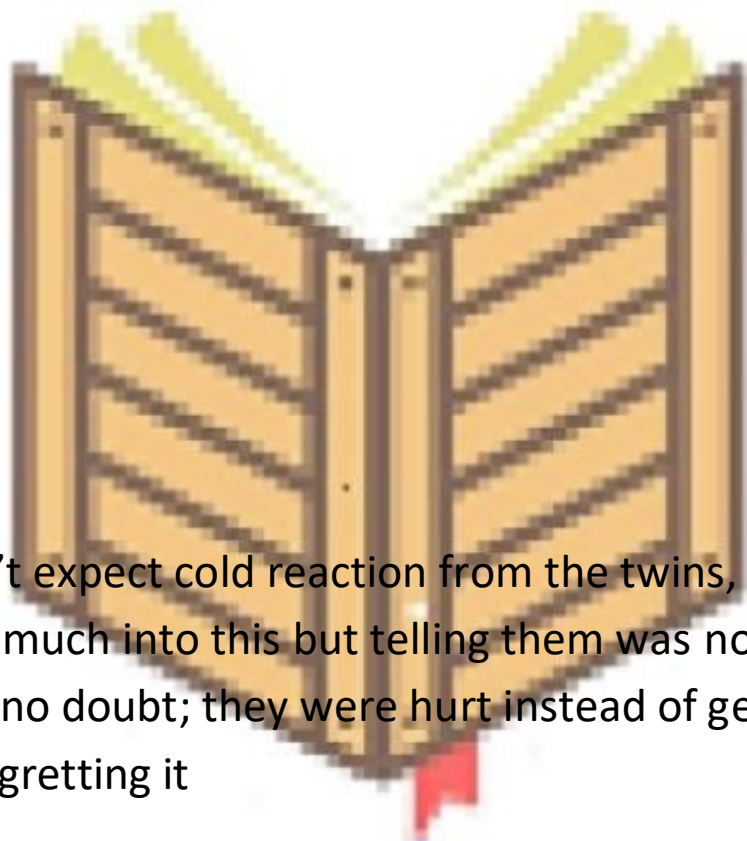
Buhle gave me glass of water

Me: Thank you

She sat next to me

Her: Can I ask you something?

Me: Go ahead



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: When last did you talk with your brother?

Me: Last night, he called before I went to bed

Her: Did he sound normal to you?

Me: Yes, what's wrong? Am I missing something?

Her: I might be jumping the gun here but something is wrong with him

Me: What makes you say that? Surely there's something

Her: He is acting out of character, last night he declared his love for me. He talked like someone who is dying

Me: Maybe it had something to do with their line of work. You know they work with dangerous people... If there was something Ayden would have told me

Her: Panther is sure about his job, nothing scares him. What I saw last night is a man who's scared

Me: Okay, let me call my brother Viper. Maybe he will tell me something

Her: Please...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

## AYDEN

I've known Panther for years and not once did he look this shattered, he is not crying but pain in his eyes is evident enough. We always have things to say to each other but right now, we blank with words. This, this is too much to handle. What matters now is showing Panther our love and support, he has to know that we are with him and he will never walk this road alone. It is definitely not going to be a walk in the park but if we stick together, all will be well

Viper and I looked at each other and then at Panther

Me: You know we are going to beat this right? This is nothing, you are Panther and a Panther fight until the end. It fights even when it is bleeding, it doesn't give up

Viper: Now it's time to live up to your name. You can do this brother, and we are here with you until the end

Panther: I am scared, I don't wanna die. I never imagined my life to end like this

Viper: Your life is not ending you just told us that it's has not spread; you are going to fight this

I limped to his side and put my hand on his shoulder

Me: Now it's not the time for self-pity, we need way forward and this is not a way. We have to be hopeful

He closed his eyes and took a deep breath

Viper: Look at us Lindo... I said look at us

He raised his head

Viper: We've been through a lot together, a lot and not once did a challenge defeat us. Tooth was involved in a car accident a month ago, who was there for him? Me and you! We gave him our immense support because that's what brothers are for

Me: We stand by each other no matter the situation; we don't turn our backs on each other

Viper knelt before him and held his hand

Panther: Why? I am scared brother

Viper: It's okay and understandable to be scared



NOVELSGURU.COM

MZOXOLO

I was on the phone with MaKhumalo

Her: Mzo, what I am asking is simple, go and check if Lindo is fine

Me: MaKhumalo, I am not saying I won't go but I also think it's best if you come back home. If you are thinking Lindo is not fine then he is going to need you

Her: If that's your way of saying I must come back then forget about it, I am not coming back

Me: I thought by now you would have changed your mind and decide against the idea of divorcing me. I have faith we can still work things out

Her: Maybe, maybe not and stop making this call about us, you know exactly what you have done and I won't be manipulated by you

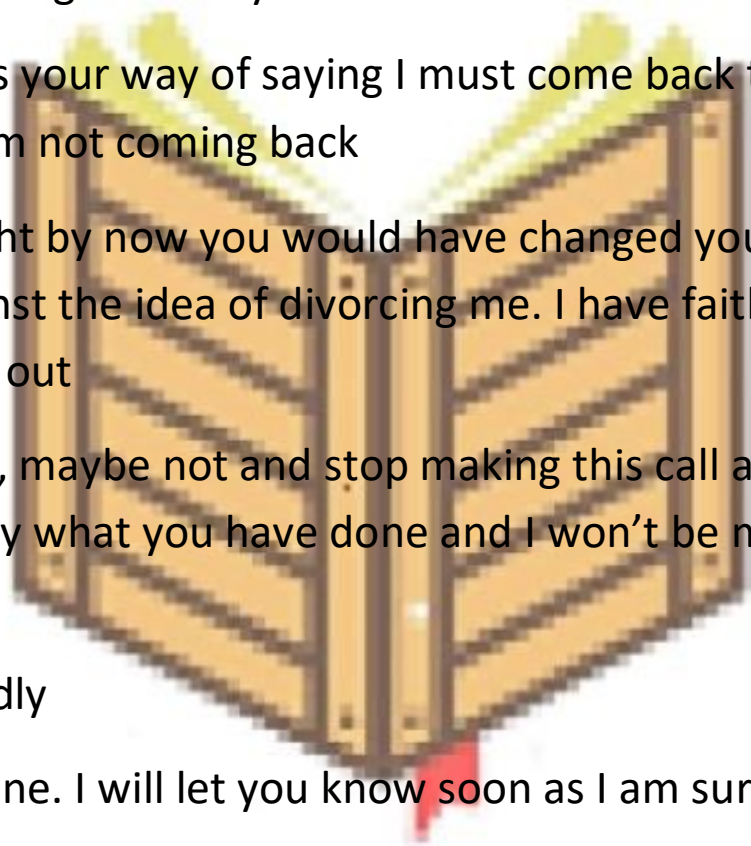
I sighed loudly

Me: Okay, fine. I will let you know soon as I am sure

Her: I'll wait for your call

She hung up

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM



I looked at the booties and smiled

Me: Thank you Mama, they are so beautiful

Ma: You welcome. I started knitting them when I found out about your pregnancy

Me: You so excited about this, I can see it in your eyes

Ma: it goes without saying; I mean who cannot be excited? It's my first grandchild and he/she deserve to be spoiled

I nodded slowly

Ma: What's wrong? Your smile just disappeared

Me: I am just thinking, as much as Ayden is trying to be strong I can see he wishes his mother was also with him during this exciting time in his life. He has disowned her but I can hear pain in his voice whenever he talks about her. Mimsey is his mother and you don't just forget about your parent like that

I don't think I will ever be able to disown my own mother no matter what she has done to me, I don't think I will be able to live without her but in this case Mimsey kinda went too far

Ma: This situation is too complicated. You can't be the reason why a mother and son are not talking but at the same time your

sanity is important. Ayden is thinking about you because he loves you but at the expense of wanting nothing to do with his mother

Me: And

Advertisement

I don't want that Mama, I don't want Ayden to feel obliged to hate his mother because she doesn't love me. I never imagined that one day I will come between a mother and son

Ma: What do you want to do?

Me: If I say I do then I will be lying, a part of me want to believe that Sophia has learnt from her actions and she deserves second chance but another part doesn't want to risk it. Especially now that I am pregnant

Ma: Have you forgiven her for what she has done?

Me: Mama, one thing I've learnt in this life is that you can never force someone to love you. It's either they love you or they don't, I made peace with Sophia not wanting me but I don't want her to fight with her son. If she doesn't want me, I will make sure I don't go anywhere near her. I will focus on my family and do what is best for us. I've seen how much Ayden loves me and I don't think Sophia will ever do something that is going to break Ayden and me.

Ma: I say talk with the father of your child and find a way forward together baby. Yes, Sophia messed up big time but if she is remorseful then don't you think she deserve that second chance? I am saying this because I've had more than two chances with you and Mimi. And I am sure there's that small part in Ayden that is wishing to reconcile with his mother

Me: I think you are right

Ma: But please Yara, don't make decisions alone, sit your boyfriend down and talk with him. If he doesn't want anything to do with her even after your talk don't force him, let him sleep on it. You will know you've done your part

PARIS

Me: Lea, let's go. Time is not on our side (Shouts)

I crouched and fasten Mpendulo's shoe laces

Me: All done... Where is Auntie Bontle?

Him: I last saw her in the garden



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay, you can go ahead and take these bags to the car whilst I wait for your mother

Him: Okay daddy

I ran to the stairs

Me: Lea, why are you taking so long? You know I hate driving in hurry and our flight is in 3 hours

Her: I am almost done Mr Me... You are dying to get to South Africa

Me: You are not funny

She circled her arms around my neck

Her: Asking for the last time, Paris Khumalo, are you sure about this?

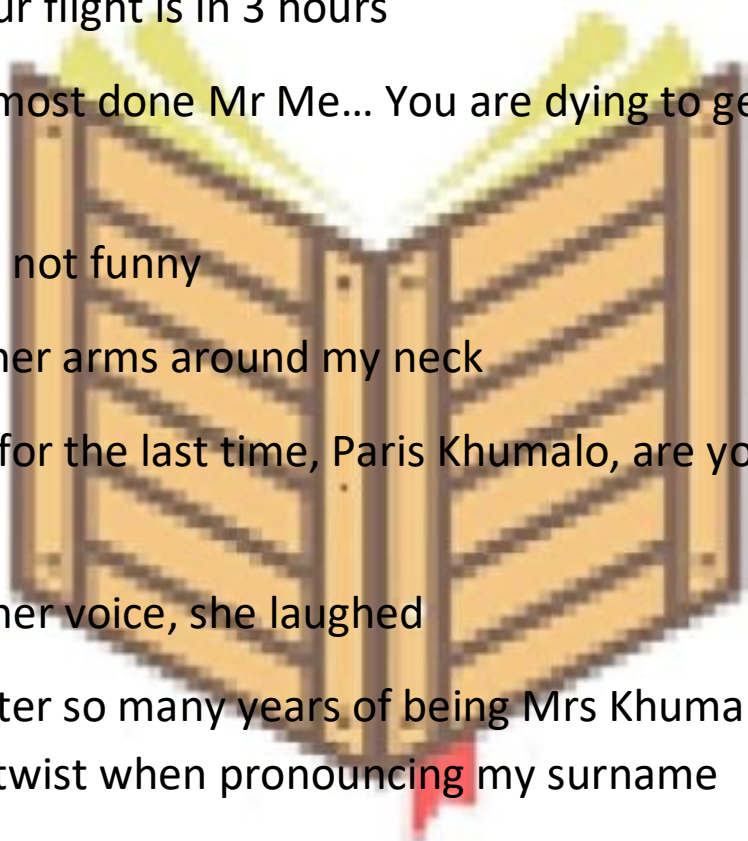
I mimicked her voice, she laughed

Me: Even after so many years of being Mrs Khumalo your tongue still twist when pronouncing my surname

Her: You are not funny and answer my question...

Me: I don't know Mrs Me but whatever waits I am ready for it

Her: I still don't see your uncle telling you the truth, how many times have you talked about this with him?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Uncle Mzoxolo is stubborn but I don't see him running away from this. It's time for him to tell me the truth; surely he has a lead on where my mother is. He will help me find her, and if he doesn't I will find her myself

Her: We will get through this together; I will be holding your hand all the way

Me: I know

I kissed her forehead

Me: Now let's go to SA!

AYDEN

I took a bite and frowned

Yara: Hey, it's not nice?

I nodded

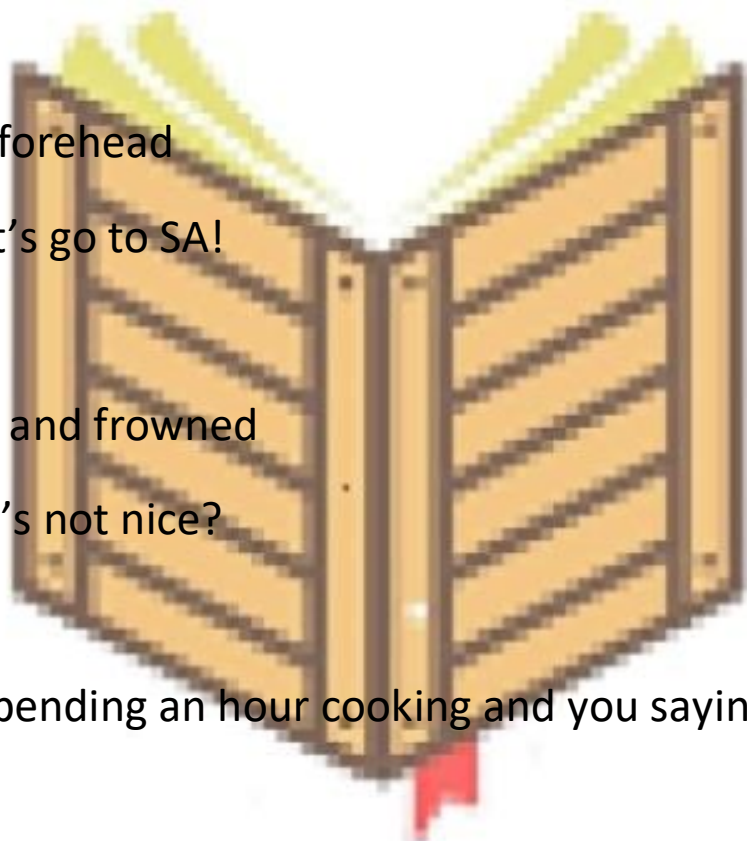
Her: After spending an hour cooking and you saying it's not nice, wow!

I laughed

Me: I am just pulling your leg. Come here

She sat on my lap

Her: I am not hurting you?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: No, I am fine. You can cook, this is nice and thank you for making lunch for us

Her: If I don't, who is going to?

Me: I will cook dinner, don't stress about it

Her: You don't have to

Me: I insist

Her: Munchie?

Me: Huh...

Her: Can we talk about you and your mother?

I dropped my fork on the plate

Me: What about her?

Her: Let's go and sit on the couch

Me: I am still eating, and I don't wanna lose my appetite. Let's talk about this later

Her: Okay

I kissed the back for her hand



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

81

AYDEN

She fixed her eyes on me and that was when I realised she is dead serious about her statement

Why would Yara want me to fix things with Mimsey after what she has done to her, to us? I thought she would be happy that I disowned her and I am focusing on us

Me: Are you listening to yourself right now?

Her: She is your mother

I tilted my head whilst laughing

Me: The same mother who worked so hard to separate us

Her: But, now we know where we stand with her, Ayden, I don't want you to wake up one day and blame me for coming between you and your mother. No!

Me: I will never do that

Her: Never say never. Right now you are angry at her yes, but one of these days you are going to hold this against me. Somehow you are going to

Me: Then you want me to accept her in my life again? No, in our lives

I put my hand on her tummy

Me: We know what she is capable of and I don't trust her around you or the baby

Her: This grandchild is her blood and I am not saying Sophia and I are going to start a friendship; I am talking about you and her. This isn't about me, that's what I want you to get. I am about to become a mother and I don't even want to think what I would do if my child disowns me

Me: What if she wants to get close to you?

Her: I will not allow her until I am sure she has changed. I am no longer naïve to believe her and I don't think she will want to jeopardize your relationship again. That's if you give her a chance

Me: Okay, I will think about it but I am not promising you anything

Her: That's enough to me

She smiled at me

Me: Now, what's that smug face for?

Her: That's my face



Me: I love your face

Her: The face you will soon hate when I become fat

Me: Never, now give me a kiss

Her: Nope. Pass me the remote

Me: I am watching soccer

Her: Saturdays are for me Munchie and you know that... we are going straight to Netflix and no debate about that

Me: And you want me to marry you? In your dreams

PANTHER

Old man: Son

Me: Baba

Old man: Your mother called me

Me: I knew she was going to call you

I sat on the couch



NOVELSGURU.COM

Old man: What' wrong? I know you, and right now you don't look like my son

Me: I have brain tumour Baba

He kept quiet; I raised my head and looked at him

Me: The Doctor ran tests on me last week and I received the results today

Old man: Okay, mh Nkosi yam (Breathes heavily) I am sorry son. How are you feeling?

Me: I don't know, I haven't made peace with it

Old man: We need to tell your mother

Me: No, we are not

Old man: Yes we are. How can we keep something like this from her? She will never forgive me

Me: I can't do this to mom; she will not be able to handle it. You know perfectly well how mom is, as it as she is going through the most now. You've kept things from her before, what's so hard about keeping this?

Old man: Dammit Lindo! You are her son and she deserve to know. You need her support and she is going to give that to you, she is your mother

Me: I got you and my brothers. We got this

Old man: Stop being stubborn

Me: I told you this because I trusted you

Old man: What stage is it?

Me: Grade II

Old man: It hasn't spread, you can be cured

Me: What happened to Uncle Zimele? Doctors gave him false hope but he still died

My eldest Uncle also had Brain tumour but his was found way too late. The doctors couldn't do anything to save him, we watched him taking his last breath every day and it was traumatizing. I am starting to think it runs in the family

Old man: Your uncle did exactly what you are doing

Advertisement

even if the help was little but it would have kept him alive

Me: I am not refusing treatment, I will do the treatment

Old man: Yoh! I wish I could trade places with you right now so

Me: I know Baba, in life you lose some you win some

Old man: Just know that nothing is too much to handle

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I gave a real thought to what has happened and I am only realizing now the damage of my actions. In my attempts to hurt Yara I ended in hurting my son, if that wasn't God then I don't know. He gave me a punishment for my actions, sometimes I wish he had spared my son. Money and status is nothing when you don't have the people you love around you, I have everything but my children's love. Ayden and Yara love each other and I have to say I was jealous of the love they share. The thing is, my mother-in-law never loved or accepted me, and in my case it wasn't about money as I come from rich family but that didn't stop her from hating me. I guess I wanted to make Yara feel what I felt under the hand of my mother-in-law; instead of erasing the mentality of mother's making decisions for their sons. Zack fought for me exactly the way Ayden has fought for Yara. I used Yara's background to fight my battles and I crossed so many lines

I sighed and rang her

Me: Yara

If I want to show Ayden how sorry I am then I need to start by apologizing to his partner

Me: Thank you for answering my call, I was just taking a chance

Her: You are still Ayden's mother Sophia and I never had an issue with you

Me: I don't deserve this

Her: I am only doing this for Ayden

Me: Fair enough. Reason I called... I wanna apologize Yara, for belittling you and making you feel less of a woman. I went far when I fetched another woman to come and make you cry that was the last straw. Not a day pass without me recalling each and every word you've said to me, I've registered all of them in my mind and they haunt me every day. I am a horrible person and I deserve whatever what is happening to me, I am not a good mother or person. My own son couldn't even tell me he is about to become a father. That cut deep

Her: You are a good mother; you just fight battles that are not yours. You meddle in your children's lives and don't want them to make their own decisions. You are overprotective, they no longer need you, and they only need your support. Instead of being their support system you are pushing them away

It will be a choice to not listen to what she is saying

Me: You couldn't have said it better. Please find it in your heart to forgive me

Her: If I don't forgive you, I'll be inheriting the same attitude to my child. I am going to do exactly what you are doing to me and feel that is good. I don't want that for my children, I don't want to be like you or your mother-in-law. I don't wanna pass the same hatred to the next generation

Me: I hear you

BUHLE

I received a call from Lindo

I might not know what is going on with him or if should be worried at all but I will let him be. Now I am just glad he is acting like my boyfriend

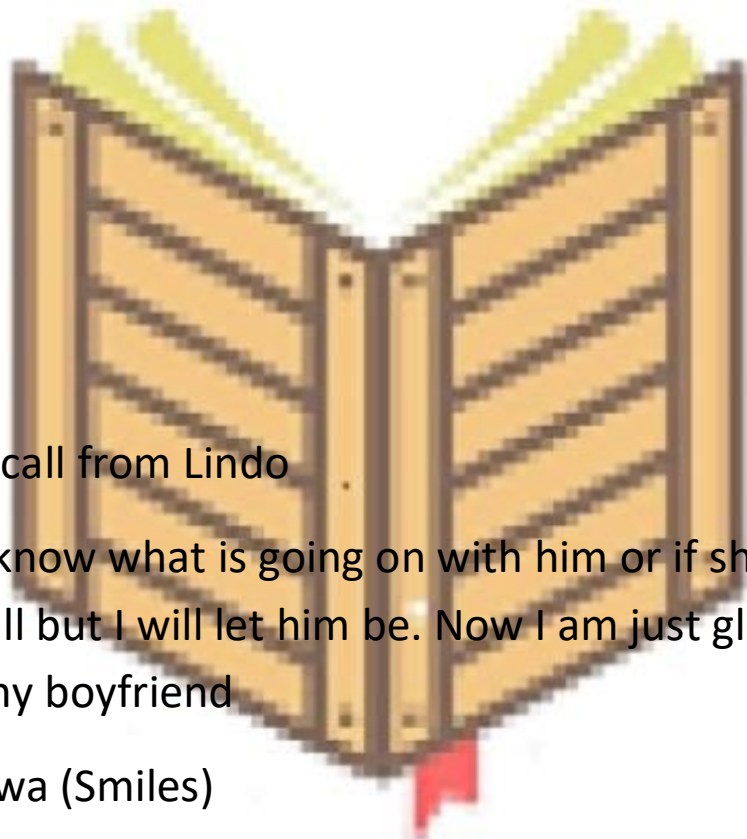
Me: Sthandwa (Smiles)

Him: And why are you smiling?

Me: I am not smiling

Him: I know you are smiling; you always smile when you talk with me

Me: Because you make me go crazy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: The way you good with words, you probably thinking of seducing me right now

Me: Will that be a bad idea

Him: Not at all

Me: Today you are delighted; I miss this side of you

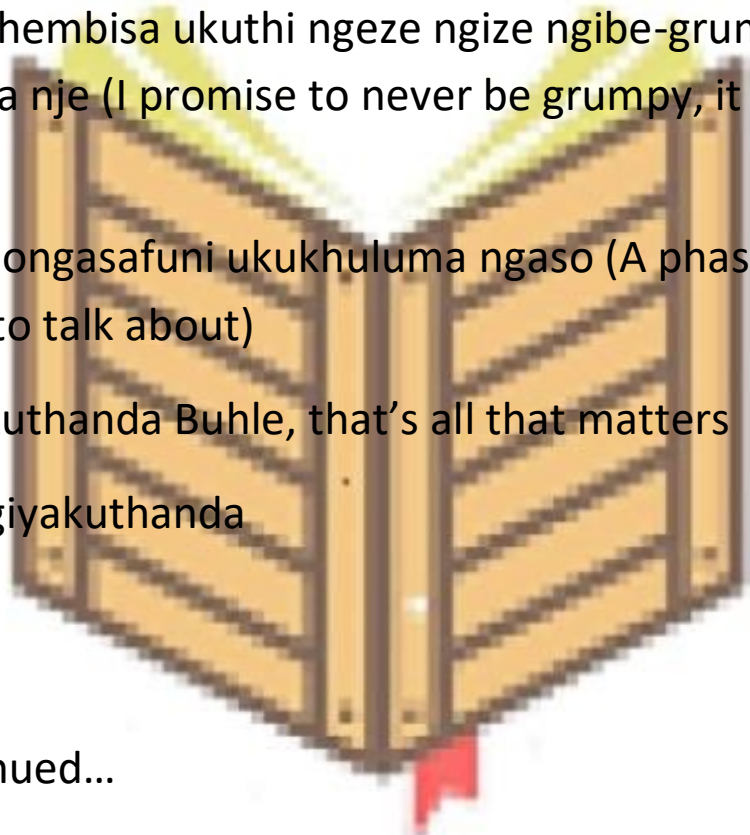
Him: Ngiyethembisa ukuthi ngeze ngize ngibe-grumpy, bekuyisigaba nje (I promise to never be grumpy, it was just a phase)

Me: Isigaba ongasafuni ukukhuluma ngaso (A phase you still don't want to talk about)

Him: Ngiyakuthanda Buhle, that's all that matters

Me: Nam ngiyakuthanda

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

MIMI

I was cuddling on the couch with Ethan

Ethan and I did agree to visit the topic about relocating when the dust has settled; I've always wanted to move to another country when I am financial stable. It has always been my dream to live somewhere else with my family and if Ethan is game then I don't see any reason why we shouldn't. A lot has happened here, good and bad memories. Zoe included in that, relocating doesn't necessarily mean we are running away from her because if she wants us she can find us but at least we will know that we are safe with our children. I am still uneasy, I know Zoe can come out at any time and come back to finish what she has started. I don't want to spend the rest of my life looking over my shoulder, I wanna concentrate on starting a family and I won't do that if I still feel like there's threat

Me: So, you also want to leave the country?

I raised my head

Him: I do, I want us to start over anywhere we like, and raise our children in peace. I've given this a thought; I just wanna



hear what you think about it. If it is a good idea... A lot has happened cuddles and if we can, why not?

Me: There's no lie in that we've gone through a lot, maybe going somewhere is what we need right now. It can actually work in our favour, it'd be nice

Him: I know but I want you to be sure. It's a huge decision to make, and I don't want you to rush it because I am saying so. I want us to be sure and be on the same page if we don't, we can drop it and start our family here. I have no problem

Me: I've been thinking about it since that day I talked with you about it, but I also don't think we can do that now. Maybe next year, when I've saved so that I can help...

Him: I will take care of everything, if you want to then we are going ahead with it

Me: No cuddly, this was also my idea so I am not going to let you spend on your own; we are talking about our future here

Him: Okay, let's do this; we will wait for six months since we are left with six months before month end. In this period we will be looking for places to go so long you will be saving because you are so adamant about contributing. The twins will also be done with school and we will be looking into post. What do you think?

Me: I like that, that way we won't rush things

Him: You couldn't have said it better, it is settled...

Me: Not so fast, we still have to talk with...

I pointed at the twins pictures

Him: The twins?

I nodded in agreement

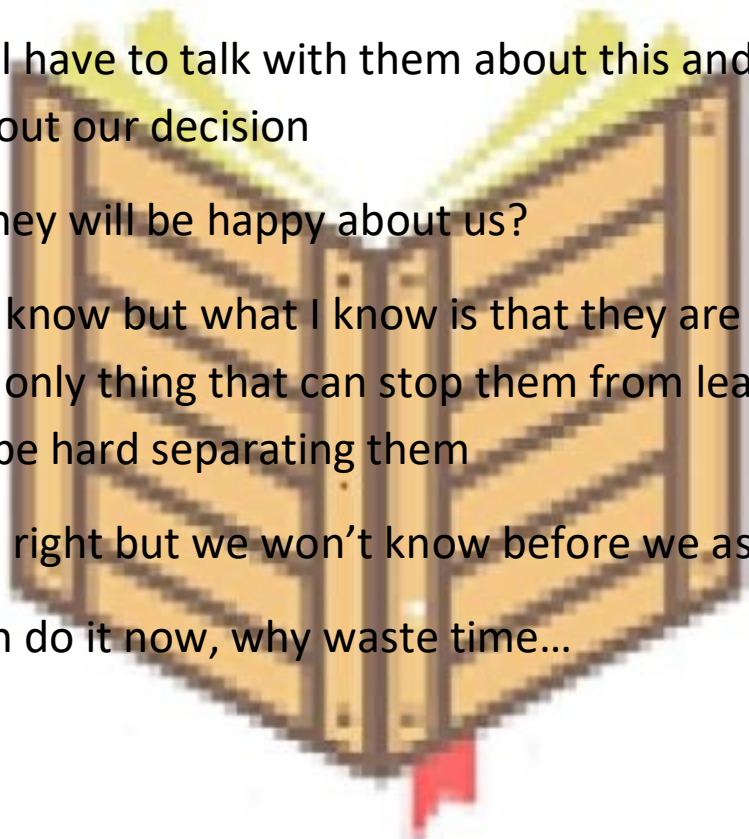
Him: We will have to talk with them about this and hear how they feel about our decision

Me: Think they will be happy about us?

Him: I don't know but what I know is that they are still young to reason. The only thing that can stop them from leaving could be Yara; it will be hard separating them

Me: You are right but we won't know before we ask them

Him: We can do it now, why waste time...



AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

Later on I decided to go and see my mother, I don't know if what I am doing is right but I will turn a blind eye and give her a

chance. I trust Yara's judgement, she will never mislead me. My anger has cooled down, I think I can sit down and listen to her

Her: Can I hug you?

I looked away

Her: Please son

I nodded slowly

She pulled me into her arms and held tight

Her: Please forgive me; I will never do anything to hurt you. I promise you Ayden; I will change and try to be the best mother to you. Forgive me (Sobs)

I felt my shirt getting wet; she must be a real actress to be pulling a stunt like this maybe she is genuinely sorry

She broke the hug

Her: I don't know if words will ever be enough to convince you but I am not going to stop until you see it

Me: How can I trust you after everything you've done? You are good at mind games and manipulation

Her: I know and I won't stand here and defend my actions. Look at you, you are limping, you have a huge scar on your arm because of me. Do you think I can still do anything to hurt you?  
No, I don't think I can

Me: I don't know

Her: Now I need to focus on repairing our broken relation, I don't have time to be plotting against you and Yara. I admit I was wrong...

I fixed my eyes on her

Let's see if you mean it...

Me: Would you like to be involved in Yara's pregnancy? Seeing that you've changed

I rested my arms on the couch

Me: You can do everything with her and be part of the pregnancy

Her: No, it's too early for that. I still want to show you and Yara the side of me you never knew existed. Not the evil side, I will not crowd Yara

Advertisement

she must first trust me around her child before I can do anything. I will not even go anywhere near her. I am going to keep my distance, I am willing to wait

Okay, maybe she is really sorry but I still don't trust her. Time will tell, my mother has been nothing but a witch

Me: Understandable

Her: I want us to fix our mother and son relationship, the rest will follow

ETHAN

We stood at the door and watched them playing play station

I cleared my throat

Me: Can we talk?

Lex: Come in daddy

We stepped inside and sat on the bed

Me: Come and sit here, aunty Mimi and daddy have something important to share with you

I always put my children first in everything I do; I don't want them to feel left out. Parents tend to make decisions without thinking about their children needs and I don't want to be that kind of parent. If I include them I get to know how they truly feel

Tenda: Why you looking so serious?

Mimi: Don't mind him, he is just ugly

They laughed

Me: Okay, jokes aside, let's talk about the matter in hand. Aunty Mimi and daddy are thinking about leaving South Africa and move to another country. Go somewhere else and start afresh, the four of us

Tenda: Where to?

Lex: I've always wanted to live in America, I love the way people live in there. It's amazing

Tenda: Ha Lex, who still wishes to go there when we have so many countries?

Lex rolled her eyes at him

Me: You do realise we are talking about leaving everything and everyone behind right? Your friends, family and Aunty Yara...

Lex: We do

Tenda: It's not like we have friends, it has always been the two of us

Mimi: You are also leaving aunty Yara behind. You are going to spend lot of time not seeing her, are you cool with that?

Lex: She doesn't need us; she is going to have a baby soon. So, we are cool

Mimi and I looked at each other

Lex: If daddy wants us to leave then we can leave

Tenda: Yeah

Mimi: We are not leaving right away, we still have time

“Okay” they said in unison

Me: Alright, you can get back to what you were doing

We stood up and walked out the room

Mimi: What was that about?

Me: Search me, should we be excited or get worried?

Her: Let’s give it a day or two. Then we will be sure

YARA



Viper and Old man joined us for dinner tonight but Panther didn't make it. Which is something I find very weird, he is always excited to spend time with me unless he is with Buhle

I set bottle of wine on the table and glasses

Me: Are you going to tell me the real reason why Panther is not here? I tried calling him but it went straight to voicemail

Viper: He is busy with work

Ayden: Yeah, he is

Me: You are all lying, what are you keeping from me? I am not stupid, Munchie?

Ayden: Mh?

Me: Baba?

Old man: Maybe we should tell her, Panther is going to need her support

Me: Support? What are you talking about? Someone, say something

Ayden: No, trust me guys we don't have to tell her

Me: Tell me what? I am getting annoyed right now

Ayden: Shawty, trust me for your sake you don't need to know

Old man: Your brother is sick, he has tumour

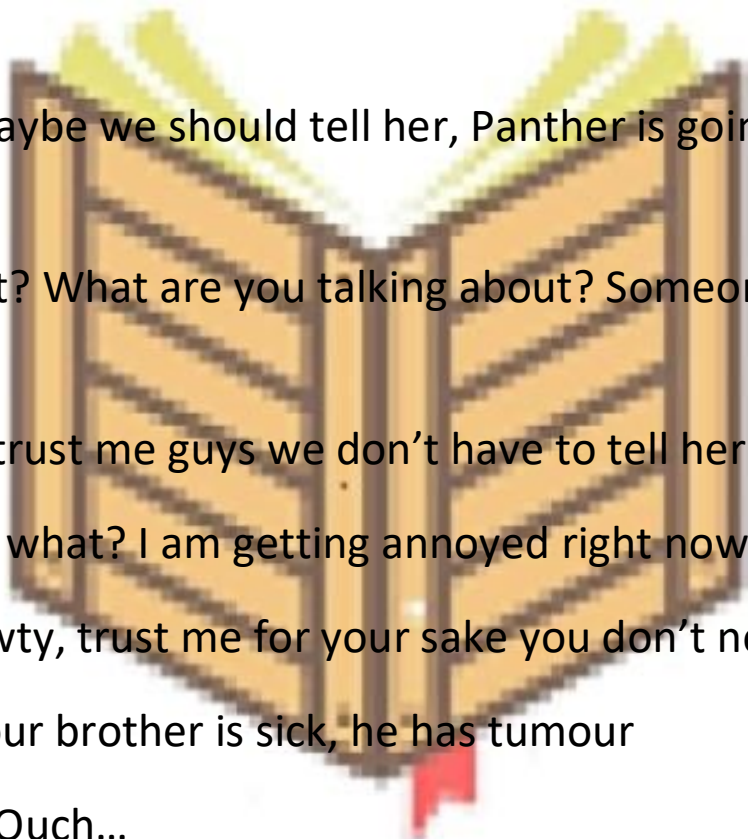
Me: What? Ouch...

I rested my hand on the table and rub my tummy

Ayden: See now? I knew what I was doing

Viper stood up

Viper: What's wrong with her?





We haven't told them about my pregnancy, I am sure that's why Ayden didn't want me to know

Me: Is my brother dying?

Viper: No, he is not

Old man: Not even close

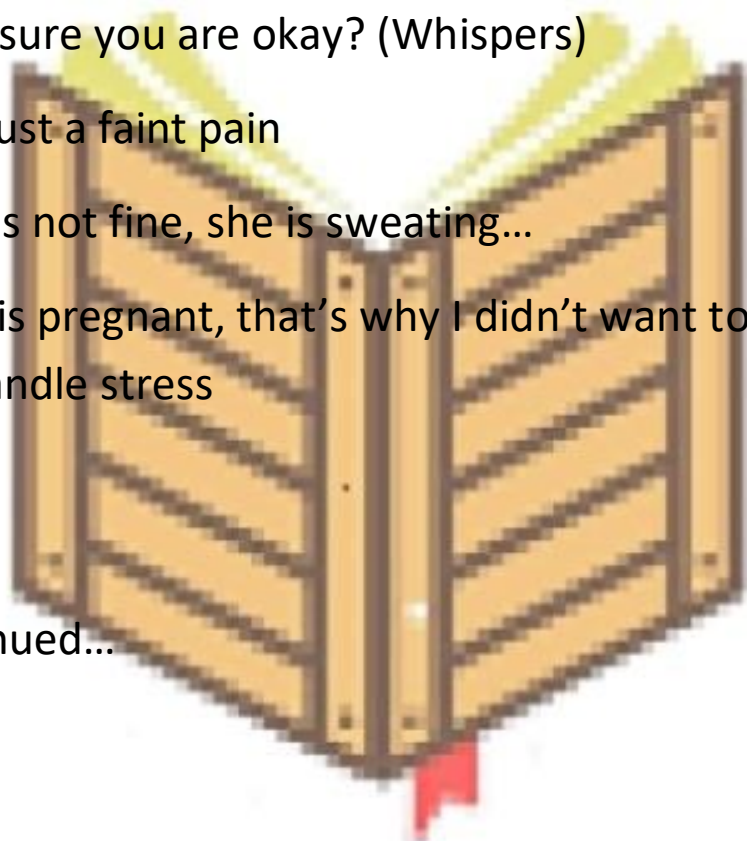
Ayden: You sure you are okay? (Whispers)

Me: It was just a faint pain

Viper: Yara is not fine, she is sweating...

Ayden: She is pregnant, that's why I didn't want to tell her now. She can't handle stress

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

Telling my family last night that I am pregnant went well than I thought, even though we didn't tell them in a good manner but my father wasn't upset. If anything he warned Ayden to do the right thing and stop wasting my time, I was embarrassed by that statement is like he was forcing his hand. But I know Ayden didn't see it like that, he knows my father better

I stood at the window and looked outside

Ayden: By looks of it, do you think it will rain?

Me: It's drizzling already

Him: Good for us, we will spend the whole day in doors

I kept quiet

Him: You still upset with me?

Me: I just don't understand why you didn't tell me

Him: I didn't want to upset you and your brother didn't want any of you to know

Me: And, you listened to him? He is not thinking straight

Him: In case you've forgotten, you are pregnant and stress is not right for you. And I will never apologize for putting you first, so if you wanna get angry, go ahead Yara!

Me: So, you will keep on keeping things from me?

Him: If it means less stress, then yes. I will keep on doing it over and over again

Me: You will not...

He raised his hand and looked at me

Him: You will throw your tantrums after 7 months, okay? Now I'm going to prepare breakfast for you, after a min or two come and take glass of warm milk

He opened the door and walked out

I took my phone and rang Panther

Him: Wow, what have I done to deserve this call so early in the morning?

Me: You should have been the one to call after missing dinner last night

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: About that, I am sorry; I couldn't finish work in time. But, I am sure you got my congratulations message; you are really making me an uncle?

Me: I am; you are going to be the best uncle ever

Him: You got that right (Laughs)

Me: How are you?

Him: Good, and you?

Me: No need to lie, I already know

He kept quiet

Me: Why didn't you tell me? Keeping something like this is not on...

Him: Who told you?

Me: That doesn't matter, what matters is you and your health. Why are you keeping this as a secret?

Him: I don't want you guys to worry about me, I got this. Viper, Ayden and Old man are giving me the best support. You are too fragile and this will break you

Me: What are you saying? We are your family and we have every right to know, you can't side-line us. How is Buhle taking this? She was very worried about you, I am sure she is in pieces...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: She doesn't know yet, I haven't gathered strength to do so

Me: Are you stupid or what? You seriously think you can handle this on your own and how do you think she is going to feel when someone tells her?

Him: I am going to tell her, I am just waiting for the right time

Me: There's no right time for breaking such news, tell her or before she find out herself. The sooner you tell everybody the sooner we start worrying about your treatment

Him: I know

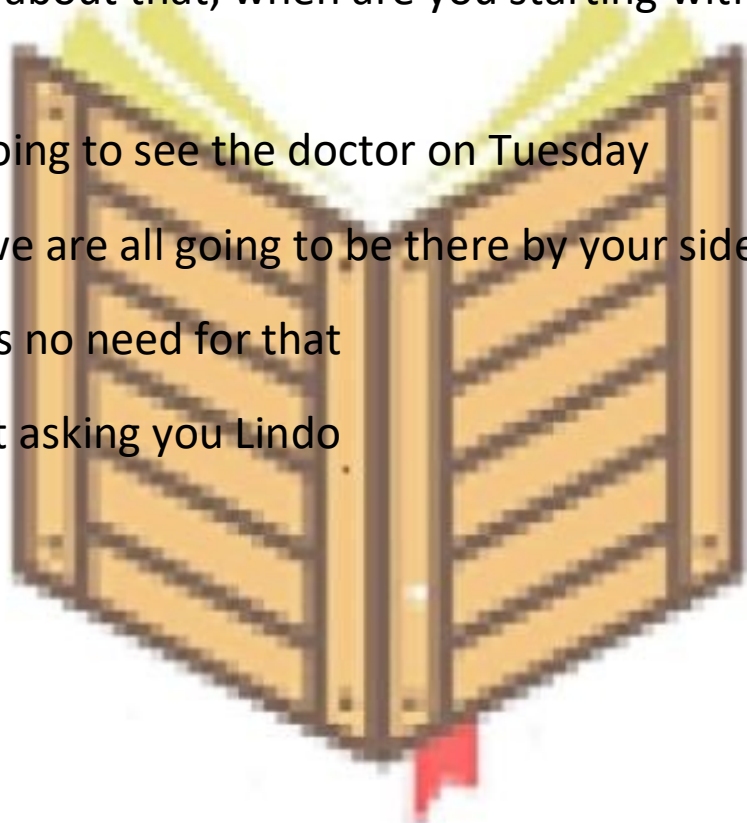
Me: Talking about that, when are you starting with your treatment?

Him: I am going to see the doctor on Tuesday

Me: Okay, we are all going to be there by your side

Him: There's no need for that

Me: I wasn't asking you Lindo



AYDEN

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Amelia pulled the chair and sat down

Me: Why are you here so early in the morning? Is everything fine?

Her: Everything is fine and I am not here for you but Yara. Why would I wake up and decide to come and see your ugly face?

Me: That's not funny

Her: Where is she?

Me: She should be here soon unless she is on the phone

Her: I will wait, I don't mind at all and it's nice seeing you in front of the stove

Me: Can't believe my girlfriend is replacing me from my sister's heart, it actually hurts

Her: Get over yourself; I've had you in my heart for many years now it's time I move you out

She cleared her throat

Her: I heard you made peace with Mimsey

Me: I did

Her: You should have seen her last night; she looked like a baby who just got her Christmas clothes. She was very happy

Me: I just pray I don't regret it

Her: I don't think we will reach that stage



NOVELSGURU.COM

## PARIS

We arrived in SA last night but we decided to sleep in the hotel. Since I am not familiar with this place I called my uncle to come and fetch us. He wasn't really pleased to see me. He thought I was joking when I said I am coming down as I've always. This time is different, I am dead serious about finding answers and the sooner I find out the better we can put the past behind us

Uncle Mzoxolo closed the door behind him and turned to us

Him: Let me take this upstairs

Lea nodded

Lea: Go with your grandfather and he will show you your room

She said to Mpendulo

Old man: Me and you

Advertisement

we have to talk

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He gave me a dead stare

As long as you give me what I need then we have nothing to worry about

Lea: He is very angry with you

Me: I really don't care Lea; my uncle has to tell the truth

I looked at my father's picture on the wall

Her: Your father looked exactly like Mzoxolo; you'd swear they are twins

Me: They do, it's unfortunate I never got to know him

My uncle told me my father passed on when my mother was still pregnant with me

Her: It is

Uncle Mzoxolo is the only person from SA that I have close relationship with. 20 years ago my uncle moved me to Botswana; I was too young to ask questions. For as long as I remember it has always been him, no sign of my mother or other relatives. Before I moved to Botswana I used to live in Western Cape I started my pre-school there, I had a guardian Miss Margareta who went with me to Botswana. She has been taking care of me since, when I moved to Botswana uncle Mzo enrolled me to boarding school. I spent most of my time at boarding, when I was not at school I'd be in the house with Margareta. It has always been the two of us; uncle Mzo would come and visit, he also made sure he doesn't miss my birthdays. Whenever I asked him why I was there he would tell me it's complicated and I am still too young to understand, I



stopped asking him questions. But in the back of my mind I always asked myself where my mother is and why she is not with me. Why was she allowing another woman to take care of me and why don't I know other members of the family. As I grow older questions kept on rising and uncle Mzo kept on telling me it's complicated, but eventually he told me that my mother didn't want me, she was also a danger to me that's why he took me away and kept me far from everyone her included. What my father and mother had wasn't serious and she didn't want me as I was a reminder of a toxic love "Staying here is for your own safety and sanity" those were his words but a part of me didn't want to believe him; I refused to believe my mother was a danger and didn't want me. I knew a bit about my father and how he passed on, also my brothers Lindo and Craig. Uncle Mzo always talks about them and whenever he visits he would come with their pictures, I recently found out about his daughter Yara. But, right now I want to find answers to the questions I've always had, I want to meet this woman who gave birth to me and refused to give me love. I am ready for anything, either way I am broken, I never knew her love. What more can she say or do that can hurt me?

ETHAN

I held the teddy bear and sat on the bed

I am trying to brush off how the twins acted yesterday when we told them about relocating. There's something about their behaviour that is unsettling

Me: Lex, come and sit here. I wanna talk with you

She closed her colouring book and jumped on the bed

Me: I've already talked with your brother and now I wanna talk with you

Her: Did we do something wrong?

I shook my head no

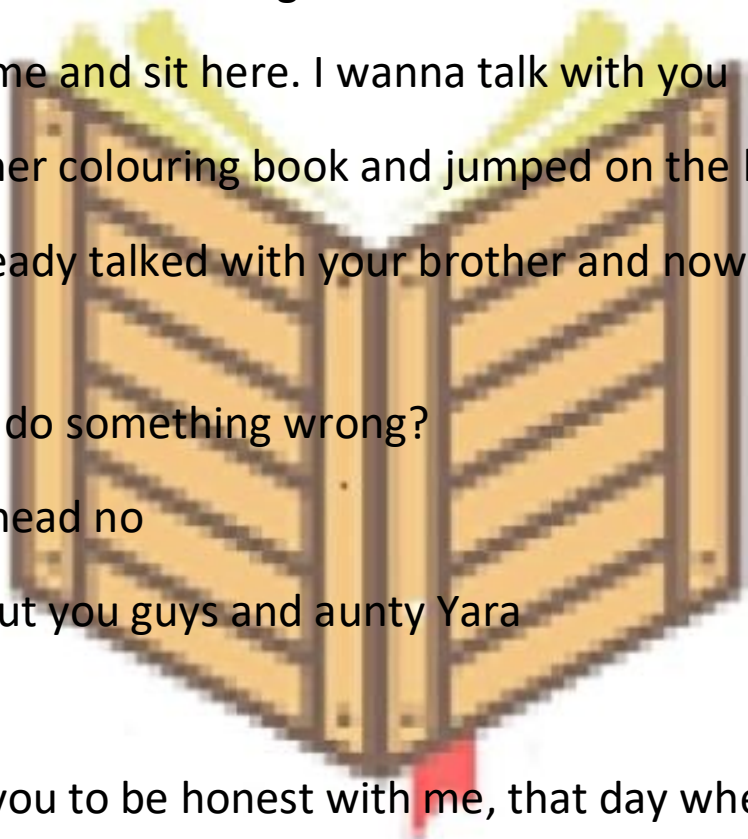
Me: It's about you guys and aunty Yara

Her: Okay...

Me: I want you to be honest with me, that day when Yara told us about her baby, you and Rotenda didn't look happy. What she said didn't sit well with both of you

Her: It's not that daddy

Me: Then what is it?



Her: We don't see how we are going to fit in her life; she won't need us when her baby is born. She and uncle T won't need us; they have already started showing us. For us to get their attention is very hard, she hardly calls or come to visit us. And when she does, she is passing by or here to tell us something. We seriously thought she loved us but we were wrong, when mommy passed on we thought we have found a mother in her. I know I was harsh towards her at first but I then started seeing her as a mother

Me: Baby, that's not true

Her: It is daddy, we are kids but we can see and feel these things. The only person who is showing us love right now is Aunty Mimi and we don't know for how long. She can also change on us but I guess that's what happens when you no longer have a mother. The day mommy closed her eyes was the day...

A tear escaped my eye

How is a 10 year old saying all of this? Are they hurting this much?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Stop Lex

I pulled her into my arms

Me: Why you saying things like this? You are hurting me

I gently brushed her back

MZOXOLO

I was trying by all means to avoid Paris; I know he is not going to waste time. He won't travel from Botswana for nothing, sooner or later I will have to face her

I set the glass on the table

"Can we talk now" he said standing behind me

Me: I thought you were resting

Him: I was, now I wanna talk

He sat on the couch

Me: Is it really necessary for you to do this?

Him: It is; you have no idea how important this is to me. Please uncle, tell me, I wanna hear the side of her story

Me: I don't want you to get hurt

I looked away

Him: Is she still alive? If she is, where is she?

Me: She is still alive...

Him: Where is she?

Me: I can't tell you that

Him: Why?

He yelled

Me: Because I lied to you Paris, that's why!

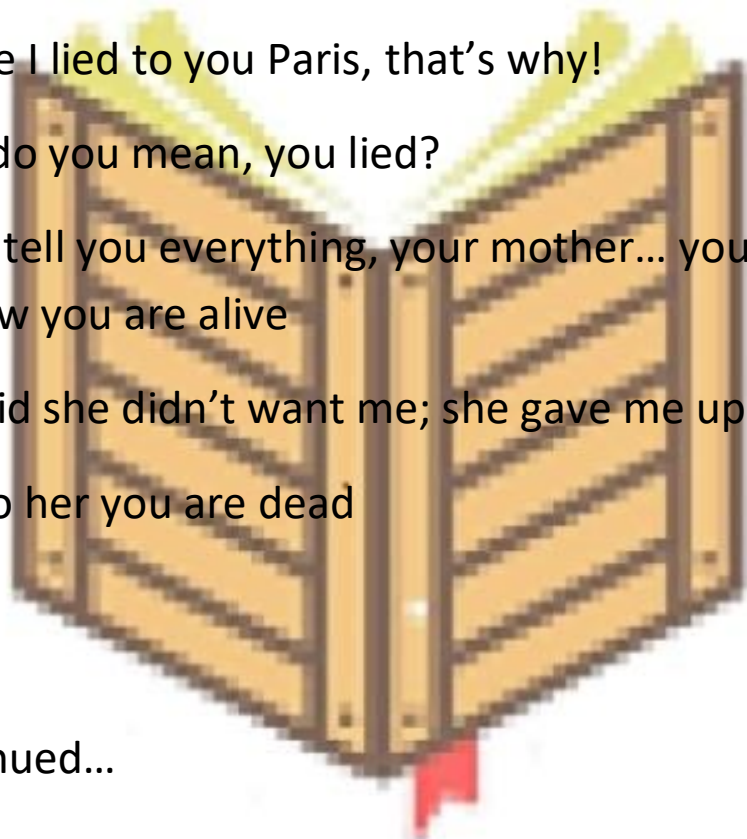
Him: What do you mean, you lied?

Me: I didn't tell you everything, your mother... your mother doesn't know you are alive

Him: You said she didn't want me; she gave me up...

Me: I lied, to her you are dead

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ETHAN

Goldie made a choice to choose the woman who will look after her children when she passed on and I was part of that choice. I gave her my word that her children will be taken care off and now I feel like I've went back on my word. If my children are hurting like this, what does that make of me? Yara also has a life and she can't always be with my children but they are too young to understand that. I couldn't have prevented her from getting pregnant, and it never occurred to me that the twins will feel left out and unwanted

I parked my car at the gate. I got out and stepped inside the yard

Me: Ndi masiari mama (Afternoon)

I greeted Mimi's mother who was sitting in the veranda

Her: Masiari a vhudi mutukana wanga (Good afternoon my son)

Me: Ndi nga kona u vhoni Mimi? (Can I see Mimi?)

Her: Unga ngomu, ni nga khokhonya munangoni (She is inside, you can knock on the door)

I nodded and climbed the stoop

I knocked on the door, Buhle opened the door

Her: Ethan, hello

Me: Hello

Her: Please come in... Mimi, you have a visitor (Shouts) please, sit down

I walked over and sat on the couch

Me: Thank you

“Cuddles, you didn’t say you were coming” she said standing at the passageway

Buhle: I am leaving, I will see you

Mimi: Okay, bye

Buhle: Bye Ethan

I waved at her

Mimi: You are so quiet, what’s wrong?

She said next to me

Me: I wanted to see you

I sighed loudly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: The twins are not okay and I don't even know what to do. I feel like I am failing as a parent

Her: What happened?

I narrated the whole story

Her: Wow, I don't know what to say cuddles, this is too deep and Yara has to know

Me: Yeah, I am going to let her know

Her: Come to think of it, I did have a talk with Lex some time back and I thought she was just playing when she said Yara is neglecting them

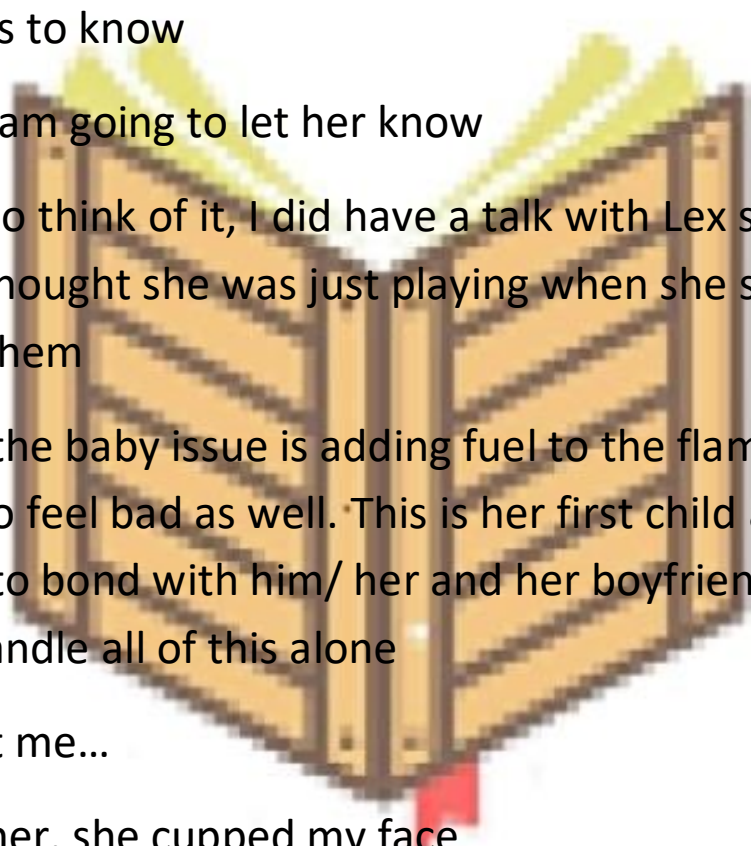
Me: I think the baby issue is adding fuel to the flame and I don't want Yara to feel bad as well. This is her first child and she has every right to bond with him/ her and her boyfriend need her. She can't handle all of this alone

Her: Look at me...

I looked at her, she cupped my face

Her: It is her first child but she also made a promise to Goldie and she will never forget that. Yara just need to talk and assure them that they will forever be in her life. And the baby will never change that. They have to know Ethan

Me: I know



NOVELSGURU.COM



AYDEN

Mimsey asked me to accompany her to the building, and inspect the progress. These people have been here for almost a month and weeks and they are not showing signs of finishing

We walked around the building

Her: MAA architects knew what they were doing; I mean not even our current building looks like this

Me: You are right; Ethan went overboard with the design. I did right by going to them

She nodded as we continued to walk around

Constructor: Good day Mr and Mrs Tshivhase

Her: Good day, I like what I see. You are doing a great job

Constructor: We are just doing our job and following a design ma'am

Me: Still thank you, you were highly recommended and you are building it exactly as it is in the plan

Her: I was not very sure about them but I can see I was wrong

Me: You like to judge Mimsey

She looked at the constructor

Her: When do you think you can be done? We were supposed to start operating this coming month

Constructor: The problem was with the suppliers, next week was supposed to be our last week here

Me: Time is money and what is happening here is costing us

Her: My son is right, you are taking too long and we don't have money to keep us. We are losing money

Constructor: We know and we apologize for that

Advertisement

my team and I will work hard and fast. We should be done in two weeks

Me: Don't mess things whilst rushing

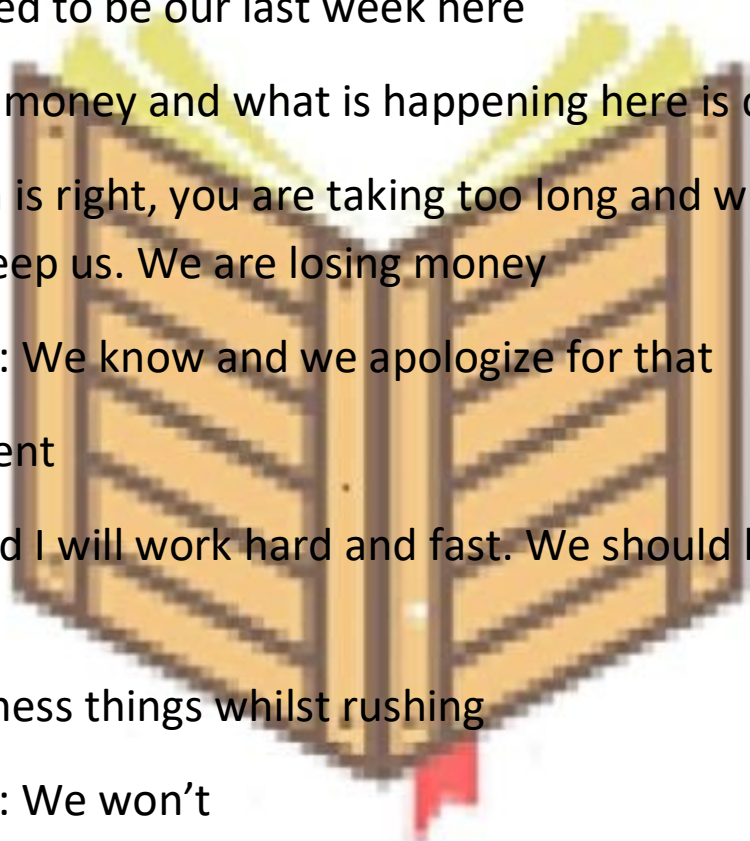
Constructor: We won't

Her: You can go back to work

She picked the bricks and set them aside

Her: I was thinking...

Me: That's dangerous



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Not this time... I was thinking of giving Yara another position when are done with this firm. She can move with the new team and work in this new firm

I looked at her

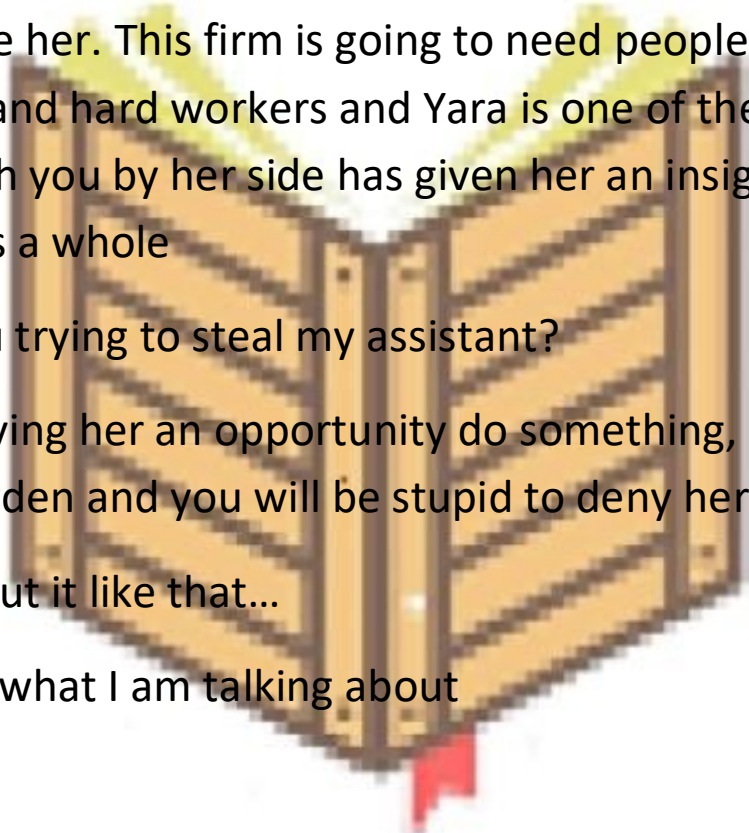
Her: She can't be your assistant forever and she is very intelligent and a hard worker, whilst she finishes her degree we can promote her. This firm is going to need people who are passionate and hard workers and Yara is one of them. I am sure working with you by her side has given her an insight about insurance as a whole

Me: Are you trying to steal my assistant?

Her: I am giving her an opportunity do something, she has potential Ayden and you will be stupid to deny her that

Me: If you put it like that...

Her: I know what I am talking about



BUHLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Later on Lindo called and asked to have lunch with me, he also hinted that there's something he want us to talk about. I don't know what to expect right now

I took off my clothes and put on his shirt

Him: You look sexy

I blushed and smiled at him

Him: Let's go and prepare something to eat

Me: I thought we were going to talk first

Him: No, we need to eat first. Or you want me to eat you first?

He ran his hand on my arse

Me: In your dreams

Him: The way you are starving me

Me: Excuse you; do you want me to start counting?

Him: No, don't

Me: I thought as much

He squeezed my arse and kissed my neck

Him: I need to make a phone call first

Me: Let me go and defrost the chicken

Him: Okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

I closed the door and walked to the kitchen

I took out the chicken out of the freezer and put it inside the  
micro oven

Me: "Taking them off 'cause I feel a fool

Try'na dress up when I missing you

Imma step out of the lingerie

Curl up in a ball with something Hanes

In bed I lay

With nothing but your t-shirt on"

I softly sang whilst doing some moves

I felt eyes on me

Me: Staring is rude

Him: I can't help me, the way you are moving those hips, God!

I turned around

Me: Pervert!

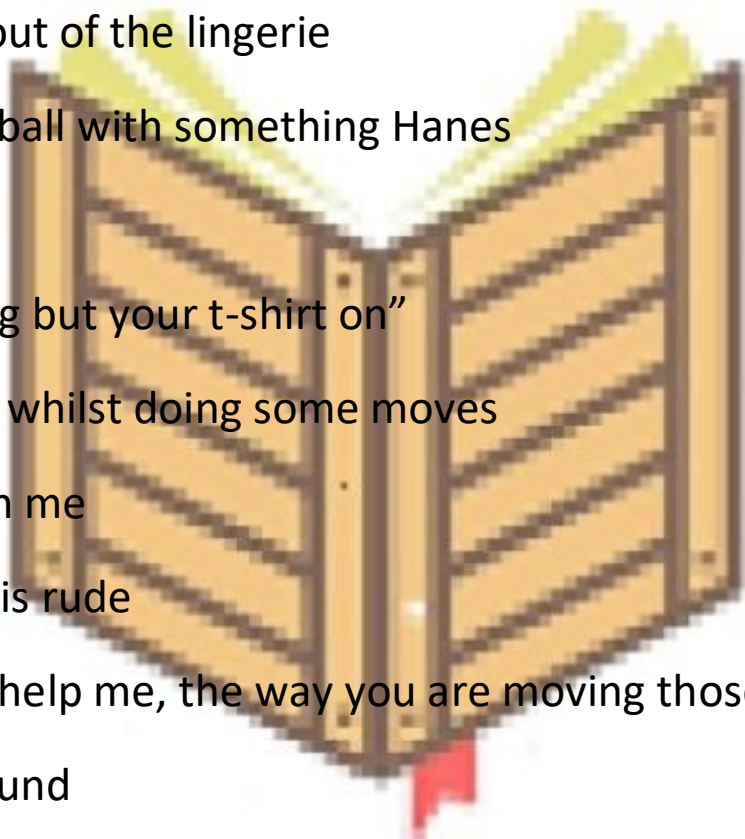
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He attempted to walk but he bumped into a kitchen table

Me: Watch where you are going, you will hurt yourself

He closed his eyes and opened them again

Him: I am okay



Me: Come and sit down

He ran his eyes around but seemed as if he has no idea of which direction to go to

Me: Sthandwa, come

I extended my hand

He ignored it

Him: Ouch, Buhle, I am... I am losing my sight

I laughed softly

Me: Now it's not time for jokes Lindo

I walked up to him before I could touch him he passed out

Me: Oh my God! Lindo, get up this is not funny. Lindo!

I reached for my phone and called his brother

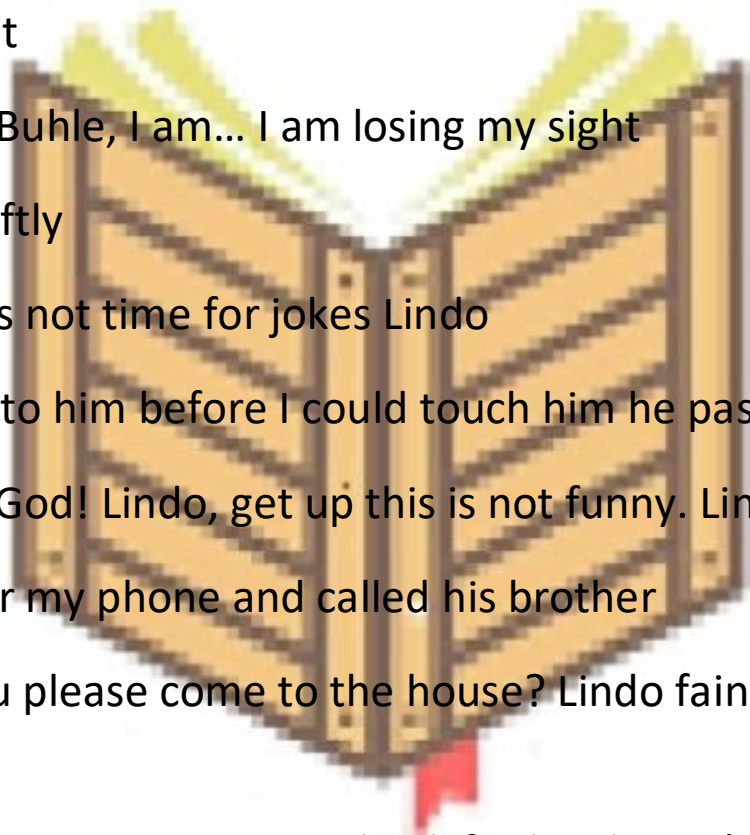
Me: Can you please come to the house? Lindo fainted, he is not breathing

Him: What? I am on my way, check for his doctor's number inside the drawer and tell him we are on our way

Doctor? What the fuck is going on here?

Him: Did you hear me Buhle?

Me: Yes, I did (Stammers)



I hung

Me: Lindo, whatever it is please, don't die on me

I kissed his forehead and ran to the lounge

VIPER

Soon as Buhle hang up I called my father

Me: Dad, where are you?

Old man: At the house

Me: Lindo fainted, his girlfriend called me now

Old man: How is he?

Me: I don't know; I am going there now. Go to the hospital, we will meet there

Old man: Hurry Craig, please. If you arrive before the ambulance take him there, don't wait for them

Me: Okay father

I hung up and ran out



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

VIPER

We haven't said anything to Buhle; I honestly can't break the news to her

Yara sat next to her

Buhle: What's going on Yara?

Yara: Buhle, Lindo has cancer

She laughed and looked at Yara

Buhle: What's with the jokes today?

Yara: I am not

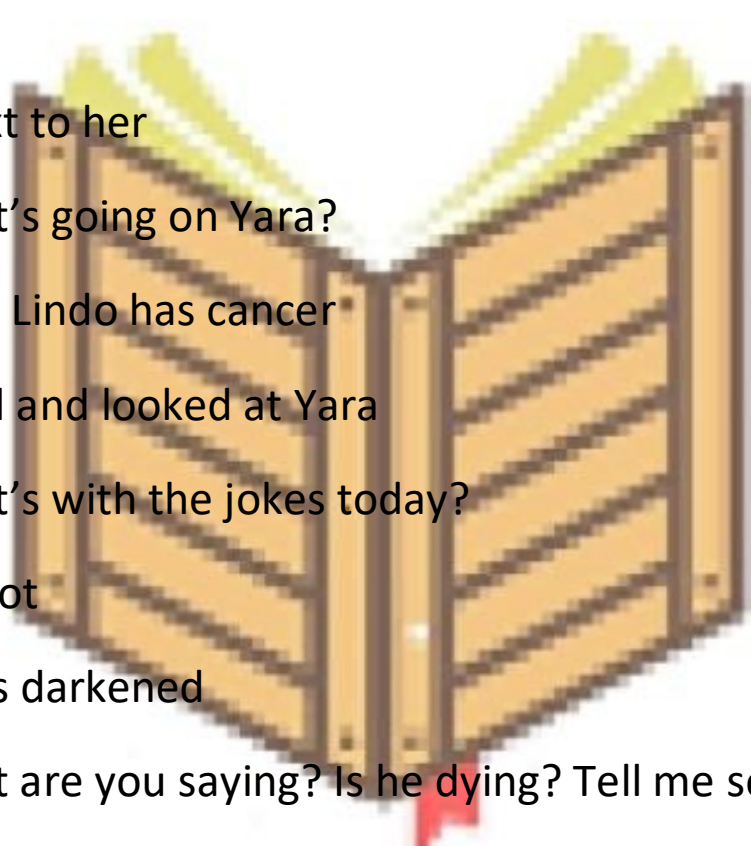
Buhle's eyes darkened

Buhle: What are you saying? Is he dying? Tell me something

Yara: I ask that you become strong; Lindo is strong and full of life. Don't be distress

Buhle: Oh sweet Jesus, please don't take him

Yara: He won't





Buhle: This is what he wanted to tell me? But why didn't he when he got the diagnose, he must have felt alone and miserable

Me: He wanted to tell you trust me but he didn't know how. He didn't want you to stress

Old man waved at us

Yara: You wanna go with us inside, to talk with the doctor?

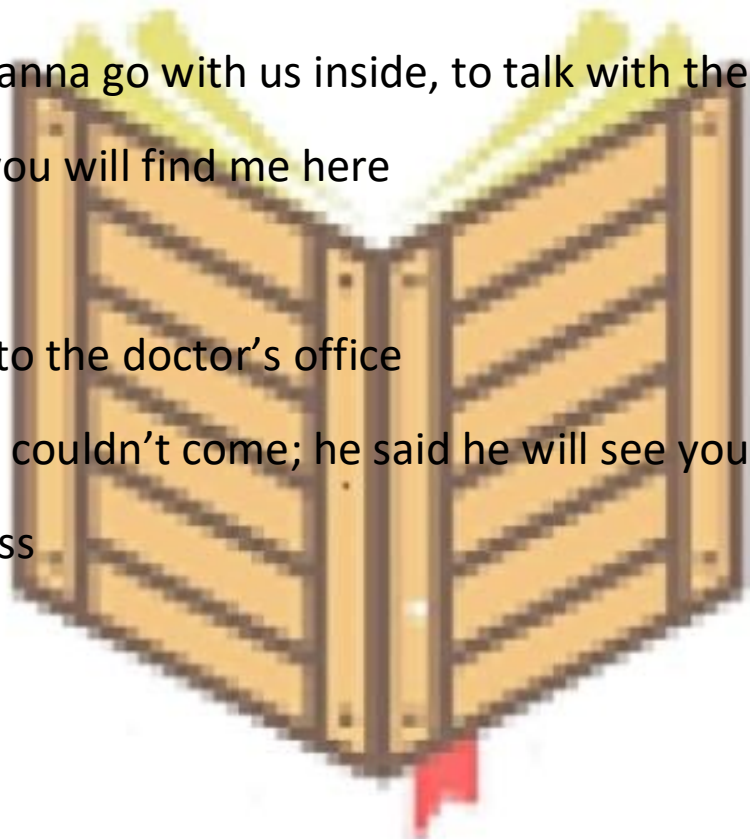
Buhle: No, you will find me here

Yara: Okay

We walked to the doctor's office

Yara: Ayden couldn't come; he said he will see you later

Me: No stress



BUHLE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was on a call with Mimi

Her: Do you want me to come there?

Me: No, don't stress yourself

Her: I am not

Me: I should be home soon; the doctor is not allowing us to see him so staying here is pointless. I need to rest and regain strength; Lindo can't see me like this

Her: I still don't believe Lindo kept this; I mean this is huge...

Me: I don't care about any of that; I am more worried about his mental state. I can't even start to imagine how he was feeling all this time; he didn't show any signs of pain. He laughed with a broken heart; he wanted to be strong for us and forgot about himself

Her: He will bounce from this; he is stronger than you think. And his family is going to make sure he gets the best doctors to help him, they are going to help him. Don't stress too much, we will also pray for him

Me: You are right

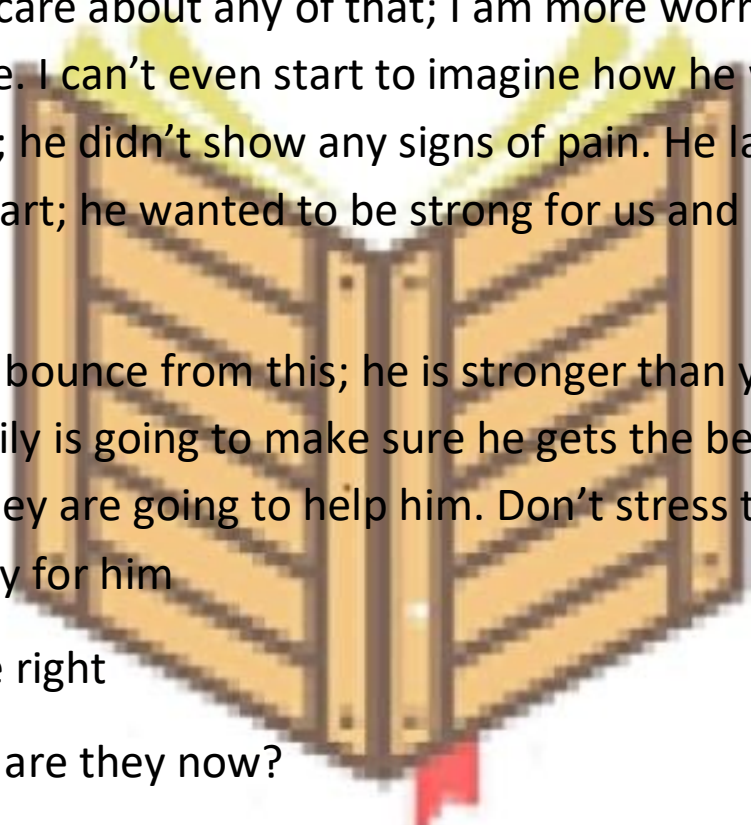
Her: Where are they now?

Me: They are talking with the doctor; I couldn't go inside with them. His father scares me

She laughed softly

Her: I know what you are talking about. Praying for good news

I checked the time on my wrist watch



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'll see you soon, I am coming back

Her: Okay, kisses...

I hung up

I shoved my phone in my pocket and ran my eyes to the doctor's office

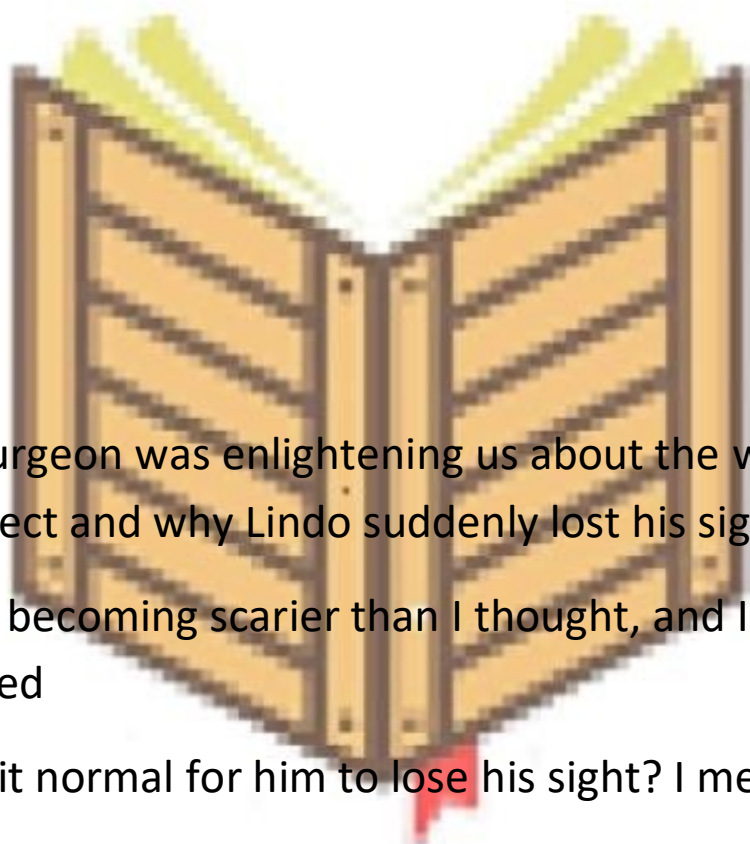
YARA

The neurosurgeon was enlightening us about the whole thing, what to expect and why Lindo suddenly lost his sight

This thing is becoming scarier than I thought, and I am starting to get worried

Old man: Is it normal for him to lose his sight? I mean, how is it possible?

Doctor Masango: Brain tumours affect ones vision such as double and blurred vision. All of this happens when tumour places pressure on a certain area of the brain. What we are going to do know is referring you to an eye expert; he will give you more information



NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper: Is he going to regain his sight?

Doctor: As I've said, an eye expert will shed light on that matter

We looked at each other

Doctor Masango: Mr Khumalo has to start treatment soon; we can't afford to wait any longer

Old man: He was supposed to come and see you this coming Tuesday about that but as you can see, he is here now

Doctor Masango: They are various treatment options; they can be confusing and difficult to comprehend especially in times like this. I am going to give you time to go through each and every one of them, this information will explain to you how the procedure works and possible side-effects, both short-term and long-term. There's also this one that is common, is an operation called craniotomy. It's a surgery that is performed in attempt of removing it completely, if the tumour can be. So go through them and make a choice

He placed a booklet on the table

Doctor Masango: You need to understand each of them before you choose the one you think is suitable, Mr Khumalo must be aware of all treatments

Me: We see, so in the meantime what is going to happen, are you going to keep him here?

Doctor Masango: He will be fine, we will give him drugs that will keep him calm and fine in the meantime. Most patients are given drugs that relieve swelling and control seizures. He will be discharged but not now, the eye expert will have to examine him

Viper: Can we see him now?

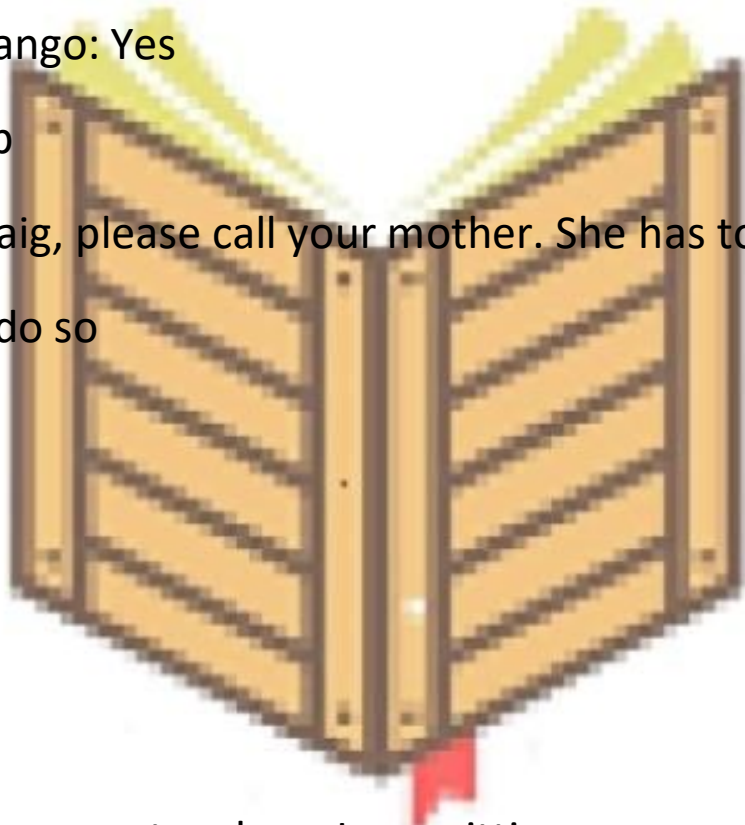
Doctor Masango: Yes

We stood up

Old man: Craig, please call your mother. She has to know...

Viper: I will do so

BUHLE



Yara made her way to where I was sitting

My heart was beating so fast, they have been talking with the doctor and I am sure he has given them some information. I am not ready for bad news, my heart won't take it

Her: Hey, look at those puffy eyes

She hugged me

Her: How are you feeling?

Me: I will be fine. How is Lindo?

Her: He is going to be fine

I exhaled in relief

Me: What about his sight? Before he collapsed he said something about losing his sight...

Her: We are about to find out, let's go

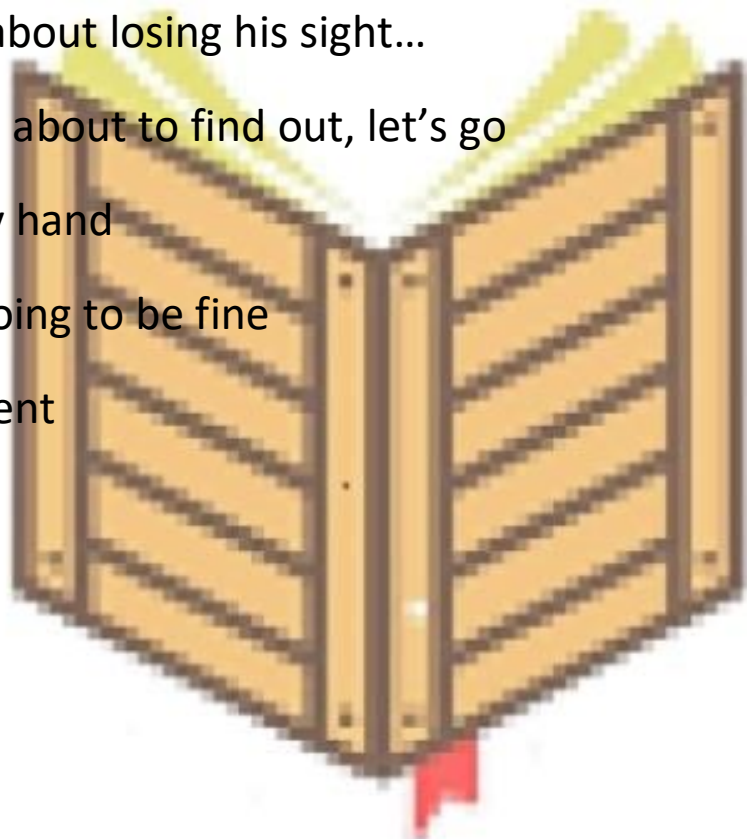
She held my hand

Her: He is going to be fine

Advertisement

okay?

I nodded



MZOXOLO

[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

My heart sunk when I saw him lying on the bed, he didn't look bad but isn't a pleasant sight to see your child helpless. I never thought one day I'd see him here, and unable to help him

Doctor Masango: I will give you privacy

Viper: What do we do if his sight is not back when he opens his eyes?

Doctor Masango: You have to be ready for any reaction, patients are different. He might be calm or the opposite

Viper: Can you please just stay? We might not know how to handle the situation

The door opened. Yara walked in with Lindo's girlfriend

Me: I was wondering where you have disappeared to

Yara: I went to look for her

Buhle: Mr Khumalo

Me: Buhle

Doctor Masango: You can go ahead and talk with him; he is not in deep sleep

Yara: Baba, can we allow Buhle to talk with him first?

I nodded

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

She pulled the small chair and sat down

Buhle: Sthandwa sam

She held his hand

Buhle: Please wake up, you haven't been out of it for long but I miss you already. I miss your annoying arse (Laughs) you have to wake up and get better. There's so much to do and we are not abandoning our plans

Lindo: I never said I was leaving you...

He moved his hand

Me: He is awake

Buhle: You scared me

He opened his eyes and kept quiet

Lindo: Sunshine...

Buhle: Mh

Panther: Why is it dark in here?

I exhaled softly and closed my eyes

He moved his head

Lindo: Buhle?

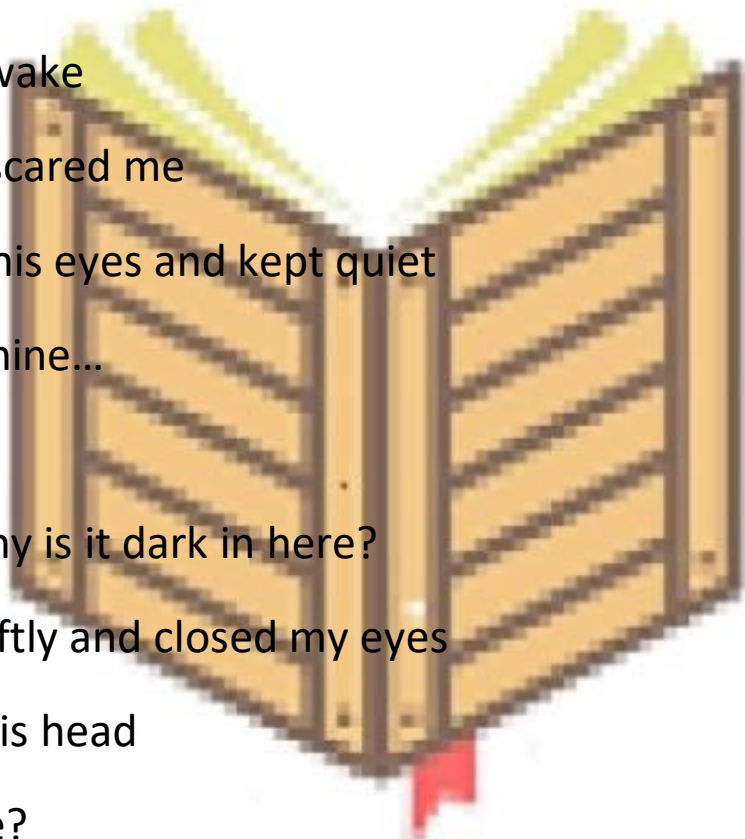
Me: Son

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I walked up to the bed

Panther: Baba, my sight is gone right? Be honest with me

Me: It seems so





He slowly nodded

MIMI

Ma: I wonder how Mzoxolo is feeling right now

I looked at her

Ma: What?

Me: Don't even think about it, we don't need this drama right now

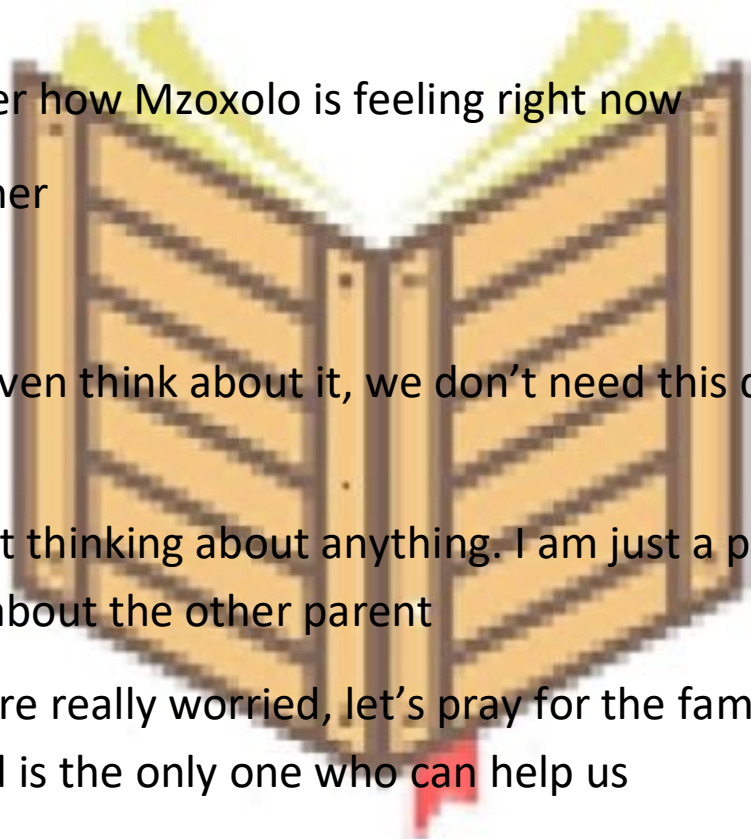
Ma: I am not thinking about anything. I am just a parent who is concerned about the other parent

Me: If you are really worried, let's pray for the family. In times like this God is the only one who can help us

Ma: Since when do you pray?

Me: I pray to avoid problems like you going to comfort Mzoxolo, so let's kneel before God and talk with me

Ma: Let me go and fetch my bible before I slap you



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Viper leaned against the car and sighed loudly

Yara: Don't take long, you need to rest Munchie

Me: I won't. You go and rest too, I am coming

She hugged Viper

Her: Bye brother

Him: I'll call you

Yara walked away

Him: She is strong; she is like glue that is keeping us together

Me: I am worried about her; she doesn't need this kind of stress

Him: She doesn't, you will have to talk with her

Me: I will try

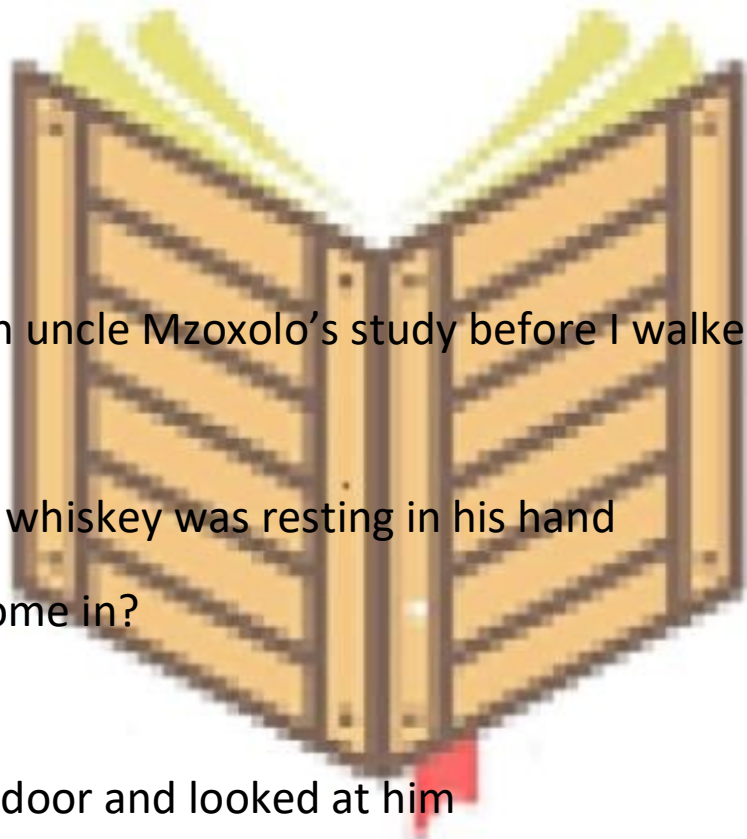
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Panther was very calm about losing his sight, we expected him to throw a fit but he didn't. It is alarming...

Me: Panther on the other hand, he seemed like he was ready for anything

Him: The person we saw at the hospital is definitely not our brother, I am afraid we have lost him

PARIS



I knocked on uncle Mzoxolo's study before I walked inside

Me: Baba...

The glass of whiskey was resting in his hand

Me: Can I come in?

Him: Yes

I closed the door and looked at him

Me: How is he?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Apart from losing his sight, he is fine-he will live

Me: I am sorry this is happening to you especially at this time when...

Him: When you are here demanding answers?

He chuckled and stood up

Me: Baba, life is too short, we don't know what await us and we have today to make the best out of it

Him: You will not stop to nag me, will you?

Me: I didn't travel from Botswana for nothing

Him: Okay fine... but you will need to sit for this

I looked at him and then sat on the edge of the table

Him: Your grandmother was a maid at our house; she would sometimes bring your mother with her. Both me and your father fell in love with your mother, I dated her but as time goes your father won her over. I got angry and fought with your father but we made up, after a while I heard your mother was pregnant. Two months before you were born your father passed on and I saw a chance to make your mother pay for playing us

Me: How did you do it?

Him: I swapped you with the dead baby; I wanted to hurt her so badly but didn't want to hurt you

Me: You hated her that much to take me away and kept me as a secret for 30 years?

Him: I was in pain, not thinking straight, I honestly thought after couple of years I will return you and tell her the truth but I realised you were happy without her

Me: I was never happy, yes Margareta was there but she is not my mother. I wanted my mom and you denied me that. You do realise what you did was a crime right? And how did you even manage to take me out of the country without my mother's consent?

Him: Margareta posed as your mother besides when you have money anything is possible

Me: It means you don't love me, if you were able to do something like this. I am just a pawn in your game, to hurt my mother

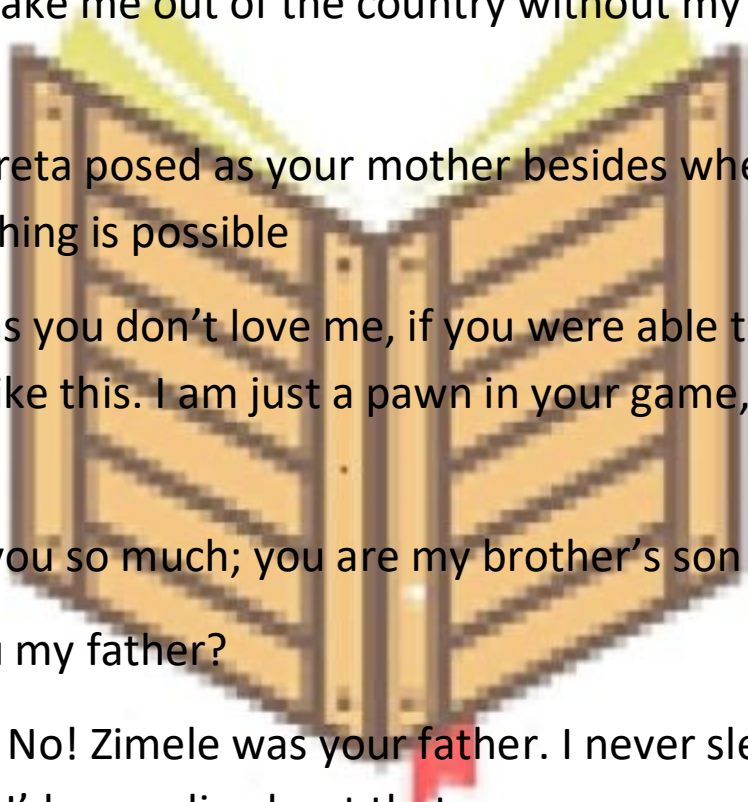
Him: I love you so much; you are my brother's son

Me: Are you my father?

Him: What? No! Zimele was your father. I never slept with your mother and I'd never lie about that

Me: You already lied about many things, how can I trust you with this?

Him: We can do test to prove it but I am not your father. Everything of yours is legit, your names, date of birth and where you were born



I stood up

Me: What's her name? Do you know where she is?

Him: Elizabeth. Finding her won't be hard

I shook my head

Me: I can't even look at you right now, find my mother. I wanna leave this please

Him: Forgive me son

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ELISA

I stared at the phone and shook my head

Maybe is really not a good idea to call Mzoxolo but I can't turn a blind eye to the situation. He is my child's father and I just wanna know how he is feeling. My history with him has nothing to do with it. If you are a parent you will understand the pain of seeing your own in pain with no hope of recovering

I called him

Him: Elisa

Me: Morning, sorry to just call

Him: It's okay, it's been long

Me: I know but that's not why I called. I just wanted to check on you

Him: If it's about my son, he is getting better. The doctors are doing everything in their power

Me: That's good to hear, I am keeping you and the family in my prayers. Well, that's all I called for

Him: Elisa?

Me: Mh...

Him: Thank you for calling, I really appreciate it

Me: You welcome

He hung up

“I thought we agreed to no calling Mzo” I slowly turned around

Mimi folded her arms over her chest

Her: Why did you call him?

Me: That call meant nothing and why are you eavesdropping?

Her: I came to talk with you and I caught you busy, flirting with Mzo

Me: I was not flirting

Her: So defence. I am defeated; you can't stay out of trouble

Me: Judging me is so easy

Her: You make it easy

Me: I am going to sweep the yard; I don't have time for your sermon

Her: Stay away from Yara's father, he is vulnerable right now and if you are not careful...

Me: It won't come to that





I walked out

YARA

Today I called in sick. Before dinner last night I started feeling cramps in my womb so much that I hardly slept. Cramps kept on coming and going but later eased. Talking about bad time to get pregnant, everything that is happening around me is slowly weighing me down. I feel it's too for one and I can't do anything about it

Me: Munchie, would you like toast?

Him: Yes, thank you miss one dimple

Me: Who you calling miss one dimple? I will starve you

Him: You won't dare

He winked at me **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: You know there's something I forgot to tell you

Me: What?

Him: I talked with Mimsey about something, regarding your future at Tshivhase firm...

I kept my gaze on him

Him: Why you looking so serious?

Me: There's Mimsey in your words

Him: You such a coward

A knock came through on the door

Him: Hold on, we will talk about this later... Let me go and get it

He stood up

I watched him as he walked to the door; he wasn't balancing with the crutch. He is either recovering or pretending; knowing Ayden anything is possible especially if he doesn't want to stress me

Him: Shawty, Ethan is here

Me: Oh

I walked to the lounge

Me: Ethan, what a lovely surprise

Ethan: Sorry to come unannounced especially at this time of the day

Me: Nonsense you are welcome. We were about to have breakfast...

Ethan: No, thank you. Can we please talk?



NOVELSCURU.COM

Ayden: Let me excuse give you privacy. Please, excuse me

Ethan: No, please don't. This include you, it's about the twins

Me: Let's sit down

We sat on the couch

Me: Are they okay?

Ethan: Not really

Ayden held my hand

Ethan: I am sure you still remember their reaction when you told us about your pregnancy?

How can I forget that? The sadness in their eyes didn't sit well with me

Ethan: I recently found out that they are feeling neglected and unwanted. They feel like you and Ayden no longer need them since you are expecting, also the fact that you take forever to come is adding fuel to the flame. I know this is too much to ask and you have lot on your plate but my twins are at their breaking point. I am not trying to force your hand but please, I am pleading with you both to at least squeeze them in your busy schedules. Even if it's two hours of your time, I'd really appreciate it

Guilt crept in

I didn't realise they were hurting like this and I am partially at fault. Goldie trusted me with them and what am I doing? The opposite

Ayden: We had no idea they were feeling unwanted, it was never our intention. I am sure you know how much I love the twins and I will never do anything to hurt them let alone stopping Yara to spend time with them. I know they come first in her life but with everything that has been going on...

Ethan: I understand but they don't

Me: Ethan, I don't even know what to say because there are no words that can stop the hurt I've caused to them. It never caught my attention...

I looked at Ayden

Me: I thought they were happy. Everything is happening so fast and I am putting them at the back forgetting they are kids and they pick things way too fast. But, I promise you, all of that is going to change

Ayden: We give you our word

Ethan: Again I am sorry; I am just father who is looking after his children

Ayden: And we understand, I am about to become one and I am sure I will move mountains for my child. I applaud you for putting your children first

Me: I can't even look at you Ethan, you and your wife trusted me with your children. I shouldn't be the one to bring pain to them, I am their guardian

Ethan: Just try and be there for them, that's all that matters right now

I held tight to Ayden's hand

Please Goldie forgive me

PANTHER



Life is funny, one moment it's all exciting and well and the next moment a dark cloud is hovering around your head. Who would have thought that one day the mighty Panther would be lying in this bed with no sight? I've lived all my life with my sight and now I am forced to learn to live without it. Everyone is assuring me that all will be well but I am not really sure. I talked with my mother last night, she cried so much when she heard my voice

Advertisement

I could tell she was broken-hearted

The door opened

Buhle's cologne filled the whole room... I smiled

Me: Sunshine

Her: You've been waiting for me or what?

Me: I am blind but my nose can still smell your cologne

Her: How are you?

Me: You are here, and you?

Her: I am here

Me: But, I am also tired of this bed, I wanna go home and feel the comfort of my bed. With you by my side

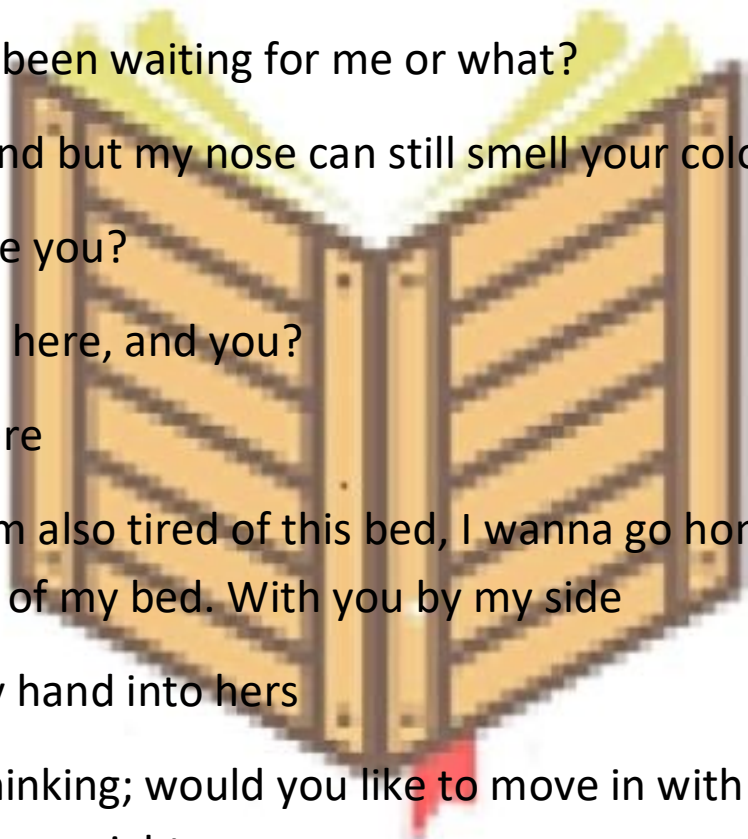
She took my hand into hers

Me: I was thinking; would you like to move in with me? Just until I regain my sight

Her: I thought your mother is coming to the city

Me: She is but I want you. There are some things she won't be able to help me with, only you can

Her: I'd like to



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I am sorry I didn't tell you what was happening with me, I couldn't bring myself to hurt you

Her: If you don't hurt me, who is going to? Not telling me was wrong; do you have any idea how scared I was when you passed out? I didn't know what was going on with you and if you'd live

Me: I didn't mean to

Her: It doesn't matter anymore, you are alive. Do you know when you are going to start with your treatment?

Me: We are still waiting for my mother, but I should soon

Her: You've decided on which treatment you are going for?

Me: I am thinking surgery, Viper let me in on all treatments and I am thinking of going ahead with it

She put my hand on her cheek

Her: I am sorry this is happening to you

Me: It's life Sunshine; we don't choose how our lives go. Today I might be in this bed but that doesn't mean tomorrow it will be the same

Her: How are you so calm, it's either you've given up or made peace with the situation. Things will soon get back to normal, I

don't know when but it will surely. I am here with you, every step of the way. Now more than ever I'll never leave your side

A corner of my mouth rose

Me: I know I didn't make a mistake when I allowed my heart to be yours

She brought me in for a hug

Her: Ngiyakuthanda

Me: Nam ngiyakuthanda

Me: I miss your smile

She laughed softly

MZOXOLO



Telling Paris the truth was the hardest thing, I know what I did was wrong but at that time it felt right. What happened between Zimele, Elizabeth and me was a deadly love triangle. I really loved her and my ego was bruised, it was a blow on the face. Zimele and I made up after some time, well, I heard he was diagnosed with cancer and has few months to live and I



couldn't keep on fighting with him. When he passed on I then saw an opportunity to snatch the baby, Elizabeth wasn't going to do much to him either way. I gave Paris everything he needed but only now am I realising that I was selfish and wanted to avenge my feelings, I should have made peace with the fact that she chose my brother over me but instead I decided to act like God. The least I can do is finding Elizabeth and try to put together the pieces, the damage is too much but I will try. I last saw her 10 years ago and right now I don't know where she is because she no longer lives at her old house

I called an old friend of ours AJ

Him: Khumalo, long time

Me: Ndlovu, been busy man

Him: You and work, how can I help?

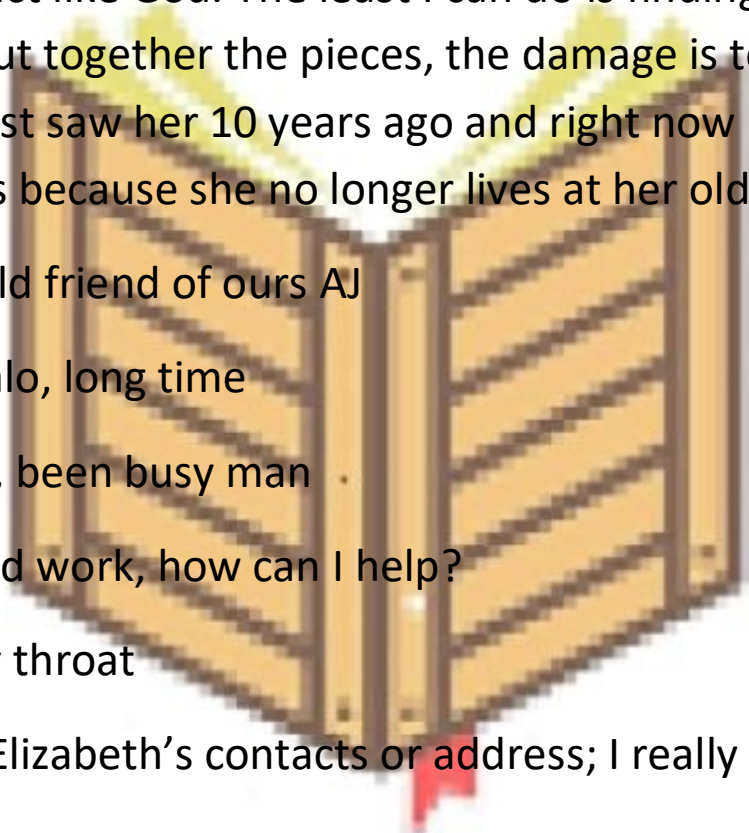
I cleared my throat

Me: I want Elizabeth's contacts or address; I really need to see her

Him: After so many years, why do you want them?

Me: It's personal

Him: There's nothing I don't know about you and her, so, I'll ask again. Why do you want them?

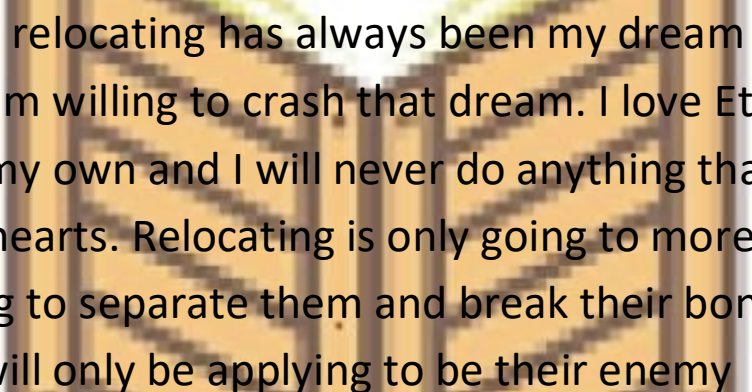


NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Don't judge me for what I am about to say

Him: I know you so well to know better

MIMI



I know I said relocating has always been my dream and wish but right now I am willing to crash that dream. I love Ethan's children as my own and I will never do anything that is going to break their hearts. Relocating is only going to more damage, I am not going to separate them and break their bond. If I do that then I will only be applying to be their enemy

I got on top of Ethan

Me: So, I was thinking

He put his hands behind his head and looked at me

Him: Is that a good or bad thing?

Me: Good, hauw! I think we should abort the relocating mission, it's not worth it. We are not going to take the children away from Yara, moving with them to another country is going to make us their enemy and we don't want that

Him: You sure about this?

Me: I am sure, until they are grown there's nothing we can do

Him: I am sorry; I know how much you wanted this

Me: Long as I am by your side

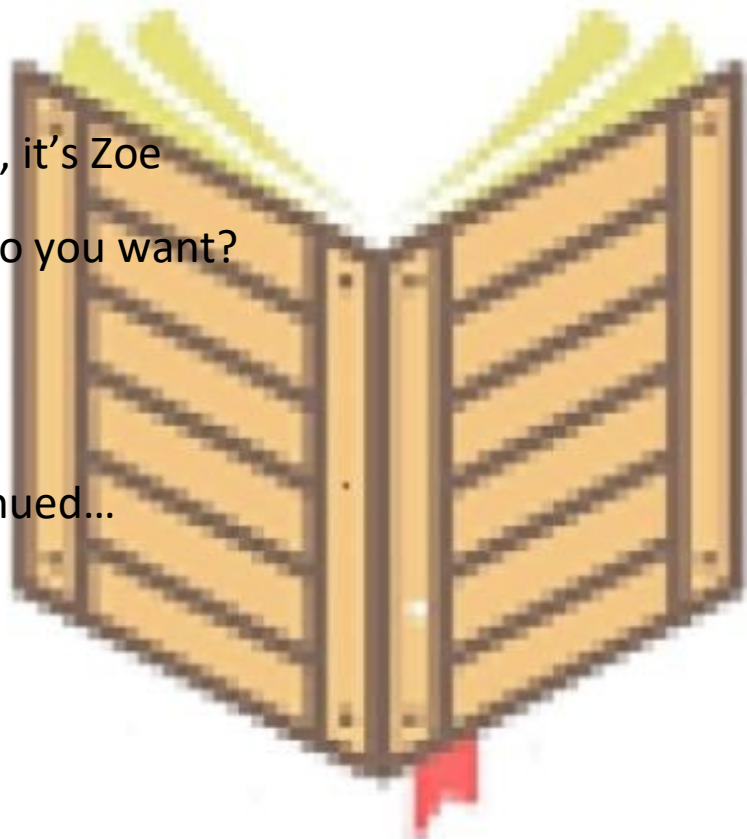
My phone rang

Me: Hello

Voice: Mimi, it's Zoe

Me: What do you want?

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## PANTHER

I didn't want to tell my mother I am sick because of this exact reason, at least Buhle handled the situation very well. I guess when you are a parent things are different, since my mother arrived here she has been doing nothing but crying.

Questioning God and whatnot

Me: MaKhumalo, can you please just stop crying?

Her: I am just being a mother, I carried you for nine months and you have no idea how it pains me to see you like this. God trusted me with you and now I can't even do a thing to ease your pain

Me: And you think crying is going to make things better? No, it won't even start. I don't need you to break down whenever you see me

Her: I will try but I am not promising

Me: MaKhumalo...

Her: Okay, fine. I promise you

Me: Thank you

Her: When are they discharging you?

Me: In two or three days and suddenly I am not looking forward to that. It's better to be in this bed than bumping into things in the house

Her: I'll be with you

Me: And about that, I asked my girlfriend to move in with me. I hope you don't mind

Her: About time, I'll be bonding with her and getting to know her a bit. I heard she is from KZN maybe I know her family

Me: And, please do not give her hard time

Her: I am not crazy, why would I do any of that? And besides I am a loving mother who support her children

Me: I know. Have you spoken with Old man?

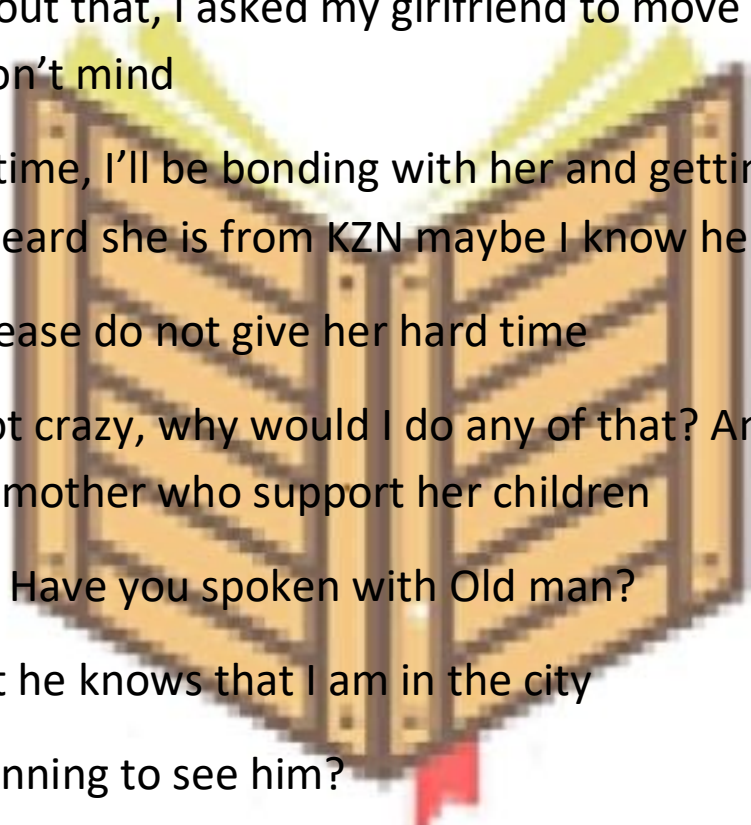
Her: No, but he knows that I am in the city

Me: You planning to see him?

Her: Ha Lindo, stop with questions! I am back to nurse you not to solve things with your father

Me: I am just saying, life is too short to be going in circles. If you still love dad why not solve things?

Her: Let's talk about this after your surgery and when I am sure you are fine. Can we do that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Fair enough

Her: Should I get you something?


Me: No, check the time for me. An eye expert is coming around 15:00pm

Her: Do you want me to stay?

Me: Long as you don't cry

Her: I promise not to

PARIS



I dragged my hands down my face, furious at what my uncle had told me. I knew he was keeping something big but I never imagined it was this big. He literally stole me and he is not even remorseful, all he does is defend his actions. What was my sin in being Elizabeth and Zimele's son? I spent 30 years thinking my mother doesn't love me only to find out that she "mourned me", she spent the last 30 years thinking I am dead and now I am going to show up at her doorstep and gave her the shock of her life. I have no idea how she is going to take all of this, if she has children, are they going to accept me? Or her new husband

if she has one is he going to accept me? Where do I start to form a relationship with her? No, uncle Mzo went too far, what he did wasn't a way to solve things

Lea gave me glass me of water

Me: Thank you

Her: You need to sleep; you haven't got any sleep and don't try and deny it

Me: I can't sleep with all these questions

Her: There's nothing you can do about that, the damage is already done. What's important now is finding your mother and then we go back

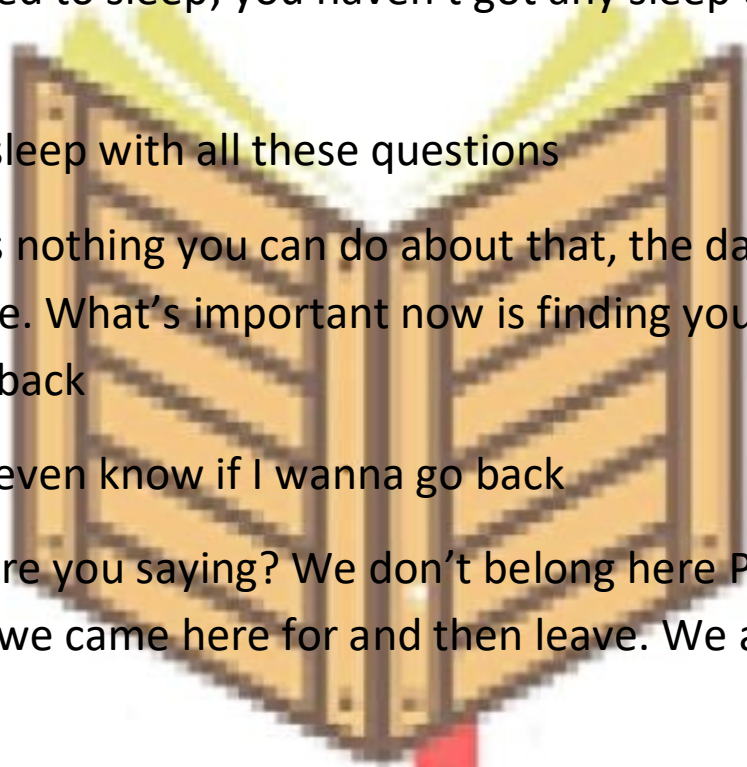
Me: I don't even know if I wanna go back

Her: What are you saying? We don't belong here Paris, we are doing what we came here for and then leave. We agreed on that

Me: I know what we agreed on and I remember also saying, chances of not coming back are slim

She sat down

Her: I get what you saying but we have a beautiful home back in Botswana, Margareta is still there. What about our jobs and Mpendulo? No Paris, we are going back



Me: Lea please, just stop! I still need to see my mother... I'll think about that later, why can't you understand that?

Her: I've been supporting you on this journey of finding your mother and now you wanna do this to me? I don't believe this

I stood up

Her: You planned this, didn't you?

Me: I didn't

Advertisement

trust me

Her: No I can't, you can't just wake up and decide to stay in this foreign country

I set the glass on the table

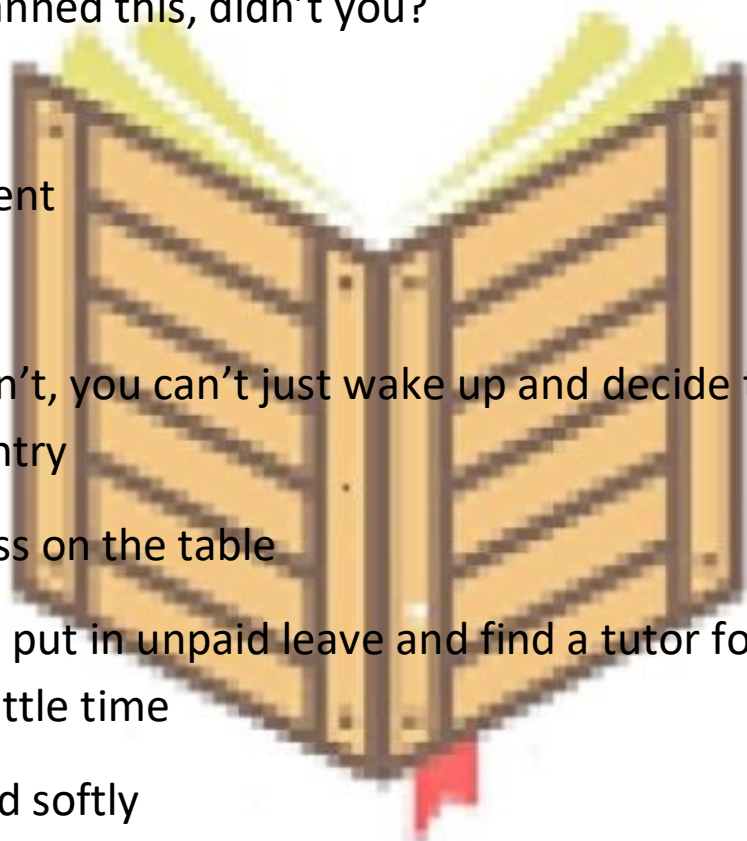
Me: We can put in unpaid leave and find a tutor for Mpendulo, I just need little time

She chuckled softly

Her: Unbelievable. If you wanna stay in SA go ahead but I am leaving with my son Paris, we are not staying in SA. We don't belong here

Me: I belong here!

I half yelled



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: And I don't

Me: I can't talk with you when you are like this; I am going for a drive

I grabbed the car keys and walked out

AYDEN

Later that afternoon Yara went and fetch the twins from school

There was no way we were going to sleep before talking with them, Yara is heartbroken and so am I. The last thing we need is depressed children, I really love the twins. It's hard to not love them they are adorable and Yara adore them. We need to talk with them; they need to know that we care

We were sitting in the lounge watching TV, the silence was starting to get to me. They are awfully quiet

Yara: Can we talk? [NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

I took the remote and lowered the volume

Me: Come and sit next to us

Lex: Want us to squeeze in?

Me: This couch is too big for the four of us

They stood up and got between Yara and me

Yara: I love you so much, you know that? There's no one in this world who can replace you in my heart, and I know lately I've been acting like I don't and I am sorry for that. If I made you feel unloved and unwanted I apologize

Me: You are the best thing that has ever happened to me, all my life I didn't know how it is like to love a child but you made it possible. I knew you were going to be part of my life since that day Yara pranked me and said you are her children. We didn't mean to push you away, we love you a lot

Yara: And that will never change

Me: Not even the child that we are expecting can change that. He/she is going to be your younger sibling; you are part of our lives, forever. There's no way to escape from us, you are stuck with this old grumpy couple. Block everything that is making you doubt our love for you

They laughed softly

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I love you monkeys

"We love you too" they responded in unison

Yara: Are we forgiven?

Tenda: Yes, you are

Lex put her hand on Yara's tummy

Lex: Does it hurt? I heard the baby is inside there

Yara: Who told you?

Lex: I watch TV

Me: That's our cue to leave buddy

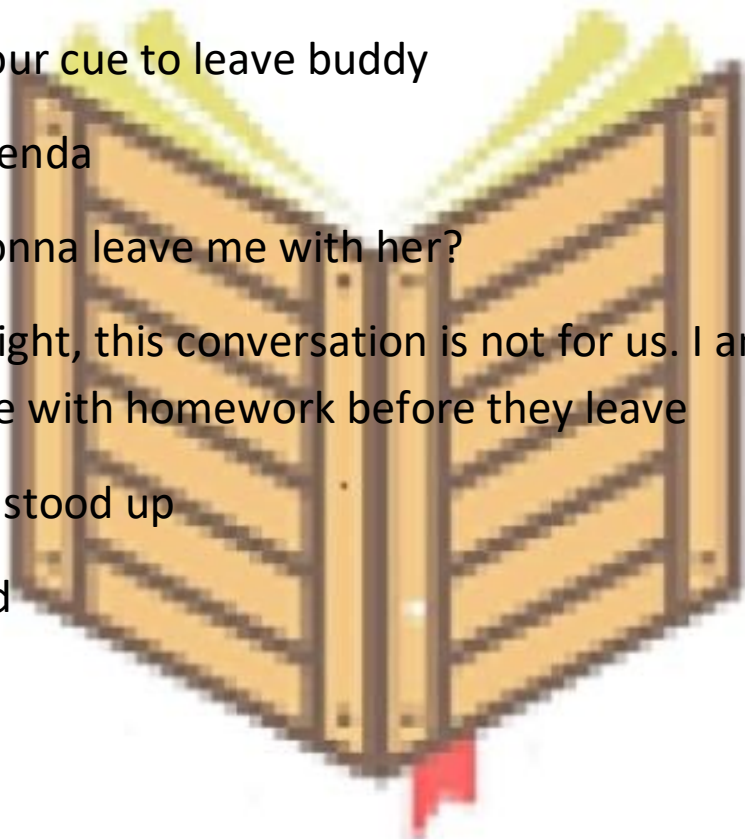
I said to Rotenda

Yara: You gonna leave me with her?

Me: Damn right, this conversation is not for us. I am going to help this one with homework before they leave

Tenda and I stood up

Me: Be good



MIMI

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

If I say I know what Zoe want from me then I'd be lying, why the hell is she calling me? Can't she just leave us alone? Ethan doesn't need this, I don't need this!

Footsteps sounded behind me, I turned around

Buhle: I've been looking for you

Me: I passed by Ethan's house

Her: Miss Catalina was looking for you earlier on

Me: Did she say why?

Her: No, but I am sure it has to do with the food poison and the function

So Friday night there was a function and my team served guests contaminated food, I only got to hear about it yesterday. Miss Catalina is probably looking for answers, I approved everything. I don't know what happened, but everyone who ate the food is admitted

Me: That's the last thing that I need right now

Her: What's wrong?

Me: That psychotic girl called me

Her: Zoe?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes

Her: What does she want?

Me: She asked to see me

Her: I am sure you told her where to get off

Me: Hell to the yes but there was something about her voice; she talked as if she was threatening me. Like if I don't go something is going to happened to me

Her: She is trying to scare you

Me: I know, this is the reason why I wanted to leave the country but my children come first

Her: Then you head on with Zoe, we don't know if being in mental institution has helped her or damaged her. If is the latter then you are in danger, and you need to be careful

Me: That's what I am afraid of

MZOXOLO

Paris was sitting in the garden

I walked up to him

Me: Good afternoon

Him: Not now please, I just need to be alone

I buried my hands deep in the pockets

Me: You'd be happy to know that I am looking for your mother, if it all checks in today we might know where she is

Him: Nice

I sat next to him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Are you ever going to forgive me?

Him: I don't know, time will tell. Right now I am only focusing on finding my mother and hear the side of her story. As for you...

He shook his head

Me: I deserve this

My phone rang, it was AJ

Me: Ndlovu

Him: I found her address

Me: That was fast

Him: She is very close to you; I don't know why you never cross paths with her

Me: Maybe it was never time

Him: I am sending the address now

Me: Thank you

I hung up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: That was the guy I asked to find your mother, she has been found

To be continued...

## VIPER

My mother was awfully quiet; I am starting to doubt she is hearing a word I am saying

Me: MaKhumalo

I put my hand on her shoulder, she jumped a bit

Me: I didn't mean to frighten you

Her: Oh Craig, sorry. I got lost in my own thoughts

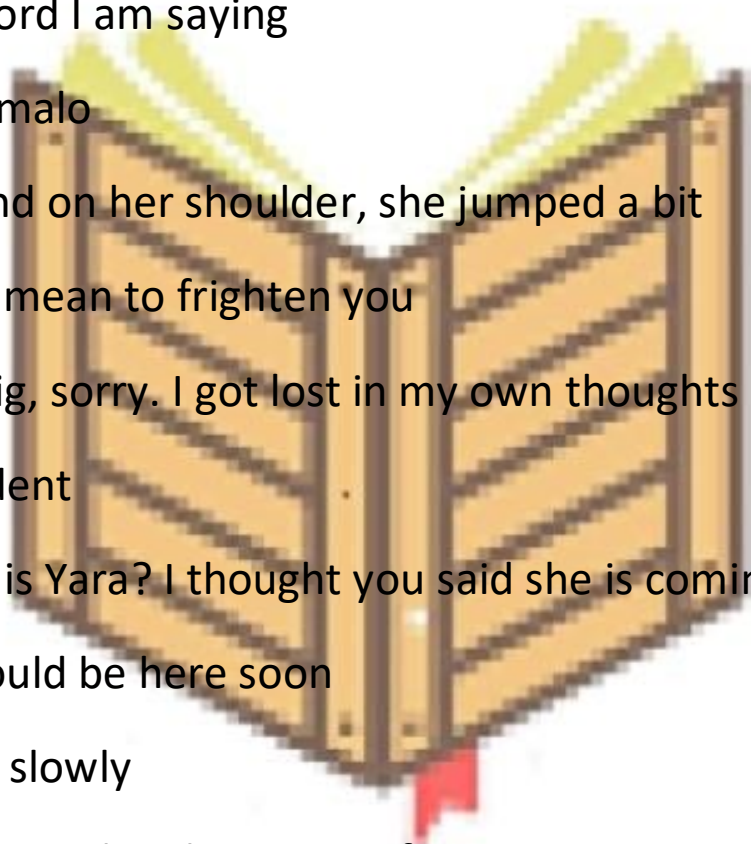
Me: It's evident

Her: Where is Yara? I thought you said she is coming

Me: She should be here soon

She nodded slowly

Her: Why is your brother opting for surgery instead of chemotherapy or radiation therapy? Surgery is dangerous Craig, and I am scared, I don't think I am strong enough to lose a child



Me: Life is all about risks, and we are about to take one. Don't think too much about it, see this as the only option to save Lindo's life

Her: Is that even possible?

Me: At least we can try; we need to be strong for Lindo. The sooner they operate him the better

Her: You are right

Me: Now, please smile. You look so ugly

Her: Your mother looks ugly

I laughed

MIMI



No matter how hard I try I just can't stop thinking about Zoe, my heart is burning to know why she is demanding my presence. I thought she'd be locked up for a very long time, how can they just let her go? No, man! She is unstable for Pete's sake!



A message came through from unknown number. I read it countless time to make sure I am not dreaming and boy, I was not dreaming

|Remember 26 June, CA Club? Thought I should jog your mind a bit, I know everything. Come and see me, I won't kill you; I only want us to talk-Your worst nightmare|

I closed my eyes for a second and swallowed the lump in my throat

My knees felt weak, I ran my eyes around and took a deep breath

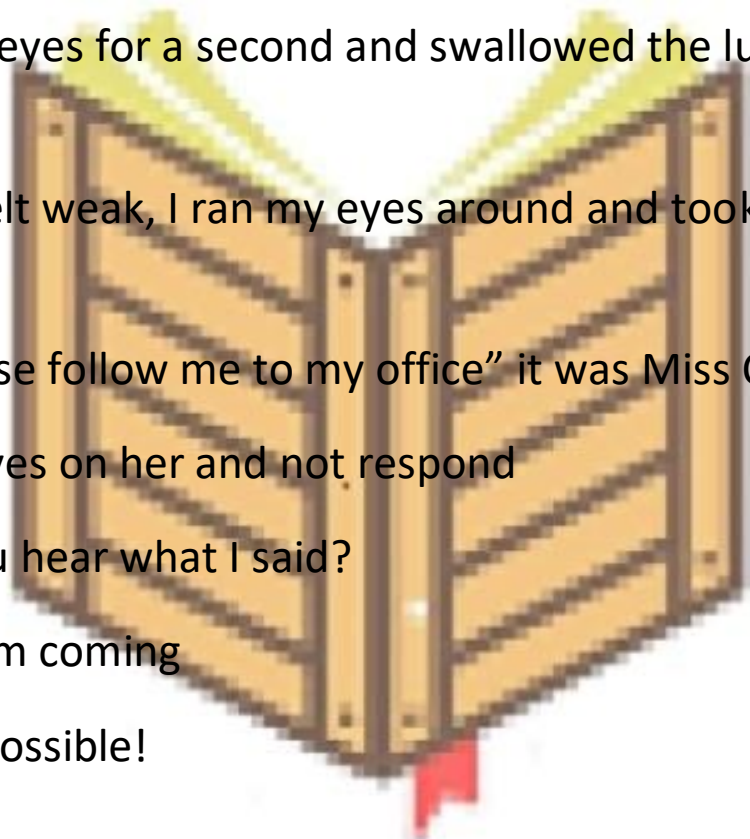
“Mimi, please follow me to my office” it was Miss Catalina

I kept my eyes on her and not respond

Her: Did you hear what I said?

Me: Yes, I am coming

This is not possible!



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

Viper filled me in on what the eye expert has said to them regarding Panther's sight. Unfortunately it wasn't good news but there's still bit of hope. He said there's a 40% chance for him to get his sight back; maybe and a big MAYBE after the surgery he will regain his sight. Now we are waiting for miracle

I was sitting with MaKhumalo in the garden

Her: I am emotional wreck ntombi yam

Me: It's definitely not easy Mama but let's put everything in God's hands

She took a sip from her tea

Me: Prayer is the answer to everything

Her: I stand with that

I leaned back on the chair

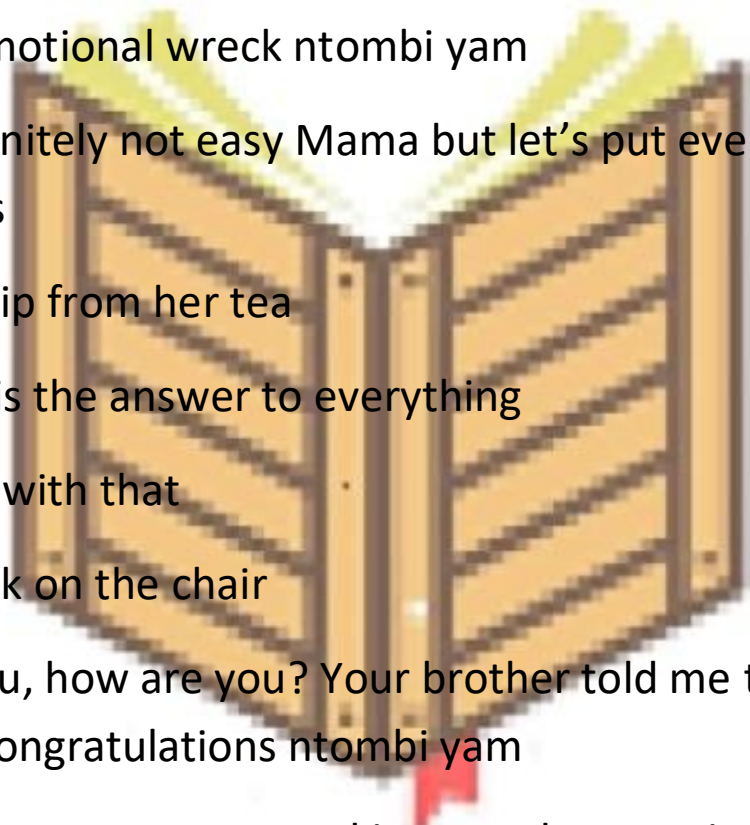
Her: And you, how are you? Your brother told me that you are pregnant. Congratulations ntombi yam

Me: Thank you Mama, I am taking one day at a time but yoh!

Her: Pregnancy is hard especially in the first trimester, morning sickness and nausea...

Me: I wish someone had told me earlier, I'd have looked away

Her: You were still going to fall pregnant, baby fever is irresistible



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yeah

I played with my fingers

Me: But, I am worried

Her: What's wrong?

Me: I've been experiencing cramps they come and go, I don't know if it's normal or I am heading to overreacting mode

Her: You should be worried. Did you talk with your mother about it?

Me: I haven't

Her: No Yara, you aren't suppose to keep things like this to yourself

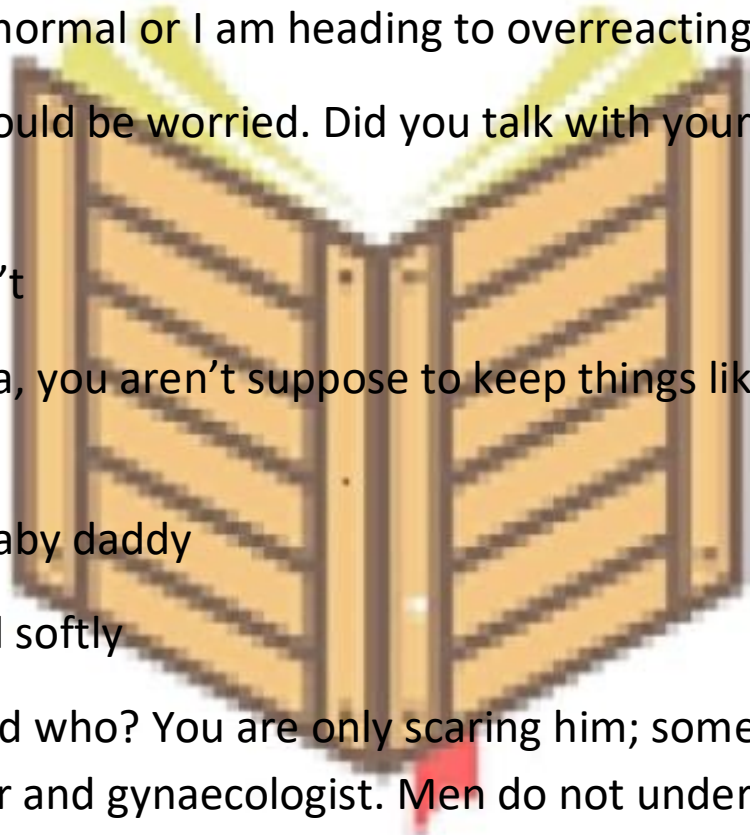
Me: I told baby daddy

She laughed softly

Her: You told who? You are only scaring him; some things need your mother and gynaecologist. Men do not understand these things, my boys are worse

Me: I will keep that in mind

MaKhumalo is a nice woman I still don't get why my father cheated on her. I genuinely thought she was going to act up towards me but she treats me like her own. She is earthy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Let's go and find something to eat in your brother's kitchen. One would swear no one live in this house

Me: Lindo detest shopping

TYSON

I walked into the lounge with bowl full of fruits

Mulalo: Ty, do you realise I've paused the movie because of you?

Me: I am here, what's with the drama?

I put the bowl on the table

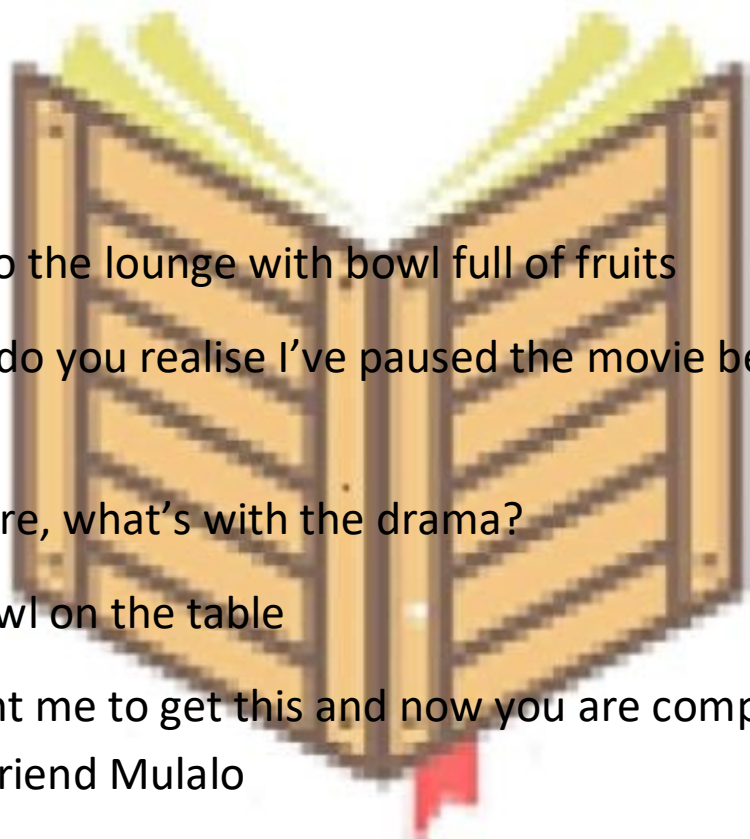
Me: You sent me to get this and now you are complaining, you need a boyfriend Mulalo

Her: You are not too old to get a beating

I sat on the couch and crossed my legs

Her: Did you manage to get hold of Munei?

Me: No, it's obvious she doesn't wanna talk with me. I can't believe I fell hard for her and she is nowhere to be found now



NOVELSGURU.COM

A week after the whole drama between Munei and Ayden, Munei left the city without letting me know. She only sent me a text after two days apologizing; to say I wasn't hurt would be a lie. I felt like I lost the love of my life what am I even saying, I was the one who pushed her away

Me: Love is not for me

I am cursed

Her: If she is yours, you'll surely meet again

(Knock on door)

Her: Go and get the door

Me: Really?

I stood up

Her: Is that a trick question?

Two gentlemen were standing before my doorstep

Him: Evening, is this Muniyai resident?

The older one asked

Me: Yes, who is asking?

Him: A friend of your mother, can you please call her for me?

Me: Please come in, I'll go and call her for you



NOVELSGURU.COM

They followed me

Mulalo stood up when she saw them, she looked at me

Mulalo: And?

Me: Go and call mom. They are here for her

Her: Okay

I don't know if it's my imagination but the young man resembles my mother. Urg, what am I saying?

Me: Please take a seat

Few minutes passed and Mulalo walked back in followed by my mother

Ma: Ty, who is looking for me?

When her eyes met with old man's eyes, she staggered and shook her head

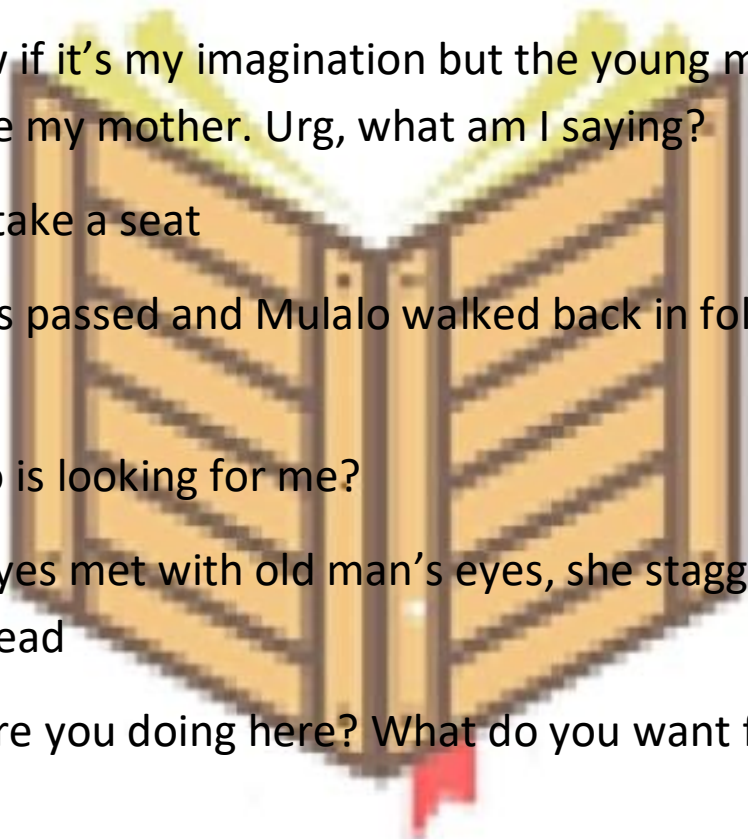
Ma: What are you doing here? What do you want from me?  
Huh!

Me: Mom, do you know this man?

Tears were streaming down her cheeks

Me: Gentlemen I think you should take your leave now; obviously your presence is rubbing my mother the wrong way

Old man: Elizabeth, you need to calm down. I came in peace



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: There's no peace in your vocabulary Mzoxolo (Crying)  
please leave my house. How did you find me? I asked you a  
question!

Old man: Both of us are aware about the bad blood between us  
and I wish I didn't have to come here but circumstances are  
forcing me. I am truly sorry for what I am about to say, I know  
you are going to hate me for this but allow me to say sorry first.  
There's no way to break the news but...

Ma: What are you talking about?

He looked at the young man he came with

Old man: Meet Paris, your son

"What?" Mulalo and I asked in unison

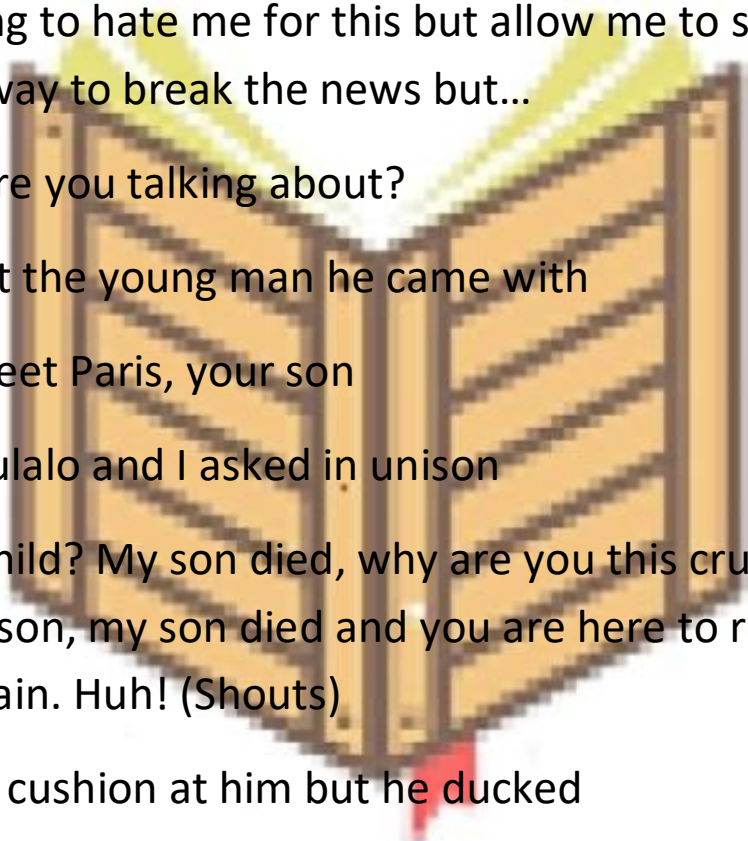
Ma: What child? My son died, why are you this cruel? You are a  
horrible person, my son died and you are here to remind me  
about the pain. Huh! (Shouts)

She threw a cushion at him but he ducked

Old man: Your son didn't die Elizabeth, look at him you will see  
the resemblance

My mother took a step forward; tears were still streaming  
down her cheeks

She shook her head



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: No, no! It can't be; I mourned him!

Old man: Yes

Without any warning she collapsed

YARA

Ayden pulled the duvet over my legs

Me: Hey

I raised my head whilst yawning

Him: I didn't mean to wake you

Me: No, it's okay. I should get up and start preparing supper

I reached for my phone

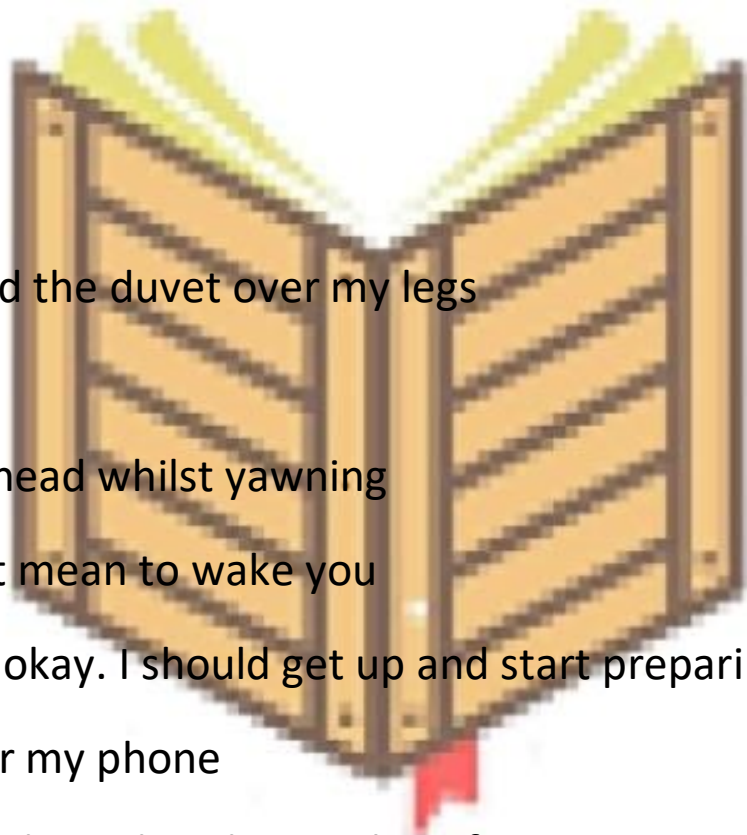
Him: No need, I ordered something for us

Me: I love you

He gave me mischievous smile

Me: I know that look and I hate that look

Him: No, you don't



NOVELSGURU.COM



He got on the bed and pulled away the duvet

Him: I am so horny (Whispers) and I want you

He leaned and kissed my neck

PARIS

I don't understand who I am right now, I feel like my whole life was a lie. Everything is playing so fast

We were still waiting for my mother to regain conscious, I really don't blame her. I'd have also reacted the way she did. Imagine being told the child you thought was died is actually alive and he is standing in front of you

Ty: What are we waiting for? We need to take her to hospital; we are not losing our mother because of this

Me: I am a doctor and she is not going to die. This is shock and it's understandable

Mulalo: Okay Mr Doctor, can you wake her up?

Old man: I really don't see why we should be fighting amongst each other, she is not dead. She is still breathing

Ty: Oh please, we are here because of you. I don't know what happened between you and my mother but whatever it is, I assume is something big. Because you...

He pointed at me and shook his head

Ty: Just pray my mother doesn't die because if she does I am coming for your lives

Old man: Relax, there's no need for that

Mulalo pressed a wet towel on her forehead

Me: Can I?

Ty: Go ahead

I held her hand

Me: Please wake up; we got lot to talk about

I closed my eyes and said a little prayer

She moved her hand and slowly opened her eyes

Ma: Ty?

Ty: Mom...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ma: Please, tell me I was dreaming? Your brother is dead, it was all a dream. Right?

Ty: No mom, you were not dreaming. He is here

She sat up straight

Ma: I am not dreaming?

She attempted to touch me but she held back

Ma: But how?

Me: Mom...

It felt unreal calling her that, now I feel like I am the one dreaming. The feeling is foreign

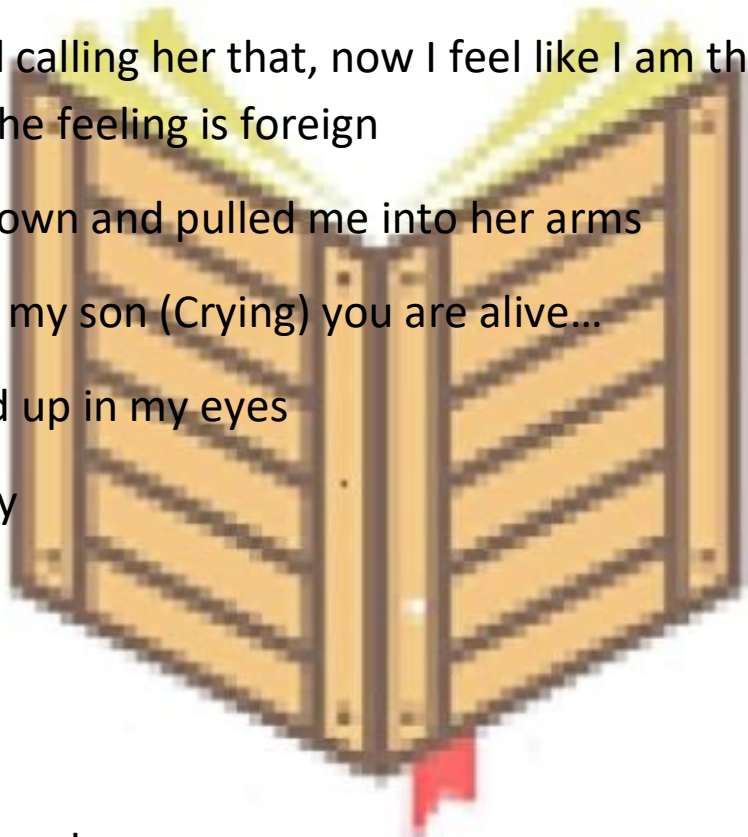
She broke down and pulled me into her arms

Ma: Banele, my son (Crying) you are alive...

Tears welled up in my eyes

Me: Mommy

Ma: Banele



To be continued...

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

MIMI

Last night I didn't get any sleep, the message I received yesterday was more of a threat than a warning. Question is how the hell did Zoe find out about that night? Is she this crazy to even dig deeper and unleash my deadly secrets? Just when I thought we have peace, now I have to deal with my past. Traumatic past!

Buhle leaned against the wardrobe and crossed her arms

Her: Mimi, what are we going to do now? I didn't sleep last night; I kept on tossing and turning

Me: And, who slept? That message took us back to that dreadful night

I got out of the bed and put on my robe

Me: Do you have any idea of how many nights I spent crying and hiding from people? I don't wanna go back to that dark hole Buhle

Her: Entlek what is this girl's problem? Why can't she go and play with other animals? She is becoming too much to handle

Me: Ethan, she is obsessed with Ethan and it's annoying

Her: She went to that extent of digging your past all because of Ethan? I fear dick!

Me: Shut up, and leave my man out of this ish. Zoe has a mental condition she can't differentiate between love and obsession

Her: And why is she out again? She is a nuclear bomb

Me: Maybe I should go and see her that way we will get to know what she wants

Her: Kick her arse while you are at it

Me: She is surely going to switch on my buttons and beating her is only going to cost us especially now that we don't know how much she knows about that night

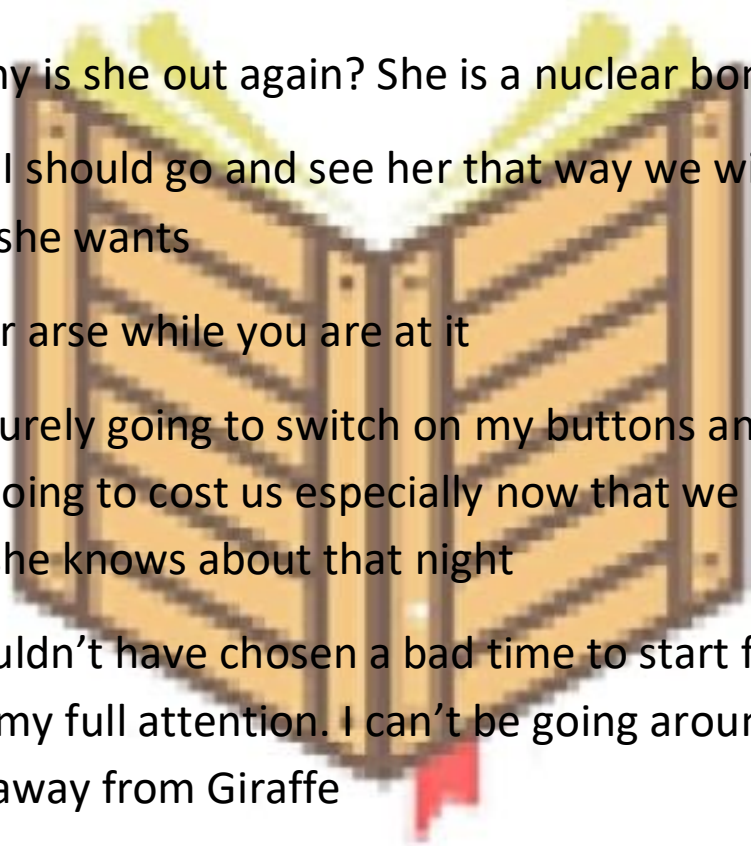
Her: She couldn't have chosen a bad time to start fight with us, Lindo need my full attention. I can't be going around planning how to get away from Giraffe

Me: I will handle it; after all it's my mess

Her: It's our mess; I promised you that night that I will never let go of your hand if ever this comes out

Me: I don't deserve you

We hugged



NOVELSGURU.COM

AYDEN

Panther stepped inside the room with his nurse. She was holding his hand and leading the way

Me: I was thinking of leaving

The nurse laughed

Her: Blame it on him; it is always a struggle to help him take a bath

Him: Do you really blame me? She be touching me all over my body, dude!

Me: What did you expect? Next time squeeze his arse

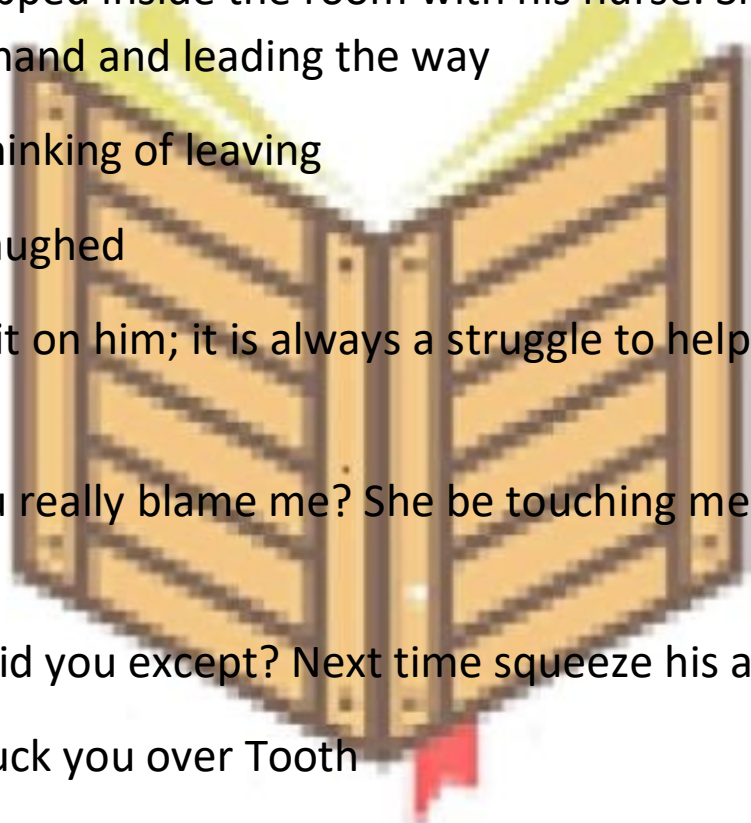
Him: I will fuck you over Tooth

Me: Let me help you

We helped him climbed on the bed. I positioned the pillow behind him

Her: Please excuse me

Him: Breakfast please



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Coming right up

I sat on the chair

Me: How are you feeling?

Him: Like an ox. I am starting to love the darkness in my eyes

Me: It's not funny Panther

Him: Do you see me laughing? This is now my life brother and I better start enjoying it. It's unfortunate I won't be able to see my nephew or niece

Me: And who said you won't? We are going to get the second opinion soon as we done with your operation

Him: Stop stressing God will lower his hand

Me: Did you just say God? Wow!

Him: I know my bible stupid



YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr Mpumlani put pile of files on my table

Him: Can you please sort these files for me? I need some of them for my next meeting

Me: Which one is it?

Him: Claim forms. They are mixed with paid forms so you'll have to divide them

I nodded slowly

Him: What is that suppose to mean? You will finish them or what?

Me: I will but I don't think you will be able to use some of them at your meeting. Sorting files takes time especially if whatever that is inside is not sorted

Him: Do you get paid to say all of that?

Me: With due respect but...

"Don't explain yourself to him, I am the one who sign your cheque not the other way around" Sophia said standing at the door

Her: Nkosi, care to explain why you are commanding Miss Masia?

She stepped inside

Him: No ma'am, I was not, it's just that I really need this forms and I was trying to let her know...



Her: I heard everything, take the forms and sort them yourself.  
From today Miss Masia won't be working for you

Oh no! She is at it again? Lord, what is it now? She better not fire me

Me: Mrs Tshivhase, I don't mind...

Her: I do mind, Nkosi, talk with HR so that they get you someone who is going to help you

Him: Okay Mrs Tshivhase, I will do so. Excuse me

Her: You are excused

He left the office

Her: Don't stress yourself about him, he will find someone as for you

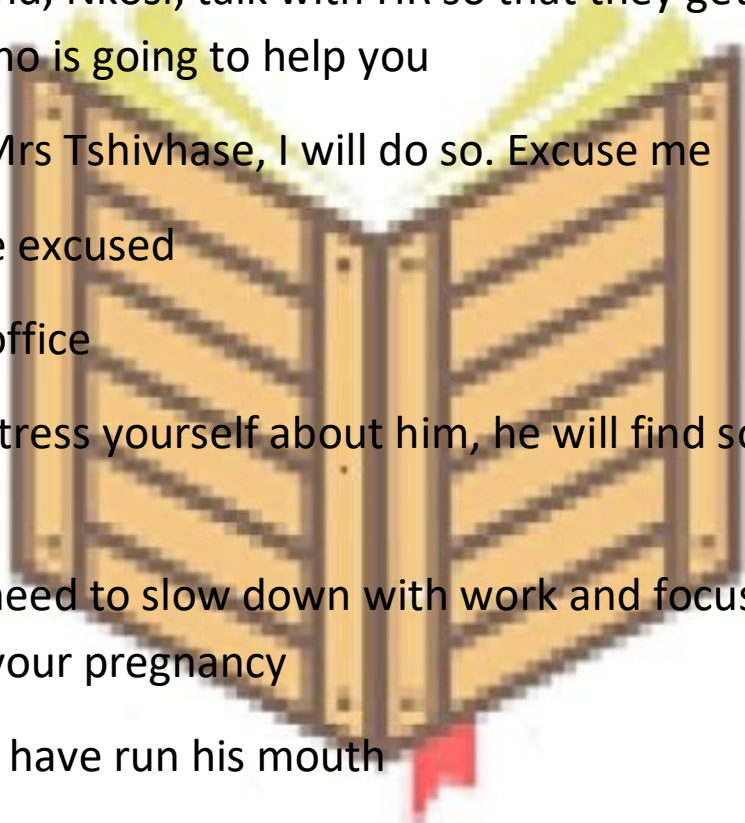
I think you need to slow down with work and focus on your health and your pregnancy

Ayden must have run his mouth

Her: I've been in your shoes and it's not child's play to work whilst pregnant. Take time off and concentrate on your baby

Me: But...

Her: No buts, you are so stubborn Yara. Take this from me because I know what I am talking about



NOVELSGURU.COM

I smiled at her

Her: If you are worried about your salary then worry less, you will get paid until you return back to work

Me: Thank you Mrs Tshivhase

Her: You can call me Sophia. Anyway let me not keep you, have a great day

Me: You too

ETHAN

My phone rang, it was Mimi

Me: Cuddles

Her: Hello

Me: You don't sound good, what's wrong?

Her: I can't lie, I am not feeling good. Where are you?

Me: On my way to work and you?

Her: Still at home



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You still worried about Zoe?

Her: Yes, that's why I called you

Me: Ya?

Her: I decided to go and see her

Me: You not going to see her Mimi

Her: Yes, I am

Me: I don't think it's a good idea for you to go and see her. She is capable of anything, have you forgotten what she did to you?

Her: More reason to go and see her. Who knows what she would do if I don't go and see her?

Me: No Mimi

Her: I was only letting you know Ethan; I've already made my decision



PARIS

NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt a hand on my back

Me: Lea

I mumbled her name whilst opening my eyes

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning, what time is it?

Her: 10:15am

Me: Why didn't you wake me up?

Her: You needed to rest Paris

She is right, I've strained my mind by thinking too much and I've exhausted the little energy I had in me. I thought talking with my mother would make me feel better but it made things worse. After she calmed down she told us everything that has happened 30 years ago, now that I know both sides of the story I can say they were both at fault. Uncle Mzo made things worse by taking me away but my mother was no saint either

Her: I heard you last night crying in the shower

Me: Sorry if I woke you up, I didn't mean to

Her: That doesn't matter; I am more worried about you. Why didn't you just talk with me than crying your eyes in the shower?

Me: I didn't have words last night Lea; everything was just too much for me. Seeing my mother crying like a baby broke my heart, that lady cried and mourned me. For 30 years she

thought I was dead and I showed up at her doorstep. You could have seen her children they didn't know how to act around me; it was as if I was there to claim something that is theirs or taking their mother away from them

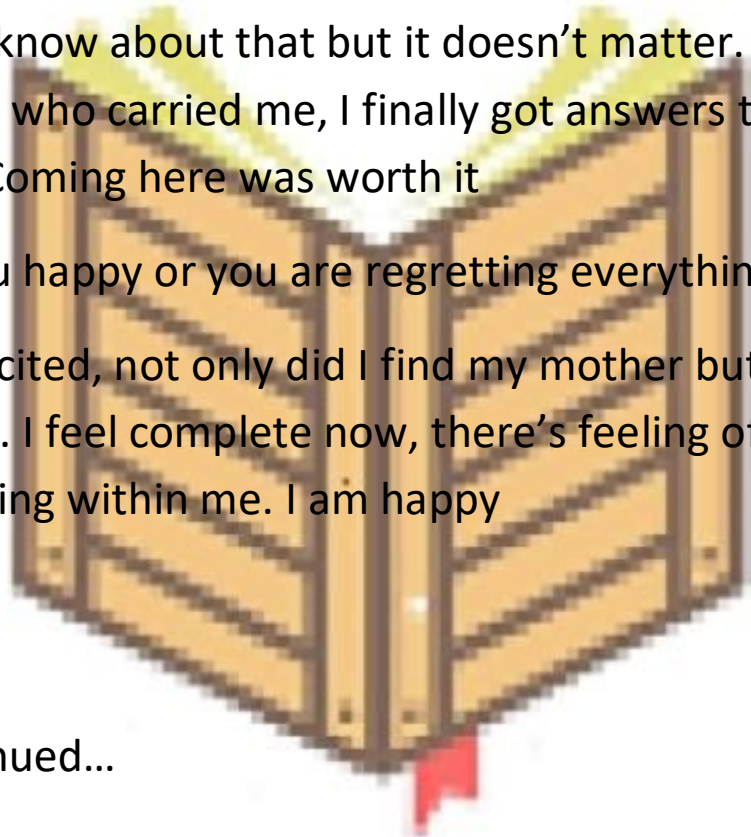
Her: They were just shocked, I am sure today they are feeling different. They are your siblings and they can't hate you

Me: I don't know about that but it doesn't matter. Now I know the woman, who carried me, I finally got answers to all my questions. Coming here was worth it

Her: Are you happy or you are regretting everything?

Me: I am excited, not only did I find my mother but also my half-siblings. I feel complete now, there's feeling of belonging that is growing within me. I am happy

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## MZOXOLO

I wasn't shocked when I saw Elizabeth at my doorstep

You couldn't miss the pain in her eyes; I really wish things didn't have to reach this level

Her: How did you sleep at night knowing what you've done? You saw me crying but you kept quiet, my tears meant nothing to you

Me: I apologize for my actions but don't come here and act holy. It was because of you...

She slapped me across the face

Her: You could have punished me but not my son

Me: But I did, unfortunately. I have Paris everything, he is what he is today because of me. You should be grateful

Her: For 30 years! 30 years, you kept him from everyone. You are evil Mzoxolo, you lack heart

Me: We are definitely not going to stand here and pretend as if I wasn't pushed to act the way I did. If you were woman

enough, none of this could have happened. Had you close your legs, Paris wouldn't went through the trauma

Her: Ever asked yourself why I went for your brother and left you? Huh, tell me

Me: I don't care anymore, you made your choice

Her: You are not remorseful, are you?

Me: I am; why do you think I decided to tell him the truth? I've done some pretty bad things in life and I could have lied and not feel a thing. But I couldn't stand seeing him crying anymore

Her: God will punish you for what you've done, you put me through hell. You lied to Banele all his life and God knows what lies you told him

Me: Just focus on your son and spare me the lecture. As you've said, God will be the one to punish me and I am ready for anything

She spat on the floor

Her: I will never forgive you for this; hell will freeze before I forgive you. I just pray your sins don't visit your children because when they do, no one will be able to help you. These words are coming from unforgiving mother

She grabbed her handbag and walked away

YARA

I was on a call with YV

I've missed my classes for about two weeks and exams are just around the corner. The pressure is too high and I need to up my game

Her: I miss you moghel

Me: I know; I miss you too. More like your crazy arse

She laughed

Her: I heard about Ayden's accident from Mr Munyai, I tried calling but your phone was unreachable. I am hoping he is fine now

Me: He is getting better; I was a mess to even attend to phone calls. I am sorry

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: I figured

Me: You said Tyson told you?

Her: Yes, I went and asked him when I couldn't reach you and that was when he told me about the accident



Me: That was nice of him but he never told me that he talked with you

Her: It must have slipped his mind

Me: Yeah. I am more worried about lectures I've missed

Her: Eish, you've missed a lot not mentioning the assignments. You will need the whole week to catch up and with exams close by, oh girl!

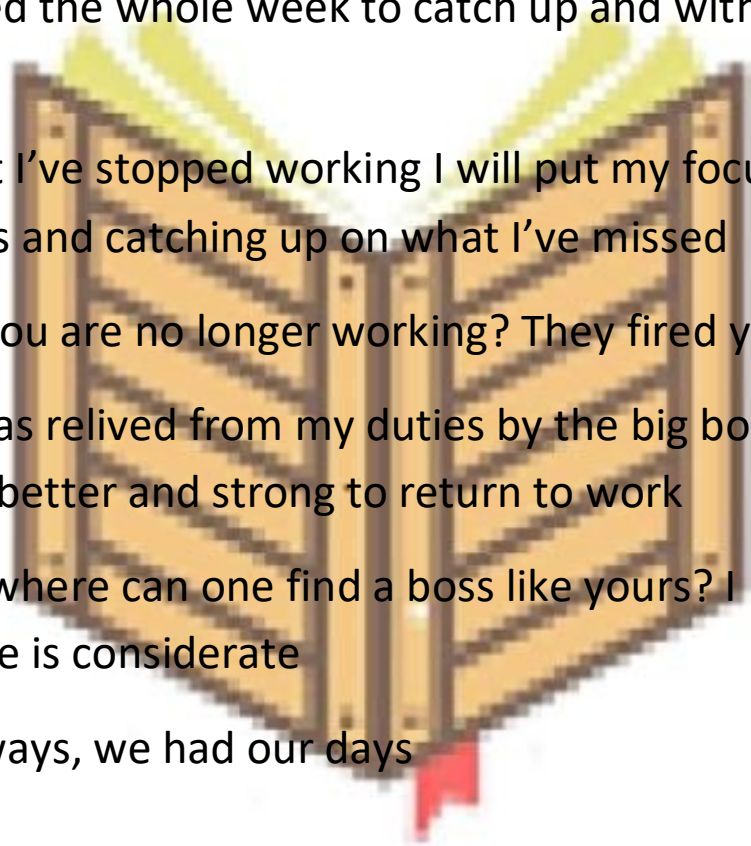
Me: At least I've stopped working I will put my focus on assignments and catching up on what I've missed

Her: Wait, you are no longer working? They fired you?

Me: No, I was relieved from my duties by the big boss just until Ayden gets better and strong to return to work

Her: Wow, where can one find a boss like yours? I mean this is amazing, she is considerate

Me: Not always, we had our days



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

VIPER

Old man called me to come and see him; he asked I come with my mother and Yara. From his tone I could say whatever he wanna tell us is important. You know when he is serious shit is following

Ma: I better not regret coming here, I know your father

Me: Let's give him the benefit of the doubt

Ma: Don't say I didn't warn you

Yara: We are about to find out

I opened the door and walked inside

Me: Did he hire a helper? It smells nice in here

Yara: Maybe he has a girlfriend

MaKhumalo hit my shoulder playfully

Ma: I wouldn't be surprised though

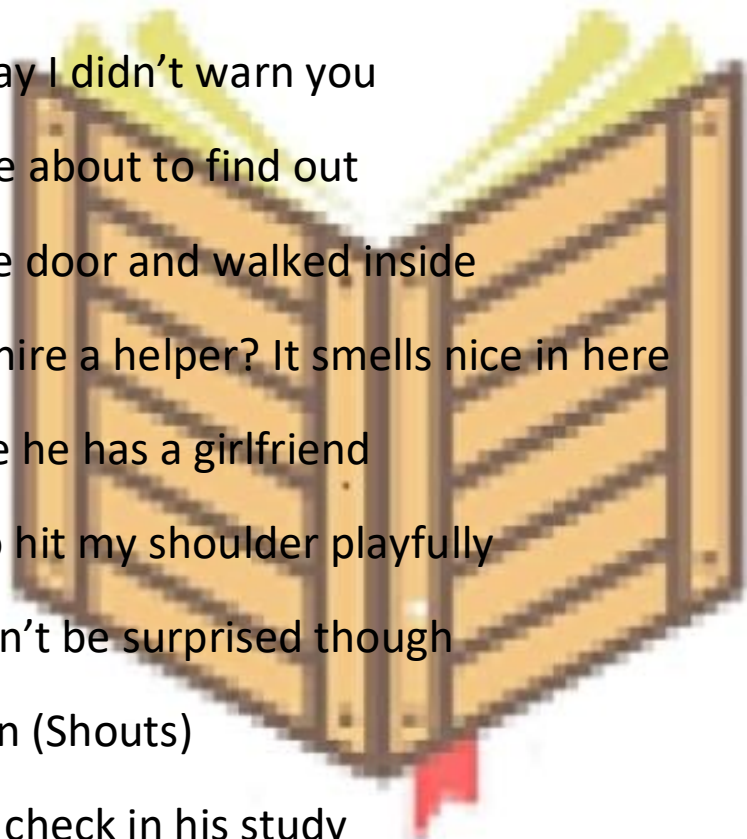
Me: Old man (Shouts)

Ma: Go and check in his study

A white lady appeared from the kitchen, she looked young probably in her late 20s

Ma: Ngith'n (What did I say?)

Yara: I give up



Lady: Good day, I am Lea

Me: Hello Lea, where is my father?

I darted my eyes to the lounge and a kid was watching TV

Me: What is going on here?

“I am glad you came. You’ve already met Lea” Old man said descending the stairs

Me: Yes, we did. Bangobani laba bantu (Who are these people?)

Old man: Yingakho ngikubizile (That’s why I called you) Lea, please go and call Paris

Yara: Singakwazi ukuhlala phansi? (Can we sit down)

Ma: Asihambe ndodakazi yam (Let’s go my daughter)

They walked to the lounge, I followed them

Old man: Mpendulo

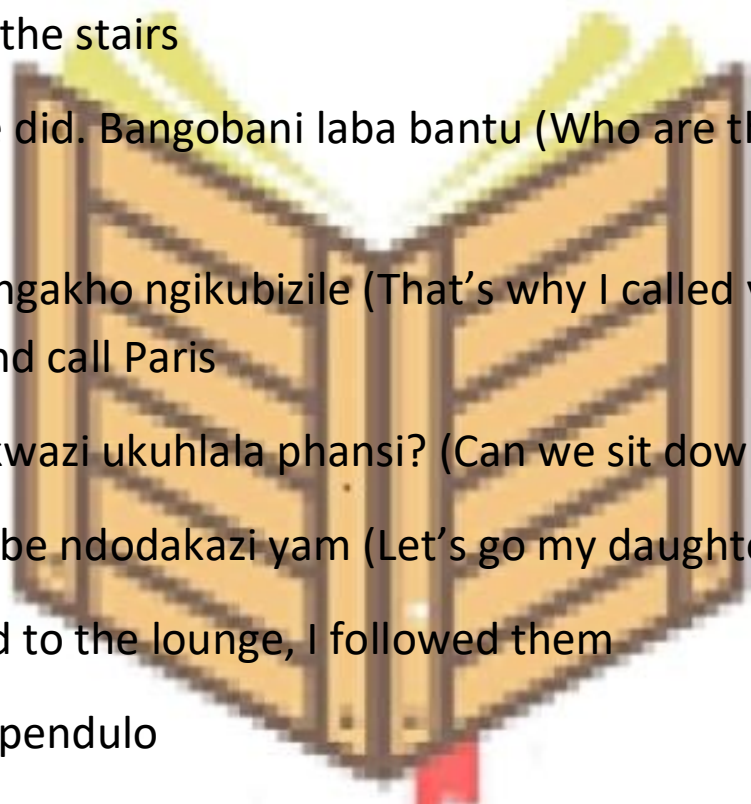
He tucked his hair behind his ear and tickled him

Mpendulo: Grandpa (Laughs)

Me: Old man, what is going on here?

Yara: Good question

Lea and some guy walked down the stairs



Guy: You called me?

Old man: Yes, please sit down. Also you Lea

They sat down

Old man: The reason why I called you here today is to introduce your brother to you at once, and to answer your questions if you have any

Ma: Their brother? You have another son I didn't know about?

Old man: Not mine

Advertisement

Zimele's son. Paris and his family, Lea and Mpendulo

Me: Wait a min, uncle Zimele had a son and we didn't know about? How is it possible? MaKhumalo?

Ma: I am in the dark like you son

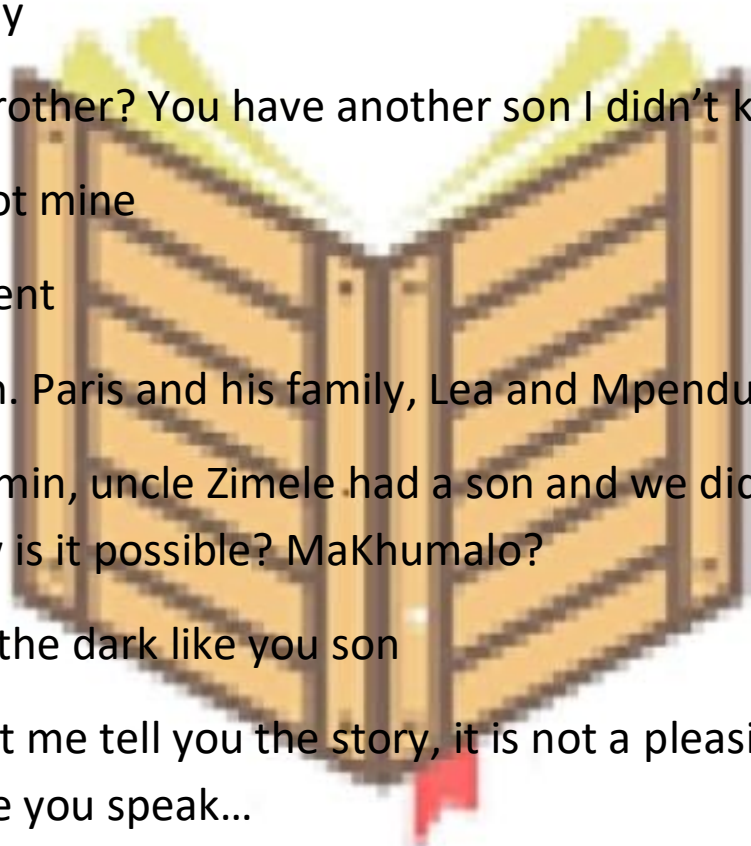
Old man: Let me tell you the story, it is not a pleasing one but listen before you speak...

He narrated the whole story to us

I laughed and looked at him not believing the word he said

Me: This is a joke right? You are not capable of doing any of that

Old man: Yes, I did



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: You are vile, for 30 years you kept this secret to yourself?  
Now your trips make sense, every month you'd travel. You  
were going to see him, how could you Mzo?

Old man: Well...

Yara: Let me get this straight, Paris is Tyson Munyai's half-  
brother?

Old man: You got that right

Me: Do you know him?

Yara: He is my ex

My mother clapped her hands and laughed

Ma: Yini enye oyifihlayo (What more are you hiding Mzo?)



TYSON

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I kept my gaze on my mother before I could say anything

Right now I don't know what to say to her, I don't know which  
words to use in this matter. For her to keep this as a secret  
must mean something, not once did she mention a son

Me: Mama

She closed her bible and raised her head

Me: Can I?

Her: Yes

I sat opposite her

Me: If I may ask, why didn't you ever tell us about him? You never talked about him; I always thought Mulalo was your first born

Her: It was a sensitive topic to touch Tyson; I kinda blamed myself for his death

Me: I never thought one person can be evil like that man, what I saw last night was Devil himself

Her: You don't know Mzoxolo Khumalo; evil doesn't stand to describe him

Me: What are you gonna do?

Her: About?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Paris/Banele...

Her: There's nothing I want than getting to know him, we've lost so many years of our lives and time lost can't be repaired. We only have today; it would be nice to bond with him. I'd like my children to know each other

Aren't we old to be forming sibling love? But, it might be fun who knows?

Her: That's if he is interested

Me: He looked for you, what do you think?

Her: He did

I leaned back on the couch

Me: Mh, so my half-brother is Yara's brother? What a small world!

Her: Tell me about it, no wonder I always loved that young lady

Me: You sure did. But, do you realise that if Paris and I shared a father I'd have dated my sister?

Her: Yoh, Tyson! It was going to be a taboo

Me: That's what happens when parents keep things like this from their children, we end up dating family because we are not aware of the relation



NOVELSGURU.COM

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

Me: Amelia (Shouts)

I set the remote on the table and stood up

Me: Where is this child?

(Knock on door)

I went to the door

Me: Zack

Him: Yes, Zack. You are not going to let me in?

Me: Come on in

Him: Am I sensing coldness from you?

Me: I don't know what you are talking about

Amelia walked up to us

Her: Daddy

She hugged her father

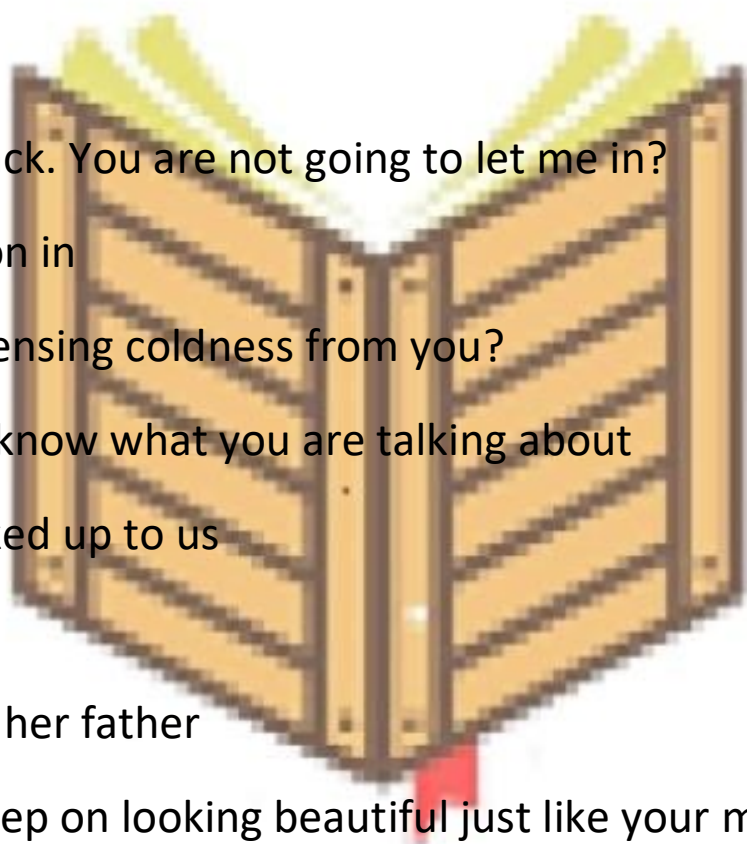
Him: You keep on looking beautiful just like your mother

Her: Thank you daddy. Mimsey, you were calling me?

Me: And you are only deciding to attend to me now?

Her: I was on a video call with a friend, sorry

Me: Let me attend to your father, we will talk



NOVELSGURU.COM



Her: Okay, daddy, don't go without telling me. Love you

Him: I won't, love you too baby

We sat on the couch

Him: I thought I should come and see you since you are not picking my any of my calls

Me: I wasn't ignoring them by mistake

Him: Are you still angry with me? A lot what said after our son's accident

Me: No, if anything I am glad you uttered those words. I took my time and let them deepen. You said lot of things Zack, some of them were hurtful but they made me realise that Ayden was right all along. I was too blind to see the truth that was in front of me. We are divorced but I am still running after you like a dog

He fixed his eyes on me

Me: I am no longer going to stay and wait for you to call, or beg you to cancel your dinner date with Nandi. Those days are over, I am claiming my life back and you are excluded

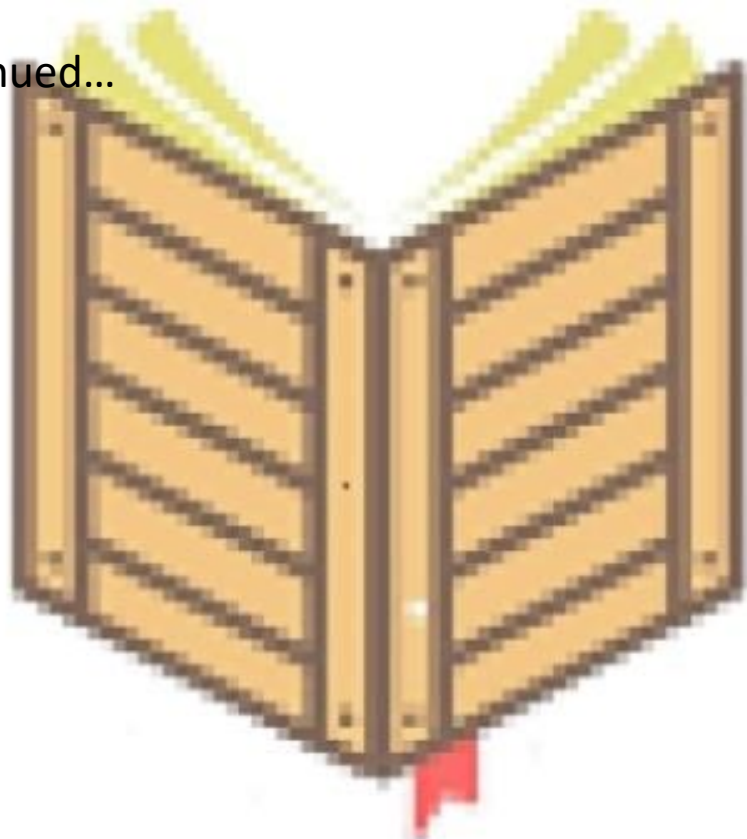
Him: Are you dumping me?

Me: I am letting go, go and be with your wife and children. They need you as for me; time has come for me to be alone

Him: I love you Sophia

Me: You wouldn't be sleeping next to Nandi every night if you really love me. We are adults so let's accept reality, go home Zack

To be continued...



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

MIMI

Later that afternoon I went to see Zoe at the psychiatric hospital. She's looking very good for someone who is locked up. Seems like the girl is living her life inside here

I ran my eyes around before I sat down... Her psychiatrist allowed us to talk in her room, the room has surveillance

Her: So I need to threaten you before you come and see me? Why do you make things so hard for me? I don't really like it

Me: What am I supposed to say/do? Clap hands for you or give you a hug?

Her: No, a hug is too much but clapping hands? Yes, you can do that. That would show how great I am

Me: Keep on fooling yourself

She sat on the chair and crossed her legs

Her: It's nice seeing you, you look good. Ethan is taking care of you

Me: Cut the crap and tell me why I am here

Her: It gets lonely in here and I thought why not call the person who is responsible for my locked up

She fixed her eyes on me

Her: I want you to convince Ethan to come and see me

Me: Hell will freeze before I do anything of that sort

Her: Not a good way to talk with your friend

Me: What are you going to do? Mh, you'll keep on sending threats? That's so low for someone of your calibre

She threw her hands in the air and chuckled

Her: You killed a man

Me: I did, and it was in self-defence. If I have to I'll do it again, it was either my friend and me or him

Her: Whatever you wanna call it but that doesn't blind the truth. Your pimp sat with the information and kept quiet, you didn't even go to jail. And I am sitting here thinking, why can't I help the law and make the people who killed Mr Naidoo pay? Amazing, right? I know...

Me: How the hell did you find out? Are you that desperate to get Ethan?

Her: When you are determined to destroy someone you do whatever it takes to find dirt in their laundry and I happened to do that

I stood up and grabbed her by the hair

Her: Do you want me to show you the video? There's proof my darling, it shows you and your friend having time of your lives and later killed that man in cold blood

Me: Only Chieka had the tap

Her: That's where you are wrong, someone has a copy and I bumped into that person. And now it's in my possession

Me: You are not going to threaten me and think you'll get away with it

Her: Is that what you think? Really? And you wanna break my face for it? Let me give you a reason for it then

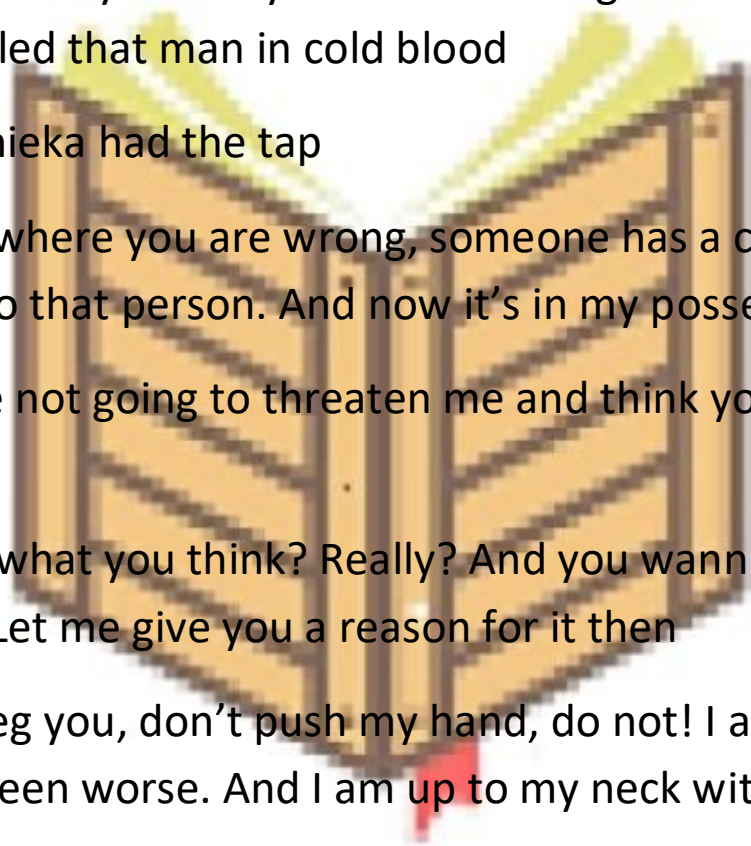
Me: Zoe I beg you, don't push my hand, do not! I am not scared of jail, I've seen worse. And I am up to my neck with your nonsense

Her: You are a dead woman, and when I am finished with you...

Me: Is that a challenge?

Her: Let go of my hair and face me like a woman

Me: What do you want from me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I want you to leave Ethan

She stood up and fixed her hair

Me: In your dreams

Her: If I can't have him, you won't either

Me: I will never leave Ethan, never!

Her: I knew you were going to say that maybe I should give you reason to. Let's see who you are going to choose between Buhle and Ethan

Without thinking twice I slapped across the face and pinned her against the wall

I was now breathing heavily

Me: If you dare do anything to Buhle, you will be starting a war with me. I swear to you Zoe Griffins I will not spare you

The nurses came running and freed Zoe from my hands

Her: The ball is in your court (Breathes heavily)

Me: Like hell it is! **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Nurse: Ma'am, sorry but I am going to ask you to leave now

Me: Let go of my hand (Clicks tongue) this is far from over

I pushed the nurse and walked out

AYDEN

My father dropped by for a visit; it's been long since I saw him. We do have our differences but he is my father and I can't keep on fighting for Mimsey when it's clear that she won't let him go. My father was a coward to leave his family and start another way

Him: I see you are getting better

Me: I am actually

I looked at my arm

Me: But seems like the scar is now part of me

Him: To me it looks different from the last night I saw you. That's not a permanent scar

Me: We will see. Anyway, what have I done to deserve this visit?

Him: I didn't know a father needs a reason to come and see his son

Me: You know exactly what I mean

Him: I was with your mother

Me: You know I don't like talking about you and Mimsey

Him: She finally cut ties with me

Me: Mimsey did what? No way

Him: She did, I was as shocked as you are. She said it's time she let go of me

Me: That was brave of her; I never thought she could do something like this. How many times did I beg her to leave you but she always refused

Him: I really love your mother Ayden

Me: Who are you fooling Pops? You stopped loving my mother the day you decided to marry Nandi and leave your family

Him: I am only realising now that how much I truly love your mother

Me: Hold those thoughts; you are not going to break another woman's heart. You had your chance with Mimsey but you blew it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Advertisement

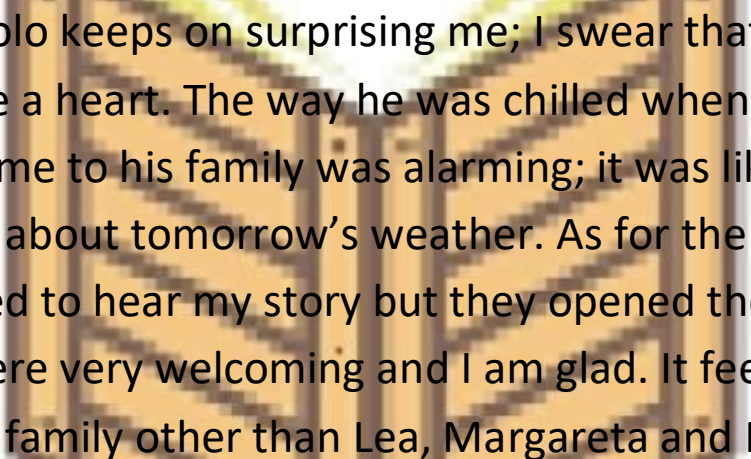
you are not going to do what you did to my mother to Mam'Nandi

He sighed loudly



Him: I was so stupid and now I lost the only woman who ever loved me

PARIS



Uncle Mzoxolo keeps on surprising me; I swear that man doesn't have a heart. The way he was chilled when he was introducing me to his family was alarming; it was like he was telling them about tomorrow's weather. As for the trio, they were shocked to hear my story but they opened their arms for me. They were very welcoming and I am glad. It feels nice to know I have family other than Lea, Margareta and Mpendulo

I rang Margareta

Me: My Queen

Her: Oh Paris, I've been waiting for your call since yesterday. I am too old to be worrying about you

Me: But I sent you a message

I can't get angry at Margareta; she took care of me and took a role of a mother. Yes, she could have done something to stop

uncle Mzo but if she had maybe I would end up with someone who wasn't going to love me the way she did

Her: I got your message, I am very happy for you my son. You finally know where you come from and who your mother is. This is amazing and I am happy I lived to witness it

Me: I am the happy one; I can finally close this chapter and let my heart heal

Her: I talked with Lea, she told me about your plans. Why didn't you tell me?

Me: Lea shouldn't have told you before I talked with you

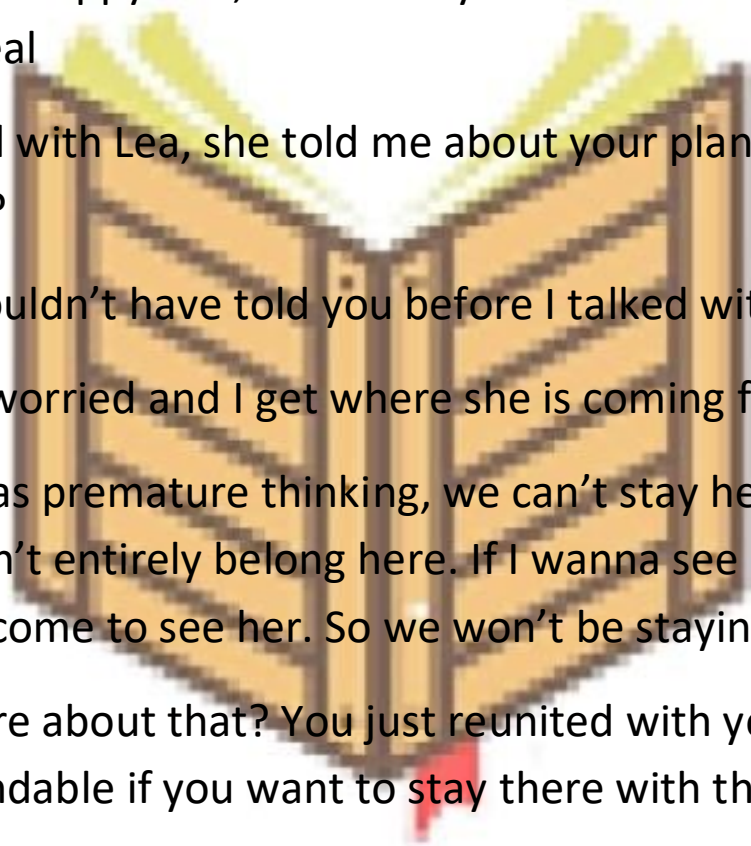
Her: She is worried and I get where she is coming from

Me: That was premature thinking, we can't stay here, she is right we don't entirely belong here. If I wanna see my mother I will fly and come to see her. So we won't be staying here

Her: You sure about that? You just reunited with your family; it is understandable if you want to stay there with them

Me: I am, and we have holidays for a reason. I am sure my mother will understand

Her: Talk with her first



YARA

I was on a call with Ayden

Me: Viper drove me to the hospital, I didn't take an Uber

Him: You could have told me that you wanted to see Panther

Me: Just rest I will see you later

Him: Okay, I love you both

Me: Kisses

I hung up

I walked inside Panther's room. The nurse was feeding him

Me: Good evening

She turned her head slightly and smiled at me

Her: Good evening Miss Khumalo

Him: She finally came to see her needy brother

Me: I shouldn't have

I kissed his cheek

Me: I will finish up, you can go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You are disturbing our moment, Jesus! Who said I want you to feed me?

Me: Buhle will skin you alive

The nurse laughed and walked away

Me: You are having best time of your life here

Him: It's a shame tomorrow I am leaving, I am going to miss the care and love I am getting from all these women (Laughs)

I sliced the meat and fed him

Me: That serves you right, you love ladies too much

He laughed again

Him: Get off my case. Where is Viper?

Me: He is on a call outside

Him: Okay... what's new monkey?

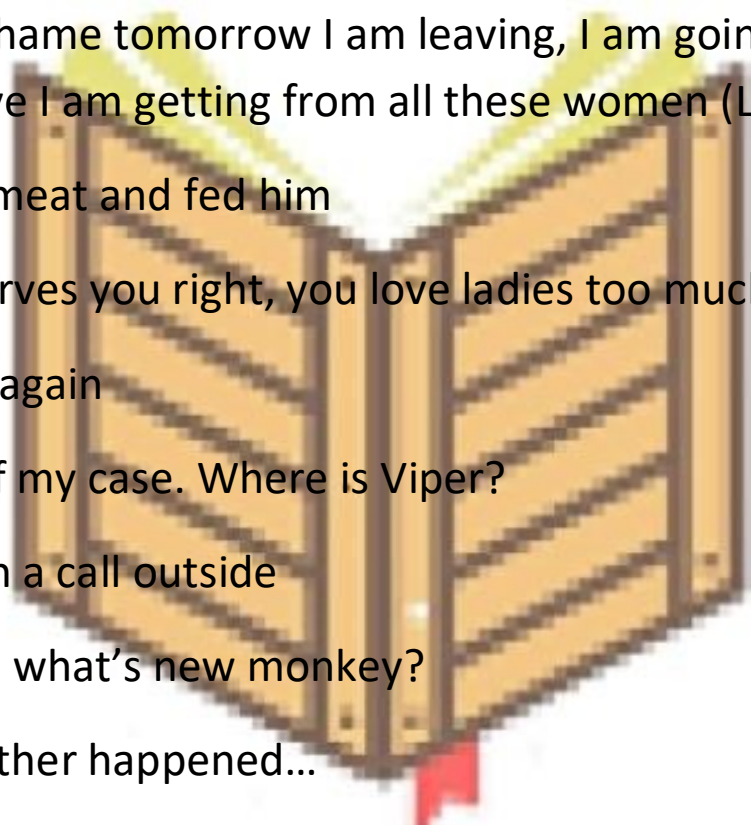
Me: Your father happened...

Him: What did he do this time?

Me: Apparently we have a brother we didn't know about

Him: Brother? What are you smoking?

Me: Yes, a brother. His name is Paris and he is uncle Zimele's son



Him: Sweet Jesus. And, Old man knew about him?

Me: You got that right

Him: Tell me everything

PARIS

My mother was showing me pictures of my father and her back in the days. You could hear from her voice that she loved him a lot and death robbed them something beautiful

Her: When I learned about his cancer I felt like my whole world was crumbling down on me

Me: They didn't find cure or it was too late?

Her: It was too late; it has already advanced when they diagnosed him. There was nothing they could do as it was spreading so fast and kept on growing

Me: That must have hurt you

Her: it crashed me and just when I started accepting his death, something happened

Me: Me? (Chuckles softly) but you are strong, here you are today narrating the tale

Her: It was not a walk in the park, it took me long to find myself and move on

Me: God never present situation without solutions

Her: You got that right

She held my hand

Her: Tell me all about yourself

Me: Where do I start?

I smiled and shook my head

Her: My daughter-in-law and my grandson

Tyson walked in the sitting room

Ty: Oh, didn't know you were with someone

Her: You mean your brother

He sat opposite us

Him: It feels weird to know I have a big brother

Me: Imagine me having two siblings, overnight

Him: Still have a long way to go

Her: This is so beautiful. Thank you God for making this possible

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

YARA

A week came and went very fast, it was very productive. I managed to catch up with my assignments, well, with the help of YV and Ayden. My exams are on this week... We also consulted and the doctor told me to take it easy, and not stress to avoid miscarriage. I am trying not to stress; it would really break my heart to lose this child we've experienced bad things to last us lifetime. Sophia is slowly but surely stepping up to be the best mother-in-law, who would have thought? We talk over the phone now and then, last night when we talked she told me about her idea of promoting me, Ayden had already briefed me in but hearing Sophia talking about it was priceless. The firm can start operating soon; I'll probably start working after I've given birth

I walked into the kitchen with an empty glass of water. Ayden was in the kitchen wiping the kitchen counter

Me: Thank you for helping me around Munchie

The baby daddy's leg has also stopped giving him problems, he no longer need the crutch to balance. The physiotherapy has helped him a lot, we can finally put the accident behind us

Him: You are my shawty, my only shawty and I got you

He nai-nai whilst singing

Me: Where did I get you again? Because wow!

Him: Fact remain, you love me

I put the glass in the sink

Him: We are leaving what time for shopping again?

Me: I was thinking 13:00pm that way we won't drag our legs when buying

Him: I thought shopping requires time

He raised an eyebrow at me

Me: I don't, I hate shopping. We are going in the mall knowing exactly what we want

Him: If you say so... Mimsey want me to move back in the house

Me: Oh, she did

Him: Yes, but she is moving out

Me: Where would she go?

Him: Mimsey has money; she will get herself another house

Me: Then I don't see why you shouldn't move back, I am sure you are tired of this apartment





He rested his arms on the kitchen counter

Him: No, I didn't. I love it here and you know that

I fixed my eyes on him

Him: I am only moving back if you agree to move in with me

Me: Hold on Mr A, I am not moving in with you. My mother will kill me before I even think of it, cohabiting!

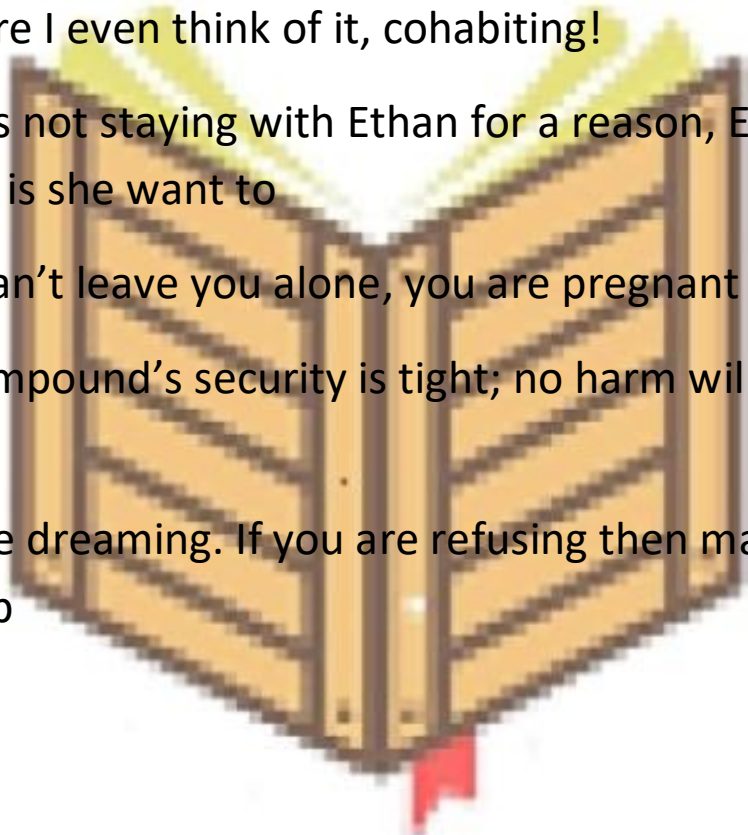
Even Mimi is not staying with Ethan for a reason, Elisa can breathe fire is she want to

Him: But I can't leave you alone, you are pregnant

Me: This compound's security is tight; no harm will come my way

Him: You are dreaming. If you are refusing then maybe it's time for next step

MIMI



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

We spent the whole week trying to find out what happened to the food that was served at the function but nothing came out. The lawyers got involved when one of the guests decided to sue the restaurant, oh boy! I was lucky Miss Catalina didn't fire me,

how I don't know. What a night mare! All of this is smelling sabotage, something is off!

Me: Egg and bacon?

I asked Ethan while closing the refrigerator

Him: I was thinking we could eat out

Me: Let me go and tell the twins to get ready

Schools are on recess and the twins only got back yesterday, they were at Yara's

Me: Get ready

Advertisement

we are eating out

I said from the door

Lex: Where are we going?

Me: It's a surprise; now get ready to avoid getting late. Your father is very punctual

Lex: Okay

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

My phone rang, it was Buhle

Me: And she remembered that she has a friend

She laughed

Her: You are making me feel guilty

Me: I am just pulling your leg, I know you got boyfriend to take care of

Her: How are you?

Me: On the edge

Her: Still worried about Giraffe?

I pushed the sliding door and walked outside

Me: How can I not Buhle? I haven't heard from her since that day, that's alarming

Her: It is alarming

Buhle and I didn't wake up and decide to "kill Mr Singh" if anything Chieka woke up and planned our death since we were in conversation with him about quitting. Mr Singh wasn't just a client that night he was also sent to kill both of us but we ended being the ones to harm him. Everything happened so fast, one minute we were having sex with a client and the next minute he was on top of Buhle strangling her. In panic not knowing what to do I took the scissor and stabbed him in the throat but he didn't die on the spot. Chieka's men finished the job but outside the room. The camera's only recorded what I did, Chieka then made sure nothing is traced back to him that's why the police were never informed. So, I am assuming Zoe is

thinking I killed him because he was lying in the bed blood oozing out of his throat. It's also clear that the person who gave her the tape doesn't know what happened behind the scene. And telling that nutcase that I didn't kill him was going to be waste of time since she's adamant I did it that's why I said I killed him in self-defence but in all honesty I didn't. Zoe will climb mountains just to separate Ethan and me, she won't even think twice about doing that

Me: Even if we were to go and inform the police about what happened in the end we are going to be implicated because of the proof in hand

Her: And Chieka is dead to defend us against these allegations. Insane allegations!

Me: You see? No one is going to believe us in this case

Her: Then what are we going to do?

Me: I don't know but I am not going to leave Ethan for Zoe let alone throwing you under the bus. I rather die than let Zoe win

I know Buhle would do the same for me; she would never throw me in the Lion's den. If I have to go head on head with Zoe then so be it!

ZOE

I was sitting quietly in the corner; a book was resting between my hands

The door opened, my psychiatrist Miss Peterson walked in followed by my nurse

Nurse: Good morning

Me: Morning (Smiles)

She gave me glass of water and two pills

Me: Thank you

I swallowed them and drank the water

Miss P: You are looking very good

Me: Yes, I am

Miss P: You'll be happy to know that you are getting out of her

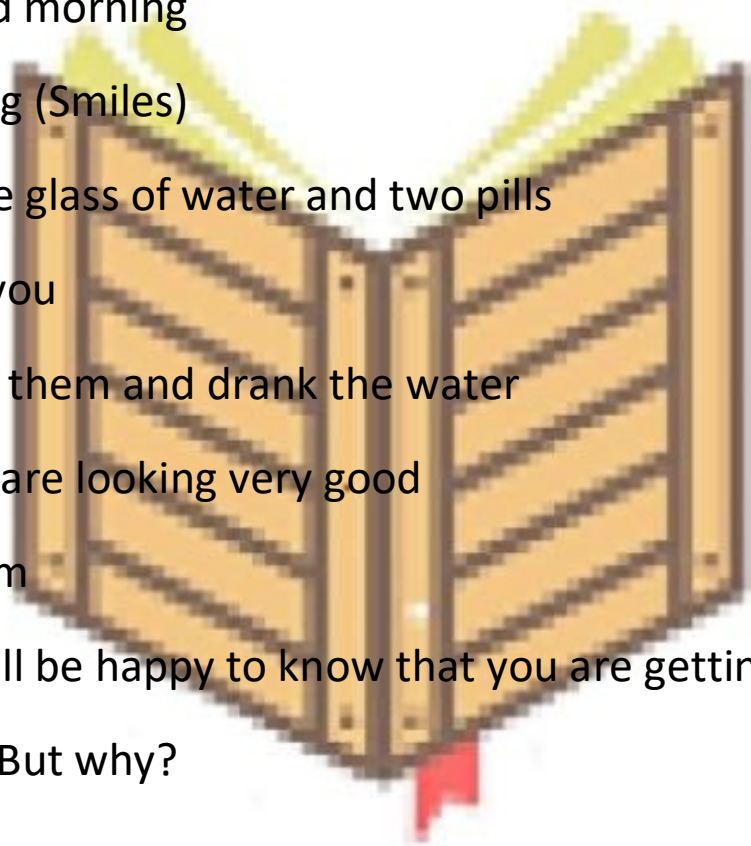
Me: What? But why?

I stood up

Miss P: You are getting better and responding very well to the medication

I shook my head no

Me: I don't want to



NOVELSGURU.COM

Miss P: What do you mean? You wanna stay here? You've been crying to get out of this place and now it's your chance

Me: Not anymore, I wanna stay here

Miss P: I don't understand

Me: You don't have to understand anything. Call my parents and tell them not to expect me anytime soon because I am not leaving this place

She looked at the nurse and back at me

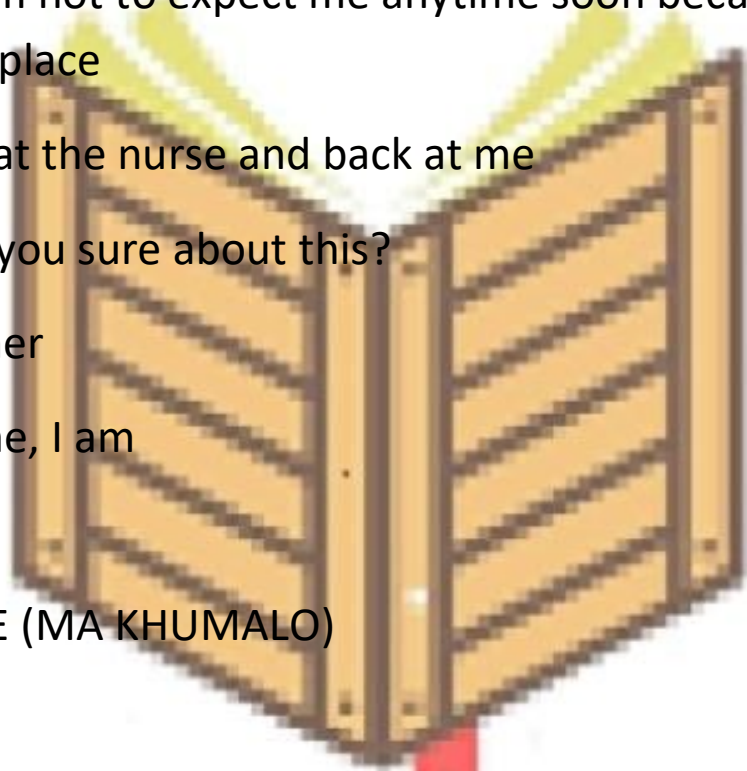
Miss P: Are you sure about this?

I smiled at her

Me: Trust me, I am

MBALENHLE (MA KHUMALO)

It's been months since the whole cheating thing came to light; I can't lie and say I wasn't hurt. Cheating is never easy to tangle especially if is committed twice but what Lindo said to me the other day really got to me. Mzoxolo is man of secrets and they always come out when we least expect it but despite everything I love him and I know he does to. I've already served him with divorce papers but I feel like fighting for my marriage.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Give it a try and not live with regrets of throwing away something beautiful

I sat opposite him

Me: Thank you for seeing me

Him: You are still my wife MaKhumalo. Is everything fine with Lindo?

Me: He is fine but that's not why I am here. I came to talk about our marriage

Him: Okay...

Me: Do you love Yara's mother?

He stood up and come to sit next to me

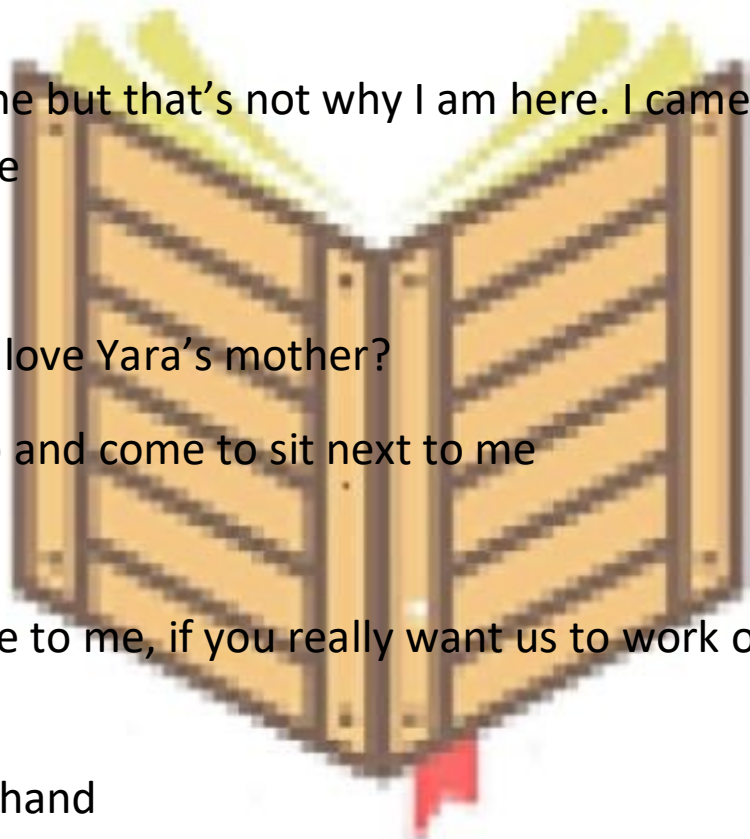
Him: I don't

Me: Don't lie to me, if you really want us to work on our marriage

He held my hand

Him: I am not lying to you; I was just having fun with her

Me: Because I am no longer funny? If you wanna have more than one spouse just tell me now because if I take you back and you still have wandering eye, I swear I will leave you and never look back



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: What?

I looked at him

BUHLE

I was lying on the bed reading a novel, Panther was sleeping I've met incredible people but I've never met anyone who is like Panther. This man is incredibly amazing; his situation is not having any effect on him. He is still the same Panther, I was scared at first thinking he would lose himself and be sad but no! He is hopeful, at first he was a bit scared but as time goes he accepted the situation. And now he is handling the whole thing as a prof

Him: Sunshine

Me: Mh?

Him: Where is your butt?

Me: Huh?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: You heard me? (Laughs) I wanna touch it

I couldn't help but laugh



Me: You just woke up and the first thing you are thinking about is my butt? Lindo, are you ever serious about anything?

Him: I am serious about you, am I not? But that doesn't answer my question

I got on top of him as he squeezed my butt

Me: What am I gonna do with you? My blind man

Him: Absolutely nothing

I poked his nose and laughed

Him: Do you know any pastor?

Me: No, but I can look for one. Why do you need a pastor?

Him: I want him to pray for me before I get in theatre; I want to feel God's presence before anything. If I get inside there without God I might not make it, I need Him to get me out of there alive. So that I can come back and be with you, be with someone who showed me nothing but love in this situation

I cupped his face

Me: I am here because I love you, there's no other place I wanna be than here

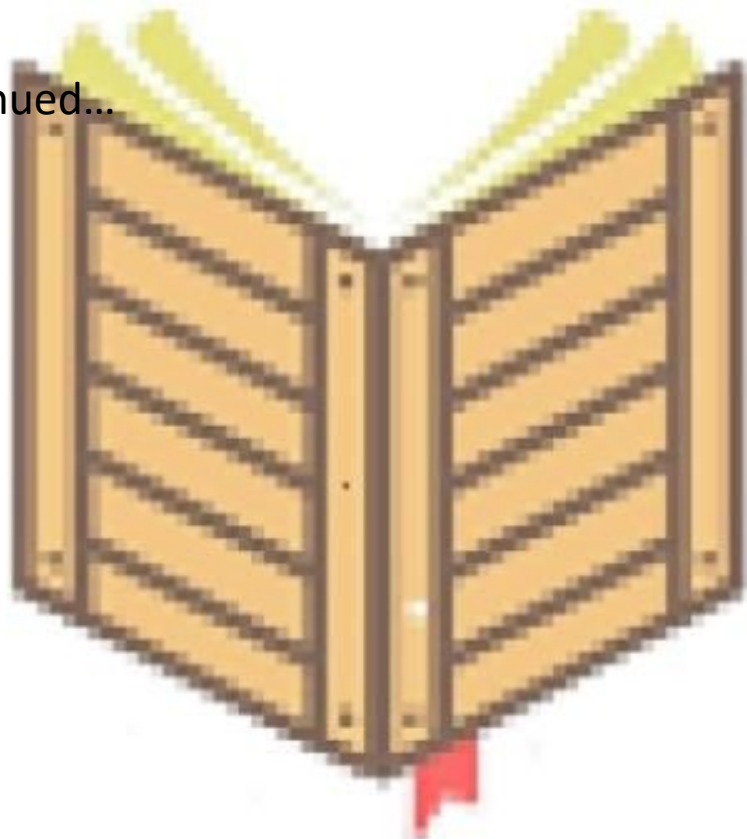
Him: Don't be modest, not many would have stayed. I am sick and blind, we haven't been dating for long so I would have understand if you'd chose to leave me

I leaned and kissed him

Me: Ngikuthanda kakhulu ungaze ukukholwe lokho (I love you so much never forget that)

Him: Nginganikela impilo yami ngenxa yakho (I'd give my life for you)

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

Pregnancy is bliss Lord, especially if the responsible one is present and excited as well. I've noticed Ayden is excited about this than me, he is very impatient. If it was up to him the baby would have been born already. He want to be part of everything that concern our baby, I am very blessed to have him as the father of my child. I couldn't ask for more than what I have right now and I plan to keep it. I was starting to show; even my clothes are starting to be tight. Ayden is having a field with my weight, I've always been petite but now I am picking weight like there's no tomorrow and he is enjoying the thick woman I am

Ayden wrapped his hand around my waist

Him: I was thinking we should keep the gender of the baby as a surprise

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: But I wanna know the gender, how are we going to choose names? Or buying clothes?

Him: We can choose unisex names and colours

I approached the cot and looked at it

Him: You like it?

Me: It's beautiful but pricy

Him: If you like it then we are buying it

Me: We are not

Him: Uh there we go... Are we going to agree on one thing or we are going to waste time bickering?

Me: You are making things hard when they are not

He shrugged his shoulders

Him: If you like the cot then take it, I'll pay. And don't look at the price

Me: Oh Mr Big Shots! You are so full of yourself

Him: I don't even know why you are buying these things when you are going to receive more on your baby shower

Me: And who said I want a baby shower? Baby showers are bad omen

Him: Says who?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Says me

Him: Yoh Miss Masia, your screws are starting to disconnect

I darted my eyes around our surroundings

Me: Please don't make a scene

Him: Why would I make a scene?

Me: Munei is coming our way

Him: What is she doing here, no, why is she coming our way?

Me: This is a public space Mr A not Tshivhase's mall

MIMI

I was on a call with Ethan

Him: Did you arrive safe at work?

Me: Yes, I did. Cuddles, you make it sound like I am in some sort of danger

Him: No, but it wouldn't hurt to be extra careful. This world is full of vultures

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Yeah right, thank you for breakfast

Him: Do you even have to thank me? Let me not keep you, I love you

Me: You complete me



I hung up

I walked by Miss Catalina's office, she shut her laptop when she saw me

Me: Can I have a word with you?

Her: Yes, please sit down

One of the waitresses called asking about a particular waiter and it happened there's no record of him. Meaning this person might be our answer to what happened

Her: I take it you wanna talk about the latest revelation

Me: Yes

Her: Miss Masia, between the two of us do you know someone who might be out to get you? This is starting to look like sabotage

Me: I would be lying if I say I don't

Her: You need to sort your matters because I can't keep on protecting you, soon the owner will get fed up. As it is the restaurant is being sued and lot of money is going to come out

Me: I understand

Her: In the meantime I will try to find out, who this person was and how did he gain access to the function

Me: Thank you for everything Miss Catalina

BUHLE

I was giving Panther his first cut before the surgeon shave it, he is having his brain surgery this Friday and we are all scared of the unknown. I think his suggestion to get a pastor will keep everyone at ease, at least we will know God is with him when he lies on that operating bed. I talked with Ma Elisa; she gave me Pastor Mpilo's contact. I will give him a call later

Me: You should see yourself, you look ugly

Him: Excuse you! I'll never be ugly even if I try

Me: The monkey does not see his own hind backside

Advertisement

he sees his neighbour's

Him: Thank you Miss Bhengu

I pulled the chair that was nearby and sat down

Me: I went ahead and took a leave

Him: But I told you not to, my mother is here to take care of me

Me: She also need to rest, after your surgery you are going to need all the help you can get. Don't forget a journey to recover is the hardest

Him: I get what you are saying

Footsteps sounded behind us, it was MaKhumalo

Him: MaKhumalo

We laughed

Her: Don't you ever confuse our cologne?

Him: I can never; my nose is now my eyes. You can never fool me

She threw her purse on the couch

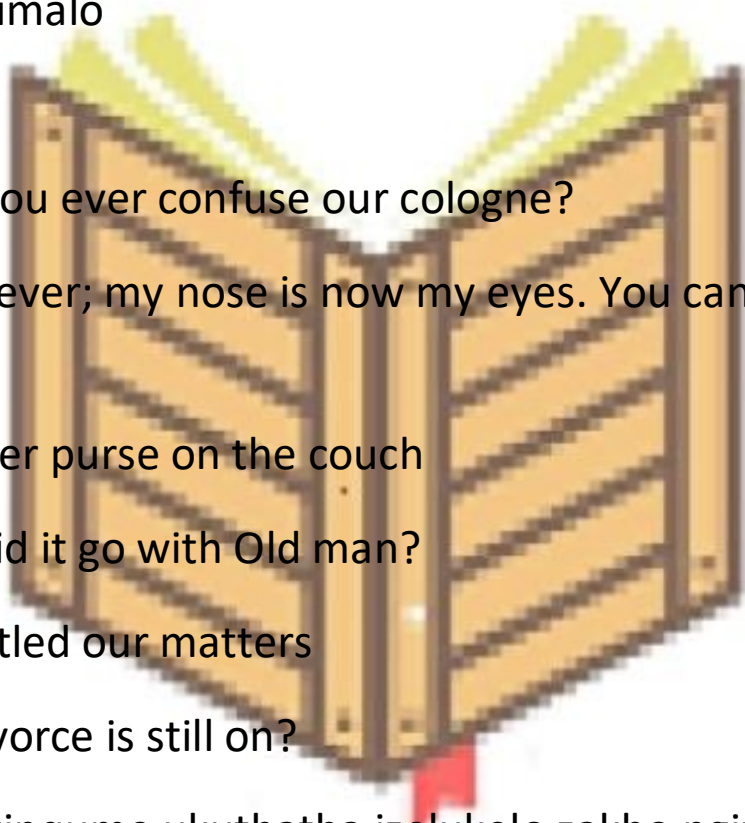
Him: How did it go with Old man?

Her: We settled our matters

Him: The divorce is still on?

Her: Cha, ngingqume ukuthatha izelukelo zakho ngixazulule izinto nobaba wakho (No, I decided to take your advice and solve things with your father)

Him: Ngiyaqiniseka ukuthi uyazisola futhi uzoba yisiphukuphuku ukuphinda lelo phutha elifanayo kathathu (I am sure he is regretting also, he will be stupid to repeat the same mistake three times)





She looked at me

Her: Ngicela ungenzele inkomishi yekofi (Would you make a cup of coffee for me, please)

TYSON

I sat on the couch relaxing and crossed my legs

My mother went with Paris to Botswana since he couldn't stay long in SA they thought of taking her with them just to spend some quality time together. Paris's presence made her the happiest mother on earth as for me and Mulalo, well; blood is blood we didn't need formalities to get along. It's exciting to know that we've a big brother; it has always been the three of us but now we are more than that. God gave us the best present ever after all God's time is the best

I called my mother [NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Me: Ndaa (Hello)

Her: Hurini (How are you?)

Me: Tshivhuto fhedzi mianga (Missing you only mom) how is Gaborone treating you?

Her: This place is heaven, I am enjoying the vacation. Next time you and Mulalo are tagging along

Me: She will be so excited, the way she loves travelling

She laughed softly

Her: Lunwesa (Too much)

Me: Ndo tori ndivha lumelise na upfa mutakalo (I was just checking up on you)

Her: Ndo livhuwa nwananga na u takala ro takala zwone (Thank you and we are doing well son)

Me: Glad to hear that. Please send my greetings to everyone

Her: I will do so, duvha la vhudi (Have a great day)

Me: Have a great day

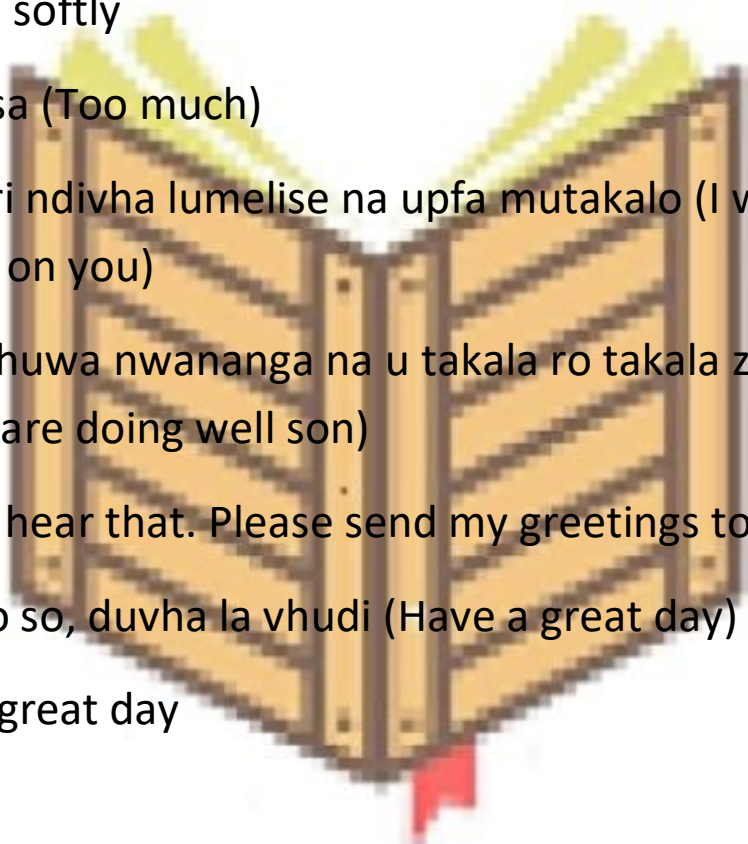
I hung up

I picked the text book that was on the table and flipped through the pages

(Knock on door)

Me: Come on in

The door swung open, Munei stood at the door



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Hey

Me: Oh, hello

Her: Can I come in?

Me: Yes, please

I closed the textbook and set it on the table

Me: Never thought I'll see you again

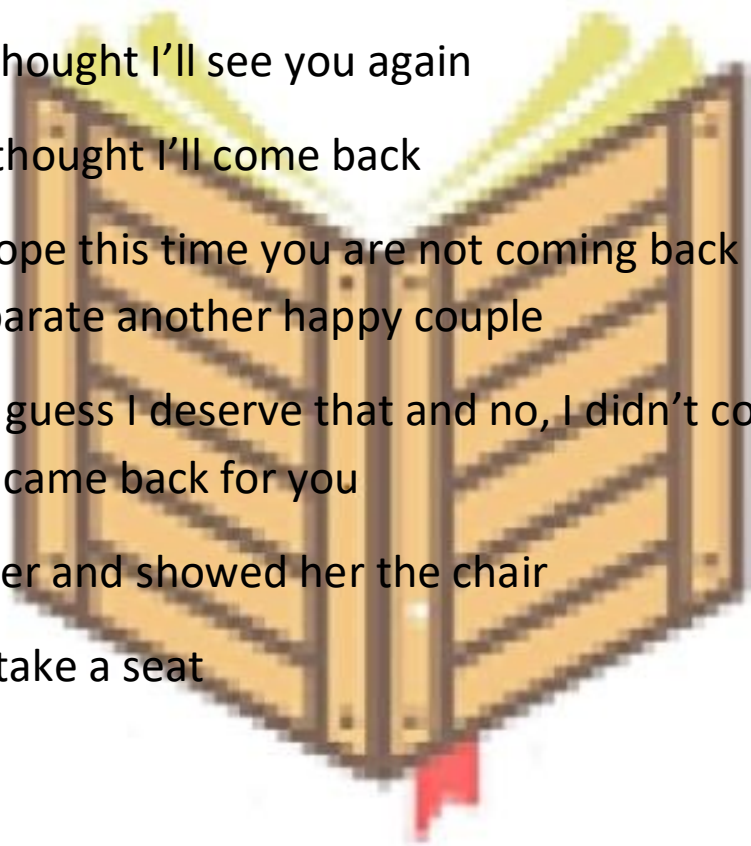
Her: Never thought I'll come back

Me: And I hope this time you are not coming back with other tricks to separate another happy couple

Her: Okay, I guess I deserve that and no, I didn't come back to start riots. I came back for you

I stared at her and showed her the chair

Me: Please take a seat



AYDEN

NOVELSGURU.COM

Yara took off her shoes and sat on the couch

Her: My feet are killing me

I put the shopping bags on the floor

Me: Let me massage them maybe you will feel better

I sat next to her and put the cushion on my lap

Me: You handled Munei very well, for a second I thought you were going to mop the floor with her weave

Her: I was showing her that not everyone is as vile as her and besides she came and apologized the day after your accident

Me: You never told me

Her: Because you didn't wanna talk about her and it was not important

Me: She is very stupid but it's all in the past

She put her hand on her tummy and looked at me

Me: Oh my God, the cramps are back?

She shook her head and gently took my hand

Her: The first baby kicks (Smiles)

Me: Oh my word! Shawty, this is...

Her: Amazing, right?



It's actually the first day he/she is kicking and am I not glad I am here to witness this moment? I am surprised by how baby kicks feel!

I looked at Yara and beamed

Her: Oh, the sensation feels like butterflies fluttering or a fish swimming in my belly

I rubbed her tummy

Me: Hello there, are you trying to hijack our conversation?

Mommy and daddy can't wait to meet you and we hope you'd love us as much as we do

She put her hand on top on mine

Me: I will never thank you enough for giving me a gift of this nature, thank you so much

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## ETHAN

Later that afternoon I received a letter from Zoe, seeing that I am not entertaining her she opt to write me a letter. How sick can one person be? I thought her condition was manageable if medication is taken but in this case seems like it's not. I wish we could forget about Zoe for once, she is becoming too much

I stared at the letter that was in my hand and took a deep breath

|Hello Ethan, I am writing this letter to apologize for what I've done. If I had taken my medication things would have never got out of control, I would have never acted the way I did. I hope one day you will find it in your heart to forgive me and maybe we can rekindle our friendship. Just maybe... I also got a chance to apologize to Mimi and I hope between us they will be peace. I am working on myself and I hope by the time I leave this place I'd be the better person. As the saying goes, time will tell-Zoe Griffins|

Me: Wow... okay! Trick after trick

MIMI

Buhle and I walked into Spur, the waiter walked up to us when he saw us

It was packed, I wonder if we will get a table here

Him: Good day, are you eating here or take-away?

Me: The plan was to eat here but we can see it's packed

Him: There's one table but it's right there

He pointed at the corner

Her: It's fine right?

Me: It is

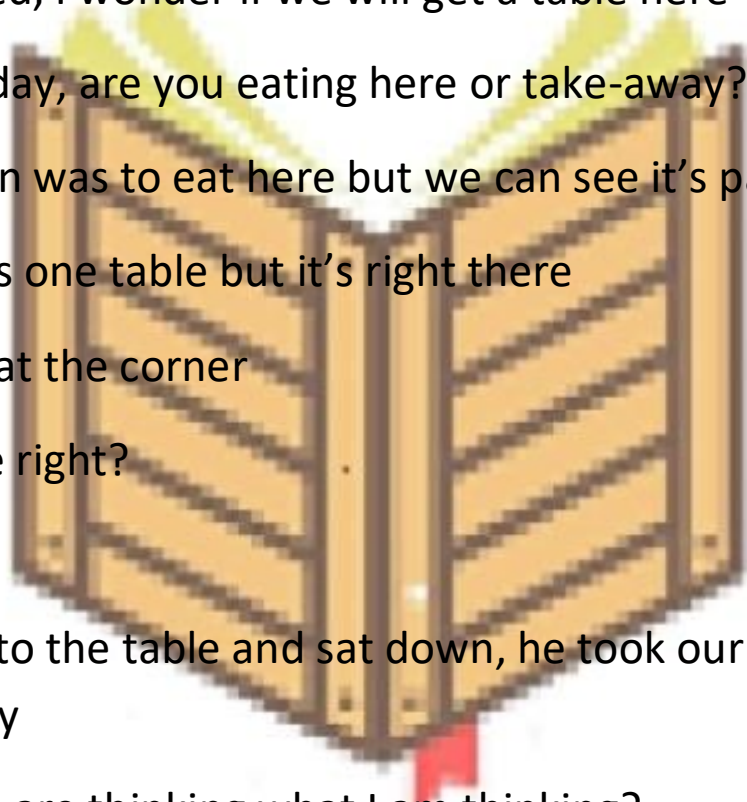
We walked to the table and sat down, he took our order and walked away

Her: So, you are thinking what I am thinking?

Me: Yes, this is written Zoe all over

Her: Do you know what this means? There's someone working for her, it might be the same guy or someone else

Me: That's what I thought. Her obsession is becoming deadly now



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: What's her disorder again?

Me: Obsessive love disorder, in her mind Ethan is in love with her. It's impossible to get her to understand that her love is one-sided. That's why I wanted to leave the country but my children comes first

I sighed quietly

Her: Is it possible to get a restraining order against her?

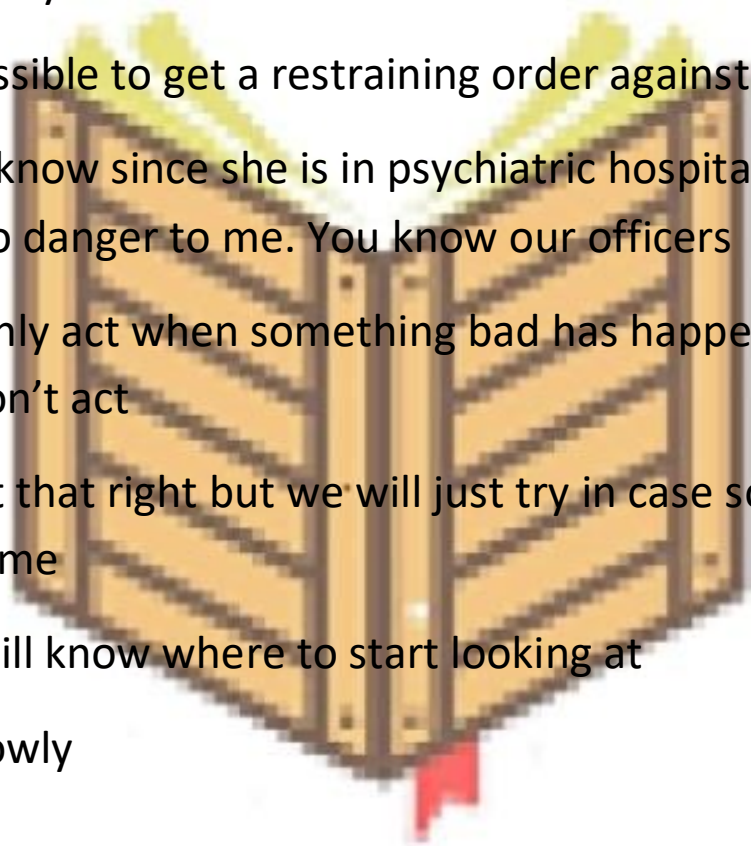
Me: I don't know since she is in psychiatric hospital they might say she is no danger to me. You know our officers

Her: They only act when something bad has happened before that they don't act

Me: You got that right but we will just try in case something happens to me

Her: They will know where to start looking at

I nodded slowly



NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER



My mother and I walked back in the house, she was holding my hand

Me: What would you say/do if I tell you that I am thinking on proposing to Buhle?

Her: Are you?

Me: You can't answer by asking me a question MaKhumalo

She took a deep breath

Her: I'd be happy it's every parent's dream to see their children happy and growing to be the best version of what they were/are...

Me: But?

Her: There's no but

Me: There's but and I want you to be honest with me

Her: Marriage: no child's play; it takes a real man to think about the next stage of a relationship and that stage is of husband and wife. You must really love her to be thinking about marriage when you've only been together for few months... Sit here

She helped me sit down

Me: I really love her MaKhumalo and I don't see myself with another woman but her, now more than ever I am sure about

our love. It's not easy to be with someone you know can die at any time, the trauma is unbearable and sometimes I feel like I've burden her with my situation but she is not even bothered. She is here with me knowing very well what might happened. So tell me, will I not be a fool to let a woman like that slip through my fingers?

Her: You'd be a fool. I like her too, she is well-mannered and she is not just beautiful she has brains as well. In her you've found a woman

Me: So, I have your blessings?

She held my hand

Her: You love her

Advertisement

that's what important. If she makes you happy, who am I to stand before you?

A corner of my mouth rose

Her: Are you blushing?

NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I sighed loudly and took my phone

I rang Tyson

Him: Hello

Me: Ty, am I disturbing you?

Him: I can talk. How can I help?

Me: I need help with contents of Section B under Strategic management; I am struggling with terms...

Him: Let me get my textbook

Me: Okay...

The door opened, Ayden stood at the door

Ayden: Shawty, are you not done? Dinner is ready

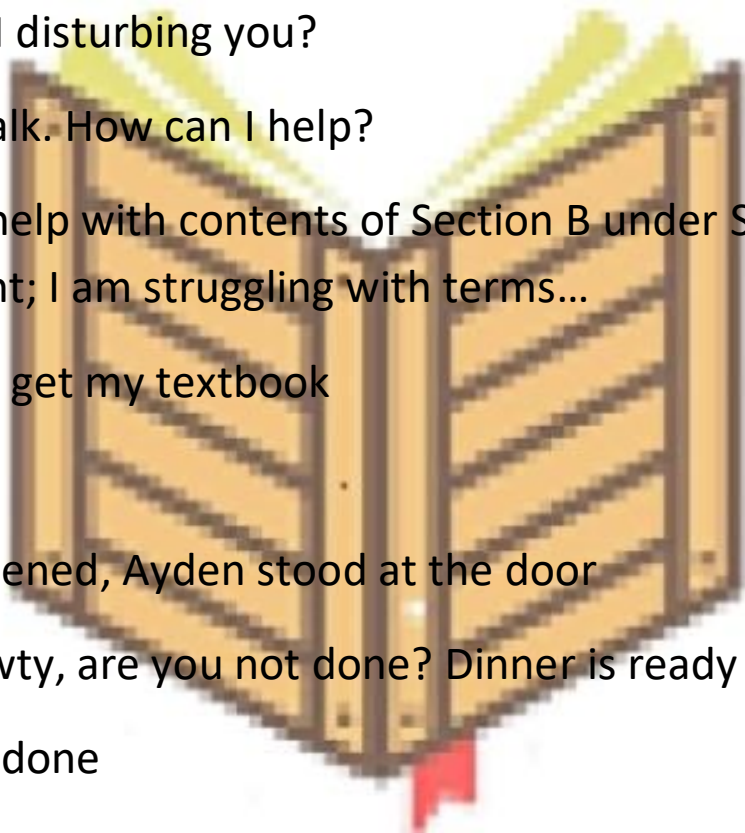
Me: Almost done

Ayden: You need to get some rest from the books, tomorrow you are writing and you need calm mind.

Me: I know Munchie, and I am just finishing up

Ayden: Okay mommy

I smiled at him



I put my phone on my ear again

Me: Sorry about that...

Ty: It's okay, so you are pregnant?

Me: Oh, okay. Yes I am pregnant

Him: Congratulations, I know with no doubt that you are going to make a great mother

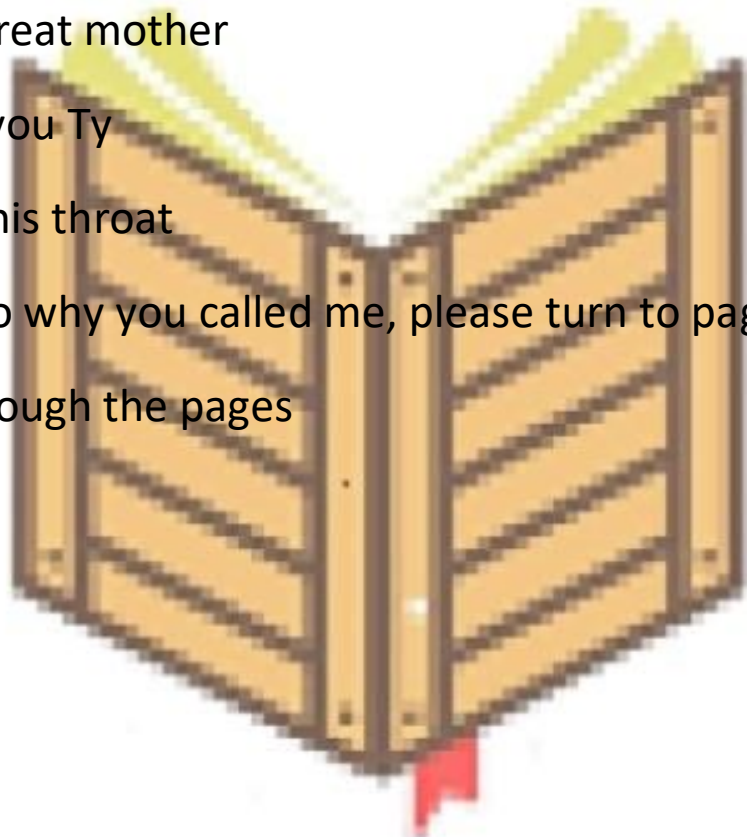
Me: Thank you Ty

He cleared his throat

Him: Back to why you called me, please turn to page 120

I flipped through the pages

AYDEN



As I finished setting the table, a knock came through the door

Me: Mimi

Her: Hey

Me: Please come in, Yara is still busy with her books. I can go and call her

Her: Sorry to just show up but I really need to talk with you. Let Yara be

Me: Okay...

We sat down

Her: Do you think you can be able to help me with legal matters?

Me: I am not following, please elaborate

Her: I need to get a restraining order against someone the problem is; that person is in psychiatric hospital so I am thinking the officers might not be convinced to grant me one. Seeing that she is not close to me but Ayden, she is very capable of doing anything if she has set her mind on it

Me: Are you in danger Mimi?

Her: Danger is a strong word

Me: You can do better than lie to me, I know when a person is lying

Her: Okay. Ethan's friend is obsessed with him and she feels I am the reason why he can't give her a chance in love. She is

determined to make me pay and I don't know what she is plotting right now. For all we know she is planning my death

Me: Are we talking about, what's her name? Zoe? Yara told me about her

Her: Yes, she is after me and she won't stop before she gets what she wants. She has already started...

Me: What do you want me to do?

Her: Use your connections to get me a restraining order against her

BUHLE

I was woken from my sleep by my mother's call

Me: Mama

She took a deep breath when she heard my voice

Ma: Yoh, Buhle! I am so happy to hear your voice my daughter

Me: Yini mama (What's wrong mom)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ma: Ngaba nephupho elibi (I had a horrible dream) I feel like something is wrong Buhle and I am worried

Me: Uyangithusa (You are scaring me)

Ma: Death is hovering around you. My gut tells me you or someone close to you is on the verge of death

Me: Mama, are you saying someone close to me is going to die?

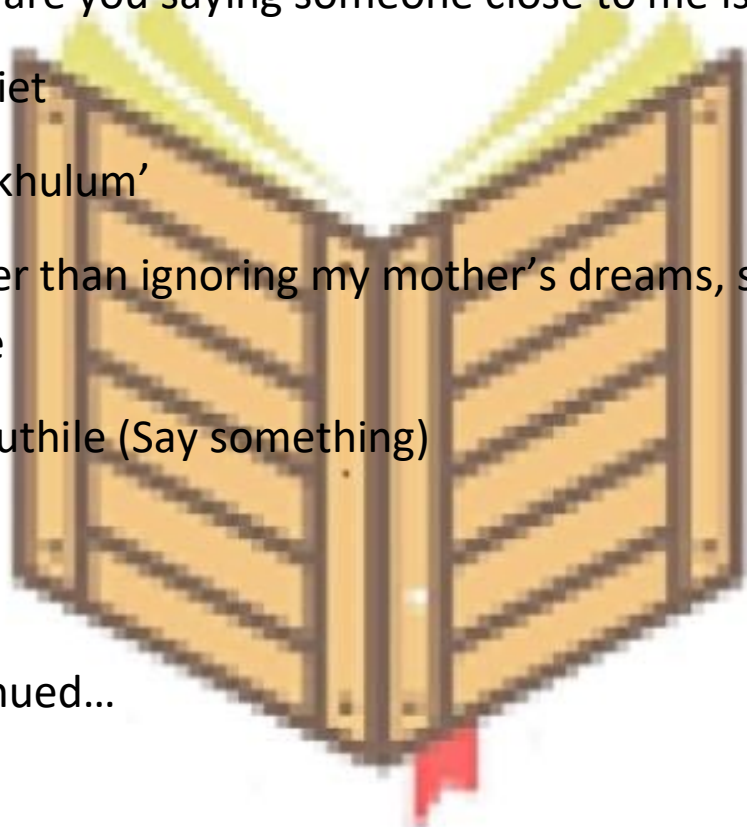
She kept quiet

Me: Mama khulum'

I know better than ignoring my mother's dreams, she has spiritual eye

Me: Isho okuthile (Say something)

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

BUHLE

It is one thing after the other before dawn Panther experienced severe headaches and seizure we had to rush him to the hospital, his surgery was supposed to be tomorrow but it was scheduled to today. The surgeon said we can't wait any longer; the cancer is starting to spread. This thing is starting to mess with my head; I am losing my senses every minute that pass. I feel exhausted

"Buhle" I raised my head, it was Panther's father

Him: I think you should go home and get some rest; you also need a shower to relax your body

Me: No, I won't leave before I am sure Lindo is fine

Him: There's nothing you can do for him

I kept quiet

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Okay, fine. Let's go to the canteen to get you something to eat. You need strength

I stood up

Me: He is going to be fine, right? He is going to win this battle?



I've been trying to ignore my mother's dream; I am scared it will come true. I can't lose Lindo, God really need to come through for us

Him: Cancer is no child's play, it needs a fighter and we both know Panther is a fighter. He is going to come out strong

Life is not bed of roses

Me: All I need is for him to come back to us

We bumped into Viper

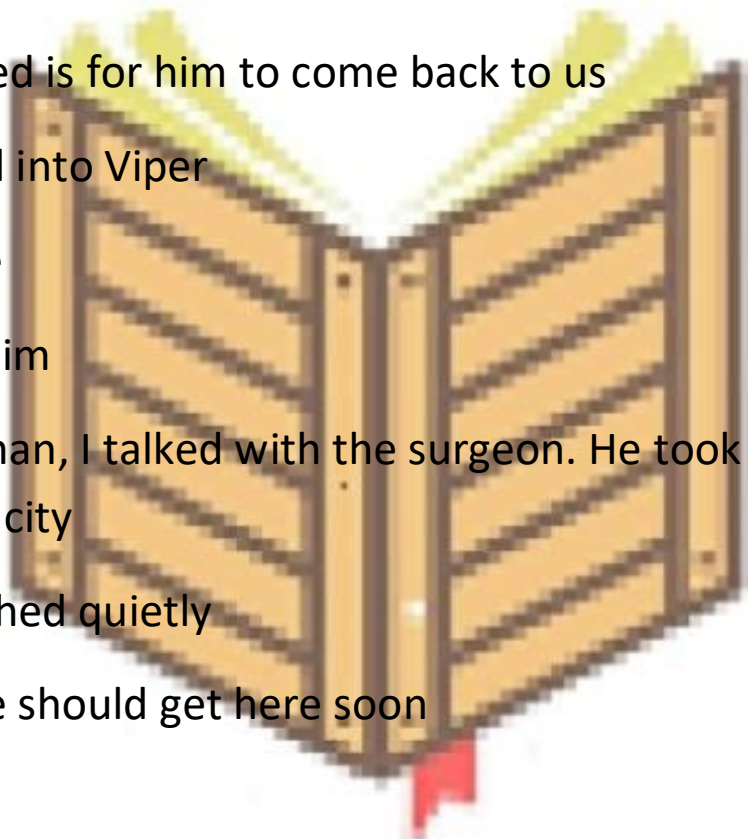
Viper: Buhle

I smiled at him

Viper: Old man, I talked with the surgeon. He took the morning flight to the city

Old man sighed quietly

Old man: He should get here soon



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

I am going crazy right now like literally. In few I am going to write my paper and trust me when I say my mind is not here. I wish I can reschedule but that's not possible. I am trying so hard to not put my mind on the matter at hand but it's very challenging. I can't afford to fail, somehow I need to focus and write. I've prepared for this paper

I felt a hand on my shoulder

Me: YV

Her: What's wrong with you? I've been calling your name, what am I getting? No attention!

Me: I didn't hear you, sorry

Her: You sure you are fine?

She asked worriedly

Me: Remember my brother Panther?

Her: The one who is...

Me: Yes, he was admitted at the hospital earlier this morning

She hugged me

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

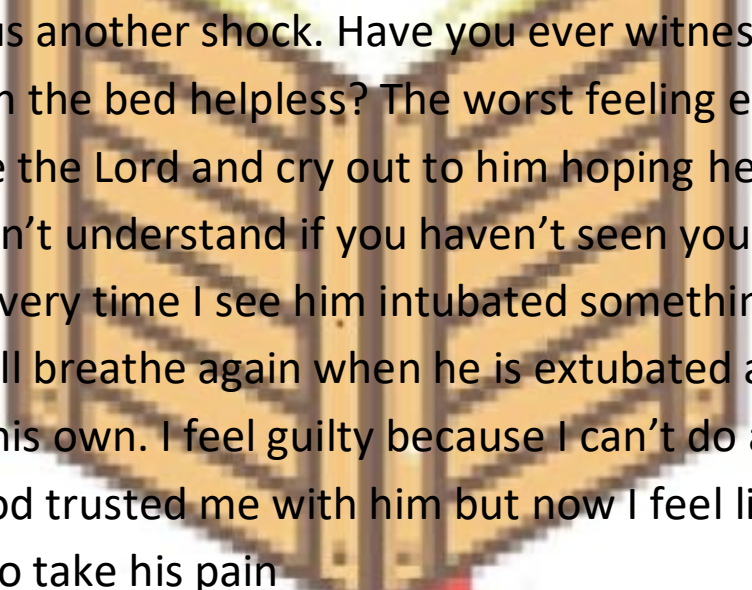
Her: I am sorry babe; I can't imagine what you are going through

Me: Thank you. I just want to write this paper and go straight to the hospital and be with everyone

Her: You know he will be fine, right?

Me: I know

MBALENHLE (MAKHUMALO)



Lindo gave us another shock. Have you ever witnessed your child lying on the bed helpless? The worst feeling ever! You kneel before the Lord and cry out to him hoping he will answer you. You won't understand if you haven't seen your child intubated. Every time I see him intubated something inside me crushes, I will breathe again when he is extubated and free to breathe on his own. I feel guilty because I can't do anything to help him, God trusted me with him but now I feel like I failed him. I wish to take his pain

Buhle: The pastor is on his way, I talked with him

Me: Thank you so much ntombi yam' we are lucky to have you in our family. You've shown me a side I never existed in you

Advertisement

and for that I'll forever be grateful

Her: I love your son and there's nothing I won't do for him

Me: It's evident enough that you love him

I looked at Lindo

Me: And he loves you to

The door swung open, the Pastor Mpilo stepped inside

I quickly stood up

Me: Thank you for coming again Pastor M

I wiped my tears

Pastor M: Don't mention it. Can I?

I nodded

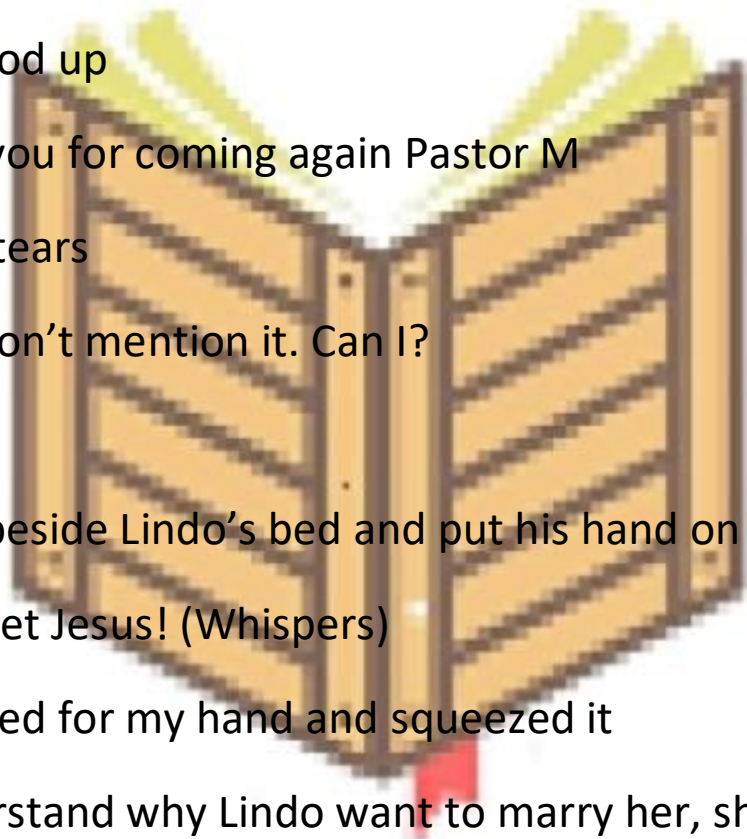
He walked beside Lindo's bed and put his hand on his forehead

Me: Oh sweet Jesus! (Whispers)

Buhle reached for my hand and squeezed it

Now I understand why Lindo want to marry her, she has been very supportive and I have to say it is very admirable for a young lady like her

Pastor M: Let us close our eyes... Lord we come before you and ask you be with this family and your child Lord. You said ask and we shall receive so Father we are asking, give the doctors the knowledge they need to help Lindo. Place your healing hand on



NOVELSGURU.COM

him and help him fight through this. His family needs him, shine your light upon him. I declare, it is done. Amen

We opened our eyes

Panther: Thank you Father, I needed that. And I believe Lord heard your prayers

His voice was so weak

YARA

I walked out of the Campus carrying my text books

Ayden was leaning against the car when he saw me he opened his arms for us

Him: Hey, how was the paper?

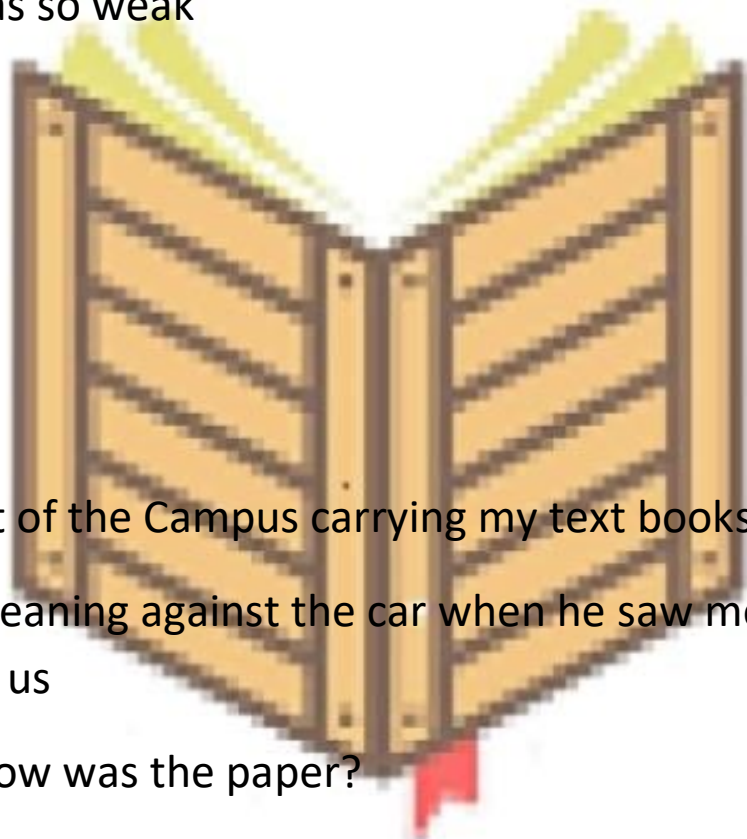
Me: I don't know but I did my best

Him: I trust you

He kissed my forehead

Me: Any news on my brother?

Him: No, I talked with Viper. They are waiting for the surgeon



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: So they are really going ahead with the surgery?

Him: They have to, if they don't, we can lose...

Me: Please don't say it. Let's go

He cupped my face

Him: No stress, remember?

Me: At this stage, is it possible?

ZOE

I was on a call with Leonard

Me: I trust you with this Leo

Him: In all the years you've know me, have I ever disappoint you?

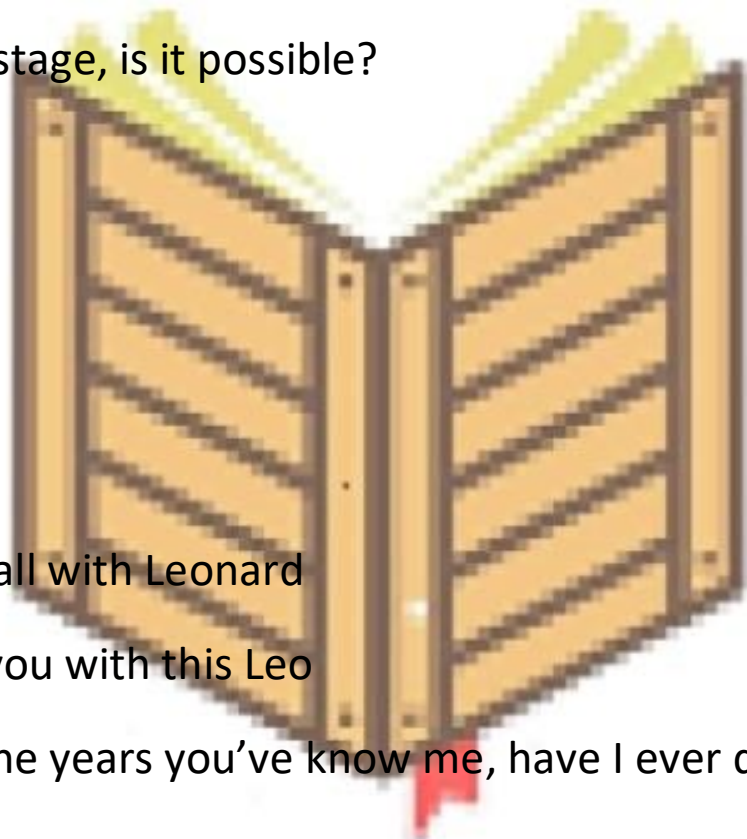
Me: No

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: Then stop questioning my capabilities

Me: Okay

Him: Quick question...



Me: Go ahead

Him: Are you sure about this? There's no going back from this

Me: Now who is playing mind games Leo? My word is my law

The door opened

Me: Let's talk later

I hung up

Mrs G: I see why you don't wanna come back home, you are getting comfortable in here

Me: It's time I take charge of my life, don't you think?

She placed the shopping bags on the bed

Mrs G: I brought this for you

Me: Thank you

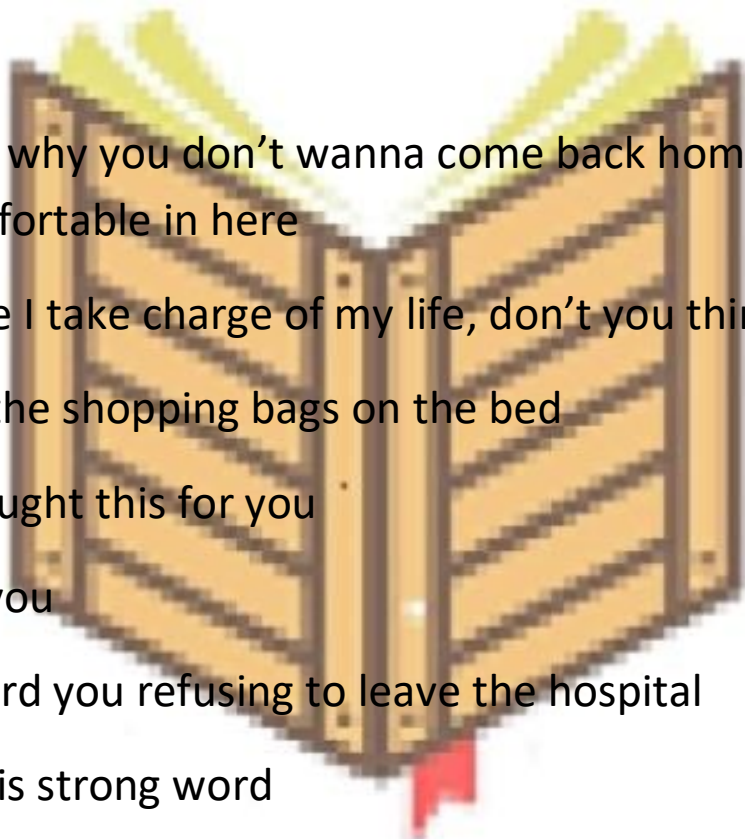
Mrs G: I heard you refusing to leave the hospital

Me: Refuse is strong word

Mrs G: Why?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I know you are surprised but can you at least give me the benefit of the doubt?



Mrs G: Do you really blame me? At first you didn't want anything to do with this place and now all of a sudden you are excited about this place

Me: Let's say I am trying to pick up the pieces

BUHLE

I sat beside Panther's bed quietly

They gave him sedatives but he should be awake before his surgery

(Message alert)

|I am coming to see you, I talked with Ayden and he said he will help me with protection order-Mimi|

I stood up and rang her

Me: When is he going to get one?

Her: He said he will get back to me but I convinced him. My gut tells me he will help me

Me: Thank Heavens!

NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...



## MIMI

I put my hand on my forehead, I feel like I am coming down with cold. The headache is also adding to the stress

I folded the clothes and put them inside the closet

“Mimi, have you spoken with Buhle?” My mother asked from the door

Me: I was just on a call with her

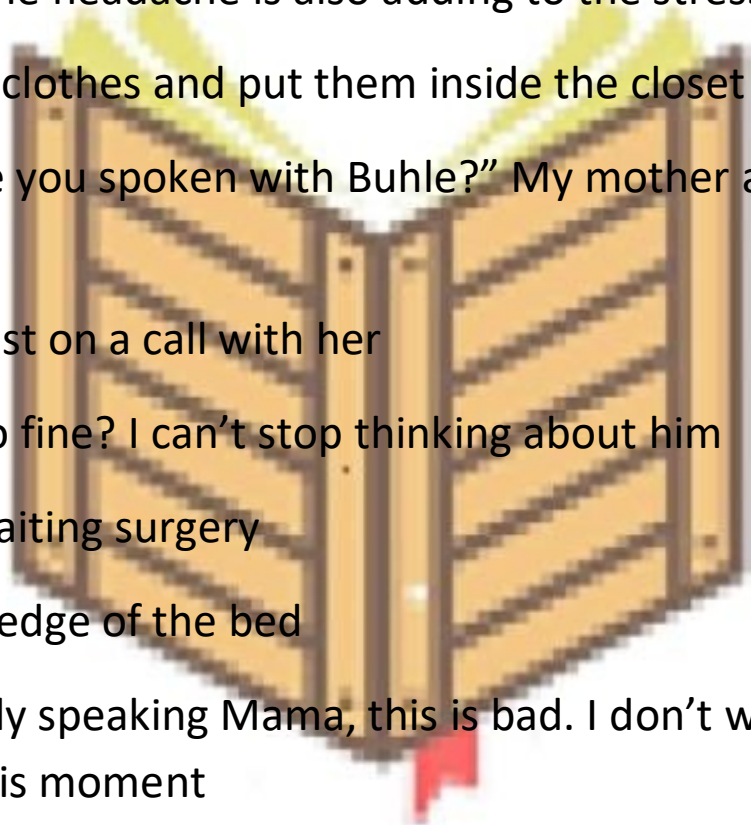
Her: Is Lindo fine? I can't stop thinking about him

Me: He is waiting surgery

I sat on the edge of the bed

Me: Honestly speaking Mama, this is bad. I don't wish to be his parent at this moment

Her: I don't know what I would do if something happened to you or Yara. You are my life and I pray to God to always protect you



SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I laid on the couch and picked the remote that was on the couch

“Mimsey, I am going out. Do you need something?”

Amelia asked

Me: I don't feel like cooking, you can order food for us

Her: When last did you cook?

I switched on the TV and muted the volume

(Door closes)

I turned my head

Me: It better not be your father because I swear I will strangle him today

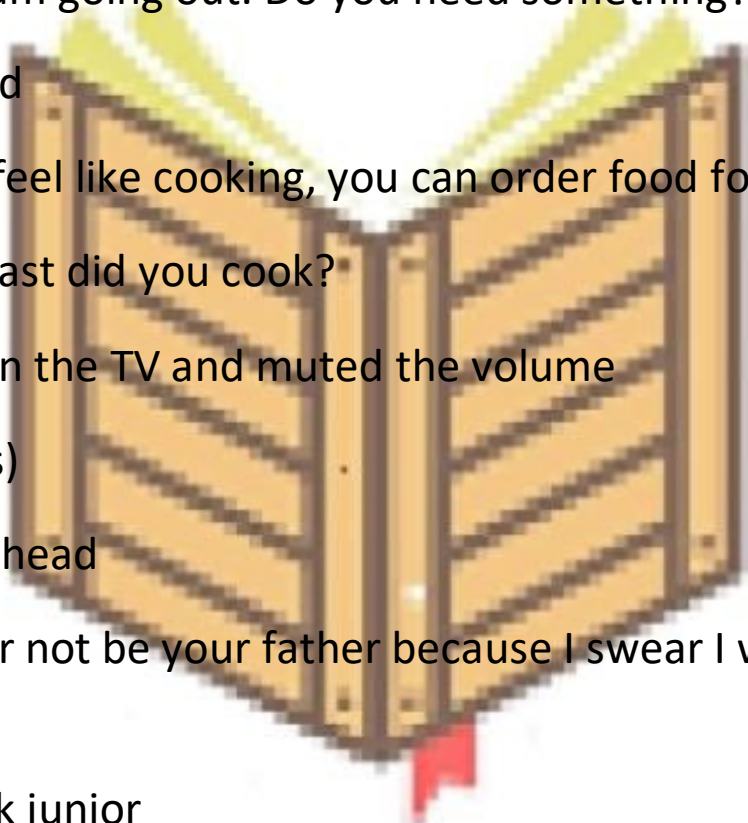
Her: It's Zack junior

Ayden: Who are you gossiping about?

Her: Your father

Him: Do I have a father?

He hugged Amelia



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Zack Tshivhase (Laughs) I was on my way out, bye

Him: Bye

Me: Don't forget (Shouts)

Ayden sat across me

Him: Mimsey

Me: What a lovely surprise

Him: I needed to get away from the hospital; you can never get use to the smell of medication

Me: Eish, how is Yara doing? And the family?

Him: You know her, she is trying. The Khumalo's are unbreakable; they are doing whatever they can to stay strong

Me: I admire Yara in so many levels, she is very strong, Give her any challenge she will tackle it

Him: But I feel this is becoming too much

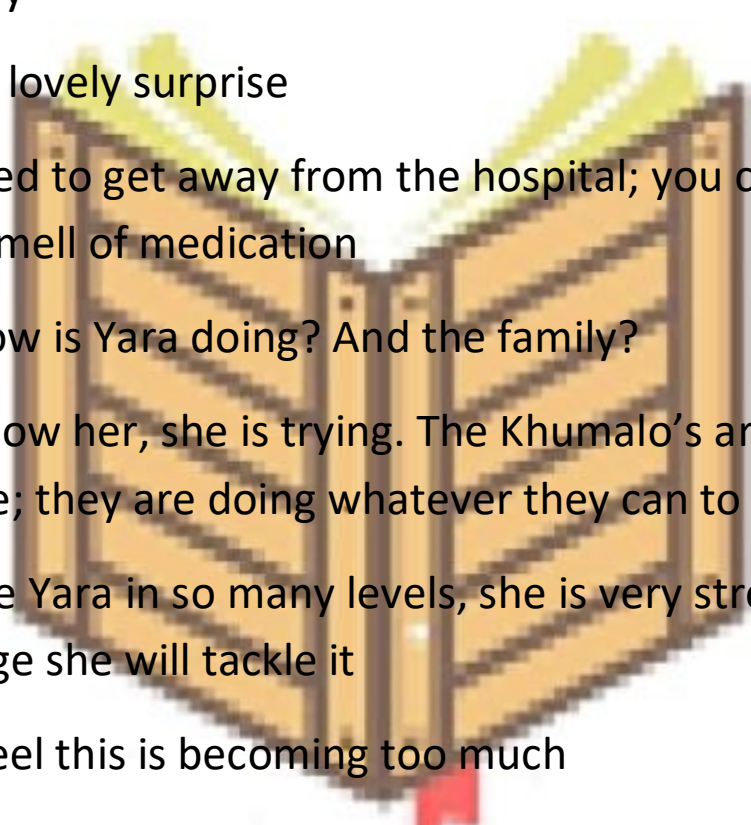
Me: Nothing is too much for her; you will say I told you

Him: I'd like to believe that

He crossed his arms over his chest

Him: Reason why I am here... I want you to call Uncle Petrous

Me: Okay...



Him: We need to pay damages to Masia family

Me: I've been thinking about that as well

Him: I don't want my child to be born before I pay the damages, I feel like it's very important for me to show respect to her family. Yara falling pregnant should have come last

Me: Asking for her hand in marriage should have been the first thing but don't worry we will solve this; I will call your uncle. He will be so excited

Him: You know him too wee

Me: And your father?

Him: I will call him myself

BUHLE



Hours later the surgeon arrived, it's now or never

Mimi held my hand

Her: You are not going to break down now, you are strong and this is nothing

Me: What if he dies? I am only realizing now how scared I am  
(Whispers)

She Put her finger on my lips

Her: Never and I mean never utter those words. Your man is going to come out strong and healthy

Me: I don't know Mimi

MaKhumalo stood at the door and waved at us

Me: Let's go

We walked up to her

MaKhumalo: Go and talk with him, you have to

I shook my head no

Mimi: You have to, go in there and talk with him. He needs you

Me: Okay

I closed the door behind me and pulled the chair

Me: Sthandwa

I caressed the back of his hand

Him: Why are you crying?

Me: I am scared



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Don't be. Whatever happens, I want you to know that I love you so much. I've never loved any girl the way I love you  
Buhle

His voice cracked

Me: Don't talk as if you are saying goodbye, Please Lindo

Him: I am just letting you know, I feel the need to

I felt my cheek warming with tears

The door opened

Advertisement

Yara stepped inside

Her: Hey

Me: Come... Yara is here

Her: Brother, you are going to be fine. We will be waiting for you

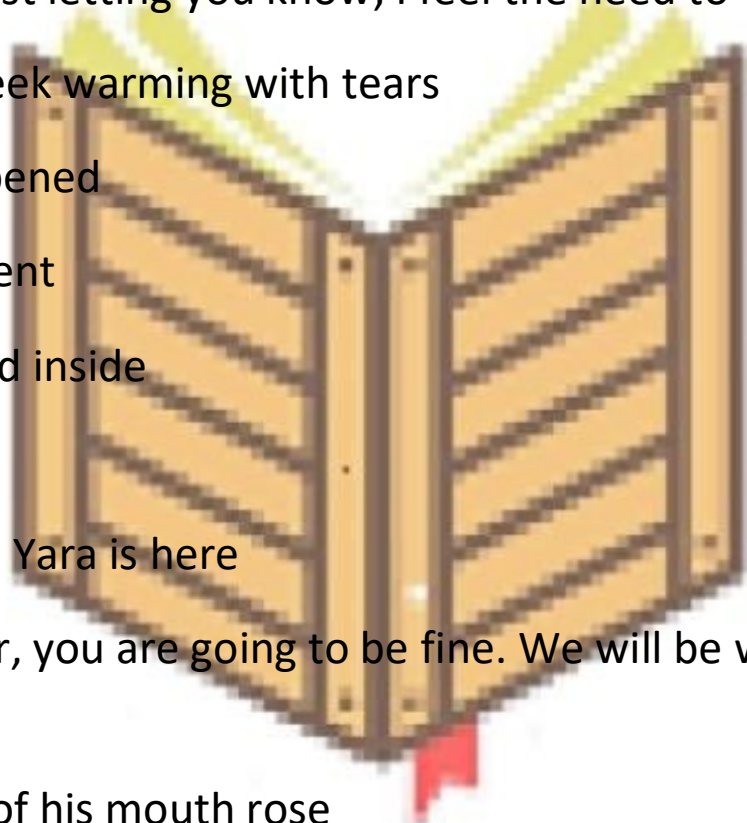
The corner of his mouth rose

Her: You have to Lindo, for everyone. You need to fight

She took his hand into hers

Her: For your nephew/niece

A tear escaped his eye



NOVELSGURL.COM

ZOE

I walked into the bathroom and locked the door

I rang Leo

Me: Are you set?

Him: Yes, she just arrived at the hospital

Me: Please make sure no one sees you; I don't want anything traced back to me

Him: I've already sorted the CCTV, they will suspect you but they will have no proof

Me: That's how I want it to be. And the video?

Him: The package must be arriving at the Station

I laughed softly

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: What about the trio? Do you know who they are?

Me: I've done my research and I know who The Unfazed are

Him: And you are not shaken?

Me: Not even a little

Him: Mh

Me: Don't call me, I will call you

Him: Noted

MBALENHLE (MA KHUMALO)

We watched Lindo wheeled to theatre

I held tight to Mzo

Him: Not in front of the kids

Me: It hurts Mzo, I am his mother. He shouldn't be going through this

Him: I know but we have to be strong

I shook my head **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Viper: Mama

I pulled him into my arms

Me: He is going to be fine son





MIMI

I walked Yara to the parking lot

Me: Baby daddy is not taking this well

Her: Not one bit

I hugged her

Me: Go home and rest, you need to rest

Her: I do... I love you

Me: I love you too butterfly

I waved at Ayden who was in the car

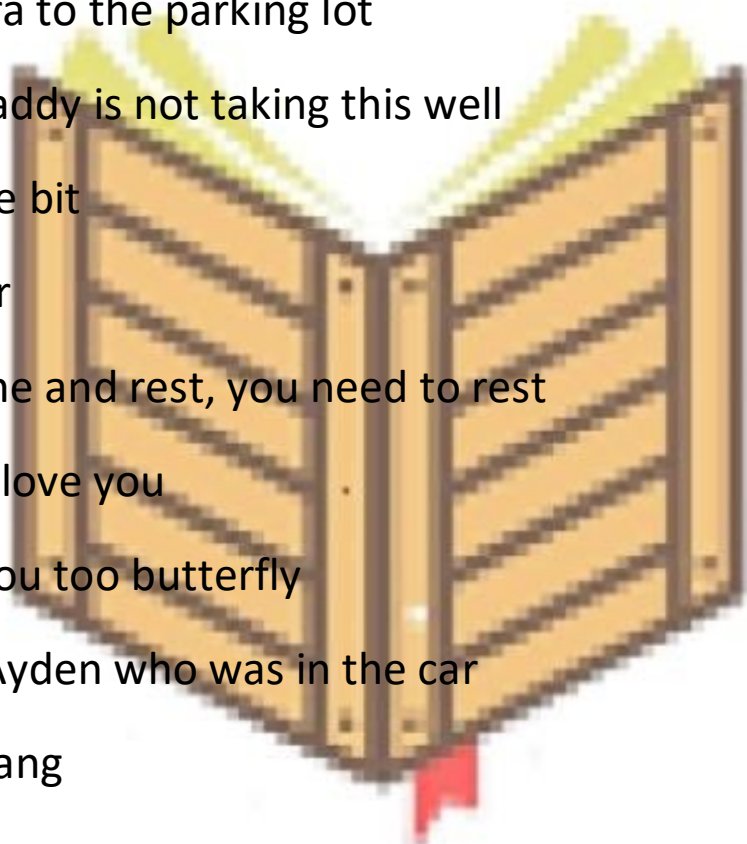
My phone rang

Me: Cuddles

Him: How is it going there?

Me: They just took him to the OR

Him: I know how it feels to see your loved ones in helpless position. Do you want me to come there?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No, I will come there. Let me just say goodbye to Buhle

Him: Okay, see you soon

I hung up

I shoved my phone in my pocket

Footsteps sounded behind me, I turned around

Him: Hello

Me: Can I help you?

He grabbed my arm and pressed a cloth on my nose. I fought him but it was waste of time, I am no match to him

This is not happening!

BUHLE



The surgery is going to take 3-5 hours; it's definitely going to be the longest hours of my life

I gave MaKhumalo bottle of water

Her: Thank you ntombi yam'

Me: You are welcome

She looked at me and not said a word

Her: Have you seen Craig?

Me: I last saw him with the nurse over the there

Her: Okay

I ran my eyes around and saw police officers talking with the receptionist

She pointed at us. For weird reasons fear crept in

Officer: Good day

MaKhumalo: Officers, can we help you?

MaKhumalo stood up

Officer 2: We are looking for Miss Bhengu

Me: This is she

Officer 1: Ma'am, you are under arrested for acting in unison in the murder of Arav Singh, you have every right to remain silent anything you say can and will be used against you in the court of law. You have every right for attorney if you can't afford one state will provide one for you

MaKhumalo: What is going on here?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Mama, this is not what it looks like. Officer, I didn't do anything

He roughly turned me around and hand cuffed me

Viper ran to us when he saw what was happening

Him: What the hell is going on here? Hey, Officers!

Officer 2: Let us do our job

The Officer pushed me forward

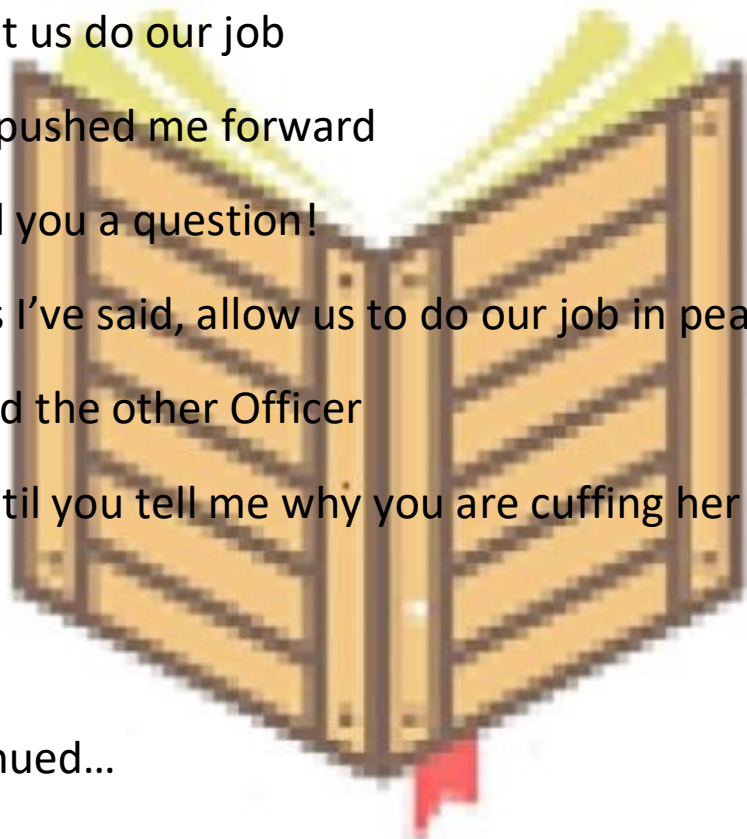
Him: I asked you a question!

Officer 2: As I've said, allow us to do our job in peace

Viper pushed the other Officer

Him: Not until you tell me why you are cuffing her

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

BUHLE

Things are not looking good for me or Mimi. Zoe sent the video to the authorities and we are in deep ish. I shouldn't be here! I should be by Lindo's side. Oh my word, Lindo! I wonder how the surgery is going or if they are done already. Please Father, give him strength to fight. He has to win this battle

Officer Shenge dropped the pen on the table and fixed his eyes on me

Officer S: We can do this the whole night if you like

Me: I have nothing to say without my Lawyer

Where is Viper with the damn lawyer? In fact the Lawyer is the least of my worries, where is Mimi? Why wasn't she present when I was getting arrested?

Officer S: Miss Bhengu, I've already shown you the video, even the blind can see what really happened. So let's not waste each other's time and tell me what I need to know

I kept quiet

Officer S: You wanna play it like that?

He stood up

Officer S: Things are already hot for the both of you that is why Miss Masia decided to run

He nodded repeatedly

Me: That's insane; Mimi would never do something of that sort. She is anything but a coward

Him: Yet I don't see her here. Or is she here? Huh, tell me

Me: There's explanation for all of this

Officer S: You said she was with you at the hospital right? So, I am assuming she saw us and decided to escape. That's my theory

Me: Your theory is wrong. Absurd!

"Enough with questions Shenge leave my client alone" I ran my eyes at the door

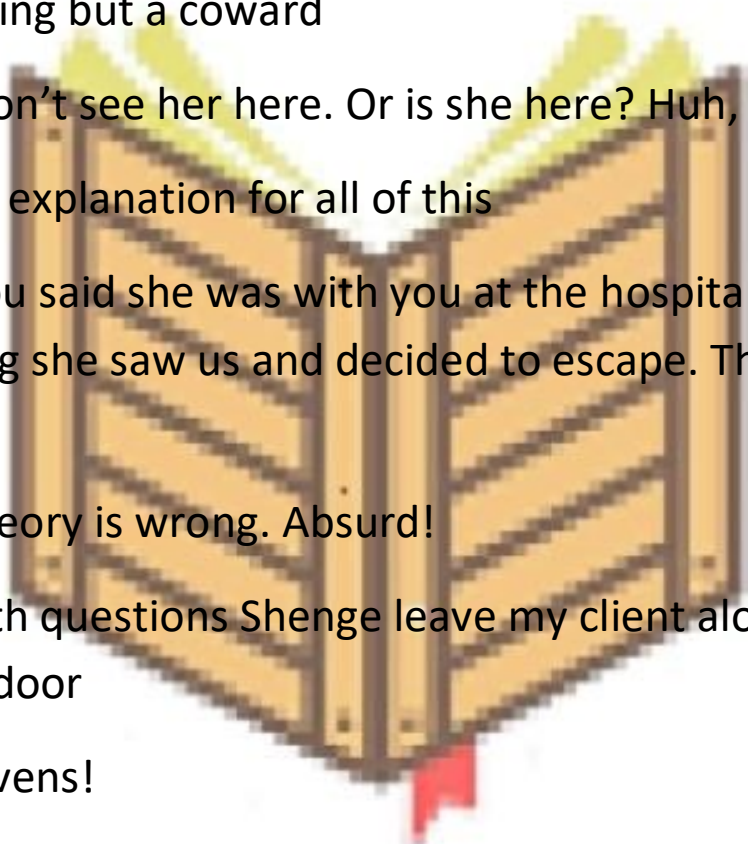
Thanks Heavens!

Officer S: Mr Smith, your client is charged and I have every right to question her

Mr S: In my presence! Miss Bhengu, don't say anything

Mr Smith looked at the Officer

It's going to be a long night



NOVELSGURU.COM

ETHAN

I've been waiting for Mimi for the past two hours and there's no sign of her

When I called her again her phone was on voicemail, all of this is weird. At first it kept on ringing unanswered but now it's off, her phone is always on no matter what

"Daddy" Lex shook me

Her: Where is Aunty Mimi? We've been waiting for her

Me: That's what I'd like to know

Let me call Buhle maybe she is still at the hospital

YARA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I walked out of the shower and wrapped the towel around my body. I slipped on slippers and made my way to the lounge

Me: I am making tea, should I make a cup for you?

Ayden asked from the kitchen

Me: yes, thank you

I laid on the couch and unlocked my phone

If there's one place I should be at right now that place would be the hospital

Him: Here's your tea

Me: Thank you

I took the cup from his hand

Me: I can't stop thinking about my brother

Him: Drink your tea and calm down

My phone rang on my hand

Me: Brother

Viper: Where is Mimi?

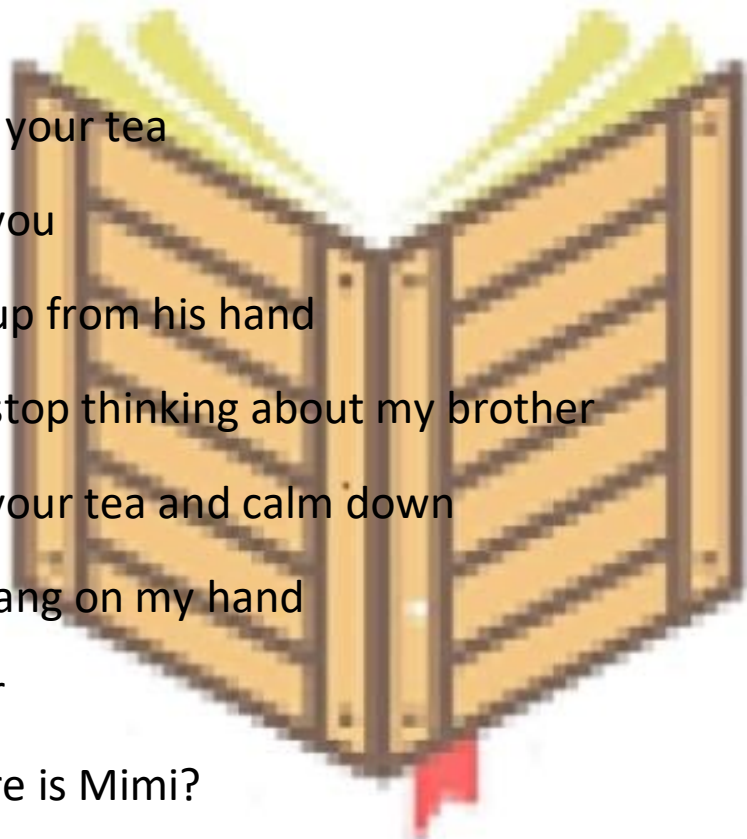
Me: At the hospital

Him: No she is not. We last saw her with you, it's been hours

Me: It can't be. Ayden and I left her in the parking lot. Right

Advertisement

Munchie?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Ayden nodded

Him: Buhle is arrested and Mimi is nowhere to be found

Me: What are you saying Viper? Okay, you know what? We are coming there

I hung up and stood up

Me: Mimi is missing, Buhle is arrested

Ayden raised his eyebrow at me

Him: How is that possible?

Me: I don't know. Let me go and put on something warm, please call my mother and check if Mimi is not at home

ELISA

I picked the mat and threw it inside the basin

My phone vibrated on the table... I dried my hands and reached for it

Me: Hello

Him: Mama, it's Ayden



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: is Yara fine?

Him: Yara is fine

I sighed in relief

Him: But we are not sure if Mimi is, is she at home?

Me: No, she since left in the afternoon she hasn't returned.  
Where is my daughter? Did something happen to her?

Him: We don't know, Yara and I last saw her at the hospital but  
now they are saying she never made it inside after we left

I staggered and put my hand on my chest

Me: Have you spoken with Ethan? She might be at his place

Him: He is the one who called when he realised she hasn't  
arrived after they made plans. And now her phone is off

Me: Oh Murena! Ndi mini zwezwi? (God, what is this?)

Him: Don't stress yourself yet, we will try to find out what  
happened to her

NOVELSGURU.COM

PANTHER

The surgery was a success the neurosurgeon got the whole tumour. It was the worst five hours of my life; a part of me didn't want to believe that I'll make it out alive. I always heard about complications and I was scared it would happen to me. But God lowered his hand and I made it out alive.

Unfortunately the doctors are still not sure if losing my sight is permanent or reversible maybe it was in my fate to end up like this. Most important is the fact that I am alive and tumour free. I just need 4-8 weeks to fully recover from surgery. After that none of this would be remembered

MaKhumalo: You have no idea how happy I am to see you son. I was so scared

Me: It's all over now MaKhumalo

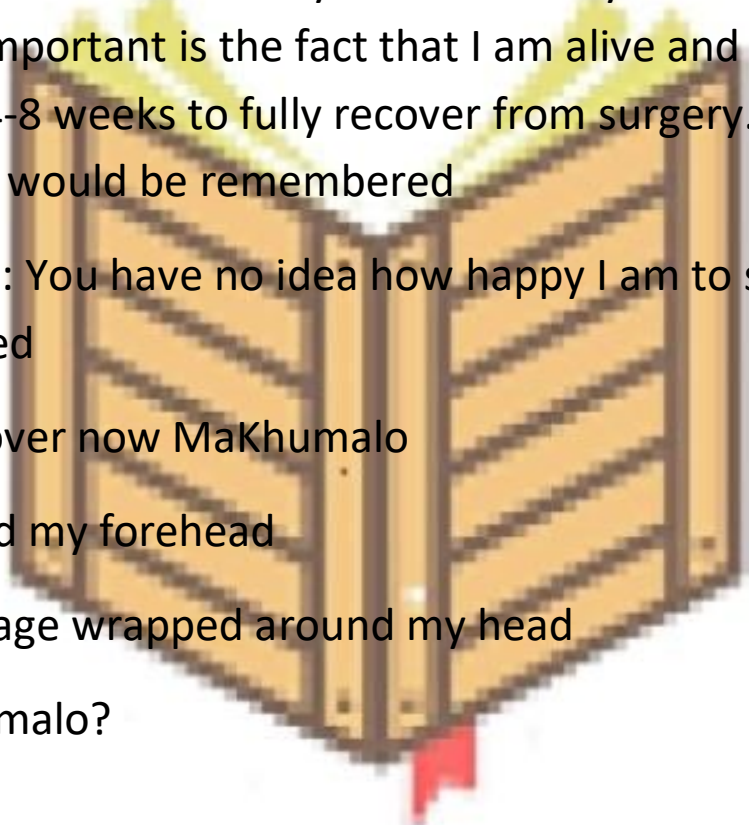
She caressed my forehead

I have bandage wrapped around my head

Me: MaKhumalo?

Her: Mh

Me: Where is Buhle? I thought she'd be the first person to come and see me. She was very sad and nervous when I went to surgery and she promised to wait until I come out. Now, where is she? Or she is busy making herself pretty for her blind man?



Her: Eish son. How do I say this?

Me: Say what?

I asked worriedly

The door opened before she could utter another word

Voice: He is awake?

My father asked

Me: Old man, what is going on? Where is Buhle?

Her: You think we should tell him?

Me: Tell me what!

I tried to get up

Her: Lindo, stop it! You'll hurt yourself

Old man: Your mother is right

Me: I am getting pissed right now because you are both going in circles. Where is she?

Old man: She is arrested

I chuckled softly

Me: Arrested for what?

Old man: For being a witness in a murder but kept quiet about it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's bull!

I stripped the drip

Her: Lindo, you need to calm down. Your brother is doing everything he can to help her

Me: I need to go and see her

Old man: That's crazy!

Me: I can't stay here and nothing! I hate the fact that I can't help her, I can't help her! I am blind and can't help my woman

I half yelled

Her: Take a deep breathe son

ELISA

I stood at the stoep and rang Mimi again

"The number you've dialled..." I hung up and sniffed

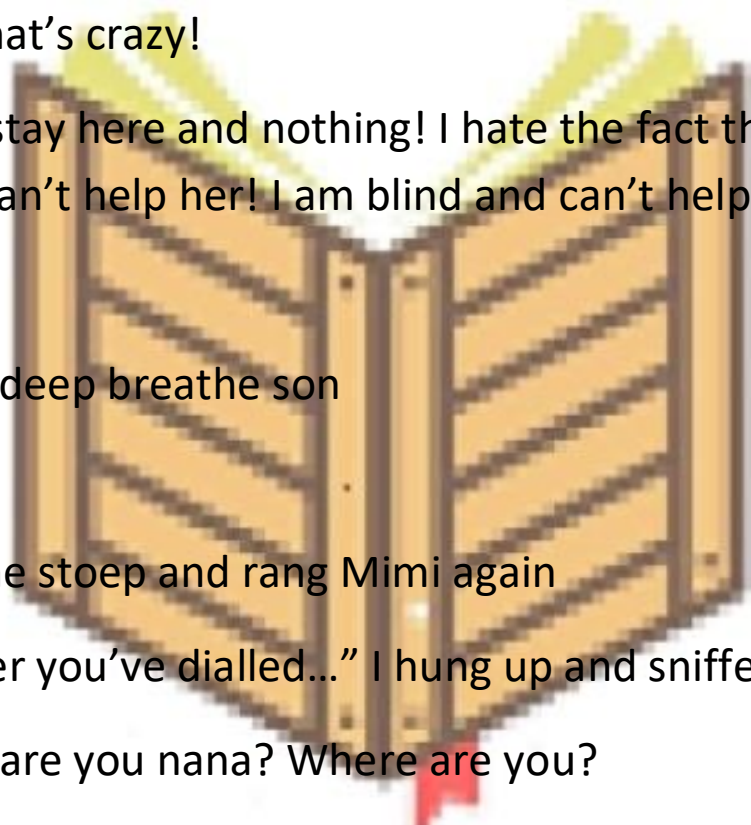
Me: Where are you nana? Where are you?

I took a deep breath and bend down

I suddenly felt an intense feeling

Me: Why do I feel like I'll never see my daughter? (Whispers)

To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I spent the night at my mother's, she was not in a good state last night and I couldn't leave her alone. We still don't have any trace of Mimi, her phone is still off. It's unlike Mimi to just disappear without saying a thing, something is not adding up here. But what are we missing?

I stood at the door and looked at my mother

Me: Are you done?

We are going to the Police Station to report a missing person; at this stage we are not sure if she is missing or oh God, what am I saying? She is missing!

Her: I am coming

Now I starting to question God's existence, this is becoming too much to handle. Where do we start to solve this puzzle? No, man! We've dealt with too much drama, we also deserve break

I stepped farther into the bedroom

Me: Talk with me Mama

She stared into my eyes, tears were threatening to fall

Her: Where is she? Are they treating her well or feeding her? I know it's been few hours but I can't stop but wonder

Me: I am trying so hard to not think about it Mama

Her: Who could do something like this to our family? We don't even have money for that matter... I just want my baby girl to come back home unharmed Yara

Me: She will come back to us Mama; we will not rest until Mimi is back to us

Her: Yoh! I can't (Crying)

Me: Mama

I brought her in between my arms

MIMI

I slowly opened my eyes but quickly shut them close. The light in the room was too bright

Me: Where am I? And how did I get here?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I ran my eyes around and I wasn't familiar with the room, my legs and hands were tied to the bed. I then remembered what happened at the parking lot...

Me: Hello! Can anyone hear me! Hello! (Shouting)

I tried to untie myself but it was impossible

I rolled and fell on the floor resulting to hitting my head against the drawer

Me: Ouch

For how long have I been here? Was I drugged? What the hell is going on and where am i?

Me: Someone help me! Please!

I laid on the floor helpless and closed my eyes

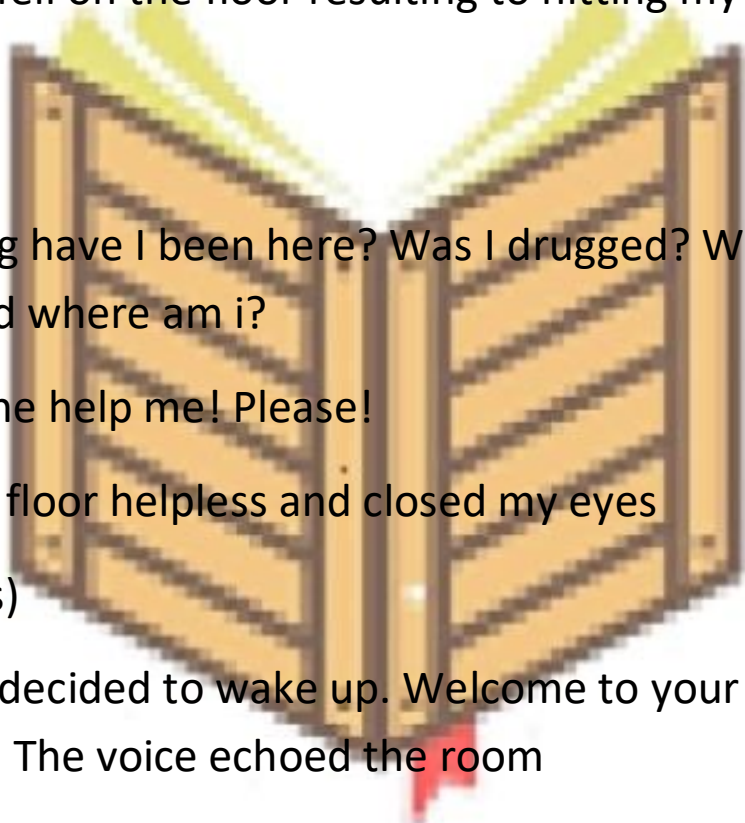
(Door opens)

"You finally decided to wake up. Welcome to your new home Miss Masia" The voice echoed the room

I slowly raised my head and gasped... I was surprised to see a white guy; he stood before me and buried his hands deep in his pockets. He was wearing a vest exposing the ink on his body

Me: Who are you?

He crouched down and fixed him eyes on me



NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: Would you like something to eat?

Me: I don't want your food; get me the hell out of this place!

He chuckled softly

Him: You will soon drop that attitude, I am patient

Me: Zoe Griffins sent you, right? How much did she pay you?  
Tell me!

He ran the back of his finger on my face and bit his lower lip

Him: In here, we talk less. Okay, pretty girl?

ETHAN

I stepped inside the Griffins resident and greeted the guard

Once I was inside my rage shot through the roof, I have no doubt that Zoe kidnapped Mimi. Question is; how did she do it?

Mr and Mrs Griffins will have to tell me, there must be something!

I knocked on the door and waited

Mrs G: Ethan, what a lovely surprise (Smiles)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I wish I could say the same

Her face dropped on the floor

Mrs G: Please come in

I followed her

Mrs G: Is everything fine?

Me: No! Where is Zoe?

Mrs G: Is that a trick question? You know where she is...

Me: She hasn't left the psychiatric hospital?

Mrs G: No, I was with her yesterday. What is going on with you?

Me: I am not going to sugar-coat words; your daughter kidnapped my partner...

She looked at me ridiculously

Mrs G: Ethan, I am not going to allow you to come in my house and insult me, let alone my daughter. You are talking nonsense

Me: You are also not going to stand here and pretend as if your daughter is not capable of doing this, she has Mimi and we both know it. Or are you in cahoots?

Mr Griffins descended the stairs

Mr G: What's with the commotion? I could hear you from my room

Mrs G: Ask him. He is accusing our daughter of kidnapping his partner, can you imagine?

Me: Am I wrong?

Mr G: If you have nothing to say please leave my house Ethan because I am not going to let you speak ill of my daughter. Yes, she has issues but she is not capable of harming someone

Me: Mr Griffins

Advertisement

are you really going to stand before me and believe the words coming out of your mouth? You forgot what you told me about Zoe, mh Mrs G?

I turned and looked at Mrs G

Mrs G: I didn't tell you anything and stop harassing us, or we will be forced to call the police

Me: Okay fine, I will leave. But let me tell you this, if something happens to my partner I am going to make sure your daughter rot in jail! Mark my words, this is far from over. I always thought we were family but after today, we no longer have any kind of relation

BUHLE

This is a nightmare I wish to wake up from. They didn't let me go so I spent the night in jail, I slept in a cold and dingy cell

My emotions are all over the place. They haven't allowed me to make a simple phone call, a damn call. I don't know if Mimi is found or how Panther is doing, unfortunately Viper couldn't come last night. So I am sitting here not knowing the real reason why he didn't come, what if the surgery was unsuccessful and he didn't have the guts to come and face me... This is torture!

"Bhengu" An officer opened my cell

Officer: Your lawyer is here to see you

I stood up and followed him

Me: When am I going to be allowed to make a phone call?

Officer: You are in no position to make demands. Get inside and stop wasting my time, you are not that important

Mr Smith came with Viper

Me: Viper how is Lindo? Is he okay?

Viper: Calm down, yes Lindo is fine and the surgery was a success. They removed the tumour, he is tumour free...

Me: Are you being serious?

He nodded repeatedly

Me: Thank Heavens! I was so worried, how is he now? And, his sight?

Viper: Forgive me for not coming last night; a lot was going on at once. He is fine but his sight is still not back

I sat on the chair

Me: But, I thought...

I sighed loudly

Me: For how long are they gonna keep me here, I need to see him. Please do something

Mr S: It's hard to tell especially now that Mimi is nowhere to be found. They think you are working together to defy the law

Me: Mimi is really missing?

Viper: She is, we still don't know where she is or what happened to her

I buried my face between my hands



NOVELSGURU.COM

YOLANDA GRIFFINS

I glanced down at Zoe

As much as I wanna believe she has nothing to do with Mimi's disappearance another part of me think she did it. You can't put anything past her

Her: I can't believe you are accusing me of this act. Like really mom?

She walked to the window and crossed her arms

Me: Looked at me and avow that you have nothing to do with Mimi's disappearance, Zoe

She kept her gaze outside the window

Her: Me being here don't mean anything to you, right? You will always bring my past at any given chance...

I grabbed her arm

Me: Zoe Griffins?

Her: I didn't kidnap Mimi! Where am I gonna find time to plot against her? Tell me! I am only allowed to have one visitor a

day and they list everyone who come and visit me. So mommy, go and check who came and visit me maybe you will believe me. Also ask for footages...

I let go of her arm

Her: You will also see that the same Mimi you are questioning me about came here last week and attack me

Me: Het sy gedoen? En, waarom het jy my dit nie gese nie? (She did what? And, why didn't you tell me?)

Her: Omdat ek so hard probeer om vir almal te wys dat ek verander het (Because I am trying so hard to show everyone that I've changed)

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

YARA

Exactly at 11 o'clock we were in Police Station and as usual they were asking us questions that are irrelevant

Detective Le Roux: Do you any enemies? Angry ex-boyfriend...?

Me: No, she did not

Detective Le Roux: When last did you see or talk with her?

Me: My boyfriend and I were the last people to see her; she accompanied me to the car. I left her at the parking lot

Detective Le Roux: How is your relationship with your sister? Were you guys on good terms?

Me: Unbelievable!

Detective Le Roux: You need to work with us here; I am trying to look in all angles

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ma: Detective, we've told you everything that we know there's nothing we didn't tell you. Go to the hospital and check the CCTV and stop insinuating things!

Detective Le Roux: My team is already there, I am hoping to get a lead that is going to help us



The door opened, Ethan walked in

Detective Le Roux: Sorry but we are in the middle of something here. Please, wait outside

Me: He is family

Ethan: Do you guys have any lead? 15 hours has passed already and there's no sign of my partner

Ma: Nothing, they are just asking us questions. They don't realise how this situation is affecting all of us, we are dead worried!

Ethan: There's only one person who know where Mimi is and that person is Zoe Griffins

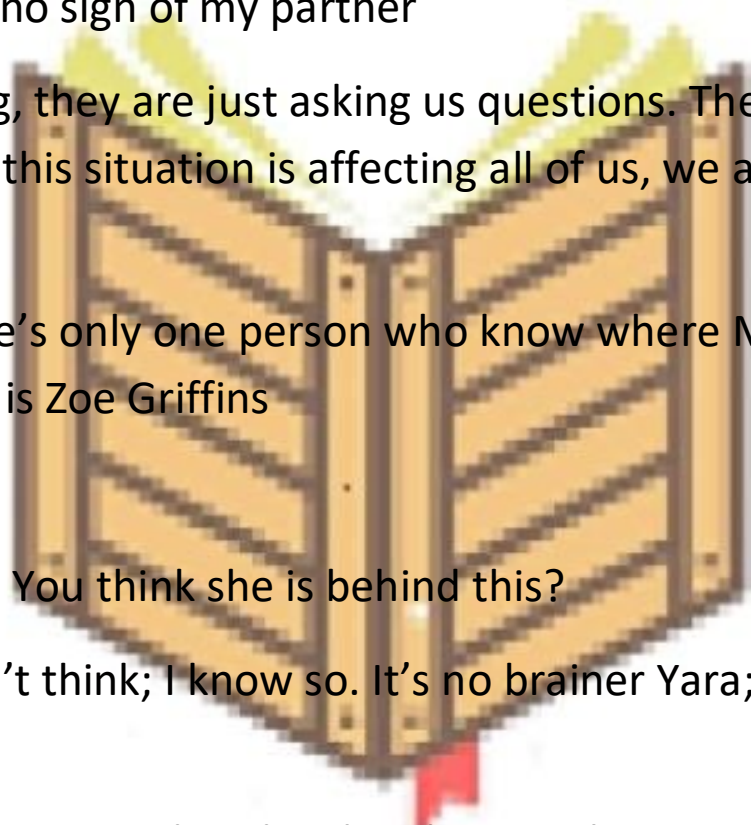
I stood up

Me: What!?! You think she is behind this?

Ethan: I don't think; I know so. It's no brainer Yara; she is out to get her

Detective Le Roux: Okay, level with me. Who is Zoe Griffins and why are you suspecting her?

MIMI



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was sitting in the corner hugging my legs

I am starting to think I am in abandoned house as a result I can't hear any sound of cars or people passing by. I am trying so hard to be strong, if I break down now I will be giving my kidnapper pleasure to torture me. I have no doubt Zoe is behind this but she went too far to be honest

The door opened

"I've made food for you" I kept quiet and buried my face between my arms

Him: I am talking with you, didn't you hear me?

He roughly grabbed my arm

Me: Let go of me!

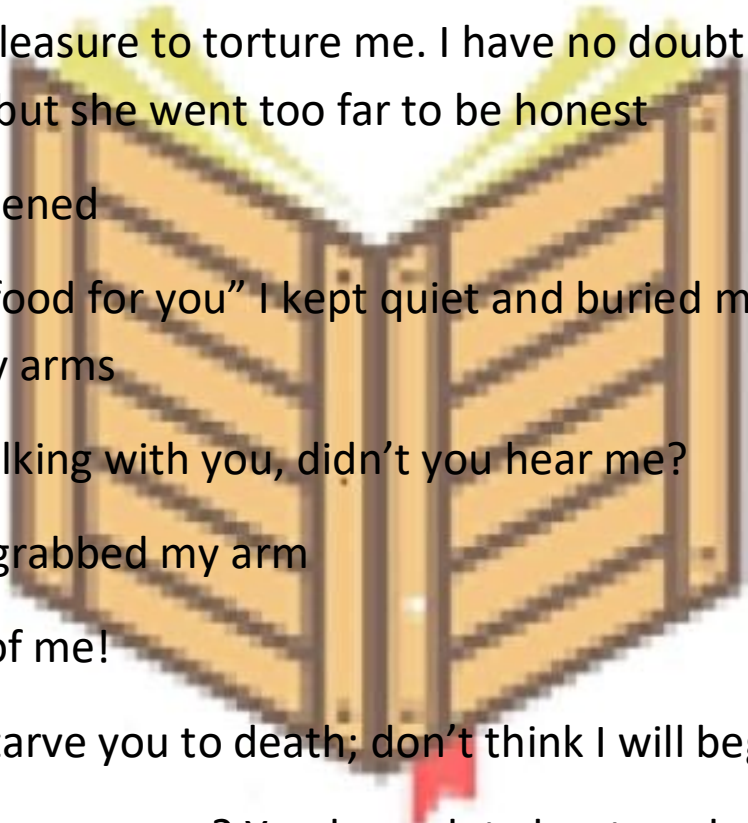
Him: i will starve you to death; don't think I will beg you

Me: What's your name? You know lot about me but I know absolutely nothing about you

He let go of my hand

Him: Leonard

Me: Are you related to Zoe? I can see the resemblance



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Stop asking me questions and this is the last time I am going to say that to you

Me: If you let me go I swear I will not tell anyone that you abducted me. I promise!

ZOE



I rested my arms on the pillow that was on my lap

Me: I want you to take care of her until I say otherwise

Him: You don't have to worry about anything; she will be taken care of

Me: Let me talk with her

Him: I think she is taking a bath

Me: Okay, I'll talk with her later

NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up

I slid the cell phone under the bed

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

I got up from the bed

Me: Miss Peterson

Miss P: You have a visitor

Me: Twice a day? Am I not popular today? Let them in

Miss P: In the garden

I slipped on my shoes and put on my jersey

I can take a wild guess of who is here; it's either the cops or Ethan

Miss P: You can't stay away from trouble, can you?

Me: I don't know about that

Bingo! Police officers!

Officer: Good day Miss Griffins

Me: Hello

Voice: Detective Le Roux

He extended his hand for a handshake

Detective Le Roux: I would like to ask you questions about Miss Masia

Me: Okay, I am all ears

I sat down and fixed my eyes on him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Detective Le Roux: When last did you talk with her?

Me: Last week, I think. Or am I wrong?

I looked at Miss P

Miss P: She is right

Detective Le Roux: We like to believe a fight broke out between the two of you

Me: Correction, she attacked me

Detective Le Roux: Obviously she did that with reason, or not?

Me: The thing is Officer, Miss Masia and I never got along because of a man. Her boyfriend is my friend and she has an impression that I am in love with her man

Detective Le Roux: Are you, because that would explain why you'd want her to disappear

I chuckled softly

Me: No, I don't. It was just a silly crush of which I apologized for, Ethan received my letter. You can ask him...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Detective Le Roux: Mh

Me: Did you say disappear? Miss Masia is missing?

Detective Le Roux: Yes ma'am, she is

He stood up

Detective Le Roux: That would be all for now. Thank you for your time

MIMI

I got out of the bath tub and reached for the towel on the hanger. I dried my hair and applied lotion

A dress, bra and underwear were laid nicely on the bed. I wasn't alarmed by Leo's threats earlier on because I know Zoe won't let him to kill me-and that is an advantage to me

(Door opens)

Me: What the hell? I am getting dressed

Leo: Make it snappy

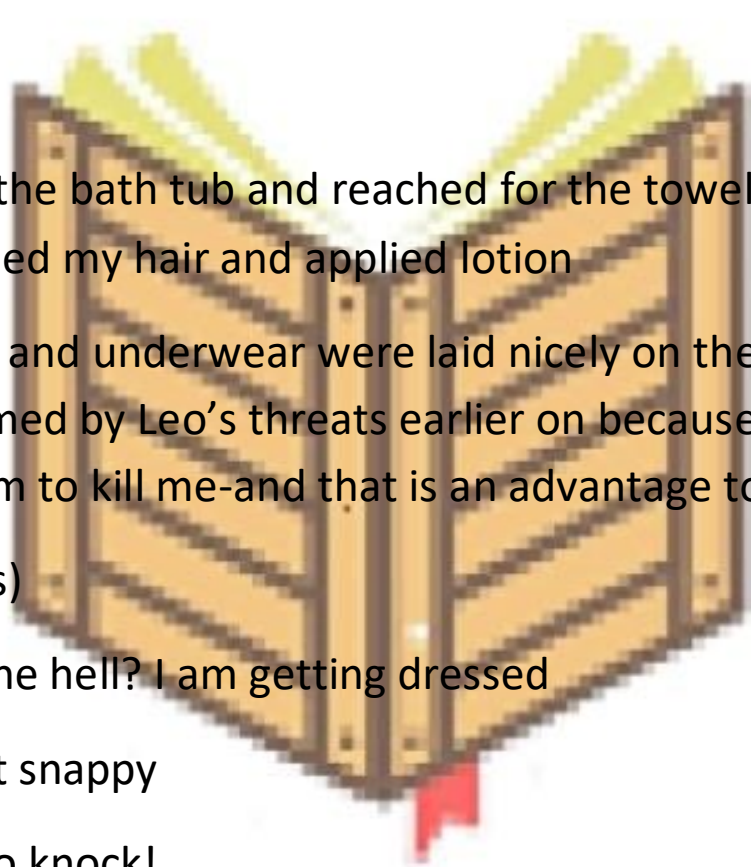
Me: Learn to knock!

He closed the door

I have to find a way to get out of this place

Advertisement

I don't know how but I have to! I won't be caged in here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You just need to think Mimi. There has to be something  
Everyone has weakness and I need to find Leo and Zoe's  
weakness. I don't want to imagine what my family is going  
through right now, Yara and my mother must be dead worried.  
Ethan is probably going crazy

Minutes later the door opened, I was now curled up under the  
duvet

Him: I told you to come down after taking a bath

Me: I have to business there

He placed a laptop before me and video call someone

Me: What's this?

He sat on the bed

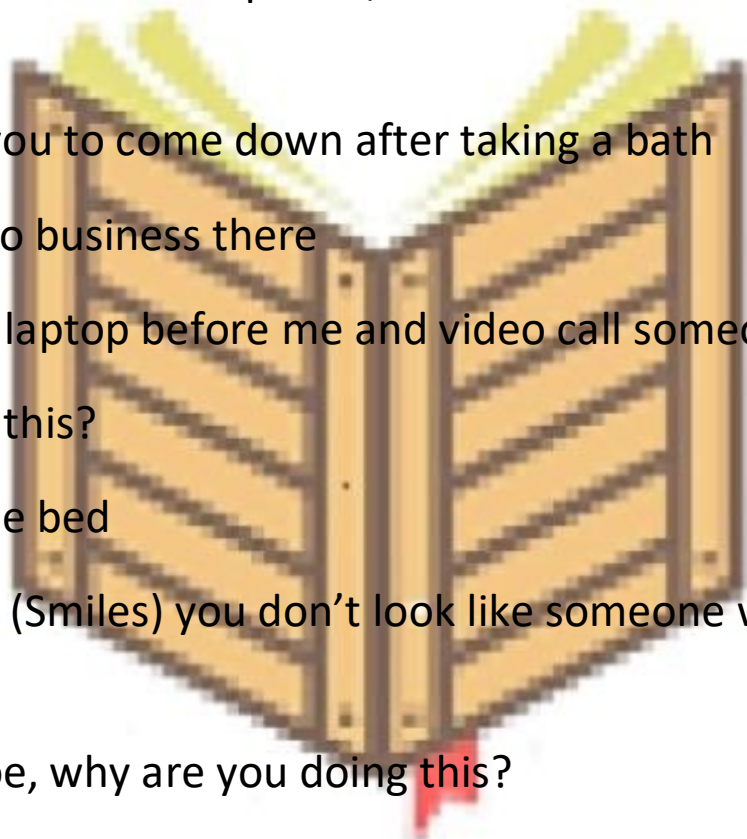
Voice: Hello (Smiles) you don't look like someone who is  
abducted

Me: You! Zoe, why are you doing this?

Her: But of course, me. And answer to your question, you know  
why I am doing this

Me: Ethan will never love you; this is going to make him hate  
you forever. He will despise where you passed and the air your  
breathe

Her: I know that, and I've made peace with it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Then why am I here? What do you want with me?

Her: I am teaching you a lesson, when someone says walk away my darling, you walk away without asking questions. If only you had listened to me and walk away

Me: They are going to find me and when they do...

I looked at Leo

Me: Both of you will pay

Her: Not anytime soon, did he tell you about your little friend?

Me: What did you do to Buhle?

Her: Talk later doll

She hung up

I stood up and jumped at Leo

Me: What did you do? Where is Buhle?

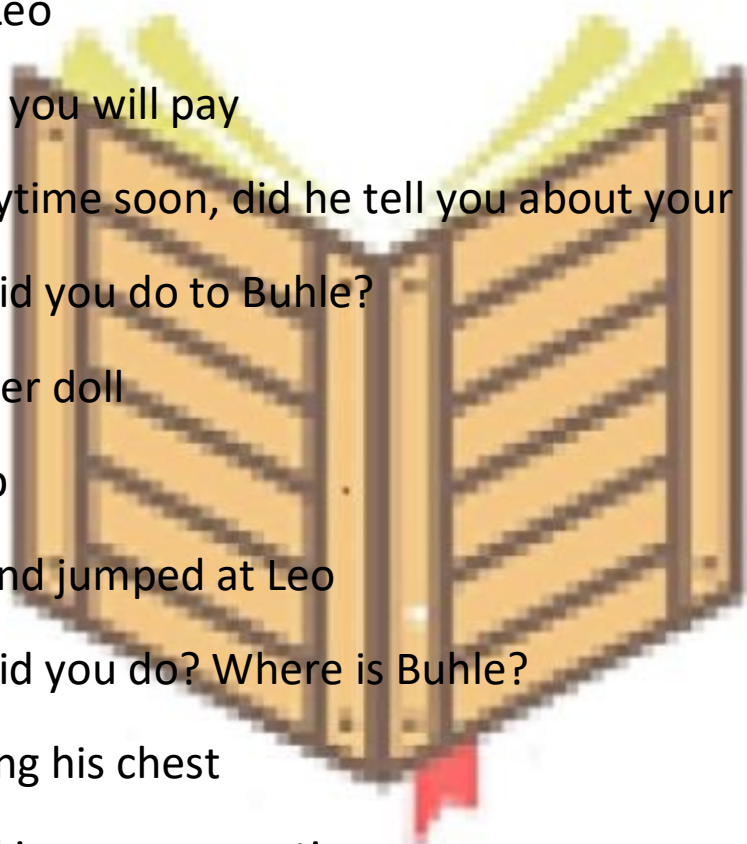
I asked hitting his chest

Me: I am asking you a question

He grabbed my hands and pushed me, I fell on my butt

Him: Don't you ever lay your hands on me, you hear? I am everything that Zoe is not, if I say I will kill you-I will kill you

Me: Who are you exactly? Why are you doing this?



NOVELSGURU.COM



Him: I am warning you, if you try to do something I will slit your throat and I won't hesitate

Me: I will not lie to you, if I get a chance to kill you I am going to use it, you will not cage me here. God knows where I am

I ran my eyes around

Him: Thought as much

He buried his hand in his jacket and took out a syringe

Me: Anything but that! Please

PANTHER



Later that afternoon Ayden came with Viper

Together, the three of us can help with the situation. It's unfortunate there's not much I can do but contributing ideas. They have told me what led to Buhle to jail and I don't understand why she didn't tell me. I would have long solved this Zoe character. Now they have strong case against her and Mimi

Me: Why is Buhle still in jail? Enlighten me please

Ayden: There's proof against her and with Mimi not in the picture (Sighs) they are thinking all of this was planned to escape justice

Me: If it was planned, Buhle wouldn't be in jail! And, you still don't have a lead on Mimi?

Viper: Unfortunately

Ayden: But we are looking at any possibilities

I scoffed

Me: Yeah neh, two big men are failing to find a girl? You've searched for big men and find them without wasting time, what's so hard about finding Mimi?

Viper: We have no leads; if we get one I am sure we are going to follow it

Ayden: Viper is right; right now we are in the dark

Me: Start with Zoe; she is the lead you need. Don't you get that?

Ayden: We are going to see her when we leave here

Viper: We should watch her family closely; she is in psychiatric hospital that means someone is working for her on the outside. We are dealing with a psycho and if we push her...

Ayden: We will be putting Mimi's life in danger

I shook my head

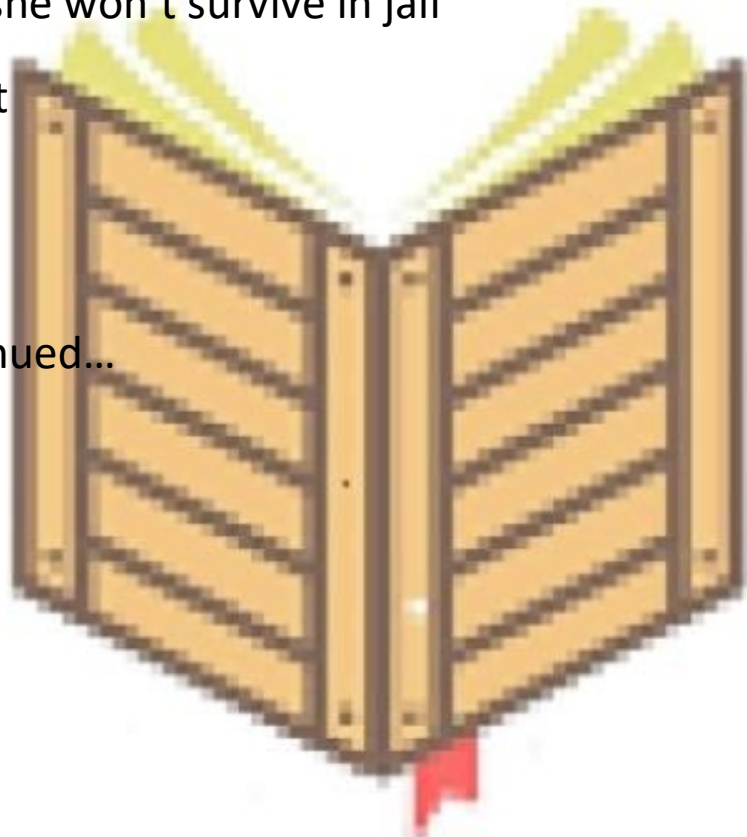
Me: You talked about bail tomorrow... Name of the judge?

Viper: Judge Williams

Me: He is an old friend it won't be hard to get him on my side. Tell him to name his price, any amount we will pay. Buhle has to get bail, she won't survive in jail

Ayden: On it

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

100

BUHLE

I am set to appear in North Park magistrate court tomorrow, I've posted for bail. I am praying for the judge to show me mercy; if I am denied bail then I am done for it... I will be going to jail for something I didn't do

An officer got inside my cell and gave me the phone

Officer: Take and don't take long

I took the phone from his hand

Me: Hello

"Sunshine" I covered my mouth with my hand

Me: Sthandwa sam

Him: Hey, don't cry okay? I am doing everything I can to get you out of there

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I am so scared; I don't wanna go to prison

Him: And you will not go to prison

Me: How are you? Your brother told me how the surgery went

Him: I am fine; I am more concerned about you. You shouldn't be in jail to start with Buhle

Me: Everything is falling apart

Him: Because you didn't trust me enough to tell me what was going on. Why didn't you?

Me: I couldn't just burden you with my problems when you were going through the most

Him: That was for me to decide, not you

Me: I know and I am sorry

Him: It doesn't matter anymore, I will sort everything out

Officer: Say your goodbyes (Whispers)

Me: We will talk later Sthandwa, time is up

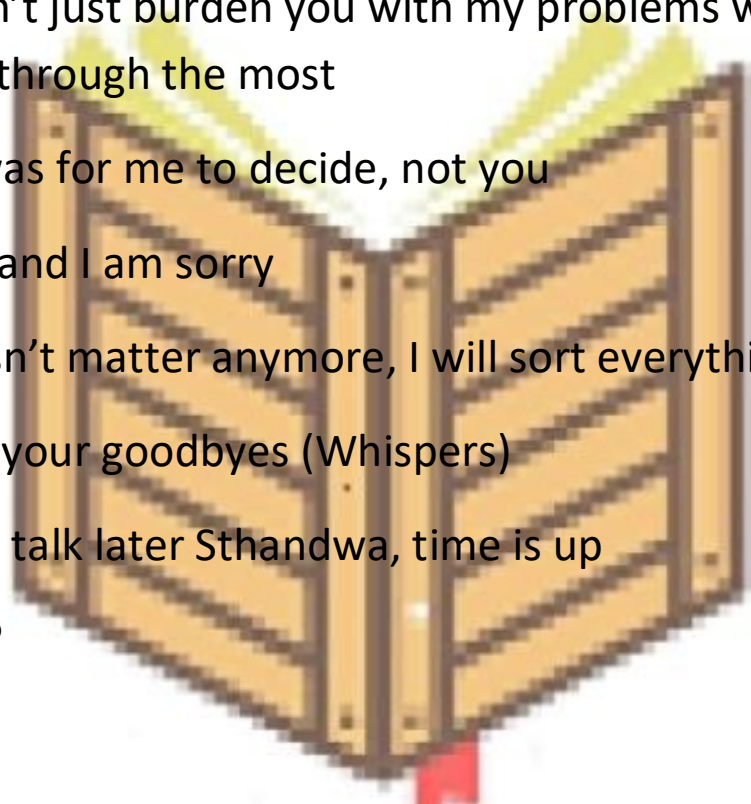
Him: Buhle?

Me: Mh...

Him: Ngiyakuthanda ndlovukazi, uyandiva...

Me: Nam ngiyakuthanda futh kakhulu

ELISA



NOVELSGURU.COM

When we returned from Police Station we found Mzoxolo waiting for us at the house, I was surprised-I didn't think he would come. His son also needs his attention

Going to the Police Station was not waste of time but it was also not helpful, they gave us hard time. Questioned us and concluded that Mimi is probably running away from what she did. I was shocked to learn why Buhle was arrested; the girls are accused of killing a man and covered it up. I still don't know how and why they killed that man, Yara didn't want to tell me but she will have to tell me. Now it's not time to keep secrets

Me: Should I get you something to drink?

Him: No, I am fine

Yara: I will be in my room if you need me. Baba, don't leave without telling me

Him: I won't

Yara walked inside the house. We pulled the chairs and sat down

Him: How did it go?

Me: We can't really say, you know our system

Him: I will contact few people and get the word out there. I will also try and contact a friend of mine who is a reporter. But, we need to thread carefully if we don't want to lose your daughter

Me: Thank you Mzo

Him: You are quick to forget, you showed me immense support when my son was fighting for his life; it's time I return the favour

I looked down

Me: I don't know for how long am I going to stay strong, I am afraid I will break down. And I am scared for Yara's sake. My daughter has gone through so much and I don't think she needs this

Him: We are all here for you and Yara, you will never be alone

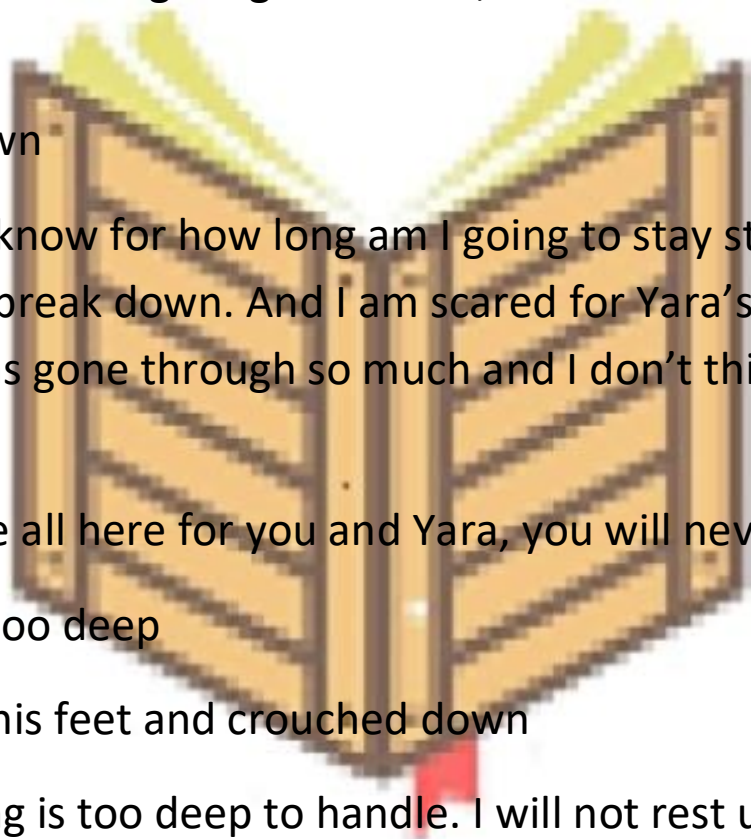
Me: This is too deep

He rose on his feet and crouched down

Him: Nothing is too deep to handle. I will not rest until we find her, I give you my word

He held my hand

Me: And when you find her, they are going to arrest her for murder



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I believe there's explanation to that video, let's not judge her now. Like Buhle said there's misunderstanding

AYDEN

As we've said when we left the hospital we came straight to see Zoe

She was so calm and looked insane, if you didn't know you'd think she is well in the head

Her: I don't know if I should be angry or not but don't you think you are now becoming too much and invading my space?

Me: We know you know where Mimi is

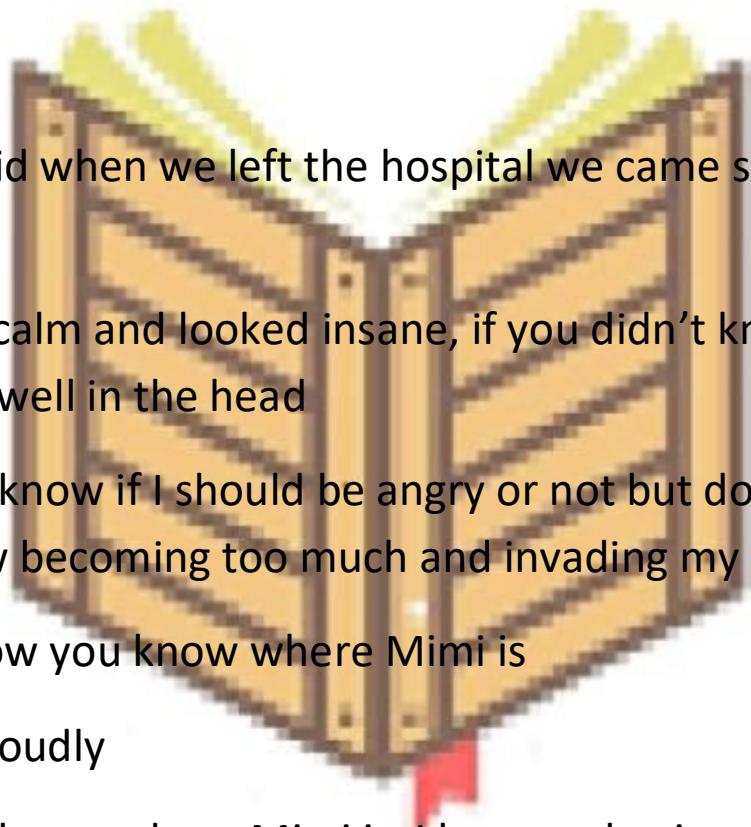
She sighed loudly

Her: I don't know where Mimi is, I have no business with her

Viper: Let's cut the crap and talk like adults. Tell us where she is!

She banged the table

Her: If you continue with this I swear I am going to call the cops on you. I can't keep on saying the same thing over and over



NOVELSGURU.COM



again. I already told the cops what they needed to know, your so called Mimi came here and attacked me, do you think I have guts to go after that kind of person?

Me: Yes, you do and you know it

Her: Go to hell both of you

Me: We don't want to hurt you but if you don't work with us then we will be forced to do so

She stood up

Her: Go ahead

Advertisement

you think you intimidate me? Just know you will be hurting me for something I didn't do

Viper: Ri khou tambisa tshifhinga tshashu, anga si ambe (We are wasting our time, she won't talk)

Me: Zwino rido ita mini? (What are we gonna do?)

Viper: Plan B, ri tevhela muthu munwe na munwe wa hawe hu teya uvha na munwe ane akho mushumela (We follow each and every member of her family, there has to be someone working for her)

Her: If we are done please leave

Me: Let's hope for your sake you are telling the truth

YOLANDA GRIFFINS

Later that Leonard came back from God knows where; he stood by the door and kept his gaze on me

Me: Where have you been? I called you countless times and you didn't pick any of my calls

Him: I was busy

Me: Busy with what Leo?

Him: Since when do I owe you an explanation about my whereabouts?

I set the glass of wine on the table

Me: When last did you talk with your sister?

Him: The day before yesterday

He looked at me

Me: You and your sister are like tooth and nail, you can never go a day without talking



NOVELSGURU.COM

Since childhood, Leo has always been a victim of Zoe's schemes. She has a way to manipulate him, we've tried everything to break their bond but nothing has worked out. Zoe ensures Leo to believe that what she is doing is right, and justifies everything

Me: You must call her...

Him: Why should I?

Me: She is a suspect in a crime but she is not charged

Him: But she has been in hospital for a very long time, when did she get time to commit that crime?

Me: You tell me

Him: Why me?

Me: Did you help her in kidnapping Mimi?

Him: No, I didn't

Me: Tell me if you've helped her Leo, you can't keep on helping Zoe to cover her crimes. You know better than agree to help her

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: I am going to take a shower, this conversation is over. If it will make you happy, I'll go and see her

YARA

I was on the phone with my father (Mimi's father)

Him: I don't understand one bit Yara, how can your sister just disappear without explanation?

Me: Ah baba, we are thinking someone is behind this

Him: Behind this? You are confusing me more

Me: The thing is, there's a girl who has taken interest in Ethan but he rejected her...

Him: And this girl decided to kidnap my daughter?

Me: We think so, she is mental unstable

Him: In other words, Mimi's life is in great danger?

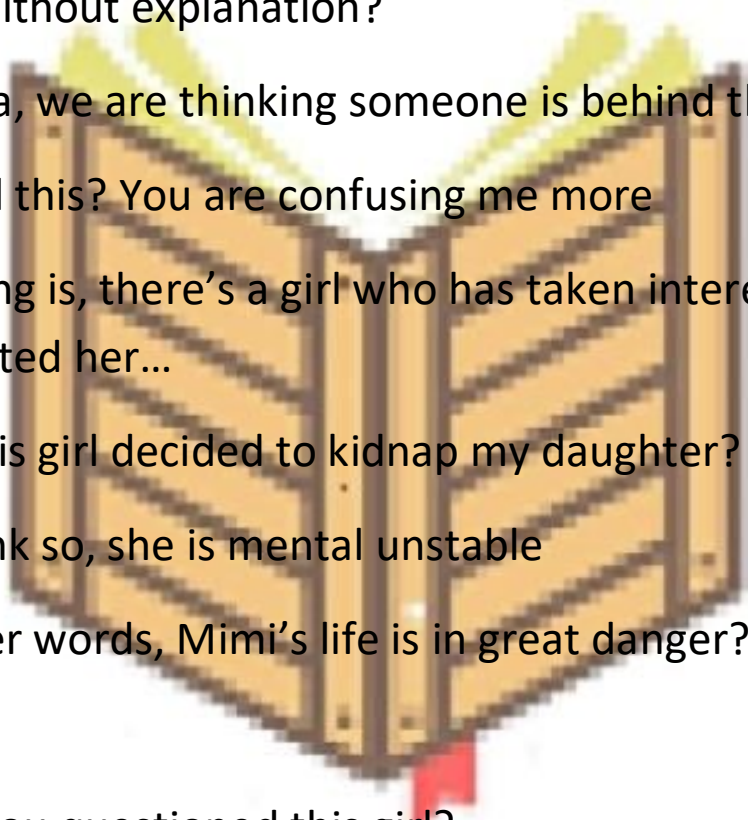
Me: Yeah

Him: Have you questioned this girl?

Me: Yes, but she is denying everything. We are not winning and we really don't know where to start looking

Him: Police must be having a lead or something

Me: They checked the footage at the hospital but whomever who kidnapped her tampered with the CCTV



MIMI

The shot Leo gave me paralyzed my body for about four good hours, I don't know what it was but I don't want him to inject me again. He has no sympathy; his eyes were so cold and evil. He wasn't lying when he said he is everything that Zoe is not, she is nothing compared to him... He left two hours ago and I thought I would escape but I was wrong. All the doors and windows have burglar bars, what did I expect?

I searched the whole house and I found no cell phone, I won't escape this hell! My fate lies in Zoe's hands. It also came to my attention that this house is in the countryside

Me: God if you can hear me please, save me! My life can't end like this; I refuse to believe this is my fate. Do something, please!

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I am strong enough to come out of this situation alive

To be continued...

YARA

Last night there was lot of silence between my mother and I, we didn't know what to say to each other. We are both hurt and no amount of words would help with the situation. If I could I'd bring Mimi back home but I can't. My mother is hurting so much; I heard her crying until dawn I doubt she even slept. The pain of not knowing where your loved one is-is just too much. When I talked with Ayden, he told me they also didn't find anything, Zoe is hard to crack

I stood at the door

Me: Morning Mama

Her: Yara, how did you sleep?

Me: Didn't get any sleep

Her: Didn't too. I couldn't even close my eyes

Me: I've seen several posts on Facebook, and Twitter. Let's hope someone saw her and will contact us

Her: Problems with these things of yours start when people start to take advantage of the situation

Me: Let's worry about that later

Her: We will see. I am just finishing up here, I am going to church

Me: Guess I will see you later. I have to go to court and support Buhle

Her: there's Buhle...

She laid back on the chair

Her: I am exhausted

Me: We are all Mama

Her: Before you go, I need you to clarify something for me

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)



I held the newspaper

NOVELSGURU.COM

“The person on the picture below is Mimi Masia, age 27, from Tshisele village. Miss Masia was reported missing on Tuesday; she was last seen Monday night at the hospital. According to the last person who was with her, she said she left her at the parking lot after they bid farewell. What happened after that is

unknown. She was wearing a floral dress and a jacket, if anyone has information about her whereabouts please contact the number below or visit your nearest police station”

I laid back on the couch and sighed

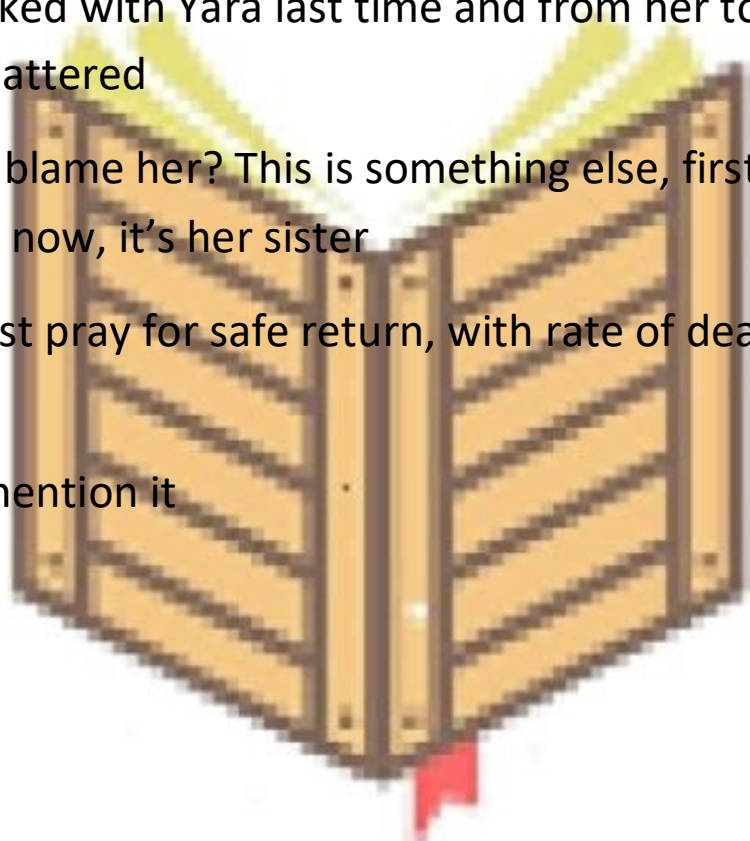
Me: This is traumatic

Amelia: I talked with Yara last time and from her tone you could tell she is shattered

Me: Do you blame her? This is something else, first it was her brother and now, it's her sister

Her: Let's just pray for safe return, with rate of deaths in South Africa...

Me: Don't mention it



YARA

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

My mother is asking me something Mimi didn't want her to find out, she kept this as a secret for a reason and now I am forced to tell her

Her: Yara, it's enough with secrets. I need to know everything...



Me: Where do I start?

Her: Start by explaining why Mimi killed that man, they are so many things that are not making sense right now and I have a feeling you know

Me: I didn't know about the man they supposedly killed but I know where the supposed murder happened

Her: Now tell me

Me: Mimi was a prostitute Mama, Buhle also

She gave me a serious face

Her: No

She shook her head

Me: She was. Remember that time she attempted to commit suicide?

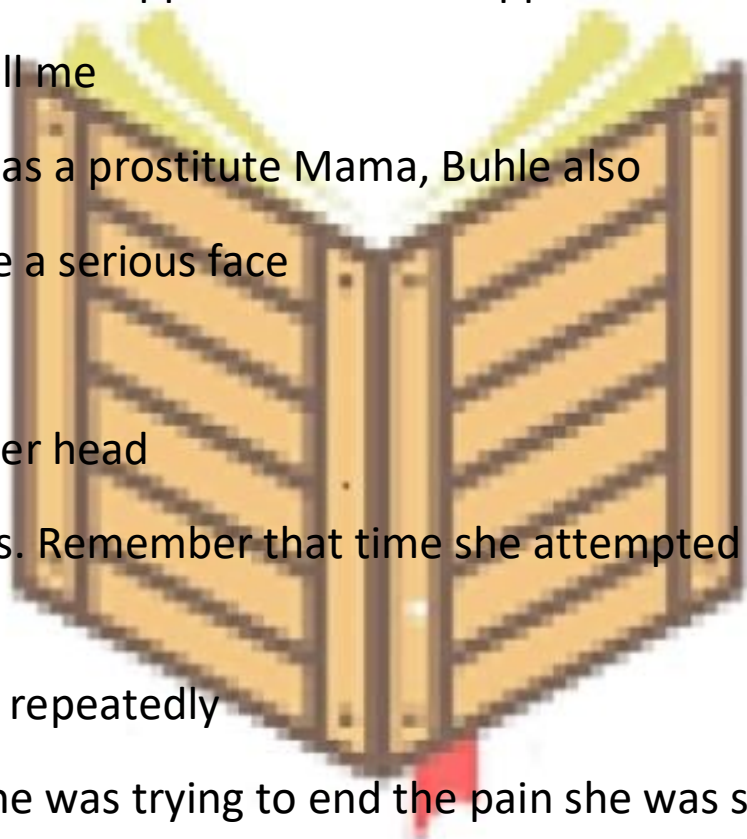
She nodded repeatedly

Me: Well, she was trying to end the pain she was suffering from. Her pimp was in the Province, he was threatening her and Buhle

Her: Was? Where is he now?

Me: He was killed (Low voice)

Her: Did she kill him?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: No

I quickly answered her

Me: He had too many enemies and they killed him

Her: My daughter used to sell her body in exchange of money?

What a revelation

Me: She did what was right at that time Mama

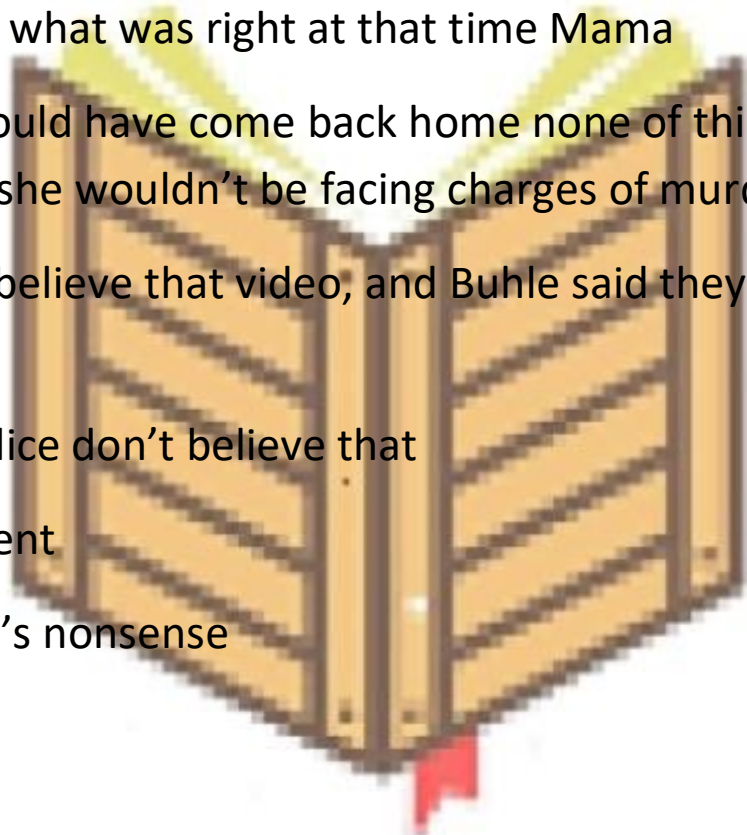
Her: She should have come back home none of this would be happening, she wouldn't be facing charges of murder

Me: I don't believe that video, and Buhle said they didn't kill that man

Her: The police don't believe that

Advertisement

they think it's nonsense



MIMI

NOVELSGURU.COM

I stared at the ceiling for a while before the door opened

Leo: Get up mooi meisie (Pretty girl)

I ignored him and sat still on the bed

He sighed loudly from the door

Him: We are really going to have a problem here at first it was impressive but now it's starting to bore me

Me: I am as good as dead, so why should I care...

Him: I won't ask you again, the sooner we start to bond the better. You are my guest and we have to get along

Me: How can I get along with my kidnapper? I am here against my will, I need to go

Him: That's impossible and you know it

I got up from the bed

Me: I have family you know that? They are out there looking for me, don't you have heart? Let me go back to my family, if you want money they will give you money. You don't need Zoe because she will change on you the minute they arrest you

He stepped closer to me

Him: She will never

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why are you so sure? She is capable of anything

Him: Blood is thicker than water

I staggered back

Me: You are... you are her brother? Yes, I was right to think that you are siblings

Him: You got that right; no one will dare to hurt my sister for as long as I am living. You and your boyfriend deserve everything that is coming your way

Me: Your sister is crazy, she is insane! But you can stop her madness, you can do it! Her disorder is controllable and you know it

Him: I am the only one who understand her, none of you does  
He lifted my chin and pressed his lips against mine

Me: Please, don't do this

He squeezed my breast and moaned

Him: I've always wanted to taste a black cunt and today happened to be my lucky day

Me: Not again please

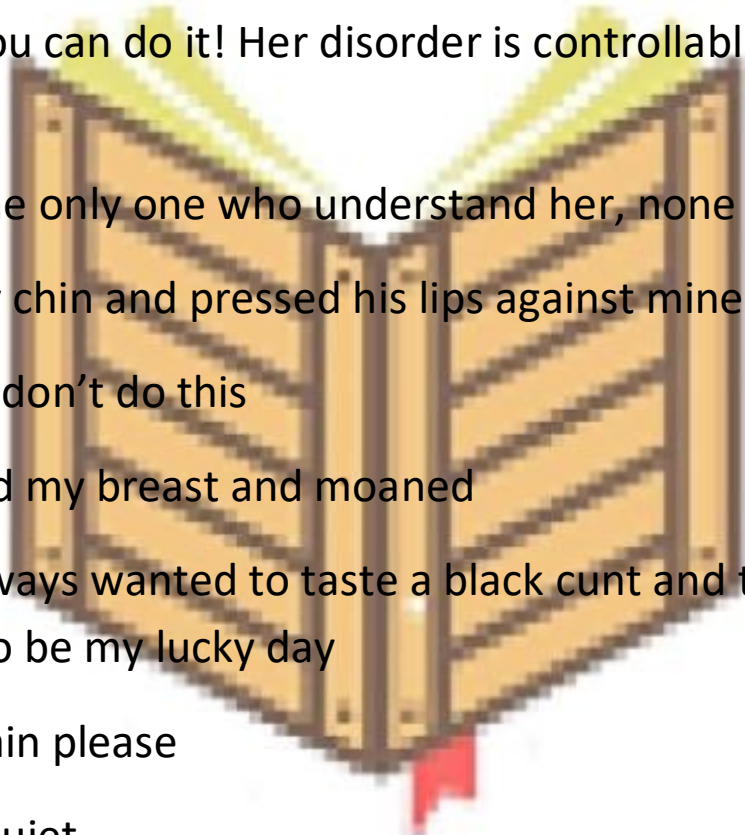
Him: Keep quiet

I kneed him in the balls and he groaned in pain

Him: Teef (Bitch)

He grabbed me by the neck and threw me on the bed

Me: No...



NOVELSGURU.COM

He tore my shirt and took off my bra

ETHAN

Mimi's disappearance is taking a toll on me, all I want is to have her in my arms and tell her everything is going to be fine. Zoe is dribbling us and that is making me mad, there's nothing I can do than wait for the police. I've never hurt a woman and I am not going to start now but there must be something. She is human and human tend to make mistakes, we just need to find hers before it's too late for Mimi

Noah set his cup on the table

Him: Brother, how are you holding up?

Me: You want the truth? I am not coping, I feel like I've went straight back to that hole I was in when Goldie passed on

Him: I can imagine

Me: I keep on thinking about mom's dream, last time when she came here she was complaining about strange dreams and now I feel like those dreams are coming true

Him: Don't think too much about them

I stood up

Me: I can't help it but blame myself, if Zoe wasn't my friend none of this would be happening. I failed to protect her against Zoe

Him: You didn't know that she's crazy

Me: I shudder to think what they are doing to her right now. It's my entire fault Noah; I fully take the blame for everything that is happening now

Him: There's nothing you could have done. No one saw this coming

Me: I won't forgive myself if something bad happened to her, I won't...

I looked at him

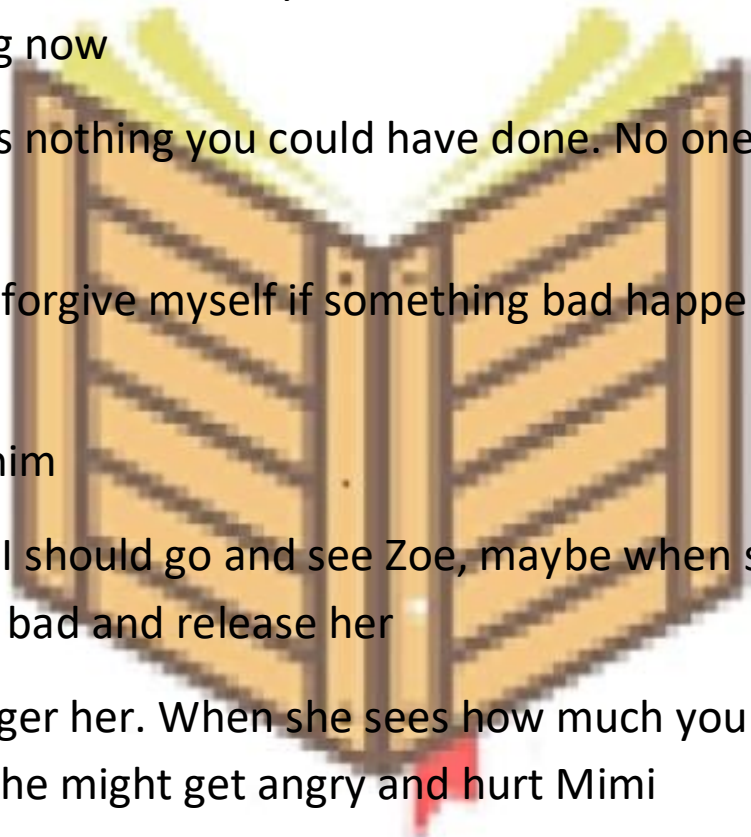
Me: Maybe I should go and see Zoe, maybe when she sees me she will feel bad and release her

Him: Or trigger her. When she sees how much you are willing to go for her, she might get angry and hurt Mimi

Me: So, what should I do? Sit and wait for the unknown?

Him: At this stage, that's the best thing to do. For the sake of Mimi

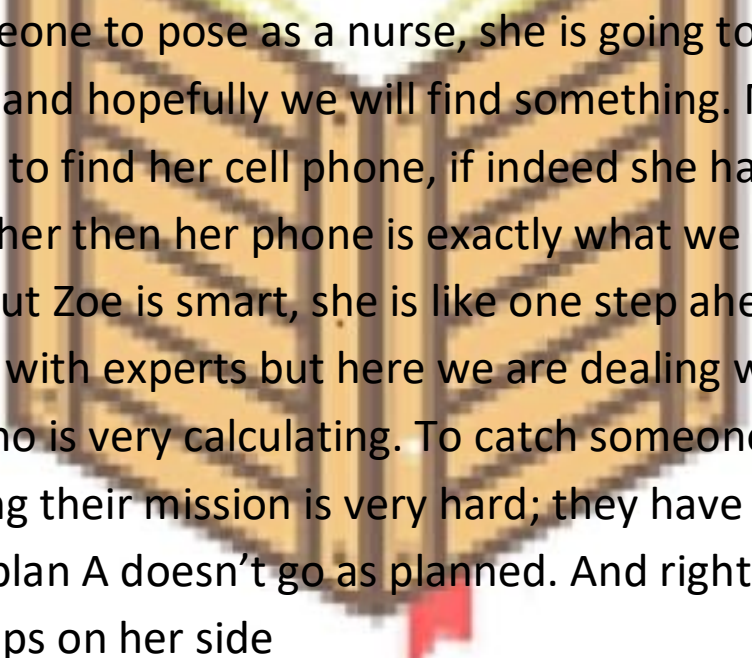
To be continued...



NOVELSGURU.COM

## SEASON FINALE

AYDEN



We got someone to pose as a nurse, she is going to search Zoe's room, and hopefully we will find something. Mostly important is to find her cell phone, if indeed she has someone working for her then her phone is exactly what we need. I hate to admit it but Zoe is smart, she is like one step ahead of us. We've dealt with experts but here we are dealing with someone who is very calculating. To catch someone who spent time planning their mission is very hard; they have back-up plan just in case plan A doesn't go as planned. And right now there are no slip-ups on her side

Me: We are doing everything we can to find her Shawty. Last night we parked outside Griffins resident and the only people we saw were her parents. It is just the two of them; we didn't see anyone getting in or out but we asked the guard some questions and he mentioned a brother. Ethan confirmed it, she has a brother

Yara set down her glass again, her eyes filled with disappointment

Her: I know you are trying your level best. I fail to understand how we got here, I don't like it one bit. Zoe is a pathetic human being

Me: How is your mother?

Her: She says she is fine but you can see she is lying. To top it all I had to tell her about Mimi's past and as expected she didn't take the news well

Me: It was not good time for her to find out

Her: I know that but she needed to know in order to understand the video. We are here because of secrets

She sighed deeply

Me: It doesn't matter anymore, what matters right now is finding Mimi and solving the murder case

Her: What do you mean by that?

I stood up

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Exactly that, we need to make sure the evidence is out of the picture and the charges are dropped... Simple as that

Her: And exactly, how are you going to do that Ayden?

Me: Don't worry about it, we got everything under control



Her: This is not the time to make matters worse

Me: You don't trust me? Is that what you are saying?

Her: I don't want you to make matters worse, that's all. We got a lot to deal with and adding fuel to the flame is something we don't need

Me: Wow, thank you Yara. That was mouthful

Her: You are twisting my words now

Me: I perfectly understood what you are said... I am going to take a shower; I need to meet with your brother later. Hopefully we won't disappoint you

Her: Ayden!

She half-yelled

Her: We are still talking



ETHAN

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zoe: What a lovely surprise, let me guess you are also here to accuse me of kidnapping Mimi. Am I right?

I tried to take Noah's advice and stay far from Zoe but something inside couldn't allow me. I can't just stay calm and pretend as if we are not here because of me, I won't fail her again

My phone was on recording mode, maybe her conscious will speak with her and she confess

Me: They are not accusations. Why are you doing this?

Her: Why would I kidnap Mimi? You made it clear that you don't love me maybe her past is catching up with her, she is not saint either

Me: We both know that's not the truth. Please Zoe I am begging you, let her go

Her: I am sorry for what is happening to you Ethan but I swear to God I didn't kidnap Mimi. I didn't!

Me: You are my friend Zoe, we've been through a lot together and never did I think one day you will be the one to bring pain to me. Your own friend

She stood up and went down on her knee in front of me

Her: What must I do to proof to you that I have no hand in Mimi's disappearance? Tell me and I will do it

Me: Bring her back. You know you have her, we both know

Her: I give up, please leave. We have nothing more to say to each other

Me: Jail will never be enough for you only death will be enough for you to pay for everything! Death will be your punishment... And I will never rest until I find her and when I do, I will make sure you pay

I stood up

Her: God is my witness, and I hope he will forgive you for accusing me because I will never!

MIMI



The burning sensation in my coochie woke me up

I hesitated to get up but I finally did. I was still naked; Leo was not in the room

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I've been raped before but that doesn't mean it gets better when history repeat itself, you can never get use to it. I've met some evil men. Some crazy men but I've never met anyone like Leo. He doesn't care about my feelings he does what satisfies him. His plan is to break me and his torture is to rape me... He

decided to ignore my tears; my pleadings fell on deaf ears. He kept on going and going. Yet again

Advertisement

I was degraded as a woman. Am I ever going to be the same Mimi I've always been?

“Are you willing to die for Ethan? We could end all of this if you agree to leave him. Zoe only wants you and Ethan to separate nothing more nothing less” He said from the door

Him: I could talk with my sister and she might sympathize with you. Your friend will be free and you will be reunited with your family

I still can't believe they turned Buhle in

He closed the door and walked up to me

Me: Just kill me because I can't live like this. Kill me!

Him: You really want me to kill you?

Me: It's better that way

He pinned me down and got on top of me... He roughly inserted his finger in my coochie

Him: I am still enjoying you

I reached for the lamp on the bedside and hit his head

Him: Teef!

ZOE

I slid the other phone in my bra and walked out of my room

I know better than to use my phone to make calls to Leo. Police can show up at any minute and demand to search my room as I am a suspect. So, even if they come there won't find anything to implicate me with. I am not really moved by the threats and suspicions thrown at me they are doing nothing to me. Mimi should have never underestimated me, the least she could have done was to walk away but Mimi's naivety couldn't let her.

Now she must feel my wrath a little, I am enjoying all of this a lot. To know she is crying and begging for help, this is how I wanted things to be. For Ethan stay awake at night wondering where she is, for Mimi to go through hell and to feel pain of not getting help. Together, the three of us are hurting

I sat across Miss Peterson

Me: You called me...

Miss P: Yes, I want us to talk and I will get straight to the point

Me: I am listening

Miss P: Miss Griffins, I've been your psychiatrist for so long to know how you operate

Me: It's your job

Miss P: In this file, there's everything about you... the people you've hurt

Me: I know that

Miss P: And I am starting to wonder if what they are saying it's not true

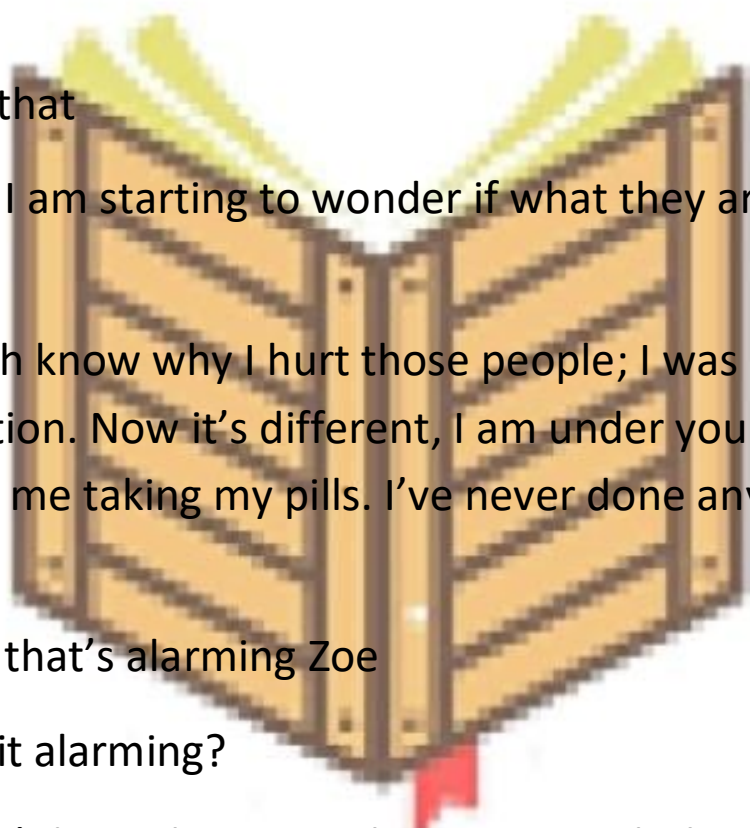
Me: We both know why I hurt those people; I was not taking any medication. Now it's different, I am under your care and you've seen me taking my pills. I've never done anything out of ordinary

Miss P: And that's alarming Zoe

Me: How is it alarming?

Miss P: I don't know but something is not right here and you know it. You can't fool me

Me: Okay fine, what do you want to do? Since you are not buying my story...



NOVELSGURU.COM

BUHLE

I was granted bail but I am, not permitted to leave the city. Investigations are underway and I don't know what to expect. The cops do not care about the fact that Mimi is missing and the person kidnapping her might be the same person who brought in the video. What they see, is someone who is on the run. What I know is that, Mimi is not safe wherever she is

When I stepped inside Panther's room tears streamed down my cheeks... I ran to his bed and hugged him

Him: Oh heavenly! Stop crying, you are safe now and nothing will happened to you

I leaned and kissed him

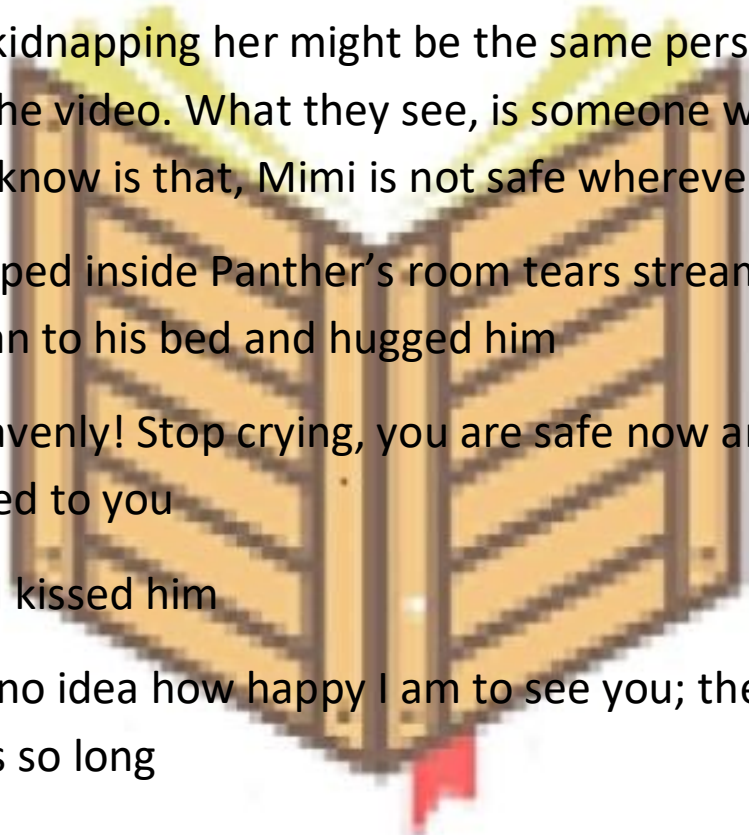
Me: You've no idea how happy I am to see you; the drive to the hospital was so long

He laughed

Him: I wish I could see your face

Me: You will see me; you will soon regain your sight

I positioned the pillow behind him and climbed on the bed



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Are you sure this bed is supposed to be here? I mean you could swear this is a bedroom bed

Him: They know some of us have partners and we want to snuggle them

Me: Yeah right

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I can't stop thinking about Mimi, she has been through a lot if there's one person who deserve a break then that person is Mimi

Him: We are going to find her; we will not rest until she is back home. Alive or...

Me: Dead. You can say it; I know possibilities of finding her dead are too high

Him: I shouldn't have said that but we need to be ready for anything

Me: I know

I kissed the back of his hand

Me: When are you getting discharged?

Him: The day after tomorrow

He pressed his lips together and closed his eyes



NOVELSGURU.COM



Me: Are you in pain?

Him: No, I thought I felt something...

Me: Okay. I need some love

A corner of his mouth rose into a smile

Him: You look so beautiful, a sight to sore eyes. I just wanna take off that blouse you are wearing because wow!

Me: Don't you ever get tired of compli... hold up, how did you know I am wearing a blouse? I never told you what I am wearing

He smiled at me

Me: Oh my word! You can see? Huh, is that it?

Him: What do you think?

He ran his finger on my lip

Him: You look beautiful Mrs Panther

VIPER

Me: You good?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ayden: I had a fight with Yara, but we will be fine

Me: You need to pull yourself together... Anita is coming, she said a text

Him: You think she got something for us?

Me: I am hoping she does

He laid his back on the couch

Him: We need to get the video as soon as possible, without that video Buhle and Mimi can't be arrested

Me: I know someone who will help us with that; we only need money to make the impossible,

Him: Good

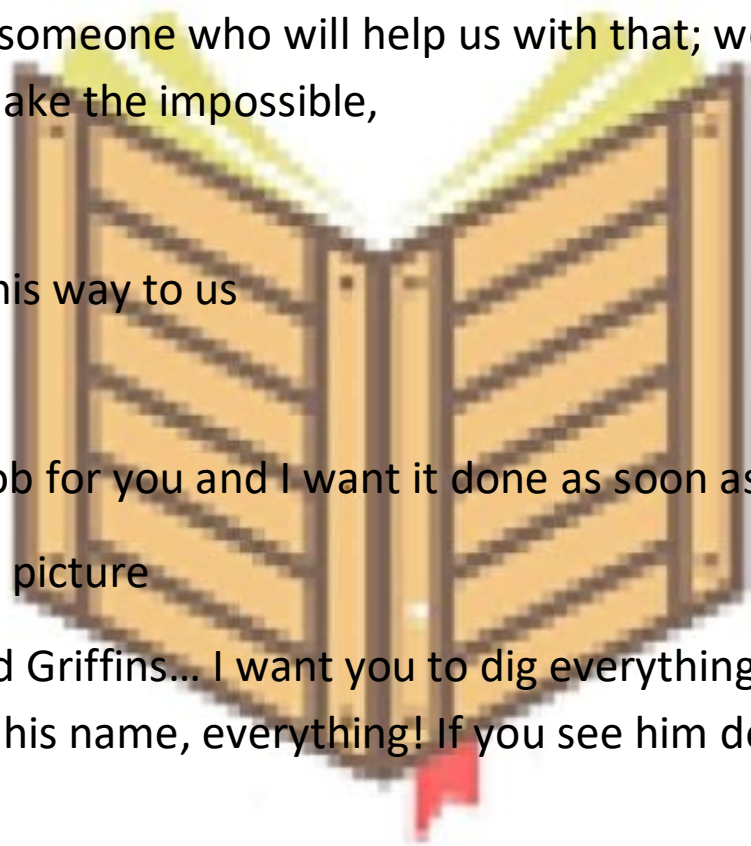
Sthe made his way to us

Sthe: Boss...

Me: Got a job for you and I want it done as soon as possible

I gave him a picture

Me: Leonard Griffins... I want you to dig everything that is attached to his name, everything! If you see him don't lose sight of him



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

To be continued...

## SEASON FINALE

MIMI

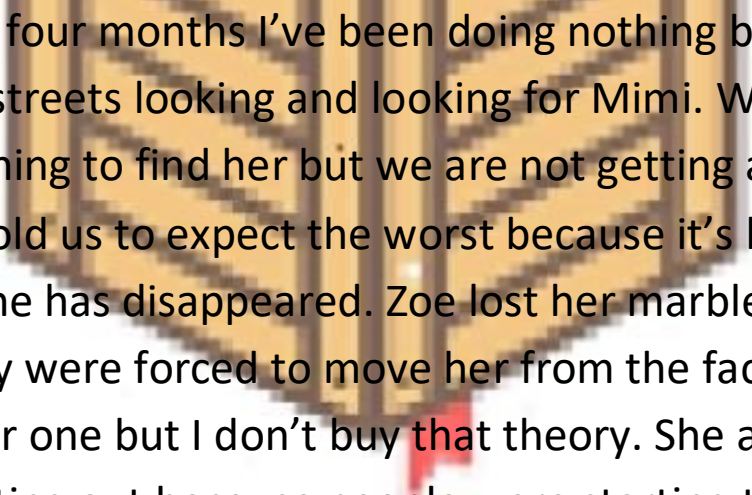
[FOUR MONTHS LATER]

I sat on the floor and put my hand on my tummy

I found out I was pregnant three months ago, the child is not Leo's because that night he raped me he used protection. I can say this child is my saviour, since he found out I was pregnant he immediately stopped forcing himself on me. I never imagined one day I will be pregnant and kidnapped, no single day has passed without me thinking about my family. It has been the worst, painful and saddest four months of my life every day I kneel before the Lord and ask him to lower his hand and save me. A part of me wishes for death, what's the use of living if I am living as a prisoner but again I think about my child. I will not disappoint him/her but for how long am I supposed to cry before God can answer me? Leo is still following his sisters' orders. She calls every now and then just to check on me but Leo hasn't told Zoe that I am pregnant. I don't know why he is

keeping it a secret but I am grateful... For the past four months Leo has been in here, there's someone who brings food and clothes for us but the person doesn't come here. They meet halfway; I sometimes feel like Leo is warming up but scared to let me go. I might be imagining things

ETHAN



For the past four months I've been doing nothing but going around the streets looking and looking for Mimi. We honestly tried everything to find her but we are not getting any luckier. The police told us to expect the worst because it's been too long since she has disappeared. Zoe lost her marbles a month ago and they were forced to move her from the facility she was at to another one but I don't buy that theory. She acted crazy to avoid getting out because people were starting to question her reasons to stay if her psychiatrist is saying she is fine

I stood at the door and looked at my twins

Me: Wanna grab something to eat?

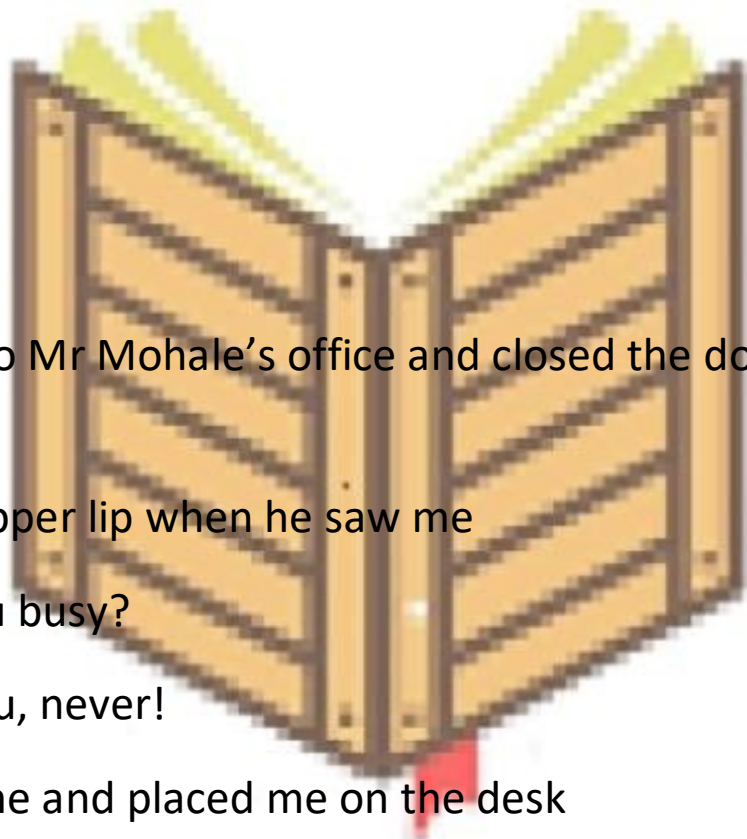
Since they learned about Mimi's disappearance they haven't been well. They are indifferent; they refuse food, they not

concentrating at school. I was then forced to find a therapist for them and so far I am seeing progress

Lex: No, we good

Me: I wasn't asking, get ready

ZOE



I walked into Mr Mohale's office and closed the door behind me

He bit his upper lip when he saw me

Me: Are you busy?

Him: For you, never!

He picked me and placed me on the desk

Him: I miss you

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He kissed my neck

Me: I want us to discuss something

Him: Why are you disturbing our moment?

Me: Wait, you'll have all of this after we talk

He sighed and pulled away

Him: Okay, talk...

Me: I think now it's time I leave this place, I've been here for too long and I think I am fine now

He looked at me

Me: But that doesn't mean we are going to stop seeing each other, we can continue with our thing but not now. After I've taken care of few things

Him: There's nothing I can do to change your mind?

Me: No, you need to let me go. I have some business to take care of on the outside

He swung his neck and brushed his head

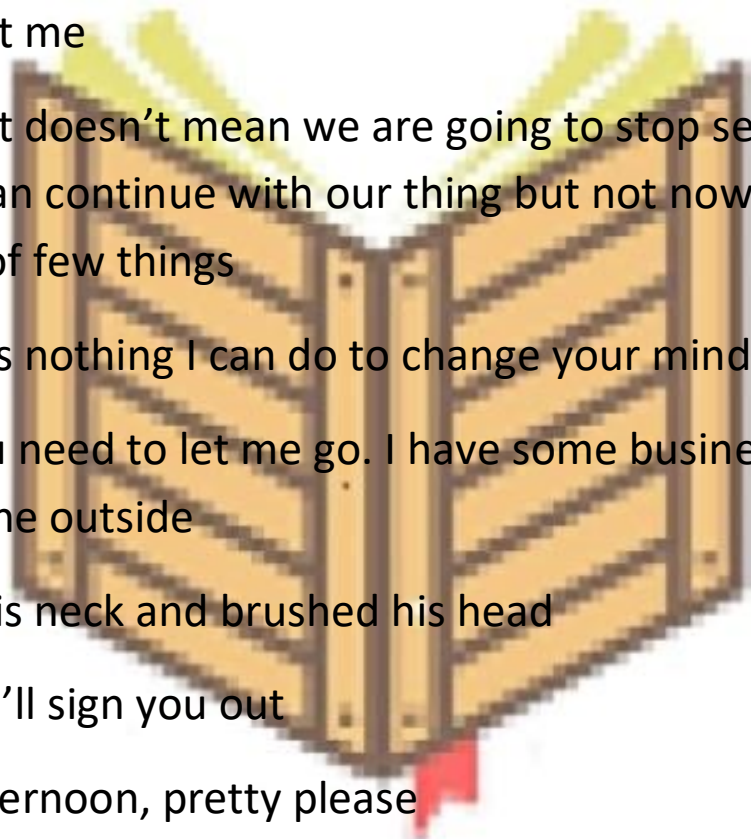
Him: Okay, I'll sign you out

Me: This afternoon, pretty please

Him: Now you are pushing it

Me: Please

AYDEN



NOVELSGURU.COM

Yara screamed her lungs out in the bedroom, she is probably fitting her clothes and they are not fitting

She's almost nine months along, and big. Her baby bump is so big and she starting to struggle with lot of things, at first I was excited thinking she is carrying twins but no!

Me: What's wrong?

Her: All of my clothes are not fitting

Me: Look for my pants and shirt Yara

Her: So that I can look like an elephant?

Me: Your words not mine

We laugh with broken hearts, Yara hides her sadness very well but you can see she is not well. Whenever she gets a chance she cries, we still don't know or have an idea of where Mimi could be. Zoe's brother disappeared in a blink of an eye, we searched for him everywhere in the city but we never found him. We also managed to get the video and Buhle's name was cleared without evidence it was pointless to arrest her

Her: Have you spoken to Mimsey?

Me: No, did she call?

Her: She did, in fact she wanted to talk with you but she said your phone is on voicemail

Me: Oh flip! I forgot to charge it

Yara's mother gave us her blessings to move in together, I think she is just scared to lose another daughter. My plans to start with the negotiations were short lived

Advertisement

we can't be celebrating when one of us is out there alone. It's unfortunate my child will be born out of wedlock but it is what it is

PANTHER



I was on a phone with Buhle

Me: I am coming back, I am busy with something

Her: Why do I have a feeling you are keeping something from me?

Me: I am not. Let's talk later

Her: Fine



I hung up

Viper: Why don't you tell her?

Me: I don't want to get her excited only to hurt her again. Let's first be sure and then we will tell everyone

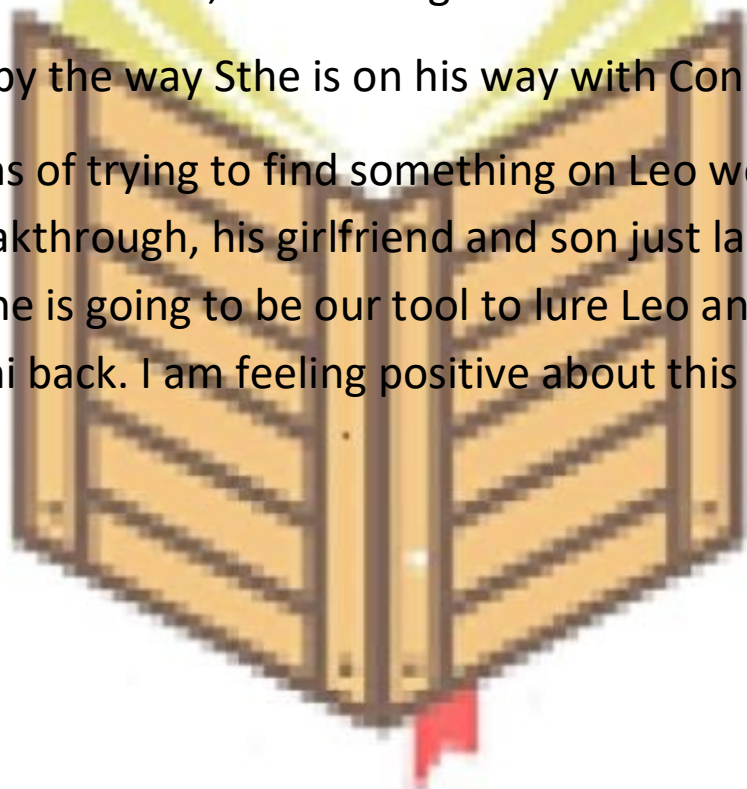
Him: Where is Tooth?

Me: He will come later; he is taking care of our sister

Him: Okay, by the way Sthe is on his way with Connie

After months of trying to find something on Leo we finally made a breakthrough, his girlfriend and son just landed from overseas. She is going to be our tool to lure Leo and hopefully getting Mimi back. I am feeling positive about this

YARA



I dropped the fork on the table and pushed the plate forward

Ayden: You lost your appetite?

I nodded

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Maybe we should go home; I thought breakfast was going to cheer you up

Me: Thank you for trying Munchie and I am sorry if you feel like I am pushing you away. I appreciate you

Him: I understand, and no one can blame you

Me: Take care of the bill

He waved at the waiter

Him: We are going to the house or your mom's?

Me: She is with my father, let's go straight home

Him: Okay

He settled the bill... we stood up

Me: I was thinking of doing that photo shot, I need something to cheer me up

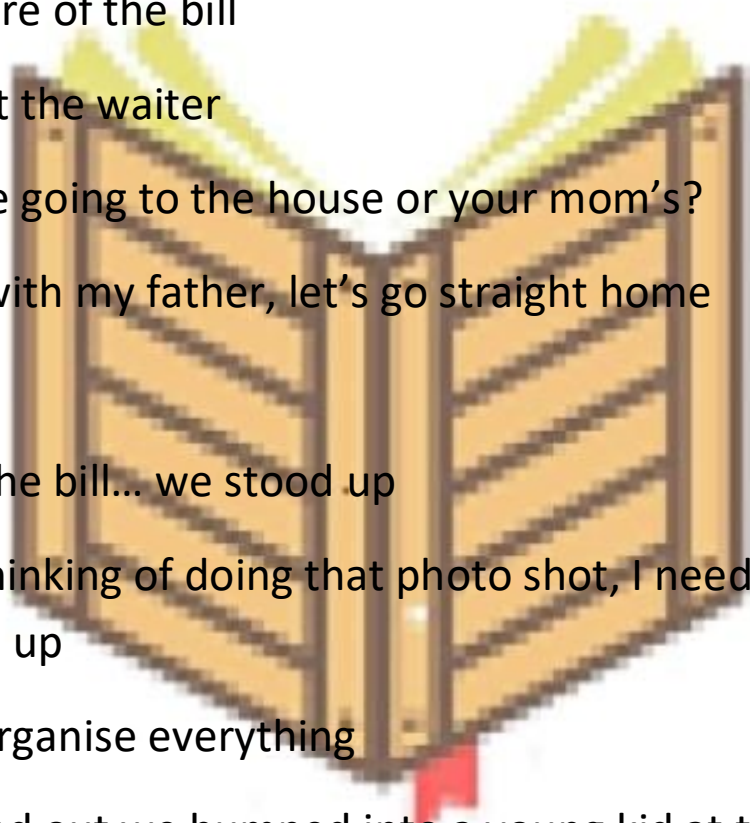
Him: I will organise everything

As we walked out we bumped into a young kid at the door

Me: Careful little one

She stood in front of me and smiled

Me: Hello...



“Zoya wait, you really need to stop running around. You will hurt yourself” a man I assumed is her father reprimanded her

Man: Please forgive me, we are always telling her to stop running around

Ayden: They never listen (Laughs)

A beautiful and stylish lady appeared with a baby between her arms

Lady: Danny, it seems like we won't be eating here, I received a call and...

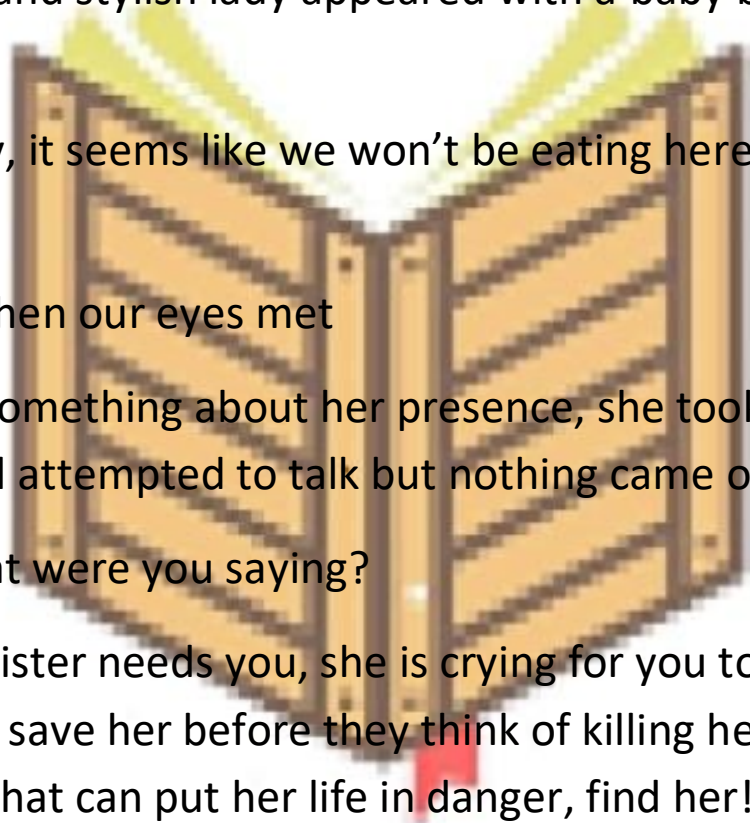
She froze when our eyes met

There was something about her presence, she took a step forward and attempted to talk but nothing came out

Danny: What were you saying?

Lady: Your sister needs you, she is crying for you to save her. You have to save her before they think of killing her. She has something that can put her life in danger, find her! The man in her life right now is trying to save her from the woman and only he can calm the woman. If they turn against each other blood will be shed

She looked at Ayden



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dee: Whatever you are planning please go ahead with it, you are going to find her but you need to stop dragging your legs

Me: What, what do you know about my sister? Do you know where she is?

She started breathing heavily

Danny: Dee, you need to calm down baby. Please breathe

He took the baby from her and looked at us

Danny: Sorry again but my wife can sense and see things an ordinary human can't... don't be scared

Ayden: It's okay...

Me: Dee, right?

Dee: Dakalo Muremi

Me: Yes, Mrs Muremi, can you help us?



ZOE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Getting to the countryside was a mission and a half; I had to be extra careful. The trio is still keeping tabs on me, well they

never stopped. They went as far as getting someone to work as a nurse to look closely at me but a tiny accident happened and he died

Leo: Why are you dressed as a nurse?

Me: That's some stupid question. How was I supposed to get here without being caught?

He hugged me

Him: I miss you

Me: I miss you too

Him: Why didn't you tell me you were getting out?

Me: Why do I feel like you are not excited to see me?

Him: I am...

He sat on the table

Him: Tell me, what are you planning to do with Mimi?

Me: That's why I am out; I want us to leave the country

Him: What about her?

Me: We will call the police when we are out of the country they will come and rescue her

Him: Was this worth it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes it was, and I don't regret it

Him: Well, I do, I regret what I did to her. I should have stopped long time to listen to you! I raped her Zoe, I raped her!

I slapped him across the face

Me: Why did you do it? I told you to keep her here only not keep her and rape her!

Him: I got tempted

Me: You are so stupid Leo. Where is she now?

Him: Sleeping. There's something you don't know...

Me: What?

Him: She is pregnant but it's not mine

Before I could answer him, his phone rang

Him: Connie... who is this and why are you calling me using my girlfriend's phone...? What?

He looked at me



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued...

## SEASON FINALE

ZOE



I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side, since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad, so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem, when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication, but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop, my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them, I can no longer

differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them.  
I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know, I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places, and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes, it is deadly but medication is there for a reason, I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition, growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself, I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me, I started to think, for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention, it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim, when he rejected me, I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later, I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And, I am not



saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder, I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought, why not? But when he rejected me, I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe, yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant, and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know, my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this, as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go, please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help, you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me, and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

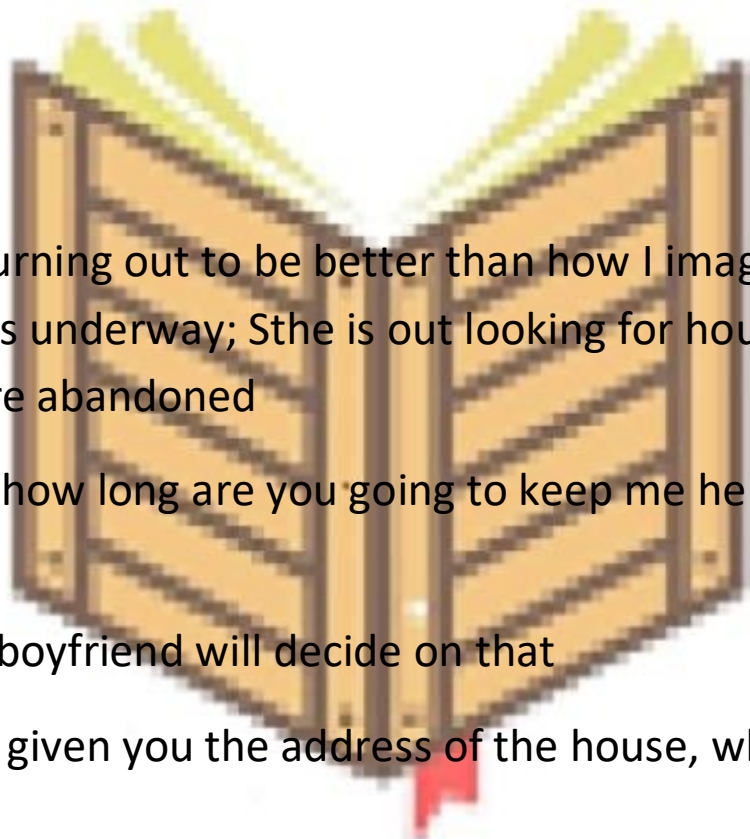
Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house, what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much, I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for



NOVELSOURU.COM

their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate, he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out, I see a car

Me: Okay

Advertisement

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home, we got your man

YARA



NOVELSGURU.COM

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west, that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama, you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray, we need God right now

Buhle: You are right



NOVELSGURU.COM

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi, they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo, what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me, you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay, fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this, you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside, don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far, right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan, maar my aanbod bly steeds, ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand, we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No, let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come



NOVELSGURU.COM

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building, there's much left

Me: Thank you so much, you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I think we should hold on in that, maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house, we left Sthe with  
Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he won't act get  
crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us, I don't trust white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when we've arrived  
to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Viper: No need for that, let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun



Me: Funny moves, we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around, we expected an old house with a falling roof but, no, the house is in good shape

Me: Leo, come out! And don't try anything funny (Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room, Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs, Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant? Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God, help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

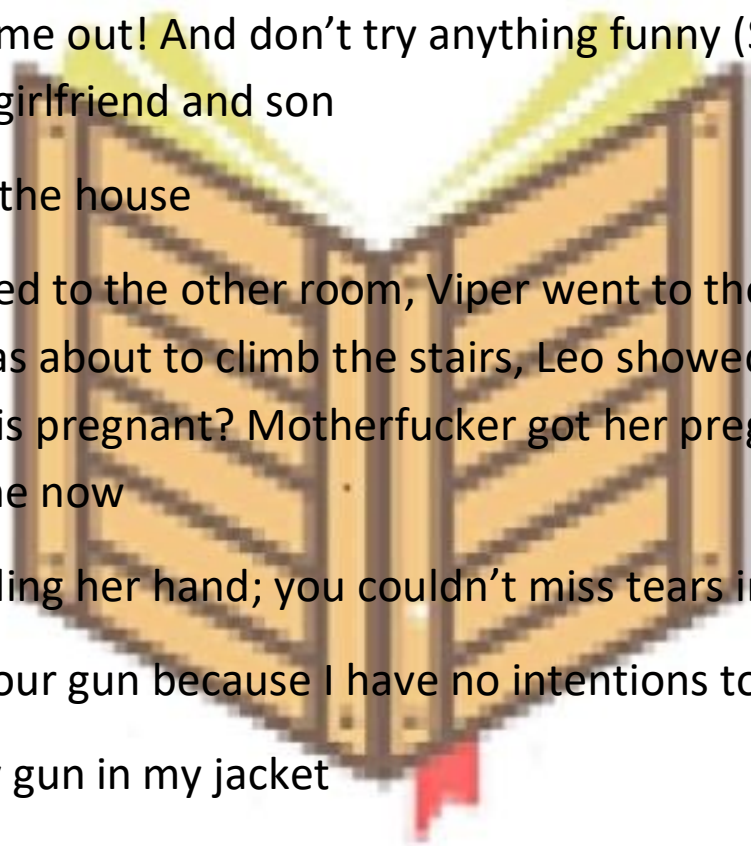
I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi, she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me, crying so hard

My heart ached, I was crying inside



NOVELSGURU.COM

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

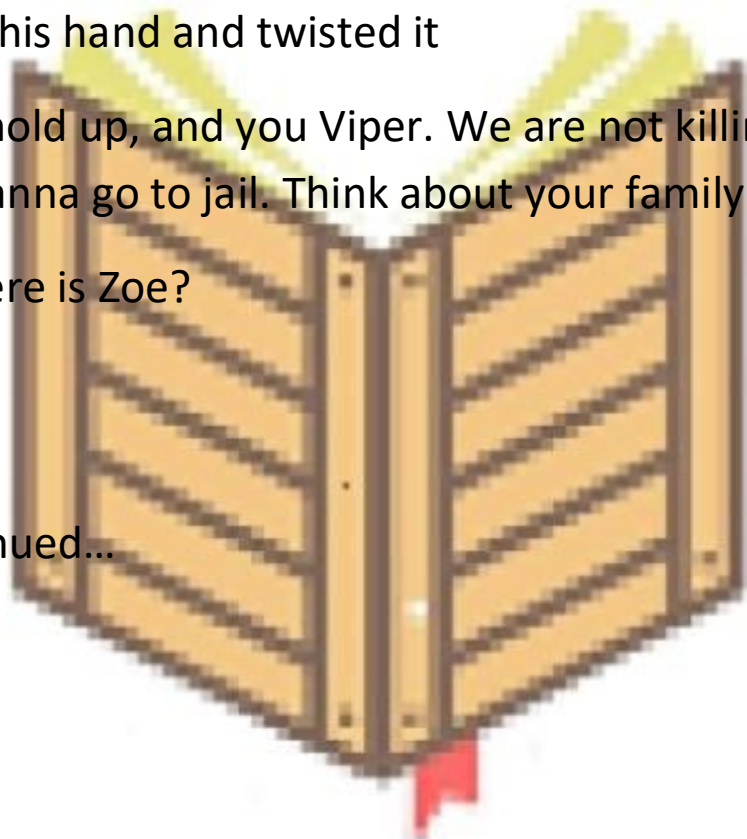
Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up, and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

To be continued...



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

105

FINALE

MIMI

I felt a hand on my belly and immediately knew who it belonged to

Me: Ethan, I need to rest. Let me...

Him: You have enough time to rest, I need to spoil you and I am sure the twins are dying to see you cuddles

I spent the night at Ethan's, he didn't want to let me go and I didn't too. I had missed him and our twins, my mother and Yara on the other hand-they were so emotional, couldn't believe that I am finally reunited with them. I don't want to start with Buhle, everyone was just happy to see me. I then realized how much they were hurting, five months of looking without success-sleeping not knowing where I was or if I was still alive. I got lucky that Panther and the guys rescued me because if they hadn't I don't want to think what would have happened. Even though Zoe looked remorseful I still don't know what she could have done. The trio risked their lives to save me and I will never thank them enough. I will forever be grateful to God, I know he took his time but he protected me. Now, I need to focus on my child and my family...

I slightly opened my eyes

Me: You are such a bully

He ran the back of his finger on my face

Him: Forgive me

Me: For what?

Him: For what you went through, I am partial at fault. I brought Zoe into our lives and I was naïve to think she would just let it go

I sat up straight

Me: No, don't blame yourself because I don't. Zoe was just in her own world, what she needed was help and admitting that she need one

Him: But still, I feel like I failed you. You were somewhere in the world with our child, anything could have happened to you

Me: From what I've heard, you did everything to find me and that means a lot. I am back to you and our twins with our child, let's focus on that

He leaned and kissed me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I took the liberty of calling a family friend who is a therapist and made an appointment for you

Me: Is it really necessary?

I did tell Ethan what happened, Leo raping me. I needed him to know in case it was important for me to tell him

Him: You need counselling, it wasn't your first time when a man forced himself on you. You are hurt and you need to find peace before our baby is born. You need to talk about your struggles with someone I don't want you to be bitter and angry all the time. To avoid problems in the future you need to talk with someone

Me: Okay, I will go... now can, we get something to eat?  
Daddy...

(Door opens)

Him: What did I tell you?

The twins jumped on the bed

Me: Good morning

"Aunty Mimi, we missed you" they said unison

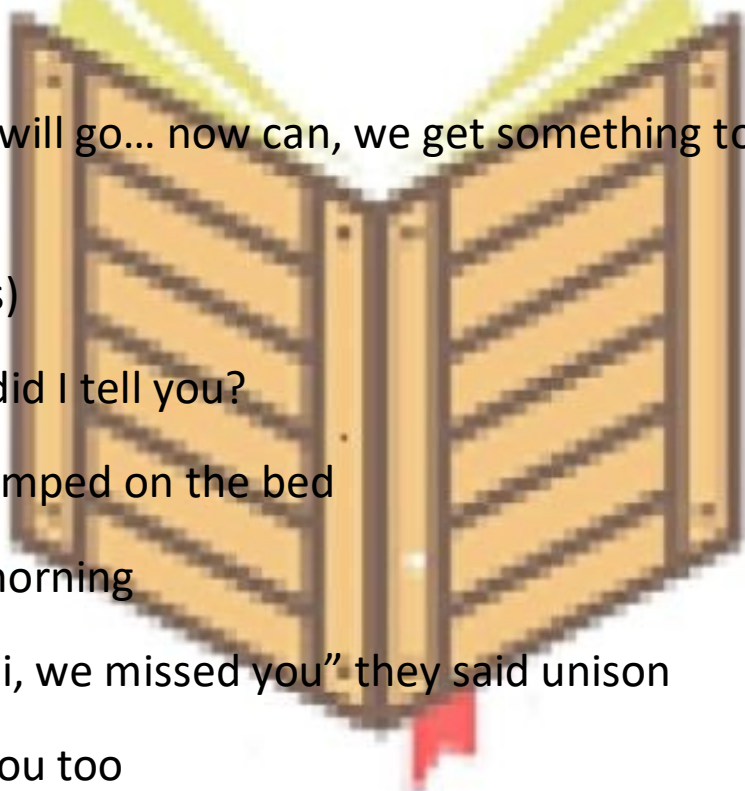
Me: I miss you too

Lex: We thought we had lost you forever

Tenda: Don't ever leave us

Me: I will never, I promise

AYDEN



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was standing at the balcony; I looked at the sky admiring the birds chirping

For the longest time I feel like things are finally falling into place, everyone in this family has had his/her share in sadness and pain. Right now I need to focus on my woman and preparing for the arrival of our little one. We've lost so much time on things we had no control over and God knows how much we struggled to get over them

I received a call from Mimsey

Me: Mimsey

Her: I assume we can proceed with negotiations, I can tell your uncle to send the letter

Me: There's nothing stopping us now. You can go ahead

Her: Where is my daughter-in-law?

Me: She is around; today I am doing something special for her today. Just to cheer her up

Her: She deserve it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Yara: Munchie

I turned around

Me: We will talk later Mimsey

Yara: Say hi to her

She mouthed

Me: Yara send hello

Mimsey: Greet her for me

Me: Bye

I hung up

I opened my arms for her

Me: Going somewhere?

Her: Yes, to see my brother. We need to talk about few things regarding the foundation

Me: Don't take long. Viper will be here late noon for photo shoot

Her: I won't. Let me go now

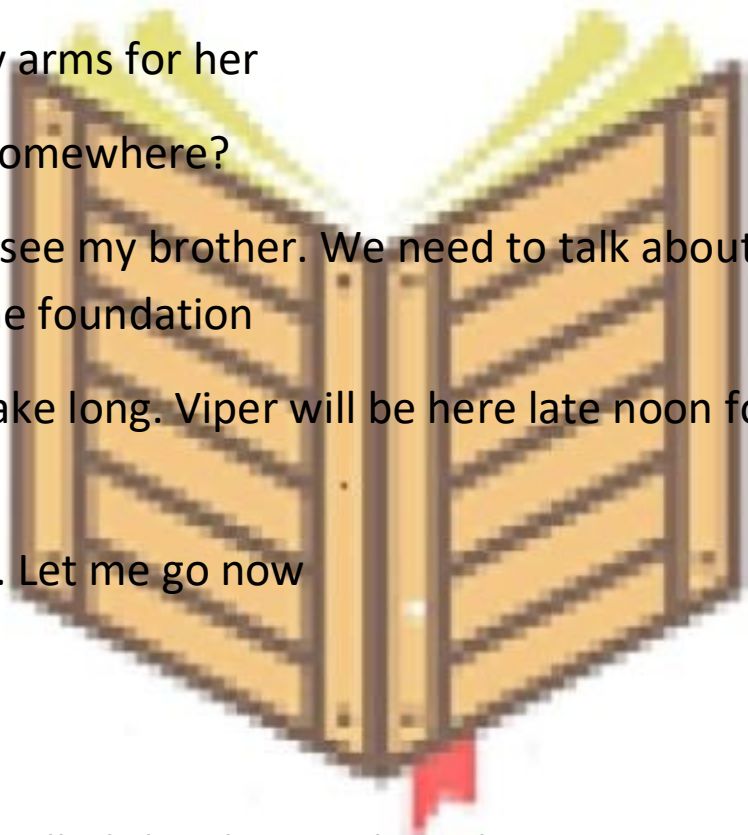
I kissed her

MIMI

My mother pulled the chair and sat down

Ma: How are you holding up?

Me: It's hard Ma but I am trying to look past it, I want to forget about it. I feared for my life, whenever he stepped inside the room I thought it was my last day. I didn't understand why God



NOVELSGURU.COM

is taking his time to rescue me but of course, everything happens for a reason

Ma: I am sorry I wasn't there for you

I wiped my tears

Me: But it's all over now, what I need now it's support to heal and move on. For my child and my sanity

Ma: And you are going to heal. This too shall pass

Me: I know

Ma: Have you called your father?

Me: No, pass me my phone. Let's call him now

PANTHER

I circled my arms around Buhle's waist

Me: What time are you leaving again?

Her: I am waiting for Mimi to call me

Me: Okay

Her: Thank you for doing everything in your power to rescue Mimi, it was very courageous of you to do something of that nature

Me: If I could, I'd do it again and again



NOVELSGURU.COM



She stared deep into my eyes

Me: Everyone is having a baby, would you like to fall pregnant?

She laughed softly

Her: Are you proposing we get pregnant?

Me: Is that a bad thing?

Her: No, it's not

(Door shutting)

Her: Expecting someone?

Me: Must be Yara

"Anyone home? Hello" she shouted from the lounge

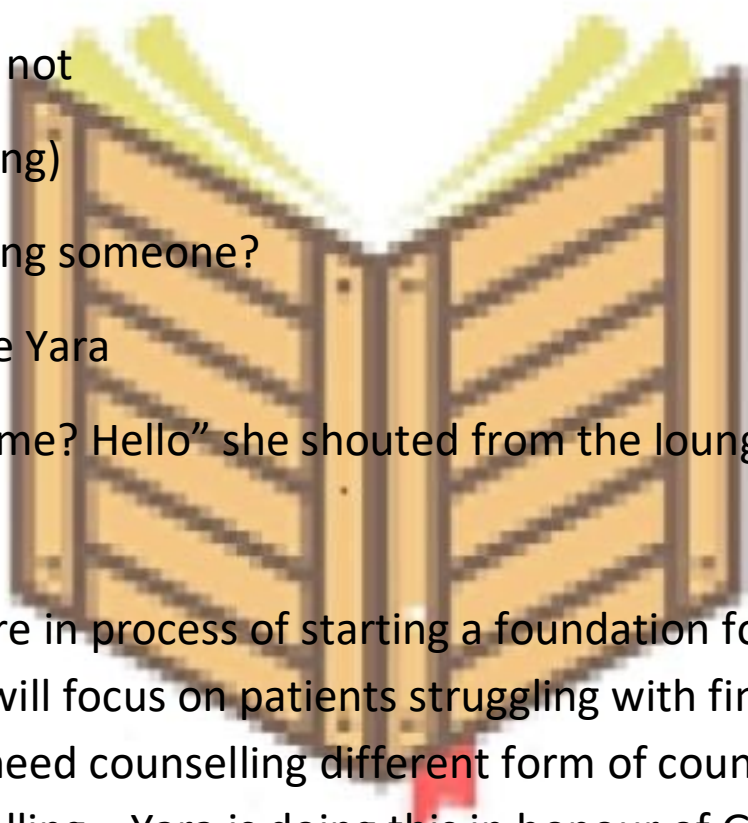
Me: In here

Yara and I are in process of starting a foundation for cancer patients, it will focus on patients struggling with finance. Also those who need counselling different form of counselling e.g. legal counselling... Yara is doing this in honour of Goldie, me on the other hand I feel like offering support, cancer is a battle and every patient deserve immense support

Yara: Get a room

Me: We had the room to ourselves

She hugged Buhle and then me



Buhle: You look very big...

Yara: I know and thank you

They laughed

Buhle: Let me give you some privacy, I will get something for you to drink

Me: Thank you Sunshine

We sat down

Me: Tell me you got the name, please!

Yara: I do and don't make it sound bad

Me: Don't get me started

Her: Whatever... So I was thinking After Her: Goldie Foundation

I nodded repeatedly

Me: I love it, it has nice ring

She smiled at me

YOLANDA GRIFFINS

NOVELSGURU.COM

I sat across Leo

He called me an hour ago saying he got arrested last night, I can't say I was surprise. I knew something like this was going to happened



Me: Was it worth it?

He looked at me and shook his head

Me: Where is your sister? I haven't heard anything about her

Him: She left the country

Me: So, you decided to take the blame for her?

Him: As you can see... For my sister I'd do anything  
at least I show her love unlike you and Dad

Me: Don't you dare pin this on me. I didn't tell your sister to go  
and kidnap someone, she did this herself

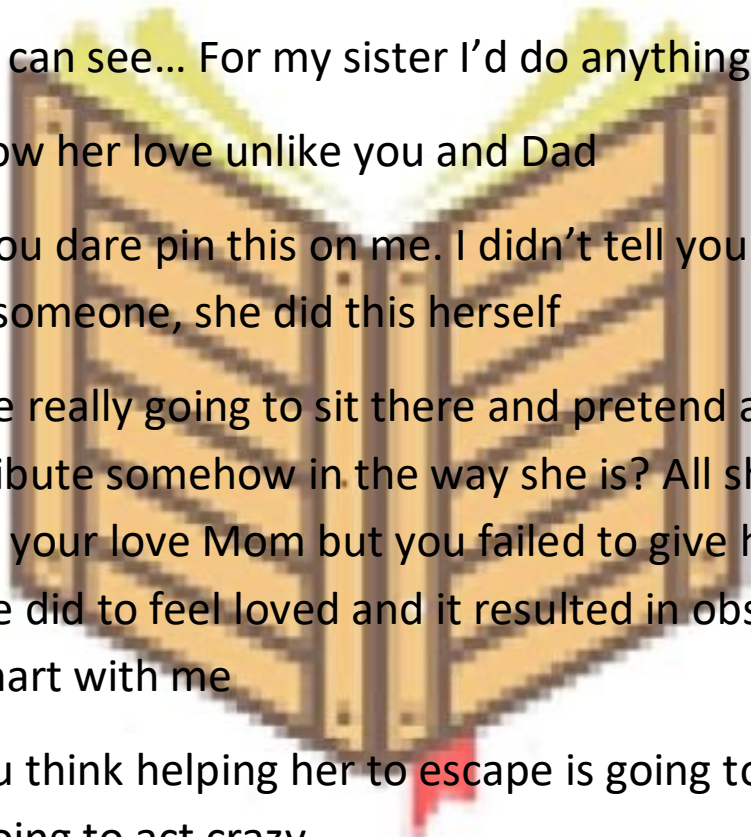
Him: You are really going to sit there and pretend as if you  
didn't contribute somehow in the way she is? All she ever  
needed was your love Mom but you failed to give her that. She  
did what she did to feel loved and it resulted in obsession. So,  
don't act smart with me

Me: And you think helping her to escape is going to heal her?  
She is still going to act crazy

Him: Zoe is not crazy!

He hit the table

Him: Please go! It was a mistake to call you; you've already  
made up your mind



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood up

Him: Stand before the mirror and see the monster you are

YARA

Ayden planned a maternity photo shoot for me, Viper is our photographer. The shooting was at the house, in the garden; we decided on something intimate and not go overboard

It was a beautiful moment especially having family surrounding me, Mimi came with the twins. I took few pictures with them, they make part of my family and having them in my pictures is the amazing thing to do. Unfortunately Nosizwe couldn't make it, she went to EC

Viper: Buhle, pass her the booties

She gave me the booties

I was wearing a short red dress with long sleeves; my belly has a nice round shape. My hair was tied into a ponytail

Viper: Put them on your belly and put your left hand on the side of your belly

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I did as told, he took few pictures

Viper: Lovely. Now poke your neck out towards the camera

We continued taking more pictures. All of this is amazing, few touches on my belly and smiling to the camera is heavily

Ayden: Now, can I get my chance?

Mimi: Baby daddy tired of watching (Laughs)

Buhle: Give him a chance

Viper: Go and change into something more revealing, we need more of that bump in the pictures

Me: I am still your sister, you know that?

He winked at me

Mimi helped me to change into something. This time we were going for something more intimate, I was in my underwear and bra. It was very funny and weird to be naked in front of my brother but hey! We only live once and I wanna enjoy this as much as I can

Ayden: You look so sexy... (Whispers)

Me: Behave; we are in front of people

He went down on his knee and put his head on my belly, Viper took few pictures whilst we change poses

Everything was fine until I started feeling an intensified pain on my belly, this pain is not related to baby kicks at all. Earlier on I felt contractions but I played no mind to them but it seems they are getting stronger

Me: Ah!

Everyone looked at me

Mimi: Yara, what's wrong?

Ayden: Shawty, are you fine?

Me: I am having cramps

Ayden: We need to get you to hospital maybe you are going in labour

Me: It can't be, it's too early I still have two weeks. It can't be!

Buhle: Any contractions?

I nodded repeatedly

Me: Maybe it's Braxton Hicks

Mimi: We can't risk it, let's go

Ayden: Viper, go and take the baby bag. Mimi, get something for her to wear. Something light

I hope something is not wrong, pain shot my abdomen again and I groaned in pain

ZOE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I gave this lot of thought and I can't let my brother take the fall, he has been doing that all his life. It's time I show him how much I love him. I won't be able to live with myself if I turn my back on him

I stepped inside the Station and walked to the helping desk

Me: Good day, I am here to turn myself in

They looked at me as if I swore at them

YARA

The minute I stepped in the hospital my water broke, the urge to push jumped in. I knew right there that my baby is here

I was taken to the delivery room right away

Me: I can't do this! (Yelling) no, I can't. Oh God!

I held tightly to Ayden's arm

Him: You can do this Shawty; all you need to do is breathe and help your body to push the baby out. Keep on pushing!

Doctor: You are doing a great job... Push one more time

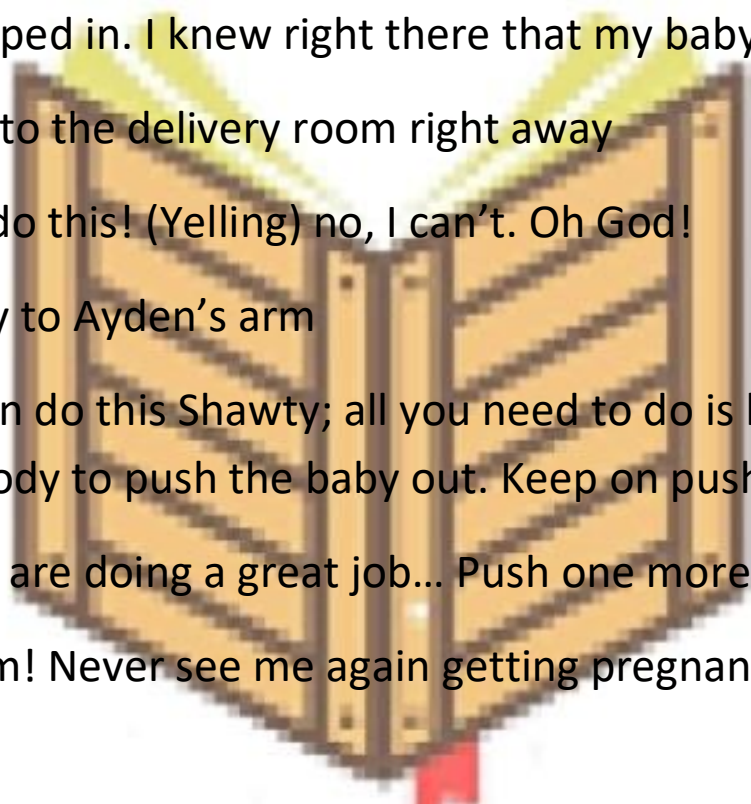
Like hell I am! Never see me again getting pregnant, dick will wait!

Ayden: Keep going, you can do this. Soon our baby will be here

Doctor: Just a bit more

I pressed my lips and pushed harder

Doctor: I can see the head, one more time. Keep going, yes, just a bit more



NOVELSGURU.COM

I closed my eyes and pushed again this time I pushed for my dear life

The first cry suddenly filled the whole room; I sighed deeply and laid back

Ayden: You did it Shawty

Doctor: Congratulations, it's a boy

He said lifting the baby up

Ayden: You heard that? It's a boy (Smiles)

I couldn't believe I had just given birth, Jesus Christ!

The doctor laid him on my chest; tears were now streaming down my cheeks. He was absolute the cutest baby I'd ever, ever seen

Me: Hello, happy birthday my love. Say hi to daddy

I am only realising now that Ayden is crying

Him: Welcome Alexis Mufunwa Tshivhase, you were worth the wait

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

He held his tiny hand and kissed my forehead

Him: Thank you for this gift of life, you were amazing. I love you Shawty

Me: I lost my heart on you



I stared at him again and smiled

Me: Bless you, Alexis, May all the blessings of our Lord touch your life today

“Although the world is full of suffering, it is also full of the overcoming of it”

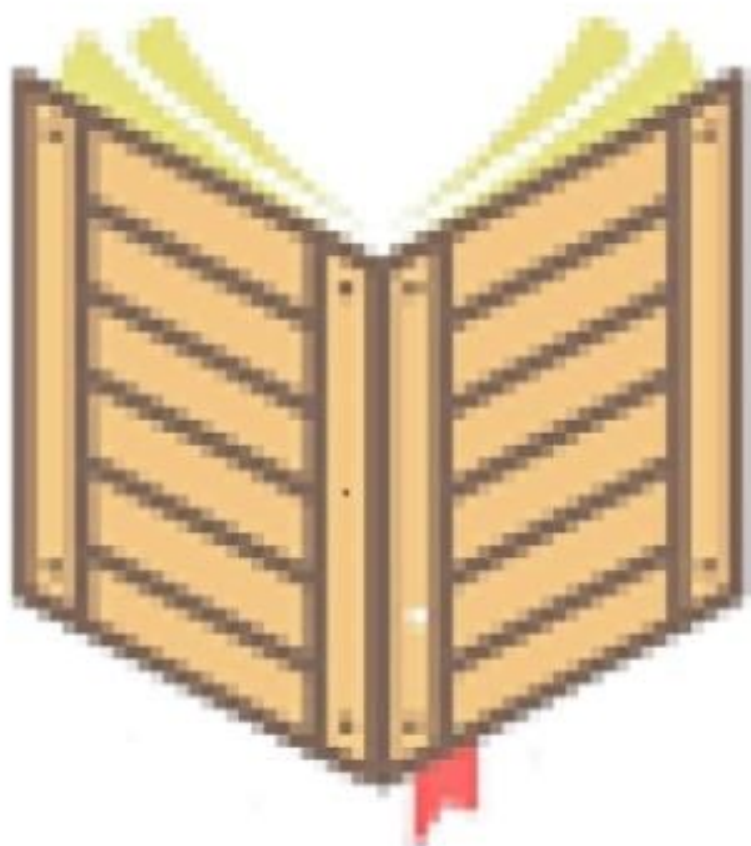
I’ve said it before and I will repeat it again, your present circumstances don’t determine where you can go. Love, peace and light!



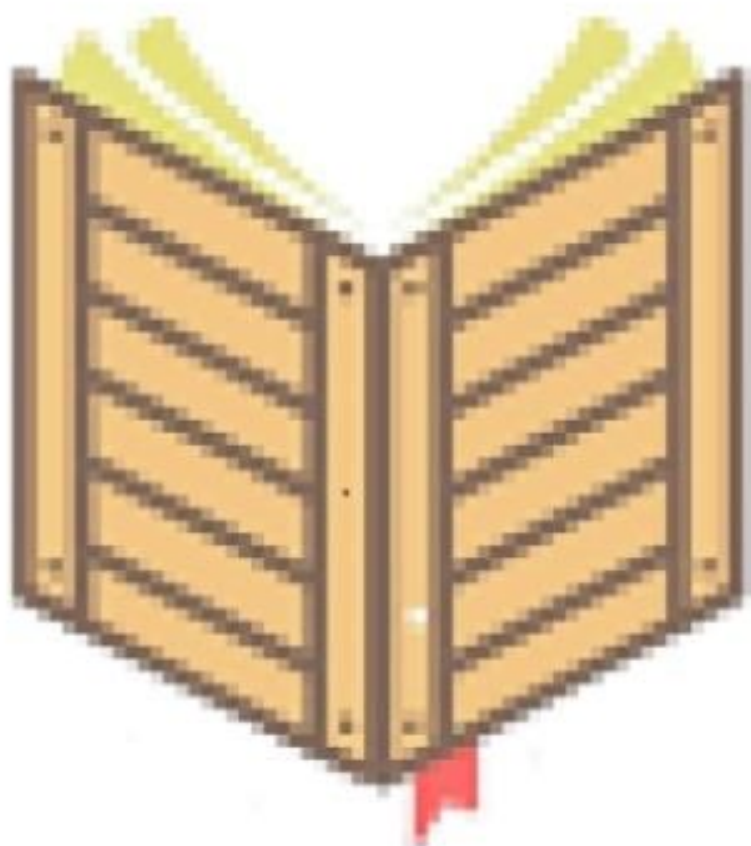
.....THE END.....

For dilay latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site  
ple ase keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting  
me and also don’t forget to share it with your friends.  
Dear Friends please download these books direct from  
<https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African  
books, and also supporting me Thanks.



NOVELSGURU.COM



NOVELSGURU.COM